

- And now for the 3rd & final basic area in which evil injustice can be done to you—or the only other realm in which you’re going to have to make Just Sonship Decisions ...

- THE 3RD COMPONENT of our Sonship *instruction of Justice.*

- (see Chart — OUTLINE of JUSTICE)

- This 3rd Component of our *instruction of Justice* is going to deal with Godly Justice in connection with Established Authority within the Divine Institutions. (Your relationship to established authority).

- The issue here is going to be how we, as sons, are to deal with those who are entrusted to administer Justice—and to legislate Justice.

- It should be noticed that this Component has more information contained in it than the previous 2 (combined).

- So it should be anticipated that this Component is a bit more complex than the previous 2. (and it is)

(read Romans 13:1-7) — and as we read it—don’t do what you’re so inclined to do—which is to think about this passage as an American—or to ‘Americanize’ it—but rather, think about what was going on in Rome at that time— the Romans leader or Caesar [dictator] was **Nero Claudius Caesar Augustus Germanicus**—fiddled while Rome burned; had his own Mother killed; persecuted Christians [had them set on fire to light his gardens]!

- And my point here is to just get you to recognize that this passage is NOT teaching anything about either the **kind, or the quality, or the form** of the Government—in fact, the kind, quality, and form of Government is totally irrelevant to anything this passage teaches!!! (This passage doesn’t teach what is the good, better, or best Gov.!) [And that’s the first ‘hurdle’ in your thinking you’ve got to get over!]

- It should be apparent at the very beginning—that the BIG ISSUE in this passage is the issue of **GOVERNMENT and how we are to relate to it; respond to it; and function in connection with it in a Godly way as properly educated and intelligent sons!**

- Government—(whether at the highest levels of a nation, or down to the lowest levels in our home town) — Government is often called a “Divine Institution” - or an Established Authority, invented and created by God Himself to restrain and control the conduct of men on earth. [that’s how it’s generally & most commonly thought of!]

- Now any time you deal with the issue of Government, it's a "Hot-Button" topic—but especially so among Christians.

- For example—should I pay taxes to an evil Gov. that takes my tax money and uses it for evil, ungodly purposes? (like abortion, promoting evolution, supporting other evil governments, sex change operations for prisoners, distributing condoms to elementary/middle/high school students)—and a whole bunch more things along these lines? [to say nothing of simply wasting my tax money on stupid and worthless pursuits—and to say nothing of Government's total inability to be responsible with handling our tax money!]

- Should Christians only vote other Christians into office?

- Should you vote at all?

- Should Christians "rise up" and make it so that the Gov. does "God's will" by its policies and laws?

- Should Christians fight to get the 10 Commandments displayed in all Government buildings?

- Can you even be a Christian and vote for a Democrat?

- And on, and on you could go....

- But notice that Rome was a evil, ungodly, wicked, God-less (though polytheistic) form of Gov.—and yet, this passage has **nothing** to do with changing your Gov., or calling on Christians to rise up and overthrow it, or anything along those line—in fact, it doesn't matter what the **form** of Gov. is!

- Bet it a: Republic; Democracy; Monarchy; Oligarchy (government by a few, especially families); Despotism; Dictatorship; Theocracy, etc.

- The **kind, quality, or form** of Gov. **is totally irrelevant!**

- And that begs the question Why—Why would you as a "son" **gladly** support a Government no matter what kind it is; no matter what quality it is (good or evil); and no matter what form (federal, state, local) it is? — What is it about Gov. that makes it so that you would desire to support it [gladly] no matter what??? (and see that support of that Gov. as the **GODLY** thing to do?)

- And in order to get to the answer to that question—my understanding is that you have to begin with an even more basic, fundamental question —

Q: What is the value of Government???

- Most commonly, the answer will be something to do with the restraint of evil, crime, and bad things happening to you. (The military is there to prevent our enemies from getting us—the police are there to keep the robbers & murderers from getting us—the fireman is there to keep the fire from getting us—etc.)

- Or that Government provides for the lawful function of a community; or a society; or a nation. (Of course, that's in view of law-breaking going on).

- But did it ever occur to you that Government was in existence **before** sin, evil, wickedness, wrong doing, and all that comes from it ever existed?

- The truth is—Gov. was in place PRIOR to sin entering into God's creation! (either on Earth or in Heaven!)

- see Col. 1:16 (Gov. existed prior to sin) —

- see Isa. 9:6-7 (Gov. will continue forever! even after sin is no longer in existence!)

- So, a better question that has to be answered is this:

Q: What is the value of Government TO GOD?

(and in time, we'll answer that question)

- For now—let's turn our attention to our passage (where we'll find the answers to these questions) - and let's just note the general 3-Fold Breakdown—because since “godliness” (or Godly Edifying) is in view, it has to address all 3 Aspects of Godliness: Godly Thinking/Living/ & Labor.

- Godly Thinking: (:1-2)

- Godly Conduct & Behavior: (:3, 4, 5)

- Godly Labor: (:6-7)

- And my understanding is—that because of what you’re told here—and by EXACTLY what you’re told here (i.e., not **adding** anything to it [like what you ‘imagine’ it should be, or by incorporating this information along with your existing, ‘course-of-this-world-built’ sense of Justice, or by whatever strongly held beliefs & opinions you have about Gov. and its function, patriotism, and whatever] — and not **subtracting** anything from it—like changing or leaving out words or concepts, or taking things out of their context) — my understanding is that a **“son”** (a properly educated son) **can function perfectly no matter what kind of Gov. he lives in; no matter how good or bad its quality; and no matter what form of Gov. it is!**

- And that means that every Gov. that exists—all have something in common—they all have this **“thing”** that allows for a son to **gladly** support it no matter what! — (The United States has it; Communist China has it; Russia has it; Sweden has it; Venezuela [under Hugo Chavez] has it... even Hitler’s Germany had it! ... and Rome [under the brutal Dictator Nero] had it in Paul’s day!)

- And we’re going to discover what that “thing” is by understanding and appreciating some **exact** terminology (right from the beginning of the Godly Thinking Aspect) in Rom. 13:1-2.

- And the terminology that I’m after are the words:

- **“powers” [plural]** and **“power” [singular]**
- and then the words **“ordained”** and **“ordinance”**

- Notice: the **powers [pl.] are ordained of God** — and the **power [sing.] is an ordinance of God.**

(and all of that is very significant!)

- Now, before diving into the details—let’s do something to help in getting our thinking and our attitude in the position God wants it in, in order to get the effectual working of this Godly Just Thinking — (and this is going to be tough, because of the strong emotional ties that many folks have [especially Christian folks] in connection with Government) as you read this—is there any mention of Nero? — any mention of Felix [the Roman Procurator before whom Paul was brought up on charges]?, or any Roman Tetrarch? any mention of the Praetorian Guard? or of the men who carried out the wholesale butchering of believers in Christ? **NO!!!**

- First of all—everything in (:3,4, &5) [in the Godly Conduct & Behavior] - and everything in (:6 & 7) [in the Godly Labor] will all make perfect sense when everything in (:1&2) [the Godly Thinking] is properly understood and appreciated.

- And that means that really, (:3,4, &5) and (:6 & 7) won't make much sense (or at least won't make the sense they ought to) unless the Godly Thinking of (:1 & 2) has first of all done it's effectual work.

- That means that there's a awful lot of critical and important things going on and sitting in those first 2 verses! — and like most of the Sonship Curriculum goes, you're most often going to spend the most amount of time in the Godly Thinking portion, than in the other 2 portions!

- (and that's the case here!)

- And the Godly Thinking that these first 2 verses are designed to produce within us—(and since there are no 'Persons' [so to speak] being mentioned or brought up [like Nero, Felix, ... Obama, Biden] — **it makes it so that we are to look THROUGH the Governmental authorities and the Governmental authority that you live under!**

- And you're supposed to look THROUGH it — **so that you look at what it is FROM GOD'S PERSPECTIVE!**

- And what I'm driving at here is: **You do NOT look at what the Government is DOING!!!**

- You don't look at its policies—you don't look at its administration—you don't look at its 'party platform' — you don't look at its form or kind—and you don't look at the individuals that currently occupy the positions of that Government! (none of that is the issue!)

- In this passage—there's no particular form of Gov. being either endorsed or refuted!

- The issue is simply to recognize something fundamental regarding human government, itself, — and then to look “THROUGH” it so that you're NOT focusing upon anything that it is actually *doing*—and as you look “through” it, you're going to look and see and Think about it **exactly as God does** in connection with **what it's ordained for in the first place!**

- And that's the Godly Thinking that God wants us to have established within us, first and foremost, in connection with the whole subject matter of human government.

- Because without that Core, Seminal Issue—which is that “First-Thought Response” that our Lord Jesus Christ Himself has—without that being the ‘touch-stone’ or governor for every thought we could ever have or ever will have regarding human government—all those other thoughts and feelings we ever have about human gov. will have the potential for being UN-GODLY!!!

- All those other thoughts have the potential for us doing and saying and acting STUPIDLY in connection with our lives under the human gov. in which we live!

- And unfortunately, that goes on a great deal in Christianity as a whole—and in Fundamental Christianity in particular—and even in the “grace movement” as well!

- The truth is—90-95% of the remarks most Christians make about Government are UNGODLY!

- And they're ungodly, primarily because they don't have that “First-Thought Response” of that Core, Seminal understanding and appreciation in their minds & heart regarding what the first 2 verses of Romans 13 says! (Oh, they can say & quote these words—but they don't know what in the world those things mean!) — they only have a ‘vague’ recognition of them, but at the exact same time, out of their mouth come ‘criticisms’ or ‘murmurings’ or complainings.

- (They ‘groan’ about paying their taxes!)

- And that all happens because they're looking at **what the Gov. is doing** — and NOT what God is **doing** with the Gov.!!!

- God knows that every Gov. out there is ungodly! But God doesn't care if you've got a Christian or a Non-Christian occupying the seat of power in the Gov. — in fact, more times than not, you're far better off if the person in power is NOT a Christian!

- Example: Bad as he was (and cowardly as he was), if it was left to **Pilate**, he'd of set free the Lord Jesus Christ!

- see John 18:28-19:16

- The issue for God the Father, God the Son—and you as an adopted, intelligent son—is NOT **who** is in the position of Authority—the issue is **what is that position of Authority designed to do, first and foremost, fundamentally, with respect to the plan & purpose of God?!**

- And in view of that—and with that being the fundamental 'frame of reference' that exists in your mind—therefore, every form of Gov. that is conceivable by man **will do what God designed it to do!!!**

- (even a Communist Gov. will do it! — it can't help but do it!)

- And that's what these 7 verses of Romans 13 are all about!

- And the Godly Thinking of (:1-2) are all about that—and the Godly Conduct & Behavior that (:3, 4, & 5) talk about, are in response to that—and the Godly Labor of (:6 & 7) is in response to that!

- Therefore, (as we will come to understand and appreciate), the reason **why** you and I ought to not only pay our taxes; but be **glad** to pay our taxes—**has absolutely nothing to do with what our Gov. does with those taxes! ... not a single thing!**

- It doesn't make one whit of a difference if the Gov. comes along and says, "We're taking 30% of your taxes and fund abortion clinics with it!" — (whoopee!) — **pay your taxes!** (and be GLAD to do it!)

- Or if the Gov. comes along and says, "We're going to take another portion of your taxes and fund Gay & Lesbian programs!" — (whoopee-doo!) — **pay your taxes!**

- It doesn't make a bit of difference—because you're not paying them *tribute, custom, fear, & honor* for WHAT they're doing—but you're paying them those things because as Paul says, they are a *minister of God* for a particular reason!

- Now by saying all that—my aim is to (since this is such a highly charged, emotional subject), my aim is to just ‘clear the table’ (so to speak) of all of the NON-issues in Romans 13:1-7!

- And when it comes to being properly instructed and educated as a son in Godly Civil, Societal Justice (which is what this issue is) — **you’ve got to be able to look THROUGH a human government!** (And that’s exactly what :1&2 do!)

- (:1-2) allow the ‘eyes of your understanding’ that came into existence that began to ‘blink’ and to perceive some things back when you went through Sonship Orientation & Sonship Establishment — (you began to look at some things that you could not see, physically [back in Ch.8]) — and now you’re going to be taught something that you cannot see (with your physical set of eyes) about human government!

- Truth is—about 99% of all those who sit in positions of authority in human government are completely unaware of it!

- (yet, you’re taught about it—and you’re told to always look at Gov. that way!)

- And the whole reason for being *subject unto the higher powers* is because of this fundamental, core, seminal, ‘First-Thought-Response’ that you have to perceive with the ‘eyes of your understanding’ looking **through** that gov. (and that has nothing to do with what it’s doing)!

- So therefore in this “Introduction/Pre-Doctrinal Exhortation” - there are 2 Major issues we have to get a ‘frame of reference’ for:

1) Godly Sonship Education in Civil, Societal Justice demands that you look **THROUGH** that human gov. — and that all of the issues of what that gov. is doing; who occupies the various ‘seats’ of that gov.; the kind, quality, and form of that gov. — **ARE ALL NON-ISSUES!** — and that you perceive what Gov. is to GOD—you look *through* it to see what the core, seminal, First-Thought-Response is all about!

- And that core, seminal, First-Thought-Response will be found in (:1) in what that singular *power* is all about—*For there is no power but of God.*

2) (and this will help us answer the question of: What is the value of Government ... to God Himself?) — Government is something that God Himself invented and created—but more than that, it was something He brought into existence BEFORE any sin, evil, wrong doing, or crime ever existed!

*For by him (God the Son, the Lord Jesus Christ, the 2nd Member of the Godhead) were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him:
(Colossians 1:16)*

— and Government is something that God is going to have in existence for all eternity—even AFTER all sin, evil, wrong doing, and crime is NO LONGER in existence!

*For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The Mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.
Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this.
(Isaiah 9:6-7)*

- Now the importance of all this is that it ‘clears the table’ (so to speak) of some other Non-Issues—and it gives us the beginning of having a ‘frame of reference’ for viewing the value and the reason for Government **from God’s perspective!**

- More often than not—the most common thing most people think about for the reason for why Gov. exists at all—is that it’s a ‘barrier’ to man’s evil, wickedness, wrong doing, crime, etc., against man—or that it’s a ‘barrier’ for the Satanic Policy of Evil.

- Now there is some truth and some validity to that thinking—but think, for a moment, about this—Government existed in the heavenly places BEFORE it existed on the earth!

- And that Government that God created in the heavenly places was **NOT** a ‘barrier’ to Satan at all—*thrones, dominions, principalities, powers*, and even ‘territories’ existed there, **first** — and according to Ezekiel 28, the Adversary had no trouble whatsoever in ‘trafficking in iniquity in his sanctuaries’!!!

*Thou hast defiled thy sanctuaries by the multitude of thine iniquities, by the iniquity of thy traffick;
(Ezekiel 28:18)*

- (The Gov. of the heavenly realm didn’t ‘prevent’ Satan from doing that at all!)

- So in order to get your ‘frame of reference’ set properly (in order to get to the very core reason for WHY God created Gov. in the first place—[which will give you that Core, Seminal, First-Thought-Response issue]) — you have to go back to the time BEFORE sin, evil, wickedness, wrong doing, violence, or crime ever came into existence, and find out why God desired to have Government in place—when it didn’t provide a ‘barrier’ for evil, wrong doing, and crime. (Or you have to think about why God will utilize Gov. in the ages to come when none of those things are an issue, either.)

- Now I’m going to stop right here and allow the **words** of God here in the first 2 verses of Romans 13 to do the job of getting to the bottom of all of this.

- We may have some advancement to our understanding and appreciation for the 1st Introductory Issue (the issue of getting to look **through** human gov., and look past all of the non-issues of what the gov. is doing; who sits in the positions of authority in it; what kind or quality or form it is) - but it’s not as advanced or as deep as it needs to be—and that will be dealt with by our passage.

- And as far as the 2nd Introductory Issue goes (the issue of grasping WHY God created Government in the first place; even before sin, evil, wrong doing, or crime was in existence) — we really haven’t gotten to the bottom of that issue at all; we’ve really only properly framed the question—but that will be answered in these first 2 verses of Romans 13 as well.

- So let’s begin looking at the details of the Godly Thinking of Romans 13:1-2

- Verse 1 (and vs. 2 as well) really is an “exercise” of the ‘eyes of your understanding’ — because you go from what you can see with your physical eyes (Sentence #1)—to a further ‘seeing’ or perception of something that can’t be seen with your physical eyes, but only can be seen with the ‘eyes of your understanding’ (Sentence #2)- (in other words, you see it only because your Father tells you it’s there—[it can’t be seen with your physical set of eyes])!

- Verse 1 is made up of 2 complete thoughts or sentences. The 2nd sentence being divided by 2 clauses.

- The 2nd Sentence begins with a “*For*” of further explanation and amplification for why you should do what the 1st Sentence tells you to do. (which is no small thing in light of the gov. that the Romans existed under!)

- And the 1st Sentence of (:1) acts as a kind of overall statement concerning the aim, goal, or objective of everything dealt with in all 7 verses.

- In other words—by the time you get to the end of (:7), you have been given enough information to make it so you can FULLY carry out what the 1st Sentence of (:1) says as a properly educated son—and do so in a Godly manner (just exactly as God the Father does; and as God the Son does)! [and you being *conformed to the image of the Son*, to the emulation of the Father!]

- Therefore just that 1st Sentence of (:1) carries with it a whole bunch of potential ways in which you can make Just Sonship Decisions—but **only** when the rest of (:1), and all of the rest of verses 2 has done their effectual work in your inner man! (to produce that Godly Thinking)

- So the most critical thing of all is to get the Godly Thinking effectually working that sits in (:1-2).

- So the aim, goal, and objective of the Godly Thinking that makes it so that you can properly relate to and deal with Civil, Societal Justice is:

Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers.

- Now I want to bring up a little detail that I’ve already mentioned—and that is, my understanding is that what you’re taught here

... is designed to make it so that you, (as a son/daughter), will **GLADLY** support a Government, no matter what kind it is; no matter what quality it is (good or evil); and no matter what form it takes—a properly educated “son” desires to **gladly** do that, no matter what!

- And what I’m after here is—why do I say that you would do that **gladly**? — is there anything in the whole 7 verses that tells you to do that with ‘joy’ or with ‘gladness’? — Does the word ‘joy’ or ‘gladness’ or any word like that occur in any of these 7 verses?

- Well, apart from saying that it’s the **joy** of a son to do what his Father instructs him to do (true/right as that is—and that’s not to be dismissed as why you are to do this ‘gladly’) — but there’s actually a couple of places where this is understood—but my understanding is that it’s first understood in (:1), and in the very first 3 words of the 1st Sentence of (:1).

- God says, *Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers.*

- Notice that He does NOT say, ‘Let every man be subject’ or ‘Let every person be subject’ — no — He says, *Let every SOUL be subject ...*

- Granted—that expression “*every soul*” can be taken to simply mean **every individual**, or **every saint/son** (in this context) - and it certainly does mean that. (But it means or signifies MORE than that!)

- Why does God use the word **soul** here? What does that signify or **imply**?

- As I said—it does emphasize every living person—and in this context, every saint or son.

- But the word *soul* implies something more—and it’s not the issue of distinguishing between ‘body, soul, and spirit’ - it’s not an issue of Systematic Theology: Doctrine of the soul type junk!

- First of all, the word *soul* (in this context and in this particular word order: i.e., **every soul**) indicates that something is to be intelligently understood in your Thinking, but then it goes into the *soul* where something else happens.

- What is one of the major things that the *soul* of a man does?

- A: It RESPONDS to the spirit—it EMOTES—it FEELS things!

- And as a son of your Heavenly Father (since He's perfectly content, satisfied, and 'happy' about how Government exists) - you're to take upon yourself (as His intelligent son/daughter) His Thinking and His Sentiments!

- Your *soul* is where you FEEL things—and my understanding is that by saying, *Let every soul be subject ...* it's kind of like saying, 'Your soul is in it' — you feel **GOOD about it**—you are **glad** to do that!

- By using the word *soul*—it implies that you feel it; you feel **good** about it—(because you have an intelligent understand and appreciate of it) —

— in other words, you are NOT to simply *subject yourself to the higher powers* in grudging or reluctant service!

- (your SOUL is in it!) — you don't come along and say, "Alright, I'll do it, but it's going to leave a 'bad taste' in my mouth!"

- It '**sits well**' with you—in your *soul*! (It's your PLEASURE!!!)

- *Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers.*

- **subject** = to be under the operation of an agent, agency, or process—here, to the rule or power of a government.

- *subject* in this sense carries the idea of being 'amenable' to power or influence founded upon a law of relationship—much like you are right now 'subject' to the law of gravity.

- *Let every soul be subject unto the **higher powers** (Plural).*

- The **higher powers** (Pl) are pretty easy to understand—that's what the Romans can SEE—(with their physical eyes) — and that's what you and I can see—we know what the *higher powers* are—and we know that there are men & women sitting in those positions of government.

- (such as President; Prime Minister; King; etc.—and then all of the *powers* that kind of descend like a pyramid type structure.

- And every saint (when they read [:1]) in every country knows what the *higher powers* are—what they're called, and the names of the men & women who occupy those *higher power* positions.

- And that's all that the apostle Paul is ever going to say about the actual individuals in those positions.

- And the rest of what he's going to say is to make it so that you're going to be *subject* to them **for the very reason God brought them into existence in the first place!**

- And so that you'll be *subject* to them regardless of what they do—and that you won't REBELL against them; & you won't RESIST them for any of the things that they do—no matter how **ungodly** they may be—or how **foolish** or how **stupid** they may be.

- But you'll be *subject* to them **for the one, primary, most fundamental reason that God has for them to be in existence in the first place!**

- (And that's what the 2nd Sentence of [:1] goes on to describe!)

- The truth of the matter is—when you look at Romans 13:1—that very first Sentence (*Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers.*) — [much like the last time we came across that little word “*Let*”], that Sentence acts as it did back in Romans 12:9—as an **Exhortation** that precedes the actual Godly Thinking.

- *Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers* exhorts you to do something that the rest of (:1) and all of (:2) will then give you the information of the Godly Thinking for WHY and HOW you're supposed to do that.

- So when it comes to Godly Thinking as a son in this dispensation of grace in which we live—a properly educated son looks right **through** that Government; right **through** what it's doing; right **through** the individual persons occupying the positions of that Government; right **through** the daily newspapers/editorials/commentaries about it; — you look right **through** all of that stuff, and with the ‘eyes of your understanding,’ you see that: ***there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God.***

- And what God expects you to do (since He doesn't give you any explanation for what that *power (sing.)* is, God expects you to go right back to the issue of when He first established *power (sing.)*, and then when He *ordained powers (pl.)*).

- And when you get those issues understood and appreciated, the issue then is, it's as if God says, "Now I want you to think of human Government, and to *subject* yourself to it, **solely for these reasons!** (And there are 2 of them.)

- And my understanding is that those 2 Clauses that make up the 2nd Sentence of (:1) **are the 2 reasons of Godly Thinking** (of the very way **God Himself Thinks** about human Government on this earth) **for why you are to subject yourself unto the higher powers.**

- Therefore, unlike the previous 2 Components of our *instruction of Justice* that had a single Core, Seminal, First-Thought-Response—since there are 2 issues or 2 reasons that make up the Godly Thinking for Just Sonship Decision-Making in connection with Human Government (or Civil, Societal Justice) - since there are 2 issues involved in the Godly Thinking—**then there are going to be 2 Core, Seminal, Issues that we have to understand and appreciate **deeply!****

- There's going to be 1 Core, Seminal Issue to ***For there is no power but of God.***

- And there's going to be a 2nd Core, Seminal Issue to ***the powers that be are ordained of God.***

- And those 2 Core, Seminal Issues are going to be given some 'punch' by what gets said in (:2)!

- And so the work we have to do here is to go back and get an understanding & appreciation for what was in God's thinking when He brought into existence the *power (sing.)*; and what His thinking was when He *ordained powers (pl.)*.

- Those are 2 separate Issues and 2 separate Events!

- Actually, the 2nd issue (the *ordaining of the powers [pl.]*) is the easier of the 2 to understand—because the "*powers that be*" are the various human governments that exist on this earth.

- And where is it in God's word where most folks commonly go to point out where God instituted "Human Government"?

- A: Genesis 8, 9, 10, & 11. (Gen. 9, especially) - that's when "the powers that be" were "ordained of God."

- But those *powers (pl.)* didn't just 'come out of the blue' (so to speak) - because before that ever took place, **POWER** came into existence—(God brought it into existence)!

- Now when it comes to the issue of "*power*" - you can talk about *power* in a whole bunch of different ways.

- And we're not talking about 'creative' *power* here; or God's omnipotent *power*; or healing *power*, or spiritual *power* or anything along those lines.

- *Power* (here) is one of those 'context-sensitive' words—and the context here is all about **Governmental Power!** (Ruling power.)

- And when you think about *power* in that context—and you're trying to get down to the most basic, fundamental issue about ruling or governmental *power*—what is the most basic, fundamental thing that ruling or governmental *power* does?

- (And this is something that can be said about it—even if there is no sin, wickedness, wrong-doing, evil, crime, etc. in existence—and that's what we're dealing with—when you're dealing with this *power (sing.)* in that 1st Clause of the 2nd Sentence of (:1), you're going back to the time in which God brought Governmental *power* into existence BEFORE even Lucifer sinned—before any sin ever existed in the universe—when God created ruling, governmental *power* in the first place.)

A: It **CONTROLS** whatever ever it's ruling over! Most fundamental of all—it's the issue of putting **CONTROLS** ON SOMETHING—governmental, ruling *power* is the issue of putting **controls** on whatever is ruled over.

- Governmental *power* is fundamentally a **CONTROL system!** (God's controlling something with it.)

- But before He brought Governmental *powers* (Pl.) in to effect—He first brought a Governmental *power* (Sing.) into effect!

- When God originally created all things—He did so in a very particular ORDER—He first created “*the heaven and the earth*” (Gen. 1:1) - and at the time He created the *power* (Sing.) to exist in that realm (before sin, evil, corruption, crime, etc. ever existed).

- Immediately upon creating the realm of heaven & earth on Day 1—God brought a Governmental *power* (Sing.) into effect — in other words, **He brought a system of CONTROL into effect** that was of a singular, unified nature.

- Now it’s no big mystery that when you go back in God’s word to find out about both the *power* (Sing.) and the *powers* (Pl.) - that there’s only 2 logical places where that fits:

1) When it comes to: ***For there is no power* (Sing) but of God**—the reality of that statement (being the true statement that it is; the factual statement that it is; and what it means), all takes you back to Genesis chapters 1 & 2.

2) When it comes to: ***the powers* (Pl.) that be are ordained of God**—you don’t come across that ‘fractioning’ of that singular Governmental *power* (Sing.) to the point of producing Governmental *powers* (Pl.) [or human governments (Pl.) on this earth] with an *ordinance* concept attached to it until you get to the period of time **after the Flood of Noah** in Genesis chapter 9, especially, but really in Genesis chapters 8, 9, 10, and 11.

- And when it comes to you and I being able to fully understand and appreciate the Core, Seminal Issues in Government (even at this present time in the disp. of grace) - we have to understand what God understands about **Power** in the first place (when He brought it into existence in connection with the creation of this earth and man’s existence on it) — and then what God did when He brought in the “New World Order” after the Flood.

- Because at that time of the Flood—that’s when God ‘fractured’ the *power* into *powers*. (truth is—there are at least 3 things God fractured at the Judgment of the Flood: Earth/ Sea/ Power.)

- Now the BIG Questions is: WHY? Why did He do that? Why did He fracture the *power* into *powers*? What was he *ordaining* (**control-wise**) when He did that?

- And the only way that can be properly understood and appreciated is to understand what He did when He brought the *power* into existence in the first place as a *singular power* (Un-fractured).

- And as far as our passage goes in Romans 13:1, God our Father has put the information in the exact order and in the exact proper Sense & Sequence for us to get that proper understanding — because after the exhortation of the 1st Sentence (*Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers.*), the very first Clause of the 2nd Sentence is: ***For there is no power but of God:*** - and that colon tells you to stop/pause long enough so that if you don't know it already, then go back and get the proper understanding you need before going on.

- So, according to the Sense & Sequence of 'first things first' - that 1st clause that says, *For there is no power but of God* directs us to go back to Genesis chapters 1 and 2 and get the appreciation for what was in God's thinking when He brought Governmental Power into existence in the first place.

- And what we're going to be going after is—to get that 1st Core, Seminal, First-Thought-Response Issue that will enable us to look right through what a Government is doing; what kind/quality it is; and right through the people that occupy the positions of authority in it—and see it exactly as God does!

- So when the apostle Paul says, *For there is no power but of God*—the *power* is power in the sense of **CONTROL**—and what we're after is: **What was the original purpose of the Control???**

- Genesis 1

- When we go back to the very first time God ever confronts us with the reality of: *For there is no power* (no governmental power) *but of God*—we're dealing with the issue of Him bringing some **control** into existence.

- And when you don't have sin to contemplate yet—therefore when you don't have anything that indicates or would be conducive to disorder, or lack of control, or out of control or something like that—that means, therefore, that you've got to be thinking about the **control** even in a more fundamental way.

- And when the fundamental understanding of what that original control was for—then even when you do have sin enter the picture—and when ‘out of controlness’, disorder, devolution, (and worse) becomes an issue—even then, that same, fundamental reason for why God created the *power* in the first place is still going to be the BIG issue with Him.

- And any ‘adjustments’, alterations, or changes or improvements or whatever He makes are still to enable Him to do with the original purpose of the control what He designed to do with it!

- So we need to now identify what that fundamental **control** issue is all about in the first place. — And our goal here is (once we identify what that fundamental **control** issue is all about) - to then deal with it as events occurred *after* bringing it into existence whereby God made adjustments to it (fractured it) in order to preserve & continue to make the original purpose of that control still effectual—and still enabling it so that once the whole sin issue, and evil, and opposition, and everything else that is disruptive in nature gets taken care of & gets dealt with in its entirety and gets dismissed and pushed off the scene — that what God originally brought the **control** into existence for in the first place would just continue on as if it merely hit a ‘bump in the road’ (so to speak).

- (Review Chart #47) —

- DAY 1: heaven & earth—light & darkness—day & night.

- DAY 2: firmament—divided the waters—the firmament is called “Heaven” - Lucifer falls

- DAY 3: dry land, called “Earth”—waters gathered into Seas — grass, herbs, fruit trees

- DAY 4: sun, moon & stars (*set* them in the firmament)

- DAY 5: creatures in the waters—fish & fowl (birds)

- DAY 6: living creatures upon the earth—cattle, creeping things, beasts—man & woman

- Genesis 1:26-28 - Let's first of all think about what Adam was thinking and what he perceived—you kind of have to **put yourself in Adam's shoes!**
- Genesis Ch. 2 = looping parallelism—loops back to give further details about what happened when God created Adam on Day 6.
- read Genesis 2:7-9; 15-20
- At this point—even though God told Adam that this thing called “*evil*” existed, until God told him what it was, Adam didn't have a clue about it—but he did have some understanding about the kind of commission God commissioned him with back in Genesis 1:26-28 in connection with what his vocation was—Adam became aware of what God had done, and what was to be going on from that point on.
- There's something that Adam would have understood about *power* — and he understood it, **because God gave it to him!**
 - God gave that *power* to Adam in Gen. 1:26 (*dominion*) and in Gen. 1:28 (... *and subdue it: and have dominion* ...) - and Adam was to exercise it!
 - And when God gave it to Adam, Adam would have understood it *before* sin was an issue in the earth—he would have understood it untainted & un-influenced by anything other than God's most fundamental reason for bringing it into existence in the first place!
- Put yourself in Adam's shoes at one particular moment in time—Adam stands there commissioned as the Monarch of the Earth—no sin has entered the realm of the earth yet; there's no disorder yet; there's nothing 'out of control' yet; there's no rebellion that needs to be put down yet—but God talks to him about *dominion*—God commissions him to *subdue* the earth and have *dominion* over all that lives on it—
 - That word *dominion* can be used as a noun—but here it's used as a verb (“let them have *dominion*”) — and so it's taking the concept of **a rulership that has authority to it that imposes a control on something**, and then you're talking about **enacting it**.

- And then in Genesis 1:28, God actually gives that *dominion* (or controlling power) to Adam. (and he intends to give it to Adam's wife as well.)

- Then God immediately puts Adam to work naming all the animals—and as Adam stands there with this *power*, this **controlling power**—and as he looks out at all the animals—just before he begins to go to work—what did he know (at that moment) that the *controlling power* God just gave to him was for? (he knew he had it for a reason!) Why was Adam given “*dominion*”? (most basic & fundamentally of all?)

- Maybe it would help to say—that God gave Adam this *dominion* (or power) because of the **unique creature** that Adam was (a Godly creature)—and because of that, Adam was planned and purposed by God to be His “son”! — this is a sonship issue!

A: The whole purpose of the *power* (or the control that comes from *having dominion*) is because it's the methodology by which the business of God will get carried out!

- Now that may not make you ‘thunder-struck’ - but it's got to be said that way, and understood & appreciated that way—**because that's how a “son” Thinks!!!**

- A son is involved in his Father's business—and when it comes to our fundamental, initial education in the issue of our *instruction of Godly Justice* in the 3rd Component of Godly Justice pertaining to human government—God expects us to look at human government **as an extension of the original *power* that He brought into existence in the first place—which was the methodology by which His business will get accomplished within His creation!**

- Every aspect of His business gets accomplished through a **set of controls** that He puts upon His creation!

- And the fundamental purpose of that *power* is to allow Him to conduct His business!

- And the truth of the matter is—the fundamental reason for human government (when God fractured the *power* and brought it into existence in a multiplicity of forms) is to enable Him to conduct His business as the evolution of man's ungodliness **worsens!**

- And if a Christian will look at human government as an extension of the means by which God is able to conduct His business—it puts a whole new perspective on it!

- And it makes it so you can understand why you are to pray the way that I Timothy 2:1-2 talks about—and why you are to gladly pay your taxes—and so forth—

— because it's one of the most obvious ways in which you Labor together with your Father in His business!

- Because the whole thing (government) exists so that God can carry out His business!

- And therefore, that's what makes it such a **big problem** to the Adversary! (Because it's designed to enable God to carry out HIS business! — It's NOT designed to enable the Adversary to carry out his own business!)

- And when you go back to Genesis to find out that most fundamental of all reason for Government to exist in the first place—even before God fractured that Power (sing.) - when God created Adam and gave him that Power, Adam was a “son” of God—he was a ‘help meet’ for God (see again Gen. 1:28 & 2:18-20).

- And Adam understands and appreciates that he's been created **to carry out God's business**—(kind of like he's a ‘junior-partner’ in the whole business on this earth)!

- And when God gave Adam the “*dominion*” - He gave him the **methodology** by which His business is going to be carried out; and by which the objectives of His business are going to be accomplished!

- And when Adam goes out and does what he does there in Genesis 2:18-20—**that's the perspective from which he operates!!!**

- Now we only have a brief time in which Adam operated laboring with God in His business as recorded in God's word—but it's apparent to me that as it went on (if Adam had not sinned), that God would be educating him all the time.

- And had the Adversary not struck on the 8th day—Adam evidently would have (every morning) sat down with his ...

Father—and the Father would have gone over what the 1st Order of Business was (so to speak) in connection with [especially] that second week of existence—all in doing what was necessary in preparation for that **2nd Sabbath after the 1st**—which was the time in which God’s City (God’s residence, which will later on be called the New Jerusalem) was going to come down from the 3rd Heaven to the Earth.

- And what would have taken place (if the Adversary hadn’t stuck as quick as he did—[which shows that he’s not stupid]) — and what would have happened on the morning of the 8th Day was that Adam and his Wife would have sat down with the Lord Jesus Christ in the Garden of Eden—and the Lord would have (undoubtedly) declared what area within Eden needed to be fully prepared —

— and the animal creatures that were out there needed to be told about it, and needed to be organized in connection with their capacities and their abilities to provide for the establishing of the area with that City coming down and being set upon the *beams of his chambers (Psa. 104:3)*.

- And my understanding is that over the course of the next 6 Days that followed the original Creation Week—all that territory within Eden would have been prepared—and would have been marked out—and the very kind of thing that Ezekiel was given to see (in Eze. 40-48), when he’s given to see the ‘frame’ of the City—my understanding is that Adam would have ‘framed’ the whole thing out!

- And the Garden area would have been all prepared; and the Orchard area would have all been prepared—and the areas for the animal’s domain and for the River (and for its widening) would have been prepared — and all that kind of stuff would have been set up.

- Now my point in all this is to say that—Adam’s thinking in connection with the 1st Order of Business he knows about, is to make all the necessary preparations for that City to come down.

- And what possesses Adam’s thinking is: I’ve been given all this *dominion* (or Governing **POWER** [sing.] OR CONTROL) in order to succeed with that 1st Order of God’s BUSINESS!!!

- And once that took place—and the City was down on the Earth—then the next Order of Business would have been given.

- And the issue is—that every further expression of the *dominion* Adam was given was to succeed with Business of God.

- Therefore the whole reason for God taking that original *Power* and giving it to Adam as the *dominion* he was to have—was that it is the methodology by which the Business of God gets accomplished!

- And when it comes to our passage in Romans 13:1 (and the 1st and most Fundamental reason for why a son is to *let his soul be subject to the higher powers*) — and the reason for that is expressed in the 1st Clause of the Godly Thinking: *For there is no power but of God* — is that a son is to be able to look right through the kind/quality of Government he's living in; look right through what it's doing and who's occupying the positions of that Government; and see that Government as a fragment of the original, singular POWER that is **OF God** (not 'by' God) — and he's to recognize that the 1st, most fundamental, core, seminal issue is: **The singular, controlling, governmental power of God is the methodology by which all His business gets accomplished!**

- And that's the fundamental, quintessential matter in connection with "*For there is no power but of God*" when He created it and brought it into existence and endued it upon the creatures that He gave it: man (Adam) on the Earth; & certain of the Angels in the angelic realm— their understanding was: This is how God's Business gets conducted!

And that can also be verified in the negative—that is, when Lucifer sinned—in connection with his formulation of his Plan of Evil—what he did was to take the *dominion* that had been given to him, and use it for his own business purposes (as outlined in his Plan of Evil) - and then he went and immediately trafficked in his iniquity amongst the ones in the angelic realm to whom the *dominion* had been given! (i.e., *principalities, powers, mights, thrones*, etc.) — because he knew that the *dominion* was the way in which The Business gets accomplished—and so he needs that to accomplish his own business — and to thwart the Business of God!

- And when that fundamental, *there is no power but of God* concept is understood and appreciated—that then paves the way for understanding “*the powers that be*” like God wants us to!

- And to realize that those *powers* are a fractured element of that original *power*—and God didn’t come up with something brand new or radically different when sin, evil, wickedness, wrong doing, and so forth came into existence.

- No. that *power (sing.)* is still there—it’s just that now it’s been broken up—**and it still retains, therefore, (in God’s plan & purpose) its original design & purpose.**

- And God’s still utilizing it in its ‘fractured’ state right now in its most essential, quintessential reason for it existing in the first place: It enables Him to accomplish His Business!

- Any Questions about the 1st Part (or the 1st Reason) for why you are to “*let your soul be subject unto the higher powers*” - any Questions about “***For there is no power but of God***”???

- You understand and appreciate that the original “Power” was God putting a set of CONTROLS upon His creation—and those Controls were (and still are) in the form of Governmental Power.

- You understand and appreciate that the fundamental reason for the Power (sing.) (the Original Governmental Power *before* any sin, evil, wrongdoing, ungodliness, crime, etc.) - the fundamental, Core, Seminal Issue for the Power in the first place is: that **the Power (sing.) is the methodology by which the business of God will be carried out!**

- And therefore all of the “*powers (pl.) that be*” are an **extension of the original “power” that God brought into existence in the first place!**

- That should then take us to the 2nd Clause of the Godly Thinking of (:1):
“the powers that be are ordained of God.”

- And what we need to focus upon—and get an understanding and appreciation for is that 1) The original Power has been fractured into “*the powers (pl.) that be*” - and 2) The issue that the *powers that be* are **ORDAINED** of God—that issue of God ordaining those *powers*.

- And as we've noted before—when it comes to getting the Core, Seminal, First-Thought Response Thinking of God the Father and God the Son in regard to “*the powers that be*” - there is a particular place in God's word where you can go to get that Core, Seminal Issue—which is where God deals with “*the powers that be*” for the very first time.

- And that place in God's word is in Genesis chapters 8-11 (especially 8:15-9:17)

- This is the same passage we looked at when we first saw how that God made certain adjustments to man's overall sense of Justice.

- But now we want to look for some matters in connection with God taking that Original Power (sing.) and **fracturing** it into the Powers (pl.).

- **read Gen. 8:15-9:1**

- Note: 9:1 — It's commonly pointed out here that this passage is very similar to Gen. 1:28, except God **leaves out** the whole issue of Noah and his sons “**having dominion**” over all the earth and the creatures that live in it.

- And the assumption is that since Adam lost the Monarchy of the earth—and that the Monarchy of the earth now rests with the Adversary, God simply doesn't say anything about “having dominion”. (as if that's one of the issues contained in God's Judgment upon the world at the Flood).

- However, my understanding is that is NOT the reason why the issue of “having dominion” is not spoken about with Noah and his sons — rather, it all has to do with God **fracturing** the Power into Powers — and therefore the “dominion” issue isn't going to rest in a single man (so to speak) - or to put it another way, the Power (sing.) isn't going to be in a man's possession like it was with Adam—now, in the New World Order, the Power is going to be fractured into Powers, and the “dominion” issue will now rest in various & sundry Governments on the earth—hence, God establishes Human Governments! (or “*the powers that be*”)!)

- read Gen. 9:2-7

(Gen. 9-11)

- When God brings in the New World Order—He describes the aspects of His business that He is going to be conducting with the ‘world at large’ now—based upon some Judgments that He had just brought in that made for some **radical** changes—Judgments that were done for the preservation of the human race—and for making it so that the human race doesn’t get itself in the exact same ‘boat’ of sheer stupidity in connection with the Adversary and his Plan of Evil — and God also made some changes in connection with the Adversary’s capabilities (which was not something unfair for God to do) —

— but when God sets up the New World Order (which includes the issue of the fracturing of the Power into “*the powers that be, being ordained of God*” — **it’s still all done for the purpose of allowing Him to continue to succeed with His business!**

- (Whether it’s a short-term aspect of His business; or a long-term aspect of His business; or whether it’s looking way out to the future time when the entire Satanic Plan of Evil in Heaven & Earth is completely dismantled, demolished, and destroyed and no longer an issue—it all comes back to the issue of: by fracturing the Power into Powers, it allows for God to continue to succeed with His business, even to be totally successful with it in the ‘long run.’)

- And Romans 13:1-2 is designed to produce that very same fundamental, First-Thought type Godly Thinking in us as sons in regard to the “*higher powers*” that we’re being told to be *subject* unto!

- Truth is—we’ve got every opportunity to look at “the higher powers” as the people of the world do—and to murmur and complain and to grumble and moan about them—but the issue is: We’re to look at them as to where they came from most fundamentally of all in connection with the existence of the Original Power in the first place (and what it’s all about, and what it’s all for) — and to realize that in the process of time; once sin entered the world, and the Plan of Evil got implemented in the world; God saw fit to fracture that Power; ordain the same, original purpose of that Power in a multiplicity form within Nations on the face of this earth— and the most fundamental thing for a member of the Church, the Body of Christ to **think** about in connection with that (in the face of all he’s confronted with on a daily basis that’s done by that Government: good, bad, or indifferent)

... is that the ‘eyes of his understanding’ is to be always penetrating through all that, right back to that Original, Core, Seminal Issue that the Lord Jesus Christ & God the Father think of first & foremost—and that is that God created that Power in the first place to accomplish His business!

- And the “Head” expects the members of His body to think that first & foremost—and to therefore be *subject unto those higher powers* **for that reason!**

- And my point in going over all this (repetitive as it is for some of you) is that **it’s by the effectual working of that initial Godly Thinking that produces the fundamental, genuine, Godly VALUE & ESTEEM (i.e., Love!) for the Power and it’s present Powers form!**

- And what I’m really after in all this is—that by the effectual working of the Godly Thinking of Romans 13:1 & 2—and by the effectual production of the fundamental, genuine, Godly Value & Esteem for the Power and it’s present Powers — (just as all of the Godly Thinking Aspects of all of the various Components of Wisdom, Justice, Judgment, and Equity) - **the by-product of the effectual working of the Godly Thinking is for the curriculum of Sonship Education (i.e., for the actual words of God Himself on the pages of His word) TO PRODUCE A GODLY DESIRE for the Conduct & Behavior and for the Godly Labor as well!!!**

- And the truth is—I can’t produce that!!! A Pastor/Bishop or Bible Teacher/Preacher can’t do that! A clever Outline or a creative, imaginative, ingenious sermon or well-turned phrase by a well-trained speaker can’t do that!

- Truth is—only a **supernatural** work of you being *led by the Spirit of God* through the word of God (the curriculum for your Sonship Education) can do that!!!

- And for you to have a Godly DESIRE to *let your soul be subject unto the higher powers* GLADLY, without murmur or complaint—and with real sonship intelligence—that can only be accomplished by the effectual working of the Godly Thinking!

- Now before going any further—(looking back on what we’ve gone over and what I’ve taught you [and how I’ve gone about teaching it]) — I think the wisest thing to do right here is to kind of draw back from the details of our text and talk about some overall issues that we probably should have talked about before we ever got this far.

- And my reason for this is because it is very easy to get lost in all that’s going on here. — It’s easy to kind of get a whole bunch of facts and things in your mind (or on the table) and really feel like you just don’t know what to do with all of them!

- (And that’s my fault!)

- As I just said—in order to get that Godly DESIRE generated within your inner man to GLADLY *let your soul be subject unto the higher powers*—only the effectual working of the actual words contained in the Godly Thinking of Romans 13:1 & 2 can accomplish that.

- And just to kind of give you a mechanical, “Step-by-Step” method in which that gets accomplished—when you look at the Godly Thinking of verses 1 & 2—how many “Steps” are there?

- A: There are 4—(pay attention to the periods and the colons)

- The Exhortation for receiving the instruction of Justice—and the overall issue in a son making Just Decisions where human government and established authority is concerned is:
Let every (i.e. your) soul be subject unto the higher powers.

- And to be willing, able, enthusiastic, and delighted to do that—it takes 4 Steps of Godly Thinking:

Step 1: To think: ***For there is no power but of God:***

Step 2: In light of that, to think: ***the powers that be are ordained of God.***

Step 3: In light of those 2 things, to think: ***Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God:***

Step 4: In light of those 3 things, to think: ***and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation.***

- And by now you should have no problem at all with Step 1—*For there is no power but of God*—The Original Power God created was a set of Governmental CONTROLS put upon His creation—and the Seminal Issue in that is that the Power (sing.) or Control is the methodology by which God is going to accomplish His business with all that He created.

- But that doesn't tell you (or *fully* answer with Godly contentment and Godly satisfaction) why you would **gladly** *subject your soul unto the higher powers*—[it's a start, but there's still 3 more Steps to go until the entire Godly Thinking of Justice in regard to Government is fully established within you!] (that's just 1/4 of it!)

- Now since we're stepping back a bit (so to speak) from the details of the text—to just talk a little more about the what these 7 verses are designed to do and what they accomplish—it's commonly taught that what Paul is saying here is that a good Christian should always be obedient to the Government and to the 'laws of the land'; a good Christian should always pay his taxes; & if you break the laws of the land, you'll have to pay the consequences—which is all well and good ...

- But then some teaching arises that says that since those occupying the offices of Government are "ministers of God," then God apparently chooses (or *ordains*) those who sit in the seats of power in the Government—that God puts them in those offices by Divine Decree—and therefore "we get the Government that we deserve!" (Which is the very way I used to teach this!)

- And that **is** an ASSUMPTION—that's NOT what this is saying—and that's nothing more or less than corrupt doctrine!

- But the thing that's probably nagging you at this point is—ok, this is all well and good for a Government that doesn't have really ungodly, un-biblical laws—and this is all well and good for a Government that doesn't **persecute** you for being a Christian—but what about living in a Government that *does* persecute you for being a Christian (or a Government that wants to "take Christ out of Christmas" and make it a "Winter Celebration" - or remove the Cross and the 10 Commandments from the public square)? In other words, aren't there times when I'm supposed to resist the powers that be?

- And this kind of thinking usually stems from what Paul says in (:3) [which is the first part of the Godly Conduct & Behavior] — “*For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil.*”

- And the common thinking among most Christians is—that all Paul says here—that *letting your soul be subject unto the higher powers* is to be done only as long as the Government is NOT being a “*terror to good works*” — that is, that as long as I’m doing good, godly works and the Government is ok with that (and not terrorizing me for it), then I should be *subject unto the higher powers*—but when the Government becomes a “*terror*” to my good works, then I should resist that Government.

- And oftentimes the appeal is made to such passages as Acts 4:19-20 (*19 But Peter and John answered and said unto them, Whether it be right in the sight of God to hearken unto you more than unto God, judge ye. 20 For we cannot but speak the things which we have seen and heard.*) — or Acts 5:29 (*29 Then Peter and the other apostles answered and said, We ought to obey God rather than men.*)

- But when you carefully pay attention to what is being said in Romans 13:1-7—**there is NO qualifier placed upon anything Paul says!**

- In other words—my understanding (especially of what Paul says in [:3]) is a truism REGARDLESS of whether your Government is persecuting you or not!!!

- In other words—*rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil AT ALL TIMES!!!*

- Romans 13:3 is NOT a relative statement—and we’re not being taught to look at it that way!

- In fact, it’s only taken that way (as a relative statement) because those 4 Steps of the Godly Thinking have not been properly understood and appreciated!

- And what’s especially misunderstood or not properly handled is the information sitting at the end of (:1) and the beginning of (:2) concerning what it means for God to have **ordained** the *powers that be*—and then what it means for those *powers* to have become an **ordinance of God!**

- And that means that what is also misunderstood is that when Paul says, “*good works*” - the ‘good works’ that he has in view there (even though those are very broad terms) — what he has in view are some SPECIFIC *good works*!

- And the common assumption (and misunderstanding) is that Paul says, “For rulers are not a terror to good works, **but to evil** (that is, “but to evil works” or evil doers) — BUT THAT’S **NOT** WHAT THAT VERSE SAYS!

- It says, *For rulers are not a terror to good works, **but to THE evil!!!***

- And my understanding is that Paul (and God) have a very specific and very particular “evil” in view: **THE EVIL!**

- And the truth is—before you would ever get to (:3), there’s some information and some terminology sitting back in (:2) that’s connected to some information sitting in (:1) that, when it’s properly understood and appreciated will make it so that you already know what the *good works* are in (:3) and what *the evil* is that (:3) is specifically talking about before you ever get to it!

- And when that’s properly understood and appreciated— (:3) was as true of George Washington as it was true of Nero; it was as true of Ronald Regan as it’s true of President Obama; it was as true of Stalin as it was true of Winston Churchill — and it was even true of Hitler!

- Back to **Genesis 9:1-7** (read)

- Here is the moment in history when God “fractured” the *Power* (sing.) into the *Powers* (pl.). [Div. Inst. of Human Government]

- And in order to get a fuller understanding and appreciation for the Core, Seminal Issue of the Godly Thinking of the phrase, “*the powers that be are ordained of God (Rom. 13:1c) - [Step 2]*” of the Godly Thinking — you have to understand the reason for why God fractured the *Power* into the *Powers that be* right after the Flood.

- And the reason for that is because of what had taken place in connection with Satan’s Plan of Evil and sin entering the world—and then the rapid effects and ramifications of the Plan of Evil and sin in

in the world and what it all did and what it all generated in the interval between Genesis 3 and Genesis 6 when the Flood was brought upon the earth in Judgment of all that.

- By the time you get to Genesis chapter 6 the world (and the men in it; and even the animals in it) had rapidly gotten to the point in which man's very existence upon the earth could have come to a speedy **end**.

- The *old world* or *the world that then was*, really was just as Peter describes it: ***the world of the ungodly*** (*II Pet. 2:5*)!

- And there were things that took place that—when God responded to it with the Judgment of the Flood—and with the destruction of the *world of the ungodly* at that time—when God, having made provision for His business to carry on regardless of that—(which, of course, is what God saving Noah, his wife, their 3 sons and their wives is all about!) —

— when the Judgment is over, and the physical situation exists upon the earth for the resumption of God's business to carry on with Noah and his sons & their wives—God brings the New World Order in—and He makes 'adjustments' & 'alterations' and some 'changes' to how things "used to be" in that "*old world*" order!

- And there were several things God changed and adjusted—(one being the heightening of man's innate 'sense of justice,' [as we have already seen] — but another one of those changes is this issue of God fracturing the Controlling, Governmental Power (sing.) into *the powers (pl.) that be*.

- But even then—that is still to allow God to carry on with His business in view of the **devolving** effects of sin now in the world; and in view of the Satanic Plan of Evil in the world — and the reciprocal **Evolving** effects of man's ungodliness and Satan and his angels evolving ungodliness!

- (and both evolve—and get worse and worse)

- But the fracturing of the Power is done in order for God to continue on with His business—to continue on with His business *in* the New World Order, and to provide for continuing on with His business as He deals with the implementation of the Plan of Evil under the New World Order System **in** which He's determined that there **won't** be

another New World Order after it—(there will be the dismantling, demolition, and destruction of the entire Plan of Evil under this New World Order) - and then He'll get BACK to doing what He originally created creation for in the first place—and He'll accomplish it with all those to whom He provided Redemption and the ones who took advantage of it by getting themselves Redeemed.

- And that's a kind of overall package of information that hopefully allows for you to view the entire Time Line of events with that 'golden thread' (so to speak) of the Power (or Control over God's creation) and the reason for it in the first place, and then the fracturing of that Power into the *powers that be*—but you see that the original reason for that Power is always there—and you see that it's there, even now and on into the future—it never gets broken, there's no interruption in it—it's there from the beginning of creation; & it's still there today—and it's still there on out in the “*fullness of times*” throughout *the ages to come, world without end!*

- Now with that understood—let's now look at the details of Step 2 (*the powers that be are ordained of God*) - and let's **add** to our understanding of what the 2nd Core, Seminal Issue is about of a son's Godly, Just Thinking about Governmental Power that matches up with God's own Just Thinking.

- We know that “*the powers that be*” are the various Governments and Governmental Powers (or levels of government) that exist within any given nation on the face of the earth.

- Running from the King or President or Prime Minister or whatever—down to the lowest ranking position of your local county, city, or town. (easy enough)

- So what we need to get down to—is a good grasp upon what it means when God says that He took that original *Power*, fractured it into *Powers*—and then took those *Powers* and **ordained** them.

... *the powers that be are ordained of God.*

- And note that they are *ordained OF God*—(not “**BY**” God).

- Granted, *of* and *by* can convey very similar meaning—but when something is done *by* someone, it doesn't necessarily mean that the one who did it is the source or origin or author of it—the action could be done *by* someone, but they

could be far removed from any personal relationship or personal ‘ties’ to what they’re acting upon—but by saying that *the powers that be are ordained OF God*, that preposition “*of*” indicates that God has a personal ‘tie’ or relationship with the *powers* and the *ordaining* of those *powers*.

- It points out the Excellency of our King James Bible (most of the Modern Trns. have ‘by’) — “*of*” continues to underscore the fact that all Governing & Controlling Power (whether in its Original Singular *Power* or in its present fractured *Powers that be* [President down to Town Clerk] - that they all have their origin, [genesis, if you will], their source, and their ownership in God Himself! (Government/ Governments are NOT the invention of man!)

- And that’s a critical little detail—because by matching up the phrasing of Step 1 (*For there is no power but OF GOD*) with Step 2 (*the powers that be are ordained OF GOD*) - it indicates to you (and to your eye as you read it) that even though God had to fracture the *Power* into *Powers*, He never relinquishes authorship & ownership of them—even in their present ‘fractured’ state! And it indicates that the *powers* still retain the original intent of the *power*!

- Now then—that leaves one critical issue remaining in Step 2—and that is that *the powers that be are **ORDAINED** of God*—the issue of God ‘*ordaining*’ the *powers* He fractured.

- And both this *ordaining* concept, and the next concept coming up in Step 3 (:2) - (the “*ordinance*” concept)—both of those concepts are going to tell you something **further** about the fragmented *powers*—something more about them that’s resident back in Genesis 8:15-ch.11 that God wants you to base your entire Godly Conduct & Behavior upon when it comes to living underneath whatever Government in which you live.

- Now what we’re going to see is that Step 2, here, (God ordaining the powers that be), is a necessary Step—but it’s really the proper sense and sequence to get to an even more defined issue (which is the issue of God taking the *Power*; fracturing it into *Powers*; Ordaining those *Powers*; to ultimately make the actual Governmental *Power* under which you live to carry within it this *Ordinance* of God.

- And that's exactly what is going on here—God goes from the General—to the particular—and then one more time, He goes to the even more specific or the fine details of the issue.

- So we've got the word **ordained** in Step 2 of (:1) - and then we've got the word **ordinance** in Step 3 of (:2) — and more often than not, most folks think, Well, that's just taking the “ordained” concept of (:1) [which is in a verb form], and putting into the noun form of (:2) [i.e., “ordinance”].

- And grammatically or etymologically, you could do that.

- But the noun form (i.e., “ordinance”) is NOT the ‘pure’ (so to speak) noun form of the verb “ordain” — (ordination is actually the ‘pure’ verb form of “ordain!”)

- And it's interesting that Paul didn't come along and say in (:2), ‘Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordination of God.’ (as if you're simply resisting the thing that God ‘ordained’ back up in [:1]).

- The “ordinance of God” is NOT a mere repetition of God ‘ordaining’ the powers! God isn't saying the same thing over again in (:2) that He just said in (:1) as though you didn't get it!

- So why in our English language do we have 2 distinct noun forms for the word ‘ordain’? — and there is a reason—and it's because of that reason that God uses the word *ordinance* rather than ‘ordination.’

- And we'll find out why when we see some further things sitting back there in Genesis 8 and 9.

- And what we're going to see here is that there is an awful lot of things that when it comes to *the powers that be*—that God has built some things into them that can (and do) occur quite naturally—and what I mean by that is that they don't have either (in the bad sense) Satan coming along and getting into that Government and ‘stirring the pot’ (so to speak) to make it evil—nor do they have God Himself coming along and manipulating the “good” rulers to do the bidding and the will of God (so to speak) - [which is a mistake most folk make by not rightly dividing the word of truth—and they see God

doing such things back in Israel's program with Israel's kings and so forth] — but what is often failed to be understood is the fact that when God fractured the Power into Powers—He **ordained** those *powers that be*—and by doing that, He vested them with some capacities that they will ALL naturally have without His (or the Adversary's) intervention!

- And that means that even in this dispensation of grace, **ALL** (every Gov. on the face of this earth) - **all** governments, by nature, retain and possess what God *ordained* for them to be and what God *ordained* for them to possess—regardless of what kind it is, or what quality it is, or who occupies the seats of its government.

- And that's a critical "Step" to understanding and appreciating first and foremost what it means for God to have *ordained* the *powers that be*.

- In Genesis 8:15ff—it's apparent that God has fractured the Power—He could have just given it to Noah as He did with Adam (and then to Japheth as the first born, and on down through that 'natural' lineage)—but He didn't—He didn't tell Noah to have "dominion" - and therefore, it's very apparent that God is NOT going to vest the Original Power in one man (in the same manner in which He did with Adam) - but now the Power is going to be fractured and vested in a great many entities that make up the Divine Institution of Human Government.

- And now governments (or *the powers that be*) are going to carry with them (and within them) the original intent of the Power (sing.) - which is the issue of: that's the methodology by which God will carry out His business on this earth.

- And it's also apparent from especially Genesis 9:1-7 that what's going to exist now is no longer the Power (sing.), but *the powers that be*—and those *powers* are still there for CONTROL—and they're still the means by which God is going to accomplish His business in the New World Order that He brings into affect after the Flood.

- But when God fractures the Power—you've now got this concept of them being ordained.

- What does it mean to *ordain* something?

- (Webster, 1828) *ordain* = to set; to establish in a particular office or order; hence to invest with a ministerial function.

- (Which is why you have the issue of those occupying governmental positions being *the ministers of God!*)

- Simply put—when you *ordain* something, **you officially establish it and make it the RULE!** (i.e., “This is the way things are going to be—and this is going to be the means by which things are done from now on!”)

- And notice that you might think that *ordain* could also be said about the Power (sing.) - but God doesn't have the apostle Paul utilize the word *ordain* until he gets to *the powers that be* (or the fractured *powers* concept).

- And that's done to underscore the fact that this multiplicity of *powers* now are **not** man's invention, either!

- God establishing the Original Power is a 'given' (so to speak—it was in existence before man was ever created) - but God also wants to make it clear that once sin entered the world, and the world became “*the world of the ungodly*” and God Judged that Old World by means of the Flood—and in this New World Order (now that things have changed) - God wants to make it clear that when it comes to these multiple *powers that be*, that God Himself established them as well!

- Now by virtue of God saying that *the powers that be are ordained of God*—(and why He says it there, but didn't say that about the Original Power) - that makes it so that you have to think a little more about what was taking place in Gen. 8 & 9 when they were *ordained* — when the 'fracturing' did take place.

- Because when God fractured the *Power* into *Powers*—and made it, therefore, so that the singular *Power* issue was no longer going to be the way of doing things as it was in the Old World—**there was a particular REASON behind that!**

- There was a particular reason **why** the New World Order **NEEDED** the *Power* to be fractured—and **needed** *powers* now to be *ordained!*

- There was a particular reason **why** *the powers that be* **needed** to be established as the recognized way things were going to run from now on!

- And what we're going to see is that—there's a direct 'tie-in' with this issue of *the powers that be are ordained of God* — and then what comes up in (:2) [Step 3] in that concept of each one of those individual Governments that comprise "*the powers that be*" having this *ordinance* concept to them.

- And what we're going to have to do is—we're going to have to get to the point where we are going to think of these 2 concepts (**God ordaining the powers—and those powers possessing the ordinance of God**) both together! - because they go together!

- **MINI REVIEW:**

- The 3rd & Final Component of our *receiving the* initial & fundamental *instruction of Justice* in our Sonship Education is the issue of Godly Justice in connection with Established Authority within the divine institution of human government. (Your relationship (as a son) to established authority/government).

- First of all—the Father exhorts us to what our sonship Thinking, Behavior, and Labor will all be about (the aim, goal, objective of it):

Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers.

- The Godly Thinking that will get that accomplished comes in 4 Steps—each one having a Core, Seminal Issue that progressively builds & develops out of each preceding Step:

- Step 1 of the Godly Thinking: ***For there is no power but of God:***

- God Himself originally invented/created governmental ***power*** as a singular entity.

- The original governmental ***power*** was created by God for the purpose of putting a set of CONTROLS upon His creation.

- The original governmental ***power*** was created and in effect BEFORE any sin, evil, wrongdoing, etc. ever existed.

- **The Core, Seminal Issue** of the original controlling and governing *power* therefore is that: The whole purpose of the original *power* (or governing control) is because *IT'S* the methodology by which the business of God will be carried out!

- One other issue (or feature) about this original, singular *power* (that I failed to point out when we first went over it) is—that when you're dealing with a *power* that is a governing and controlling *power*—one of the major features and functions that governing & controlling *power* has—is the ability or capacity to **INFLUENCE!** (or to hold sway)

- (And that feature of its capacity to **influence** is something that exists **both** when there is no sin, evil, & wrongdoing in the picture, and when sin, evil, & wrongdoing has entered the picture!)

- For example, in a room that you have decorated (a lot or a little) - you have exerted your influence upon that room—and it, therefore, gives knowledge of (or speaks of) you being there or having been there!

- Or in the context of governmental power—a king, monarch, president, prime minister, governor, etc., has a particular **influence** upon the people and the area in which he governs (his administration). And during the time of his administration, the people and the land reflect that leaders' governing **influence!**

- And governing and/or controlling *power* having to do with how God uses it to conduct His business—at the exact same time has to do with Him utilizing the *power* to effectively and effectually demonstrate His existence (the knowledge of who He is) - as well as to influence and hold sway over all His creation. — (it's a marvelous mechanism to spread one's influence!)

- A good example of God demonstrating governmental *power* used to spread His influence in connection with Him carrying out His business on this earth is found in a familiar passage in Isaiah chapter 9.

- (read) Isaiah 9:1-7

- Here in Ch.9, Isaiah is focusing upon the Climactic Stage in God's Program with Israel (the 4th & 5th Installments of the 5th Course of Punishment).

- Hence, this is a passage the deals **greatly** with the way in which God is going to be carrying out His **business** with this earth.

- Note: (:1-2) — is quoted by Matthew in Matthew 4:15-16 — but in a marvelous example of the Holy Ghost (Who, as the Author of God's word, possesses the copyright on all the Bible) - the HG **omits** part of this passage —

- (read Mat. 4:15-16) — the HG omits the words: *Nevertheless the dimness shall not be such as was in her vexation, when at the first he lightly afflicted— and — and afterward did more grievously afflict her.*

- The words quoted by Matthew focus upon the Lord's 1st Coming (or 1st Advent), which is the 4th Install. of the 5th CoP (the first part of the Climactic Stage) — and the words that are omitted focus upon the Lord's 2nd Coming (or 2nd Advent), which is the 5th Install. of the 5th CoP! [What fantastic accuracy!] — (the 4th & 5th Install./5th CoP are the Climactic Stage of Israel's Program—the Climactic Stage of God's business on this earth!)

- Note: (:3-5 [don't read]) deal with God bringing the 5th Install. upon them.

- Note: (especially & read) [:6 & 7] —

- (:6) the government issue—the issue of the governing/controlling **power**.

- (:7) ***Of the INCREASE of his government and peace there shall be no end, ...*** (this is the issue of the INFLUENCE capacity that the *power* has!)

- and note (:7) ***The ZEAL of the LORD of hosts will perform this.***—the issue of God carrying out His business by means of governing/controlling *power* is such a BIG deal with Him that He uses one of the

most powerful and forceful words to express His enthusiasm, fervency and passion for conducting and carrying out His business by means of this governing, controlling **POWER!!!**

- Now once Step 1 has been properly understood and appreciated—we then take that Godly Thinking and moved on to Step 2.

- Step 2 of the Godly Thinking: *the powers that be are ordained of God.*

- Now we're going to talk about that governing & controlling **power** in the plural—and there was a time in history (and in God's word) when He 'fractured' the **power** into **powers**—and that's what's recorded in Genesis 8-11 in regard to what God did just after the Flood.

- Here we cross a line (so to speak) - and even though sin, evil, wrongdoing, etc. had entered the world before the Flood — it wasn't until just after the Flood that God deliberately fractured the **power** into **powers**.

- Therefore as one of the measures that God took in order for the human race to not get to the point of self-destruction as it did just prior to the Flood, God fractured the **power** into **powers** — and God is now going to talk about those **powers** a little bit differently because of how they now will exist and function and have capacities to them, but now all in the face of sin, evil, wrongdoing, etc., and how those **powers the be** will have an affect upon sin, evil, wrongdoing, etc.

- And at the outset, it's critical to understand and appreciate that God did NOT have to invent/create new powers; or come up with something new and different in order to now deal with the destructive effects of sin & evil—no, all He had to do was to fracture it and instead of putting it in the hands of a single person (like Noah or one of his sons), God puts the **power** into a great multiplicity of human governments upon the earth, called here, **"the powers that be."**

- And therefore when it comes to **The Core, Seminal Issue** of Step 2—most fundamentally of all, By fracturing the power into powers, it allows for God to continue right on to succeed with His business & be totally successful with it in the 'long run.' [nothing has changed where God's bus. is concerned!]

- But now (in the face of the destructive nature of sin, evil, and wrongdoing) God does something special to those fractured **powers that be**—He **ordained** them—(*the powers that be are ordained of God.*)

- So now we can add to our understanding of what the Core, Seminal Issue of Step 2 is, and get it's fullness:

- By fracturing the **power** into **powers** in the New World Order, and by God **ordaining** the **powers that be**—God has officially established **ALL the powers that be** as the **rule** by which He will succeed with His business in the 'long run.' Which means that ALL human governments that ever exist (no matter what kind, form, or quality) will have something in common that allows for God to continue to carry out His business and be successful with it in time!

- By **ordaining** the **powers that be**, every human government that ever exists will, by nature, contain the **officially established rule** by which God will succeed in doing His business.

- And so now—with those first 2 Steps—(1) God created governing & controlling power in the first place in order to be the methodology by which He carries out His business; (2) In the New World Order, God fractured the power into powers and ordained them all (as many as there will ever be) as the officially established rule for the long-term success of His business — with those 2 Steps properly understood and appreciated—we're now ready to move on to Step 3.

- Step 3 of the Godly Thinking of Justice in regards to your relationship with human government is contained in the first clause of Romans 13:2.

2 *Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God:*

- Now before dealing with all of the details of Step 3—let's quickly move to dealing with that issue at the end of the clause: ***the ordinance of God.***

- And I say 'quickly' because the issue of God ordaining the powers — and those powers possessing the ordinance of God—those 2 issues go together—and need to be thought of together!

- Again—when God fractured the *Power* into *Powers*, and made it, therefore, so that the singular *Power* was no longer going to be the way of doing things as it was in the Old World—but now the way of doing things in the New World Order would be by *the powers that be* — **there was a very particular REASON behind that!**

- There was a particular reason why the New World Order **NEEDED** the *Power* to be fractured—and **NEEDED** the *powers that be* to be **ordained!**

- There was a specific reason for why *the powers that be* **needed** to be ***ordained*** as the officially recognized and officially established way things were going to run from now on!

- In fact—due to the simple fact that just after the Flood took place (as we have already seen) - God heightened man’s natural ‘sense’ of Justice— even that goes hand-in-hand with an officially recognized & established governing & controlling *power* in the form of human government.

- But for now—the concept of God ***ordaining*** the *powers*, and that each of those *powers* possessing an ***ordinance of God***—those 2 concepts go together—they’re integral, one to another—they’re purposefully related—and the truth is, they both took place at the exact same time!

- At the same time in which God brought in a heightened sense of Justice in man’s natural make-up—He fractured the *Power*; ***ordained Powers*** to be the norm from now on—and the reason for doing those 2 things **IS THE SAME!**

- The reason for increasing man’s sense of Justice & fracturing the *Power* into *Powers* is the SAME in both cases!

- And that takes us right back to **Genesis 8 & 9.**

- In particular—in **Gen. 9** (especially :4-7) - when God heightens man’s sense of Justice and when He ***ordains*** these *powers*—if you pay close attention, you’ll realize that God said something prior to that, in which He gives you the REASON for doing that! (and you understand that when He *ordains* the *powers*, He establishes an ***ordinance***—an ***ordinance*** ends up being brought into effect!)

- And my understanding is that an *ordinance* is **not** the same thing as an 'ordination' —

— in this case (and in this context) - an ordinance is the **PRODUCT** of this 'ordination' — (it's the **product** of God's *ordaining* the *powers* in a plural form).

- And as you think about what God does in Gen. 9:4-7—when God establishes the *powers* He's just *ordained* as an *ordinance* — God, in essence, now puts those *powers that be* into man's hands on a multiplicity-type level—and by doing so, God therefore makes man **responsible** and **accountable** for it!

- And I only point that out to say that by doing it the way He did it—it takes this issue of government and governing, controlling power and it **intensifies the whole matter in man's thinking!**

- (Which is why government is something that man is always preoccupied with!) [men **never** come along and say, "Let's just forget about this whole business of government—it always gets screwed up— it's just a worthless idea, so let's just scrap the whole thing!"]

- no—man has a natural sense of accountability where government is concerned! - and it's just naturally blended in with man's heightened sense of Justice!

- So let's now look at what it was that God said previous to Genesis chapter 9 that points to the very reason for *ordaining* the *powers* and immediately producing an **ordinance** by *ordaining* them.

- By the way—this is going to clear up what God means in Rom. 13:3 when He talks about *good works* and "**the**" *evil*. [*For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil.*]

- Notice **Genesis 8:20-22**

- In this New World Order situation, God records the issue that (in :21) - *for the imagination of man's heart is evil from his youth;*

- Man's *heart* had not changed—the judgment of the Flood was not designed to change man's *heart*—rather, it was designed to remedy the **PRODUCT** of man's *heart*!

- And there were some changes God was going to make on the '**outside**' of man's *heart* (so to speak) in this New World Order that will make it so that man's *heart* (and what it's capable of producing) cannot produce as **rapidly** as had been produced previously: "*the world of the ungodly*" that would necessitate God destroying the world and man in the world.

- Notice: (:21) - *for the imagination of man's heart is evil from his youth* — and that's not said outside of a CONTEXT—(and it doesn't say that 'the imagination of man's heart is "**sinful**" from his youth') — that's true, but God doesn't say that—because the issue that He's after isn't simply that man's a sinner!

- Truth is—if that was the issue, then God would have brought the Flood in right after Adam sinned!

- The *evil* that God has in view here is something that became an expression of man's *heart* after sin entered the world; after man began to multiply; after children began to be born—after you had man who had a state of youth!

- In other words—when it comes to defining that *evil*, it's defined back in Genesis chapter 6! (where God makes statements & observations, and declares the specifics of what the Old World had become).

- And the one particular thing that God has in view isn't that man's a sinner; and isn't that he sins—and isn't that his sins can be fornication, or adultery, or thievery, or disobedient to parents, or all sorts of the works of the flesh that we could name — rather, it's ONE PARTICULAR THING that man's *heart* '**tends**' unto, unless God does something to keep it in check!

- **Genesis 6:5-13** (read)

- (and the thing we're after is what God is going to define as *the evil* in this context)

- Look especially at (:11-13) - and even more at (:13) when God speaks to Noah and tells him the particular reason **why** He's going to destroy MAN with the earth.

- What is the specific *evil* in man's *heart* that's there from his *youth* that is the reason for why God's going to destroy *all flesh* with the *earth*?

A: **VIOLENCE!** - that's the issue! and that's the *evil!*

- Truth is—all 3 realms (angelic, animal, and man) had become ***violent***—and all 3 realms now, based upon their ability to influence and work on this earth have made it so that the whole earth had been ***filled with violence!***

- Now *violence* is also a broad-based term—so you're going to have to think about that in connection with man's Conduct & Behavior here.

- Because that's the CORE ISSUE here to God in the *ordaining* of human government—**it's designed to keep *violence* in check!**

- And that's why—regardless of what kind or what form that human government takes—**it will always be doing that!**

- Granted, some will do it better than others—but the issue is: **every form of government** (from the raunchiest dictatorship to the most wonderful Monarchy or Republic) - **it abhors, by nature, men being *VIOLENT* under its reign!**

- And that's *THE EVIL* that God *ordained* governments to be His *ministers*—and to *attend upon continually*: the issue of keeping man's ability to be *violent* under **control!**

- And the *good works* that Paul has in view in Rom. 13, are the works that are the OPPOSITE of *violence*—they're *works of peace, quietness, and orderliness.*

- And that's why it's called in Rom. 13:2 ***the ordinance of God!***

- **An ordinance is an established means of maintaining ORDER!**

- Therefore, when it comes to the Core, Seminal Issue of Romans 13:2a (*Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ORDINANCE of God:*) - the Seminal Issue in God producing an *ordinance* when He *ordained* the *powers that be*—is that:

God established every governmental power as a means of maintaining order and to ultimately keep man’s ability to be VIOLENT under control!

- And while it’s essential that when a son views whatever government in which he lives, just that way—and to be able to “see through” all of the garbage that most men get caught up in (such as the bad things the gov. does to them; or the ungodly laws it passes; or the taxes it imposes; or the waste and mismanagement it traffics in; etc., etc.) — while it’s essential that a son see through all that, and sees the vital issue that that government possesses this *ordinance of God* whereby it abhors men being VIOLENT under its reign, and keeps man’s VIOLENCE in check (under control) - actually, there’s an even more CRITICAL issue to all that!

- And that critical issue is: by carrying out the *ordinance of God*—and by keeping man’s ability to be violent under control—(by doing that), **it allows God to be able to continue successfully carry out His business in the long-term!**

- And if that sounds quite similar to the issue in Step 2—(when God *ordained* the *powers that be*), IT IS!

- It’s supposed to be closely tied together—and it’s supposed to be thought of together!

- By God endowing every governing & controlling *power* that He *ordained* with this *ordinance* (this ‘established means of maintaining order’)—God has ingeniously made it so that the *violence* that so characterized the Old World Order—(i.e., man’s ability to become so *violent* that “*the earth was filled with violence*” to such a degree that God had to step in; judge man, & animals, and the earth by means of the Flood) — the *powers that be*, possessing the *ordinance of God* put into place measures by which man’s return to that Old World state of *violence* would be retarded or slowed way down—and in fact, would never quite reach that state or condition again—at least would not reach it until God had successfully conducted His business with the earth!

- And that's why (in Genesis 9:4-7) - when Human Government is described for the first time—it's described in connection with putting CONTROLS on man's ability to express VIOLENCE to the extreme (which is to MURDER another man) [i.e., to "*shed man's blood*"].

- And my understanding is that—(just as God did when He gave the Law to Moses in those 10 Commandments as the 10 "Well-Head" issues, under which would fall a whole host of other Law issues) — my understanding is, that's the same thing God is doing here with Noah.

- '*Shedding man's blood*' (or murder) is one man's extreme act of violence against another man.

- But there's going to be (and there are) 'lesser' acts of violence as well.

- And once the *powers that be* get established, they would be responsible for administrating all the other controls in connection with all of the other, lesser acts of violence.

- And the genius of God is that by stating the EXTREME or "Well-Head" issue—it's just naturally understood that all of the *powers* of human government (having this *ordinance of God*), will naturally be responsible for controlling all the 'lesser' acts of violence as well.

- And that issue of *the powers that be* (every government that has ever, or will ever exist on this earth) possessing *the ordinance of God* (the means of keeping man's ability to be violent under control) - that's the "Thing" that all governments have in common!

- And when you get to that Core, Seminal Issue of *the ordinance of God*—that's the issue that makes it so that every member of the church, the body of Christ (who's been properly educated as a son), under whatever Government in which he lives—will GLADLY *subject* himself to it; be glad it's in existence; and do all of the things described in the details of the Godly Conduct & Behavior; and especially the things described in the Godly Labor—he'll gladly pay his taxes; gladly give the *custom*; gladly give the *fear*; gladly give the *honour* to whom it's due—in connection with that government functioning as that ordinance of God that keeps an orderly society in existence—and that makes it so that the natural capacity that man has to be violent is kept in check—so that the results of that violence will not become what they *could* become!

- Now let's just deal with the details of Romans 13:2a—(or Step 3 of the Godly Thinking of Justice in connection with your relationship to government).

2 *Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God:*

- The *Whosoever* indicates 'anyone' or 'anybody' whether they are a member of the church, the body of Christ or not (believer or unbeliever; Christian or non-Christian; saved or lost).

- And what this does is to give you—as a member of the church, the body of Christ (and as a son) - it gives you PAUSE (so to speak) - it makes you have to SLOW DOWN and STOP AND THINK about what you're doing (or what you would be doing) if you did 'resist the power.'

- It makes you realize and recognize that 'resisting the power' is something that any unbeliever does and can do!

- And that is something that is just abhorrent to a son! (that is, to be 'lumped-in' with Thinking and Acting like any unbeliever! That's FOOLISH Thinking and FOOLISH behavior! That's the exact OPPOSITE of the way God the Father and God the Son Thinks and Acts!

- This is not only a marvelous technique of our English language; but it's a marvelous technique (by lumping you in with what even the unbeliever thinks and acts like) - of, when Step 1 & Step 2 have done their effectual job—by presenting the information in the exact way in which God does it in Step 3—it actually begins to go right after something in your heart: YOUR CONSCIENCE! (it 'smacks' it!)

- And that is only added to by some other terminology in (:2a).

- *Whosoever therefore*—the "*therefore*" tells you that Paul is now drawing a conclusion to the first 2 Steps here in Step 3—and it also underscores the fact that Step 3 (and Step 4 as well) is what God is driving at, but to get here you had to take those first 2 Steps!

- Which means that it's really here in Step 3 and 4 where everything should 'click' as far as the Godly Thinking goes!

- The conclusion of Step 3 & 4 is where some Godly **zeal** and Godly **enthusiasm** should begin to get generated in your heart (and in your **conscience** [where some Justice-type Sonship Decisions are going to be made!])

- Paul is drawing a conclusion based upon what's just been appreciated in (:1) - he's not just elaborating on (:1); he's not merely reiterating what he just said—he's concluding something—and the issue now is, Let's take this Godly Thinking one Step further!

- *Whosoever therefore resisteth ...*

(this is where some more “conscience” type issues get generated—and this is a term that directly indicates that when a properly educated son ‘lets his soul be subject unto the higher powers’ - that he does so GLADLY, (it's his joy and delight to do so!)

- *resisteth* = a broad & general term (the exact kind of resistance isn't spelled out here) - the word is from the Greek word ἀντιτάσσομαι which is a military term, meaning “to array in battle against; to oppose.”

- When you *resist* something or someone you literally “stand against” or “oppose” them—and in this context, *resisteth* is the exact OPPOSITE of doing something with gladness, joy, or delight!

- It's the 2nd of 3 indicators in (:1-7) that when a son ‘lets his soul be subject unto the higher powers,’ that he does so with genuine, Godly Joy! (because to ‘resist’ *the power*, indicates that **you're not happy** with your government!)

- *Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, ...*

- “*the power*” — though used in the singular, it's not referring to the Original Power of (:1) [Step 1] - rather, it refers to the particular governmental power (of the many fractured *powers that be*) under which you currently live and abide.

- The *power* here is singling out one of the fractured *powers*.

- Now we can put the whole thing together:

Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: (the governing & controlling power under which you live—having been fractured from the Original Power and *ordained* of God as the officially established rule for the long-term success of His business, has been endowed with an *ordinance of God*, which God has designed to be the means of maintaining order and keeping man’s ability to be violent under control.) [and your government has it!]

- Again—because of this *ordinance of God* that exists in EVERY government on the face of the earth—is the issue of keeping violence in check—and regardless of what kind or quality that the gov. is, it will always be doing that!

- **Violence** is *the evil* that is the *imagination of man’s heart from his youth*—and that’s going to be “*the evil*” of Romans 13:3 — and the “*good works*” are works of the very opposite of *violence*—such as peace, quietness, and orderliness!

- And you’re supposed to stop and take some time (maybe a great deal of time) and think about this—and let it ‘sink in’ that if you ‘resist the power’ then what you’re doing is, you are actually resisting the very *ordinance of God*—you’re resisting the very thing that God has designed & equipped to keep violence in check!

- And while you may not realize it as clearly or as deeply as you will later on in Romans 13, you need to recognize that no matter what kind or quality of government there is (or that you live under) - because of this *ordinance of God*, that’s a PROBLEM and a DETERRENT to the Adversary! (It prevents some things taking place that the Adversary desires to take place!)

- God’s business isn’t going to get accomplished in chaos, confusion, and violence! (either on this earth or in the heavenly places!)

- And the government under which you live may not be the best, it may not be the kind that God would prefer—but it still contains *the ordinance of God* and therefore it still puts violence in check, and it still “praises” a quiet, peaceable, orderly life!

- And it needs to be said—and you need to hear it—and you need to take some time to think about it—and that is this: **when you resist your government, you are resisting *the ordinance of God*—you are resisting the very thing God has established and designed as the means by which He is carrying out His business!**

- In essence—**YOU'RE RESISTING GOD HIMSELF!
(and there will be dire consequences!!)**

- The *ordinance of God* that exists in every government on earth is that they all (to one degree or another) determine to keep violence in check.

- Even Rome (under Nero) did that—and every government that exist today (some of which we would abhor) still does that!

- Government, by its very nature, (whether it's a Communist form or a Republic, or a Socialist or whatever) doesn't intentionally persecute people because they're quiet & peaceable and orderly—in fact, the bigger the Tyrant, the more he wants that! (the more he wants that from his subjects — Just be quiet and let me do what I want; let me take what I want from you!)

- Fidel Castro isn't upset with those in Cuba who live quiet & peaceably—but violence in Cuba is dealt with, with a strong hand—in fact, back in the 80's they shipped all their most violent folks to Miami! they certainly didn't want them around!

- And in that way, even Fidel Castro and his Communist country are not a “*terror to good works, but to the evil!*”

- And again—that should start to make a lot more sense out of a passage like I Timothy 2:1-2 — *I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks, be made for all men; 2 For kings, and for all that are in authority; that we may lead a **quiet and peaceable** life in all godliness and honesty.*

- Every gov. on the face of the earth—if nothing else—keeps this *ordinance of God*—keeps violence in check; and keeps this earth from reaching a point where God would have to destroy it.

- Once again—the first Clause of (:2) says:

2 Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God:

- And that's the 3rd (and in some ways, the most important) Step of the Godly Thinking that makes it so your thinking as God's son matches the thinking of your Heavenly Father.

- When (:2) goes on with the Godly Thinking—(after [:1] has had you go back in time (so to speak) and appreciate what the Original Power was, and what it was created by God to accomplish—and then still go back in time and appreciate the time in history when God fractured the Power into Powers and *ordain* them [at the Flood]) — (:2) now goes on with the Godly Thinking—

— but by beginning a new sentence (and as well as a new verse in God's word) - what Paul is doing here is kind of taking the issue from the 'theoretical' (so to speak, of [:1]), and he's now bringing it down to the practical, "rubber-meets-the-road" type of Godly Thinking that you're supposed to think under the governmental situation in which you live — (whether you're a Roman [to whom this was originally written; or whether, when a copy of it was made and sent off to the Galatians; or to Antioch under Pisidian rule; or to those in Phrygia; or when the Corinthians got a copy of Romans under Achaia; or when the Philippians got a copy of Romans who were under a Roman Colony different from the rest [even though they were all under the Roman Empire]) —

— but the issue is, that from (:2) on—their Godly Thinking now begins to think about what (:1) just said in connection with that Core, Seminal Issue of the *power* being there as the methodology for the purpose of God accomplishing His business—and now they're going to bring that into the individual *power* that they live under (within the scope of all the *powers* that are out there) - and now they are to realize that if they *resist the power* under which they live, they are *resisting the ordinance of God!*

- And now they've got that *ordained* issue in connection with the *powers*—and then the *ordinance* issue of it that tells them that the *power* under which they live (no matter what else it is or does), **it maintains a degree of order by keeping man's ability to be violent under control!**

- And by doing THAT—God has made it so that He can be successful in accomplishing His business on this earth over the ‘long-haul’ - that is, until the Lord Jesus Christ has come and provided the Redemption—and until the time when God will Personally deal with the Adversary and his Plan & Policy of Evil (out in the Lord’s Day of Wrath)!

- And that’s the Godly Thinking that God wants you to have and to base your entire Conduct & Behavior upon when it comes to living under the government in which you live!

- But before we get to the Conduct & Behavior—there’s one more Step to the Godly Thinking:

- After you have paused long enough to get the full, effectual working of the first Clause of (:2) - [which is what that colon tells you], then you’re ready to move on to the final Step of the Godly Thinking ...

STEP 4: *and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation.*

- Now there’s not a whole lot to deal with detail-wise in this final Clause of (:2) - but it’s an exercise (so to speak) in being able to allow the CONTEXT to tell you what every word means!

- And right off the bat—when you read, “*and they that resist ...*” — tell me the very first thing that “pops” in your mind when I ask you the question: When you resist WHAT???

- Government? WRONG!

- “**THE ORDINANCE OF GOD**” !!! (truth is, the word ‘government’ isn’t even found one time in this passage!)

- This final Step to the Godly Thinking has you to think about the dire consequences of resisting the ordinance of God.

- And how I just said that is critical—because when a son (a properly educated, adopted son of God who is *led by the Spirit of God*) - when a son thinks about the gov. under which he lives—he must (and he does) see “through” the gov.—or when he *thinks* about the gov. he sees, he always [and always] sees it in terms of *the ordinance of God*.

- And a son intelligently knows what that means!

- (How often do you hear Christians [even grace folks] talk about the ills of government? ... but how often do you hear them talk about “*the ordinance of God*” - almost never!)

- So then, in the context that the first 3 Steps has provided, Step 4 (and all the words used in it) should make perfect sense (because the context controls every thought you think about those words)!

... and they that resist

- **resist** = (we’ve already dealt with this in the previous Clause of [:2]) it comes from a military term in the Greek, meaning “to array in battle against someone”; to stand against; to oppose; to withstand the action or the effect of something [such as the *ordinance of God* as executed by the gov. in which you live]).

- George Crabb points out—*resist* is the action of setting one thing up against another—*resist* is always an act of more or less force when applied to persons—it is mostly a culpable action (= deserving of blame), as when men resist lawful authority; *resistance* is **always bad, unless in the case of self-defence**.

- And since we naturally reserve the word *resist* for contexts that, (when no issue of self-defence is in view) - we naturally reserve it for indicating that it’s *bad* to do so, hence, **wrong** to do so—this Godly Thinking of Justice in connection with Government is doing what it’s designed to do—it’s building upon our natural and innate Sense of Justice with God’s Sense of Justice of what is **right** and what is **wrong**!

- And by doing that—it establishes those Godly norms & standards for a Godly Just sense of what is right and wrong in connection with how we relate to established authority and the government in which we live—and it establishes it **right in the very area of our heart where right & wrong decision-making takes place: OUR CONSCIENCE!**

- So we have—and *they that resist* (i.e., resist or stand against the *ordinance of God* which your government possesses) **shall receive to themselves damnation**.

- Notice that it doesn’t simply say: *they that resist* ‘shall be damned’

- no—it says, *and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation.* — **AND THAT’S THE ISSUE OF BEING LAWFULLY AND LEGALLY CUPABLE!**

- That is—**YOU BROUGHT THIS ON YOURSELF!**
(You’re **worthy** of **blame!** and the consequences of your actions are going to be DIRE [or terrible] consequences!)

- Note how that every word is generating an extremely sensitive *conscience* in regard to *resisting the powers that be* and the *ordinance of God!!!*

- *and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation.*

- *Damnation* is exclusively a King James term—all of the Modern English Translations have changed that word (mostly because it’s determined by Bible Scholars to be just too harsh of a word)! [“That’s a curse word, for heaven’s sake!”]

- The Modern English Trns. usually have either the word ‘condemnation’ or ‘judgment.’

- Granted, the most basic meaning of *damnation* is = the action of condemning, or being condemned—furthermore, it’s the action of being condemned **by judicial sentence!** (It’s an act of JUSTICE!)

- And it needs to be understood and appreciated that the *damnation* in this context **IS NOT** talking about a person (saved or lost) being *damned* or condemned to hell! (A person’s salvation/justification is no where in this context!)

- Just as there are different kinds of *justification* in the Bible; and different kinds of *salvation* in the Bible — so, too, are there different kinds of *damnation* in the Bible!

- The *damnation* being spoken about here is being *damned* in a **LEGAL** sense, and in a government setting—when you have actively *resisted the ordinance of God*—i.e., when you have resisted the government under which you live—and thereby, *resisted* its power to maintain order and keep man’s ability to be violent under control, then you’re in danger of *receiving to yourself damnation!* (**SEVERE PUNISHMENT!**)

- The truth is—*damnation* is a far more excellent term to use in this context rather than ‘condemnation’ or ‘judgment’ or ‘punishment’ (ala Living trns.) — because *damnation* is a word reserved **only** for condemning a person & a person’s actions in the **harshest** of terms!

- It’s the most powerful term the English language can use for legally condemning a man and a man’s actions!

- But more than that—*damnation* (unlike ‘judgment,’ or ‘punishment’ or ‘condemnation’) **IS A FEAR-PRODUCING TERM!!!**

- It’s one thing to be in danger of being ‘punished’ or ‘judged’ — but it’s another thing to be in danger of being **damned!!!** (and remember: YOU put YOURSELF in that position when you *resist the power/ordinance of God!*)

- It’s a term reserved for **WRATH**—(either the wrath of God, or in this case, the wrath of the government [*the power!*])

- This is a great example of the “Thundering diction” of the King James Bible!!!

- If nothing else—*damnation* tells you God isn’t messing around—He’s not playing games here! This is serious business, with serious and dire consequences!!!

- Now, you’re going to have to think about this, in order to really perceive a whole bunch of ways in which, even what you may at first think are really mild forms of resisting the government—that a great deal of those seemingly mild forms of resisting really do ‘tear at the fabric’ (so to speak) of the *ordinance of God* (the power of the government to maintain order and keep man’s violence in check & under control)! [Such as not paying your taxes or *tribute* (which goes to fund the military, the police force and other means to keep violence in check! — and the same goes for *custom, fear, and honour!*)]

- So Step 4 of the Godly Thinking of Justice in connection with your relationship as a son to the governmental power under which you live is: (With the effectual working of Step 1; 2; & 3) — ***and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation.***

- And the Core, Seminal Issue of Step 4 is: *Resisting the governmental power* under which you live—and thereby *resisting the very ordinance of God*—has extremely dire consequences—you put yourself in the position of receiving *damnation!*

- So there you have it—the Godly Thinking of God’s own Thinking when it comes to Justice and the governing, controlling power of human government and your relationship to it—and why you are to *Let your soul be subject unto the higher powers.*

Step 1: *For there is no power but of God:*

Seminal Issue: God created governing & controlling power in the first place in order to be the methodology by which He carries out His business.

Step 2: *the powers that be are ordained of God.*

Seminal Issue: In the New World Order, God fractured the power into powers and ordained them ALL as the officially established rule for the long-term success of His business.

Step 3: *Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God:*

Seminal Issue: God established every governmental power as a means of maintaining order and to ultimately keep man’s ability to be VIOLENT under control.

Step 4: *and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation.*

Seminal Issue: By resisting the governing & controlling power under which you live—and thereby resisting the very ordinance of God, the consequences of your actions will be terrifying!

- Any Questions? Comments? about the Godly Thinking of the 3rd Component of Justice?

- This Godly Thinking is to be a son’s thinking regardless of what kind or quality of government he lives under—there’s no qualifying element (no exceptions) in this passage at all!

- The *powers that be*, having *the ordinance of God* contained within them is going to be in effect throughout the duration of time in which *the powers that be* are in effect and occupied by ungodly, unjustified people (or a mixture of both unjustified & justified people)!

- Regardless of the moral state; the political state; the economic state; or whatever state you find yourself in under the government in which you live—whenever & for however long you live in this dispensation of grace—verses 1 & 2 are to be your Thinking—and verses 3, 4, & 5 are to be your Conduct & Behavior — and verses 5 & 6 are to be your Godly Labor!

- And so—you don't ever have to come along and “compare” the way in which your government does things now **vs.** when you were a child or a teenager—or how it was in your parents day; or your grandparents day—or anything like that! (That's a total waste of time!!!)

- You don't have to look at your government historically and think— “Oh, if we could only get back to the way it was when _____ was president!”

- You look at it—and (:1-2) is to be you Godly Thinking **every day** for as long as you live as a member of the church, the body of Christ in this dispensation of grace!

- And the truth is—the Godly Thinking; the Godly Living; and the Godly Labor of Romans 13:1-7 ARE A CONSTANT!

- On a daily basis—with this Godly Thinking in connection with the category of human government—you cut through all of the ‘flack’ in front of you; and all of the garbage that you read about on the front page of your newspaper (or CNN or Fox News or the Internet whatever) — and the ‘eyes of your understanding’ just burn a whole through all that, **and are always looking at those Core Issues!**

- And the real question you're going to have to ask yourself—and settle out—is: By the effectual working of (:1-2), do you have a Godly zeal, enthusiasm, gladness, joy and delight to do what (:1a) says, and then what (:3-5) say???

- Do you have what you Father has: (Isa. 9:6-7)

6 For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.

*7 Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. **The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this.***

- REVIEW: (:1-2) - 4 Steps of the Godly Thinking—and the 4 Core, Seminal Issues that bring the Godly thinking to its fullness.

- Note: There in Steps 3 & 4 — by properly perceiving what Satan was able to do in the Old World Order, and then the measures God took in the New World Order (heightening man’s sense of Justice; fracturing the power into powers; establishing the powers that be with *the ordinance of God*) — the *ordinance* of God that you are to always be seeing and be aware of at all times (which is the means of maintaining order & keeping man’s ability to be violent under control) — truth is, [to a son], the outward expression of “Satanliness” is violence!

- This is the very thinking of God the Father, Himself—this it the very thinking of God the Son, Himself as well—and this is the way God views and **defines** “patriotism”! (or love of, and devotion to one’s country or government!)

- And one of the most difficult things you’re going to have to get over here is—that when it comes to ‘love of country’ and why you’re supposed to love your country, or ‘value & esteem’ your government—the truth is, (like most everything you’ll ever deal with as a son), what you’ve been taught when it comes to “patriotism” was NOT taught to you by your Father—it was taught to you by MAN!

- And it’s going to be especially difficult for an American—for a conservative Christian American—because for most conservative, Christian Americans, their thinking is that the roll of the government (boiled down to its most basic issue) is **to keep sin in check!**

- And when they see the government becoming ‘soft on sin’ issues—or promoting sinful behavior—or passing laws that protect sin instead of condemning it— it makes most conservative Christian Americans go NUTS!
(it just drives them crazy!)

- Added to that is this ungodly notion that both the Declaration of Independence and the Constitution are “inspired” “sacred” documents (throw in the Gettysburg Address, too) - and are as “Holy” as the “Holy Bible”!!!

- To be blunt about it—those are NOT “inspired” documents
 - those are NOT “sacred” documents—and they certainly are NOT “Holy”! (If you check closely, God didn’t put them in the Bible!)

- They are not the product of God’s “guiding hand” - they’re the product of **men**; and they’re the product of “The Age of Enlightenment” which also produced Darwinian Evolution, and some of the greatest attacks upon the word of God of all time: The Modern Phase of the Science of Textual Criticism!

- And that’s not to mention how much Calvinism has had (and continues to play) a roll in the frame of reference most conservative Christian Americans have about the country (and patriotism)!

- The truth is—the flag, the Declaration of Independence, and the Constitution are mere ‘FIG LEAVES’ that many Christians use to cover their ignorance of God’s word as well as to justify UNGODLY thinking; talking; acting; and behavior!

- And for those of us who have these very powerful “moorings” (so to speak) in our heart that hold us to the kind of conservative, Christian, patriotic elements of our country—this may be the very first time the “moorings” of your heart (that hold you to the thinking and the behavior of this world) are challenged, broken, and attached to something else—to the thinking & behavior of your Father!

- In other words—this may be the strongest challenge to the things that hold you to this world, **yet**, in your Sonship Education! (but there will be many, many more!)

- Now with the Godly Thinking of (:1-2) - we can now move on to

THE GODLY LIVING (CONDUCT & BEHAVIOUR):

3 For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil. Wilt thou not be afraid of the power? do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same:

4 For he is the minister of God to thee for good. But if thou do that which is evil, be afraid; for he beareth not the sword in vain: for he is the minister of God, a revenger to execute wrath upon him that doeth evil.

5 Wherefore ye must needs be subject, not only for wrath, but also for conscience sake.

- The truth is—(:1a, *Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers.*) is the encapsulation & summary statement of what all of the Godly Thinking is about; what all of the Godly Conduct & Behavior is about; and what all of the Godly Labor is about.

- So what we find in (:3-5) [in the portion dealing with the Godly Conduct & Behavior] is, in light of the Godly Thinking properly and sufficiently doing its effectual job, we find the natural ‘outlet’ for the Godly Thinking to go when it comes to putting into practice how you (as a son) are to conduct & behave yourself accordingly.

- And to put it briefly and simply—(:3-5) give some further information and further explanation of what that *ordinance of God* is all about—and how that extends to your conduct & behavior—and how you are to now **live** as a member of the church, the body of Christ in relation to the established authority (the governing & controlling power) under which you live.

- And there are 2 possibilities—One is Positive and good (or **right**); and One is Negative and bad (or **wrong**)!

- When you look at (:3-5) - you have 3 verses and 4 complete sentences.

- The first sentence of (:3) acts as a kind of ‘bridge’ between the Godly Thinking and the Godly Con. & Beh.

- And the remainder of (:3) functions as the “Positive” side of the coin (so to speak) in regard to the proper Sonship Con. & Beh.

- Then the remainder of the 2nd sentence in (:4) acts as a kind of a ‘bridge’ into the “Negative” side of the coin in regard to the INPROPER Sonship Con. & Beh.

- And finally (:5) gives the logical summation of the Sonship Godly Con. & Beh. in light of all that (:1-4) has taught you.

- There are 2 colons in these 3 verses—one at the end of (:3) [followed by a “*For*”] - and one in (:4) after the word *vain*, [also followed by a “*for*”] - and there are 2 implied “Whys” at each of the 2 colons - each one receiving an answer.

- And you're going to end up with 2 Major REASONS for doing what (:1a) says: 2 Powerful Reasons—and the LAST reason will be the MOST POWER REASON of all!!!

- The “*Wherefore*” of (:5) acts as one of those powerful ‘words of logic’ that our English language utilizes—and so it acts as expressing the natural and logical (as well as the Godly) consequence or natural and logical outcome from what has just been stated—and the only logical and Godly thing for a son to do at that point is to ***be subject*** (unto the higher powers), ***not only for wrath, but for conscience sake***.

- So now at this point—the issue becomes—how do you take that Godly Thinking that’s been generated in your heart from (:1 & 2), and begin to put that into practice in the details of your life as an issue of what is RIGHT vs. what is WRONG Conduct & Behavior (or **JUST** Con. & Beh.) in connection with Godly Living as a son under your particular government (or controlling *power*)?

- And to do that—it’s going to take a statement of further explanation and further amplification upon the Godly Thinking of (:1-2) that specifically makes a transition from merely thinking about it, to putting that thinking into practice—and that’s exactly what the first sentence of (:3) does!

- And I say it just that way—because without the particular **context**—and the particular **definitions** of the words of (:1-2) — and without the **Core, Seminal Issues** that form the ‘First-Thought Response’ of (:1-2) — without all that, you will **never** be able to properly handle the terminology sitting in that first sentence of (:3)!

- (:3) has some very **general** terms in it—but those terms (even though they are general & broad), those terms can be made to be very **specific** by the **context** itself!

- And if you’re not careful to allow the information sitting in (:1 & 2) to tell you what the terminology of (:3) is talking about—then you’re going to make some mistakes in (:3) — you’ll make the mistake of thinking that what (:3) says is all well and good if you live in a government that’s not persecuting Christians—and you’ll make the mistake of thinking that there are ‘exceptions’ to what God says in (:3)!

- But my understanding is that just as (:1-2) are a CONSTANT—that is, they are true for every government that has ever existed from the Flood on (i.e., from Genesis 8:15 on) — so, too, what is said in (:3), and (:4), and (:5) are a CONSTANT **with NO exceptions to the rule!**

- Now for the ‘transition’ statement in (:3) that, by giving further explanation and further amplification to the Godly Thinking of “*Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation.*” — it makes the transition from the Godly Thinking to the Godly Con. & Beh.: and there needs to be one more thing said concerning government and its *rulers* in connection with someone who does *resist the ordinance of God* and *receives to themselves damnation*.

- And if (:1-2) are properly understood and appreciated—then by the time you get here to (:3) - you already know what the generic terms God has the apostle Paul use are all talking about—and in a sense, it will be ‘plug-and-play’ (so to speak) - and what is said here, therefore, should make perfect sense!

3 *For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil.*

- “**For**” = a ‘for’ of further explanation and further amplification—and this is going to further explain in a very practical, ‘rubber-meets-the-road’ type way what a government does ONLY in connection with being vested with *the ordinance of God* (keeping the violence of man in check), and therefore how it **responds** to those who *resist the ordinance of God* and *receive to themselves damnation*.

- “**rulers**” = the actual governmental *rulers*—those occupying the positions of authority and governing/controlling power over others (the citizens of that particular town, state, or nation).

- Mayor—(Vivian Jones)
- Governor— (Beverly Perdue [till January], Patrick McCorry)
- President—(Barak Obama)
- etc.

- “*For rulers are not a **terror** to good works,*”

- “**terror**” = (φόβος) = fear, dread, terror = that which strikes *terror* - — the term is used as a highly emotionally-charged term of extreme fear—a fear that “agitates the body and mind” (Webster) — *terror* causes a person to ‘tremble’ with fear—the word is used here because (if the *terror* is terrible enough), when a person is seized with *terror* it tends to DISARM that person! (which is why terrorism is so effective!)

- (The “disarming” that *terror* does to a person isn’t just the issue of ‘laying down one’s arms’ [which is true] - but it ‘disarms’ a person in the sense of causing a person **to no longer RESIST** the one wielding the terror-causing power [which is the *ordinance of God*, in this case!].)

- (Charles Smith—Synonyms Discriminated) = “A man of great strength and savage disposition would, **but for the protection of the laws**, be the *terror* of his neighborhood.”

- And just like the word *damnation*—*terror* (which is a further description of the *damnation*) is a term we naturally reserve for receiving **WRATH** (either from God, or in this case, from the *powers that be* [the government]!

- “For rulers are **not** a *terror* to **good works**, ...”

- Now here is the particular Conduct & Behavior that is that ‘natural outlet’ for the Godly Thinking of (:1-2) — **good works**—which is very generic; very broad and general—but the context defines and qualifies what the *good works* are—so, what are the *good works* in this context???

- *good works* = works of **peace; quietness; orderliness!**
(In other words, they are the exact **opposite** of works of *violence!*)

- The Godly Conduct and the Godly Behavior that is to be the **mark** of a properly educated “son of God” in terms of **Justice** in connection with the *powers that be* (the gov. under which he/she lives) - he’s to Conduct & Behave himself in **ORDERLINESS**, and living a “*quiet and peaceable life!*”

- And that’s a needful thing here in this earth; and it’s a needful thing out in the *creature* as well! (That’s part of what it means when God said, *For the creature was made subject to VANITY, ...*)

- *Rulers* (of **any** government at **any time**) are **NOT** a *terror* to works of peace/quietness/orderliness — and that’s a **CONSTANT**—that’s the way it’s always been since the Flood; that’s the way it is now; and that’s the way it will always be!

- You won't incur the WRATH of the government for living a quite & peaceable life! (That's what the gov. wants—even the biggest Dictator or Tyrant desires the people he governs to be peaceful and quiet and orderly).

- Some do this better than others—some worse—but they all do this to a sufficient degree! (sufficient for God's purposes)

- But *rulers* most certainly **are** a *terror* to something!

- “*For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to **the evil**.*”

- ***the evil***—even though the word *evil* is generic, broad & general—again, (just like it was with *good works*), the **context** (meaning, all of the background work that we did in [:1-2], and especially that issue in [:2] of the *ordinance of God*—that will define and qualify the terms: ***the evil***).

- (and note that we are alerted to the fact that what God is after here is a specific *evil*—because we have the use of the Definite Article “*the*” - ***THE*** *evil*. — there's a specific *evil* that God has in mind.)

- And this is extremely important—because the common way in which this ends up getting treated by a lot of Christian folks is that God is saying “*evil*” in the sense of **SIN**!

- And the biggest mistake you could ever make with this passage is to think that *the evil* being spoken of here is **SIN** in general!

- Because that leads to a great deal of erroneous thinking and outright stupid Christian behavior—and it all stems from the idea that government (especially our United States gov.) is designed by God to be a ‘restrainer of sin’!!! WRONG!

- And if this was properly taught & properly understood & appreciated by the members of the church, the body of Christ today—it would stop (not only a lot of stupid comments and stupid behavior), but it would stop a lot of worry and angst and anxiety every time our government passes laws to promote and protect all kinds of sinful behavior—(you can ‘fill in the blank’ as to “sinful behavior”).
(That's a “shocker” to a lot of Christians out there!)

- For years in this country, the old Soviet Union (Russia) [or any **communist** country, for that matter] was looked upon as an ‘**Enemy to Christianity**’ - because they were supposedly Godless nations who were doing the worst job of all when it came to restraining sin and promoting righteousness!

- But notice that God does **NOT** say, ‘For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to sin [or sinful works].’

- So then—what is the specific *evil* that God is referring to here in Romans 13:3? — **VIOLENCE**—man’s ability to be **violent**.

- And we know that because when God *ordained* the *powers that be* and vested them with *the ordinance of God*—(which took place, historically, immediately after the Flood)—and we know that because of what God’s word tells us:

*... for the imagination of man’s heart is **evil** from his **youth**; ... (Gen. 8:21)*

*And GOD saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only **evil** continually. (Gen. 6:5)*

*The earth also was corrupt before God, and the earth was filled with **violence**. (Gen. 6:11)*

*And God said unto Noah, The end of all flesh is come before me; for the earth is filled with **violence** through them; and, behold, I will destroy them with the earth. (Gen. 6:13)*

- And the truth of the matter is—ALL governments—(because they contain *the ordinance of God*) - ALL governments are a **TERROR** to **VIOLENCE** (or **THE evil**)!

- **Rulers are** a **terror** to chaos, upheaval, and being unruly!

- And the “**terror**” in this context is the issue of bringing the most severe form of Justice to bear upon violent acts and behavior! (WRATH)

- And history bears it out—from the time of Noah’s Flood on—there have been horrible, terrible, rotten, ungodly governments and Rulers—even horrible, terrible, rotten, ungodly Empires—and yet, mankind has never devolved to reach the violent state it was in that warranted and merited God destroying the earth with the Flood!

- God’s *ordinance* has worked! and it’s **still** working!
(And that’s a BIG DEAL to God—and it must be to His properly educated “son”!)

- No government allows someone to go through their neighborhood and kill a bunch of people, and then just go home and watch TV!

- And this should tell you something about the issue that a lot of you have thought about—and that is, What about when a government and the Rulers of it **do** persecute Christians? — and what that should tell you (at least fundamentally) is—since this passage of Romans 13:3 says, *For rulers are not a terror to good works* (to a quiet and peaceable life), *but to the evil* (to violent acts of men). — if nothing else, that should tell you that the issue of Rulers persecuting Christians **isn’t** what this is about, so the issue of Christian persecution must be dealt with in some other way (other than by **resisting the powers that be** (or by **resisting the ordinance of God**)!

- Because the truth of the matter is—the issue of *rulers not being a terror to good works, but to the evil* is true and consistent and constant EVEN when the persecution of Christians **does** take place!

- To put it another way—*rulers not being a terror to good works, but to the evil* **is NOT a contradiction** even when those rulers persecute Christians! (Persecuting Christians does NOT negate/contradict **anything** in Romans 13:1-7!)

- So then—your Godly Sonship Conduct & Behavior where Justice is concerned in regards to your relationship to your Governmental *Power* is to do those **good works** (to live a life of orderliness, quietness, and peace). That’s the mark of Godly Justice that characterizes a son’s Godly Living in connection with his government!

- And then (:3) ends by saying, **Wilt thou then** (in view of [:3a]) **not be afraid of the power?** — and the answer is: **YES**, you should be *afraid* of it!

- Because that *power* will bring the ‘hammer’ of Justice down just as swift upon you as it would upon any unbeliever or any one else who puts themselves in the ‘cross-hairs’ of its WRATH! (of that *ordinance of God*).

- A Christian can get the death penalty just as sure as anyone else can—(for example, Karla Faye Tucker was found guilty and convicted of murder in Texas, but when she was in prison, she became a believer in Christ and got saved—but the then Governor George Bush wouldn’t commute her sentence—and he took a lot of flack for that — she could escape the Judgment of God, but she couldn’t escape the *ordinance of God*).

- But the point is—*the powers that be*, the *ordinance of God*, and *rulers being a terror to the evil* (violence) should make it so that you are **AFRAID OF THE POWER!!!** (and rightly so!)

- Then (:3) goes on and says—***do that which is good*** (live a quiet & peaceable life) ***and thou shalt have praise of the same:***

- You will be viewed by those *rulers* with ***praise***.

- And the sense of *praise* here is the simple and most general issue of being viewed as “good” or “right” yourself in their eyes—and therefore not incurring their wrath!

- Put simply—***praise*** is the expression of the *rulers* for commendable Conduct & Behavior! (Though they may not recognize your Conduct & Behavior as “Godly”, they will certainly [because of how God has *ordained* the powers, and produced within them the *ordinance of God*], they certainly will view your Conduct & Behavior as **commendable!**

- And this isn’t an issue of gaining the approbation of *rulers* simply for the sake of flattery—a properly educated son knows that this is the issue of a necessary and beneficial result from his **serious attention** to His Father’s *ordinance* and not *resisting* it!

- It gives a son the benefit of living life under Justice—and of having further opportunity to live longer and therefore be trained longer as a son for laboring in his Father’s business!

- Not to mention the fact that you'll have longer life on this earth to **witness** to others of the Gospel of Christ—and to set forth more of the truth of who God has made you to be “in Christ” before the eyes of men!

- As a son—where Justice is concerned in regards to your government—you get the opportunity to put into practice the very things that your Father Himself **values & esteems** in connection with carrying out His business: PEACE, ORDERLINESS, AND QUIETNESS! (You get to ‘practice’ that on this earth with this Divine Institution God established called *the powers that be* or Human Government!)

- And you'll need to be ‘practiced’ in that when you are placed as “sons” in the Heavenly Places as a “joint-heir” with Christ!

- And as I said before—this is God’s way of defining “patriotism” (if you will) - [i.e., love of, and devotion to one’s country or government]. (And it’s radically different from what most folks think; and what most Christian folks think!)

- And that’s the ‘Positive’ side of the coin—when it comes to a properly educated son’s sense of Justice, and Just, Godly, Conduct & Behavior when it comes to how you are to relate to the Established Authority of Human Government.

- And again—what (:3) says is a **constant**—even when *rulers* are persecuting Christians (or are involved with religious persecution) — that still doesn’t contradict the statement that they are *not a terror to good works, but to the evil!*

- Handling persecution will ALWAYS be done in such a way that the Conduct & Behavior of a son/saint is NEVER one of *resisting the ordinance of God!*

- Even when the apostle Paul suffered at the hands of governmental abuse—(as he did on numerous occasions) — and when that happened, he **never once** thought of that abuse in the context of Romans 13:1-7! ... he never thought that those rulers were failing to be a *terror* to his *good works*—or were failing to *praise* him for them!

- Any Questions? Problems? or Comments?

- Now we're ready for (:4) — (read :4)

- Note the way in which (:3) ends—it's one of those features or capacities that our English language has (the 'style' of the English lang.) to 'beg a question' without actually asking a question.

3 For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same: (WHY?)

4 For he is the minister of God to thee for good.

- Now while this is the final clause of a sentence or thought that began up in (:3) - the translators saw fit to put this final clause in (:4) — because they rightly saw that by the information it provides for, it acts as the Godly, effectual **restraint** for the **Negative** Conduct & Behavior (expressed in the remainder of :4) — i.e., Conduct & Behavior that is **Ungodly**, **stupid**, and **foolish!** (i.e., *resisting the power/resisting the ordinance of God.*)

- In fact—that final clause of the sentence (if it effectually does its job) should generate something **very powerful** in your **CONSCIENCE!**

- It 'rounds out' establishing in your conscience a **persuasion** and **convincement**—or a **norm & standard** (if you will) - that for no other reasons than what is said in those first 2 statements of the Godly Conduct & Behavior [in :3] (which only works when the Godly Thinking of [:1-2] is doing its job) — that all works together, therefore, to make it so that, based upon what now exists in your **conscience**, you are perfectly willing and **gladly** willing to *let your soul be subject unto the higher powers—not resisting the power/ordinance of God!*

- And the reason I say that is because the first clause of (:4) starts off with that word of Logic "*For*" — and in this case, it's a "*For*" of **advantage** or **benefit** or **use** (or **useful purpose**) — and that goes directly to the issue of what is RIGHT vs. what is WRONG! (i.e., a "conscience" issue!)

- If you see something as for your advantage; or for your benefit; or for your useful purpose—then you'll embrace it; you'll do (whatever you are exhorted to do) - you see it as: that's what's RIGHT (or the Right course of action to take)!

- And on the 'flip-side' - you WON'T do something that would obviously be AGAINST what is intended to be a benefit; an advantage; or of use to you—that's WRONG (or the Wrong course of action to take)!

- And that's what this first clause of (:4) sets up perfectly in your **conscience**!

- Therefore—why should you *be afraid of the power?* — why should you *do that which is good* (live a quiet & peaceable life) having *praise of those rulers* (i.e., having commendable Conduct & Behavior in their sight)???

- And the answer is: **For he** (that ruler is a **benefit** to you as a son—he's **useful** to you—he/she provides a **useful purpose** to you! — and he does so because **he is the minister of God to you for good!!!**

For he (the “ruler” of :3) **is the minister of God ...**

- Notice that the “*he*” or the ruler of the power is never named—and that's because the actual person is NOT the issue — the issue is **never** WHO is occupying the position of a ruler—the issue is: because God Himself created the power in the first place; *ordained* the power; and vested it with *the ordinance of God*—therefore ANY person (no matter if he is as “godly” as can be, or as “ungodly” & wicked & evil as can be) - any person occupying a ruling position in government is (by default), **the minister of God!**

- Some rulers would NEVER think of themselves this way, because they may not be believers in God at all (they may be total Atheists!) — and on the other hand, some rulers may think they not only are *ministers of God*, but they may fancy themselves AS GOD — and some may think of themselves as *ministers of God*, but because they don't have a proper understanding & appreciation of this doctrine, they have (for lack of a better term) a “goofy” [goofed-up] understanding for being a *minister of God!*

- In other words—he may see himself as God’s *minister* in the sense of being some kind of guardian or fighter against **sin** & sinful behavior (playing into that wholly **un**-Biblical notion that government & governmental rulers are supposed to be a restrainer of sin)!
- **“minister”** - (this is the 1st of 3x that this term is used—[twice in :4, 1x in :6]) = one who executes the commands of another; one who acts under the authority of another; an agent appointed to transact or manage business under the authority of another)
- *Rulers* of a government are NOT *ministers of God* in the sense that God has pre-ordained or pre-determined or decreed in His Eternal Divine Decrees that a particular **PERSON** (such as Barak Obama) is ordained by God to the position of President, or King, or Governor or whatever. NO!
- But the word *minister* IS directly related to the fact that God did, indeed, **ordain** something!
- Because the *ruler* of a government being this *minister of God* is related to what God did when He established Human Government after the Flood—when He fractured the power into powers.
- So, if you think your way back through the information you’ve been given—you’ll find the connection.
 - (Going backwards) — this *minister of God* is one of the *rulers* of (:3) —
 - and that *ruler* (“*ruler*” being an **office**, not any particular person, but the **office**) - that rulership **office** is in existence by virtue of there being a government that is designed by God and vested with (by God) the capacity to keep man’s ability to be violent under control (or the *ordinance of God*) [:2] —
 - and that ruling office contained in a government that keeps man’s violence in check was **ordained** by God to be the means of keeping man’s violence in check so that God will be able to carry out His business in the long-term! [:1]
- Therefore—there IS a natural connection with, and reason for why God calls a ruler of government “*the minister of God*.”

- Truth is—the word *minister* **does** connect with that term ordained—
 - Remember that the word *ordain* = (Webster’s 1828) to set; to establish in a particular **office**; hence **to invest with a ministerial function!**
- Therefore, God **never** pre-ordains the **PERSON** who occupies a governmental office—rather, He has *ordained* the **OFFICE** in which the person occupies—and because He did that, it can then be properly said that a *ruler* (whoever he/she is) is, indeed, a *minister of God!*
 - That is, he occupies a particular office established by God, and because of that, the OFFICE is invested with a ministerial function!
- To put it simply—God ordained the OFFICE (not the person) - or you could say, **God ordained the WHAT, not the WHO!!!**
 - A governmental ruler is NOT an ordained minister of God in ANY **Calvinistic** sense whatsoever!!!
- **It doesn’t matter to God WHO the ruler is!!!**
- This makes it so that you (as a son) **never**, therefore, look at a MAN (or woman) as *the minister of God*—rather, you look past the person and see the OFFICE he/she holds as being the office of *the minister of God*—and that makes all the difference! (that’s radically different than the way most folks think and **behave** towards a governmental ruler!!!)
- So you have in (:4) — *For he (that ruler) is the minister of God to thee for good.*
 - What is the “**good**” that that *ruler* is *ministering*? What is the **good** that Paul is talking about here?
 - The *good* is NOT talking about a ruler *ministering* for God so as to keep sin in check and promote God’s righteousness in the land where he governs!
 - The *good* = the core, seminal issue of what his office is there for in the first place—to keep the violence of man under control so that God can continue carrying out His business in the long-term!

- The **good** is the issue of ‘keeping the peace’ - of keeping an orderly, quiet, peaceable empire, nation, state, city, or community! (He keeps man’s violence in check!)

- Now one other thing needs to be said here—when God, through the apostle Paul says, ***For he is the minister of God to thee for good.***—my understanding is (just as it was for that phrase up in :3 that said, ***For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil.***) - my understanding is that THIS IS A CONSTANT—in other words, a governmental *ruler* is ***the minister of God to thee for good ALL THE TIME (at all times) - even when religious/Christian persecution DOES take place!*** (no exceptions!)

- And that can only make sense IF you properly understand and appreciate what the **good** is; and what **the evil** is in the **CONTEXT** that Romans 13 is talking about!!

- And if you get yourself caught up in violent *resistance* against the *power/ordinance of God*—that *ruler* will ‘lower the boom’ of Justice down on YOU! (hence, the rest of the vs.)

- So then— with that needed and additional information effectually doing its job, you’re ready for the Negative side of the coin—or the Un-Godly, **foolish** and stupid Conduct & Behavior that is indicative of a son or a saint who is NOT properly educated!

- And it begins with a very strong adversative conjunction — **“But”** (here’s the other side of the coin—the **OPPOSITE** of a son’s Godly Conduct & Behavior).

But if thou do that which is evil, be afraid; ...

- What is the **“evil”** Paul is talking about here?

A: *Resisting the power / resisting the ordinance of God.*

“be afraid” - Why? (this is, again, an example of English Style that begs a question—that asks the question “Why?” without having to actually state it). — So Why? Why should you **“be afraid”**?

- And this isn’t “mildly fearful” or merely “respectful”—this is to be **TERRIFIED!** (scared to death, so to speak) — this is real FEAR of **loosing your physical life!!!**

- Why “*be afraid*”? — ***for he beareth not the sword in vain:***

- “**sword**” (μάχαιρα) = used here as the symbol or instrument of penal justice—the authority of a ruler to punish offenders—the power of human government to execute or put to death violent criminals!

- And that’s a further description of what it means (back up in :2) to *receive to yourself damnation* when you *resist the power/ordinance of God*. (*Damnation* is the death penalty!)

- Rulers are **not** a terror to good works, but to the evil—they are the ministers of God—and they do **not** bear the sword of executing violent criminals *in vain*!

- “**vain**” = as having no effect or no force; powerless; futile; unavailing; ineffectually; uselessly; to no purpose!

- Then you have that hard pause (the colon after the word *vain*) to indicate that you are to pause there long enough for that statement to ‘sink in’ - to do it’s effectual job.

- And then Paul adds some further explanation of the job of the ruler of that government who *bears not the sword of Justice in vain* — and this, again, just underscores all the more, and builds the final blocks (so to speak) of the norms & standards of your Father’s heart when it comes to relating to human government into the very fabric of your CONSCIENCE!

... for he is the minister of God, a revenger to execute wrath upon him that doeth evil.

- Paul, once again, picks up that ‘thread’ of a governmental ruler being *the minister of God*—but then he adds some more critical information to that.

- That ruler (as *the minister of GOD*) is a **revenger**!

- *Revenge* seems to be odd term to use—in fact, it may seem to be wrong and improperly translated—it may seem to be a rather extreme term—(which is because we live in a time when our English language is in sharp decline—we almost **never** use the term *revenge* in a **good** or **positive** way)!

- And that's borne out by the way in which almost all of the Modern English versions of the Bible have changed that word *revenger* to 'avenger' or 'agent' or 'servant'!

- But that actually waters down and WEAKENS what God intended to be a very intense and powerful term!

- It's supposed to be EXTREME and SEVERE—and it's supposed to 'smack' you right between the eyes (so to speak)!

- While it's true that in our modern declining stage of the English language, we almost always reserve the word *revenge* for a bad or negative context—the truth is, the word *revenge* can be used in a context to indicate something very GOOD!

- "*revenge*" = most commonly means, the act of doing hurt or harm to another in return for wrong or injury suffered; satisfaction obtained by repayment of injuries. — And it has been so narrowed down and standardized that it has come to be used ONLY in a **bad** sense—as something only a bad person would do, something indicative of wrong-doing.

- However, notice, for example II Corinthians 7:4-11 (:11)

- The truth is, in older English, the term *revenge* could be used for **putting Justice into force**—and it carried a shade of meaning in the realm of Justice and the Court system of a government (or even in one's personal, Just dealings with one another) of: **setting aside any concerns of pity or emotion for the overriding principle of JUSTICE!**

- And that's how the word *revenge* or *revenger* is being used in Romans 13:4—that *ruler, beareth not the sword in vain: for he is the minister of God, a revenger*—(that is, one who will set aside any concerns of pity or emotion [about your being a "Christian" or whatever] for the overriding principle of Justice!)

- A governmental *ruler* (by virtue of his office being what God designed for it to be: *the minister of GOD*) is a *revenger*—he's one who will justly execute violent criminals **without passion**; without **respect to persons** due to the overriding principle of JUSTICE!

- And in order to keep things ‘on track’ - and in order to keep that word *revenge* in the context of something that is GOOD in God’s sight—God adds the final expression in (:4) —

... *to execute wrath upon him that doeth evil.*

- *wrath* = violent anger; **just punishment of an offence or crime!**

- And that’s also the final description of what it means to be *dammned* in the sense of (:2) [*damnation*].

- So what does the word *evil* mean here?

A: It’s “the *evil*” of (:3) & the “*evil*” of (:4) = VIOLENCE!

- So (:4) should make perfect sense:

For he is the minister of God to thee for good. But if thou do that which is evil, be afraid; for he beareth not the sword in vain: for he is the minister of God, a revenger to execute wrath upon him that doeth evil.

- Furthermore—(:4) should [by its effectual working] completely install God’s own norms & standards where human government is concerned into your heart, so that your CONSCIENCE now possesses **His** norms and standards whereby *letting your soul be subject unto the higher powers* is now a matter of, not only would you do so because you fear the *wrath* of the government’s “*sword*” - but for an even greater reason: because it would bother your **conscience greatly** if you didn’t *subject yourself unto the higher powers!!!*

- And I say a “greater reason” because what Sonship is all about is the issue of installing the heart of the Father into you, His son—and a “son” doesn’t need to be reminded of how he’s to Conduct & Behave himself by a badge on a police officer’s shirt; or by seeing a courthouse; or by seeing the ‘gallows’ or the ‘electric chair’ or the death chamber or laws on the books — no, all he needs is what is in his HEART!

- A “son” can go from nation to nation; country to country—and he doesn’t have to read the laws of the land—he already comes to that nation/country with the proper Godly Conduct & Behavior of Justice in connection with that government!

- **In summary of (:4)** - a properly educated son views the rulers of the government under which he lives as *the ministers of God*—and just as you would **value** the office of the Bishop or Pastor-Teacher in your local assembly—so, too, because those rulers are *ministers of God*, you also **value their office** and **their function** as a *minister of God*.

- And even though those rulers may be ungodly and may do a lot of ungodly things—you are to **recognize** the function they have for your “good” (which is the issue of keeping **violence** in check, and providing for a peaceable existence in society—you recognize that they therefore make it so that **God’s business can continue to be successfully carried out in the long-term**).

- And because they function in those offices/positions of Gov. as a *minister of God*, then they’ll have to answer to God Himself for all of the things they do that are **not** “good.”

- And the warning to you is: *But if thou do that which is evil, be afraid; for he beareth not the sword in vain: for he is the minister of God, a revenger to execute wrath upon him that doeth evil.*

- Therefore, if you (even as a justified “son” of God) - if you *do that which is evil* (i.e., if you **resist the powers that be/ordinance of God**, and get involved in **violent activity** yourself) - you’re to be very *afraid*—because even as a justified “son” of God, you’re to expect the *sword* of that Gov. **to be executed against YOU!**

- In other words—your justified status will NOT keep you from having the **wrath** of the Gov. come down upon you—and that’s just the way God intends for it to be, and has designed for it to be!

- And that means that this function of the Gov. [and the *rulers* of the Gov.] (that is, their being a *minister of God to thee for good*—and being a *revenger to execute wrath upon him that doeth evil* [**violent acts**]) - that *ministry* is **so important** to God, that even a “son” of God is subject to the *wrath* that God has put into the hands of those *rulers*!

- You **won’t** suffer the “wrath of God” in the Lake of Fire—but if you choose to *do that which is evil*, you **WILL** suffer the *wrath* of Government—which could include your own **DEATH!**

- In other words—**your justified status before God doesn't justify you before the Gov., if you do "evil"** [violent acts]!!!

- God will NOT intervene—He won't ask other saints to intervene: **YOU DESERVE TO DIE!**

- And the reason why I bring this out—is, that it tells you just how **VALUABLE & IMPORTANT** this *ministry of God* is to God Himself!

*And surely your blood of your lives will I **REQUIRE**;*
(Gen. 9:5) - **God REQUIRES it!!!**

- In fact—it would be more important (and take the priority) for the *ministry of Government* to be executed against you by the *sword of Gov.* (in order to maintain peace and orderliness in society) - rather than for your *ministry* to continue on!!!

- And at this point in the book of Romans, you should be able to identify several *ministries* that you have as a saint & as a "son" of God —

- You have a ministry to other saints in the assembly.
(you occupy an *office* in the assembly)

- You have a ministry in connection with your job or *business*.

- You have a ministry to lost persons (which will later on be called, *the ministry of reconciliation* as an *ambassador of Christ*)!

- And yet—if you get involved in *the evil* (violent acts of resisting the *ordinance of God*) - the Gov. has the right and the responsibility to **punish you** (which could include your own death)!

- Therefore that *ministry of God* that the *rulers of government* perform is actually **more important to God** than any of the other ministries **you're** carrying out!

- God doesn't come along and say—Ok, you did *the evil*, but since you have a *ministry of reconciliation* to the lost, or a ministry to other saints—then that takes precedent, so I'll just intervene to let you go. **NO!!! you get the *wrath* of the Gov. executed upon you!!!** (all your *ministries* come to an **END!**)

- Maintaining order in society & checking violence in men's heart is more important than allowing that saint to carry on in his other Labors with God!

- And God gives to ungodly, unjust, and often times vile men the power & authority to take a life of a **justified** man!

(so, **BE AFRAID!**)

- Any Question? Comments? Problems? with (:4)?

- Now—with all of the Godly Thinking of (:1-2); and all of the Godly Conduct & Behavior of (:3-4) - now Paul is going to make the next and final **logical** step (**Godly** Logic, not man's logic) - and in view of the effectual working of (:1-4), the next logical step for a son's Godly Conduct & Behavior is to do what (:1) said, (*Let your soul be subject unto the higher powers*) - and Paul is going to state the 2 major reasons that have emerged from (:1-4) - and the SECOND reason is the most critical reason of all: the Sonship reason!!

- And this “final word” (so to speak) on the matter of Godly Just Sonship Conduct & Behavior in connection with your relationship to the Government under which you live gets stated in (:5).

5 Wherefore ye must needs be subject, not only for wrath, but also for conscience sake.

- And the truth of the matter is—(:5) is the most important and most critical verse of the 7! (Especially the last 5 words!)

- It makes it so that a son's Godly Con. & Beh. is one of: ***being subject***—no hint of, or thoughts of, or inkling of any opposition to the Gov.—no rioting or any of the common things that go on in ***this world*** when people rise up and express their displeasure and their contrariness to the Gov. under which they live.

- (:5) begins with that wonderful English ‘word of logic’ ***Wherefore***

- ***Wherefore*** = is NOT “just another way of saying, Therefore”!!!

- ***Wherefore*** and ***therefore*** do NOT mean the same thing—nor are they used in the same way!

- First of all—***wherefore*** is **NOT** a **concluding** word of logic! (Paul isn't making a conclusion here at all. [That happens in (:7)]!)

- More often than not, the word *wherefore* occurs after a whole bunch of information has been given, and certain information has to now be gathered together.
- Generally, *wherefore* is used to take some information that has just been given, and on the basis of that information, **it presents another essential point to the argument** before the final conclusion can be drawn.
- In other words—whenever you use the word *wherefore*, you’re generally using it because the amount of information you’re dealing with is quite extensive (either in the sheer volume of the information given, or in the depth to which that information goes) - either way, due to the amount of information covered, it requires or demands having to gather that information together in order to now be able to logically say something about it, in view of all that information. (But you’re still not at your conclusion, yet!)
- *Wherefore* actually functions kind of like an Accountant’s Adding Machine —
 - You add up a whole bunch of items—and then you have a need to do a ...
 - **Sub-Total** = *Wherefore* (but we’re still going to add or subtract some things)
 - Then you do a **Total**.
 - Finally, a **Grand Total** = *Therefore*
- And when *Wherefore* is being used in its more common summarization use within a body of information—it is used to give you a summarization that gives you a REASON for something! (In other words—you’re dealing with a **WHY** that something is so!)
- And that’s exactly how *Wherefore* is being used here in (:5).
- And this *Wherefore* is going to present 2 reasons—and 1 is a more ‘typical’ reason—and the 2nd is NOT a ‘typical’ reason—it’s a SONSHIP reason!
- For us as “sons” - there’s MORE than just the ‘**typical**’ thing that would make it so that a person in *this world* would end up ‘subjecting’ themselves unto the *powers that be*.

- And so we're going to have 2 reasons:

1) Typical—the reason why every unbeliever/lost/unjustified person—every person who is of *this world* would be ‘subject’ unto the higher powers: ***for wrath’s sake!***

2) Non-Typical—the reason why every saint, every justified member of the church, the body of Christ who has been properly educated as a “son” of God would be ‘subject’ unto the higher powers: ***for conscience sake!***
(In other words: there’s also A SONSHIP REASON!)

- So Paul says:

Wherefore (gathering up all of the information in [:1-4], here is one more essential point—the next logical step in view of all that information) ***ye*** (2Per.Pl. Nom. of the Personal Pronoun = every saint; ***all/every*** properly educated “son”) ***must needs be subject, ...***

- Notice what Paul **DOEST NOT** say—He doesn’t say, ‘***Wherefore ye must be subject, ...***’ — no, he says, ***Wherefore ye must NEEDS be subject, ...***

- Why does he say it that way? (We’ll come back to this later on).

- But for now—we have these 2 compelling reasons: 1) *not only for wrath*—and 2) *but also for conscience sake*.

- And the wording is very critical here, too — “***NOT ONLY for wrath, BUT ALSO for conscience sake.***”

- And there’s a reason for why it’s said just that way. (And we’ll come back to this later on, too.)

- For now—let’s focus our attention upon those 2 reasons our Father gives us for why our Sonship Conduct & Behavior should be one of being “*subject*” to *the powers that be*.

- Remember back in the previous 2 Components to our *instruction of Justice*—back when we first talked about & dealt with the issue of God making some adjustments to man’s innate ‘sense of justice,’ and that the course of this world had built it’s own norms & standards of Justice on top of that—and how God is going to have to tear all that

man-made sense of justice down to the foundation, and then build God's own norms & standards for Justice on our natural, innate sense of "survival" justice—and one of the things we talked about is that in each of the Components that make up our initial *instruction of Justice*, our Father is going to give us some Thinking, Con. & Beh., and some Labor that is of a Godly nature—or that **lifts** the issues of Justice out of what man & the wisdom of men Think & Do, and **ELEVATES** it to what God Himself Thinks, Does, and is Working to get accomplished.

- And there were some things that we encountered in that 1st Component (Rom. 12:17-18); and in that 2nd Component (Rom. 12:19-21) that did, indeed, **elevate** the issue of Justice from the justice of this world, (or a lower order of Justice), to Godly Justice, (or a Higher Order of Justice).

- And that's what's going on here, too.

- When it comes to a person of *this world*—they, more often than not, end up 'subjecting' themselves unto the *powers that be* **out of a fear of the consequences** of going up against the Gov., or in respect to their Conduct & Behavior, being disrespectful; disorderly; challenging the power; etc. — when it comes to that person of *this world*, their 'subjection' to the *powers that be* is one of **fearing** WRATH!

... **not only for wrath** — the threat of WRATH—the threat of being judged by it; and being punished by it—that's what keeps them 'in check' (so to speak).

- And, of course, when you're dealing with the most fundamental Core Issue of all—it's the issue of the control on violence—and the production of a 'civil' society that allows things to take place orderly & peaceably & productively, and that, (as far as we're concerned), allows God's business (when it comes to the 'outworking' of His business under this 'fractured' power system), it allows that to take place.

- But as "sons" - we don't have just your 'typical' run-of-the-mill "fear of the consequences" reason for 'subjecting' ourselves unto the *powers that be*—but with that said, it IS pointed out here as A reason; (**not only for wrath**) - hence, it IS legitimate; it's something that needs to be recognized as a **reality** for **us**—and none of this is to say that we are not to be swayed by that reason! (That's a legitimate reason!)

- Because if we do “buck the power” (so to speak) - just because we are members of the church, the body of Christ **doesn't mean** that the *power* is going to come along and say, “Ok, you've got an excuse; you're off the hook; I can't touch you.” — no — they CAN and they WILL bring *the sword of wrath* to bear upon you just a quick as anyone else!

- But there IS something in all that we've been taught and that we've come to understand and appreciate in Romans 13:1-4 that (just as it did in the previous 2 Components), that **elevates** our Thinking and our Conduct & Behavior (and will do to our Godly Labor as well) **above** that which is a common, natural component of man's innate 'sense of justice'!

- And at the outset—when Paul brings up this issue of *wrath* (*not only for wrath*) - it could be easily thought that that's not really 'elevating' anything at all for us.

- And the truth is—that element is NOT elevating this 3rd Component of Justice any at all for us!

- But there's a naturalness behind *not only for wrath*—and that's because of the fact that if we **do resist the power** (as Paul said in :2) - there isn't any 'exemption' for us—we're NOT immune to the power's Authority or *wrath*!

- And it's designed to deal with disorderliness—it's designed to deal with unruliness—and it's designed to deal with anything that comes within the scope of VIOLENCE—(from the most mild form you could think of; or the most extreme form you could think of) - the truth is, the Government is designed to RESPOND to it!

- And in view of that—it's designed to respond to any threat to its capacity to DO THOSE THINGS!

- And, therefore, if we are going to resist *the ordinance of God*, then we're going to find ourselves subject to its *WRATH*—(to its Authority to deal with contrariness and opposition to its most vital, fundamental, foundational reason for existing!

- And so, we DO have to be 'subject' for wrath's sake!

- Because, just as it says in (:4), *But if thou do that which is evil, be afraid; for he beareth not the sword in vain*:— and the “*sword*” is the Just Vengeance of the *Ordinance of God!*

- As one of the *powers that be*, (being ordained of God & possessing the *ordinance of God*) - Gov. has the *sword* of Justice—the power/authority to dispense vengeance/*wrath* in order to quell violence!

- But in the sense of *Wherefore ye must needs be subject, not only for wrath*, ... that really isn't ‘elevating’ this 3rd Component of Justice above the reason why any normal, everyday, run-of-the-mill man of this world subjects himself to the *power* of Government.

- But we do have something that DOES ‘elevate’ our ‘sense of Godly Justice’ above & beyond the norm: **and that’s the issue of our CONSCIENCE!**

... *but also for conscience sake.*

- What is the *conscience*?

- Most commonly, the *conscience* is considered to be our “**evaluator**” (so to speak), when it comes to making a decision.

- (Webster’s 1828) - *conscience* = internal judgment of right and wrong; the faculty, power or principle within us, which **decides** on the lawfulness or unlawfulness of our own actions and affections, and instantly approves or condemns them.

- Again, the most common understanding of the *conscience* is that it is the part of our inner man that has a knowledge of what is right and what is wrong.

- And more often than not—when most folks deal with what Paul says here: ... *not only for wrath, but also for conscience sake*—most often, the idea is that what Paul is saying is that you are to *subject* yourself unto *the powers that be* because of your sense of what is right vs. what is wrong.

- But my understanding is, that this is **NOT** merely the issue of what is right or what is wrong—because the *conscience* is not only the ‘evaluator’ of right & wrong decisions—but in order for the *conscience* to make those decision, it has to have some **information** in order to make those evaluations/decisions!

- In other words, the *conscience* has to have some **KNOWLEDGED** in it!

- And while it is less commonly thought of this way—it's actually one of the **most** common uses of the word *conscience* — and that is that one's *conscience* is: **knowledge within oneself; inward knowledge; inmost thought!**

- And my understanding is that the word *conscience* is being used here in the sense that we **KNOW** something about *the powers that be* **that your common, run-of-the-mill man DOESN'T KNOW!**

- As “sons,” we have **GOD’S** viewpoint—and **HIS** understanding & appreciation for *the powers that be!*

- We have the “***the mind of Christ***” therefore, in connection with that issue of “*the power*” and “*the powers*”!

- And in view of THAT Godly Thinking operating within us—our being *subject unto the higher powers* is based, not only upon the reality that we **could** be subject to its *wrath* (if we, ourselves, are STUPID enough to be violent & disorderly in its face) - **but MORE than that, we have this “conscience” issue!**

- We have (operating with us) something that NO MAN of “this world” has operating within him!

- And that **marks** our Conduct & Behavior **out** as **DIFFERENT** than the average man's Conduct & Behavior—it marks our Conduct & Behavior as being one **of a properly educated SON of God!**

- And that IS an “elevation” above and beyond the normal, everyday man's Conduct & Behavior—whereby his **ONLY** reason for subjecting himself to the *powers that be* is one of “*for wrath's sake*”!

- And that takes us back to an issue that I talked about a while back, but said that we'd come back to it later on—and that is that there is a specific reason why God has Paul say, “*Wherefore ye must needs be subject, NOT ONLY for wrath, BUT ALSO for conscience sake.*”

- And that expression, “***not only... but also***” - indicates that there is an issue for us as “sons” that *is above and beyond the norm*—it indicates to you that we have 1 Reason for *subjecting ourselves unto the powers that be*: (i.e., for *wrath’s sake*—which **all** men do), but **more than that** (or “*not only*” that), but we *ALSO* have a 2nd Reason that is *elevated* above that 1st Reason—and that reason is a **Sonship Reason**: (i.e., *for conscience sake*)!!!

- And that’s why the wording is as it is—and that’s why each word is carefully chosen for getting across PRECISELY what God intends to get across to His sons!

- And it’s because of *conscience sake* that ought to be the **MOST influential** of the 2 reasons to a son!

- And the wording here is designed to be **EMPHATIC**—it’s designed to emphasize one thing over another—and the emphasis is upon the issue of *for conscience sake*.

- And that’s the issue that ought to **dominate** our mind & our Thinking so that makes it so our Godly Con. & Beh. naturally and zealously **DESIRES** to *be subject unto the higher powers*.

- And that issue **DOES** ‘widen the gap’ (so to speak) between ourselves and “the world” as the effectual working of the Godly Wisdom is doing its job; and the effectual working of the previous 2 Components to the Godly Justice are doing their job—and then when we get down to this Final, 3rd Component in connection with Godly Justice—we’ve got something that **much more** now operates within us.

- And it makes it, therefore, so that our **whole reason** for responding to the Authority of Human Government in this honourable, orderly, peaceable way — (and really, our zeal and desire is to never even entertain the notion to put ourselves in opposition to it where it would think of us as being against it, or being a hindrance to it, or anything along those lines) — is that, the idea of opposing it becomes **ABHORRENT** to us! - it’s a **reprehensible** concept to us!

- And that’s because it’s now a matter of *conscience* to us now, based upon the understanding & appreciation we have for it—the **Godly** understanding & appreciation for it!

- And that's the 'potent' way in which the Godly Conduct & Behavior Issue concludes—but it's also designed to be the means that carries us into the Godly Labor Issue in (:6 & 7).

- Because it's *for conscience sake* that makes it so that we desire to Labor with our Father as it's laid out for us there in supporting the Government under which we live—and in giving it what it needs to be able to do its job—and to see us as an ASSET to it—(and not as a threat or a detriment, or anything like that to it).

- By the way—that's going to be an issue in *the creature* (in the heavenly places) - because being now *subject to vanity* — with all of the violence that now exists in the creature among the rulers of it—and those rulers not being able to 'get along' (so to speak) in an orderly, peaceable way with its subjects—if my understanding is correct, one of the things that will take place when we're placed as "sons" in it will be — that the creature will gladly and willingly be subject unto our rulership in it—and we will see it as an ASSET to us; and it will view us as an ASSET to it!

- In other words—the angelic realm that we will govern over will view us as an asset to them—and they will gladly subject themselves unto US!!! (Because the intelligentsia of "the new creature" [us as sons], we will no longer view its subjects [the angels] as a threat or detriment to it—to us!)

- And that's why (:6) starts off with those double "For's" — *For for this cause*—(that is, *For conscience sake*, NOT *for wrath's sake*)!

- And so it's that issue of "*but also for conscience sake*" that takes what is considered the common, natural component of man's innate sense of Justice (*for wrath's sake*) and ELEVATES it above and beyond it to an understanding and a knowledge that is Uncommon: a Godly knowledge and a Godly understanding!

- Now there is one more thing we need to address before going on to the Godly Labor Issue in (:6-7) - and that has to do with the other thing I pointed out earlier and said that we'd come back to it later on—and that's the issue of why God has the apostle Paul say, *Wherefore ye must NEEDS be subject*.

- As we come to the close of the effectual working of (:1-5) - because of the fact that this particular Component of Justice in connection with how we view and think about and live and act in relationship with our Government—due to how we, as American citizens (and as conservative, Christian Americans commonly think & behave: not being taught by our Father, but by the wisdom of men) — there’s a potential problem (maybe it’s not a problem at all), but there’s the potential, at this point, that you may feel a bit ‘let down’ because so much of what you based your patriotism upon wasn’t at all the things by which your Father defined patriotism!

- And the ‘risk’ here—or the possible problem that may arise is that the kind of **zeal, enthusiasm, delight, and joy** to do what (:3-5) say (and what the Godly Labor of :6-7 says) isn’t really there; or you kind of have to **force yourself** to be zealous & joyful to pay your taxes, and to *render tribute, custom, fear, and honour* to whom it’s *due*.

- So I think a bit of Godly Exhortation is in order here.

- Really—in view of the progressive development of all that’s been going on Edification-wise since we began the Sonship Curriculum back in Romans 12:3—(as each Component builds upon the preceding one; and each Form of Doctrine builds upon the preceding one) - along with all that, there’s something else that should be taking place.

- (And really, the way in which :6 starts off, it kind of makes this issue stand out.)

- And that’s the fact that—if the Godly Edification has been effectually working within us as God has designed it to—then the initial Godly enthusiasm, ambition, & zeal that we started off with at the end of Romans chapter 8 (for getting our Sonship Education under way—and that caused us to “present ourselves” at the Sonship Checkpoint of 12:1-2—and that had us ‘buckle down’ and get our education going) — the truth is, there’s an expectation that there will be an INCREASE in ZEAL!!!

- Come back to Proverbs 3 — and remember how the last section of the exhortation that corresponds to the *instruction of Wisdom* ended (not only ended *Wisdom*, but prepared for getting *the instruction of Justice*).

- read Pro. 3:13-20

- Notice there in (:13) - that issue of **“Happy is the man ...”** - that’s the issue of Godly satisfaction & contentment—and as you go down through the information here—that Godly satisfaction & contentment kind of has 2 Aspects to it: 1) Leans back; 2) Leans forward

- That is—in 1 Aspect, the happiness/satisfaction/contentment leans back or looks back (in a son’s thinking) to what his Father told him **would** be the case when his education got underway; and now it **dawns** upon the son (**after** the Wisdom has been gotten) that what his Father said really was true.

- (At the beginning, his Father told him that the only place where you’ll ever find happiness/satisfaction/contentment is by means of his Sonship Education—but the son, even though he can agree with his Father that that will be the case, it’s really not until the son has actually **experienced** that; **AFTER** the first form of doctrine of the Godly Wisdom has been concluded that the son gets the full awareness and reality of that issue!) - because now you’ve got the experiential PROOF of it (when you’ve responded to it Positively & Properly at the end of it)!

- Genuine, Godly happiness/satisfaction/contentment then begins to develop within the son.

- And then—when that’s done—a son begins to realize that without the Education continuing on—unhappiness settles in—dissatisfaction settles in—discontentment settles in.

- And what that does is to provide for a ‘boost’ (in a sense) and **fuels** a son’s enthusiasm & his ambition & his delight for his Sonship Education all that much more!

- And that’s when the ‘leaning forward’ concept comes in.

- Notice again (:17-18) - *17 Her ways are ways of pleasantness, and all her paths are peace. 18 She is a tree of life to them that lay hold upon her: and happy is every one that retaineth her.*

- Now you’re to a perception and a realization that **all her ways are ways of pleasantness**—(not just what I’ve gone through already: but ALL of them are) - and if there’s Godly happiness/satisfaction/contentment that comes out of just this 1st Form of Doctrine (of the

Godly Wisdom) - and it's GREAT/FANTASTIC, and the experiential proof of having gotten it has generated that Godly happiness/satisfaction/contentment to the degree that it did—if this “*path*” is **this GREAT, then what about all the other ones?!?!**

- Well, they've got to be just as great, if not greater!!!

- Then there's the realization that “*She is a tree of life*” to me, as I *lay hold upon her*—and that's the issue of **FULL, FUNCTIONAL LIFE!**

- In all of her ‘branches’ and in all of her ‘fruit’ - in everything that you partake of here is going to be functional life, upon functional life, upon functional life—and the happiness/satisfaction/contentment will just continue on!

- And that's the issue of a son ‘leaning forward’ - or desiring to press on in his education with even greater enthusiasm, and with greater ambition, and greater zeal & delight!

- And as that's all taking place—there's something that is expected to be taking place in the NEXT Form of Doctrine (the Godly Justice) — and what begins to manifest itself is that **increased ZEAL!**

- And that increased zeal manifests itself (especially) in not only **wanting** the Sonship Education—(wanting to get the *instruction of Justice* underway) - but there's also a particular way in which that zeal manifests itself—and that's in the Godly LABOR.

- And that comes out in each of the Godly Labor Aspects that's found in those 3 Components to the *instruction of Justice*. (And the very terminology used in each of the Labor Aspects of the *instruction of Justice* brings that out).

- In each of the 3 Labor Aspects to the Godly Justice, there's a **heightened sense of excitement** in them.

- (Rom. 12:18) - Notice the “tone” of ***If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men.***

- That's not just worded that way to underscore our responsibility in the matter (true as that is) - but it's also worded that way because that's what we should be **enthusiastic** to do!

- We are to—*as much as lieth in us*—in other words, we're to 'go out of our way' - and if it looks like peace just can't be had between us and someone who has done us 'dirt', we want to sit down and figure out Why— we want to take the responsibility upon ourselves and figure out what we can do to make sure that we live *peaceably* —

— *if it be possible*, we'll figure it out!

- And that's because that "zeal" has GROWN—and that love for Laboring with God in what He's doing has begun to increase and amplify—and it's becoming **dominant** in our thinking!

- Same thing in (:21) — and the main reason why the Godly Conduct & Behavior there is: *if thine enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire on his head* is because you WANT to 'thaw' the ice that's there—you want to make it so that if it's possible for this *enemy* to no longer be an *enemy*, you're going to do what you can to do it!

- And so when that *evil* is done by that *enemy*—(as :21) says, you've got some enthusiasm NOT to be *overcome of that evil*—but you've got an enthusiasm to *overcome that evil with good!* (And you're going to make it a LABOR issue, to do that!)

- And just by the way it's worded—you've got a '**tone**' of **excitement** there! you've got **energy** there—there's **fervency** within the mind in connection with that! And that's because there's been an increase, and an amplifying in the **desire** to Labor with God in what He's doing!

- And then it comes up one more time in the 3rd Component as you transition out of the Conduct & Behavior and into the Labor aspect.

- And that's one of the reasons why it says in (:5), *Wherefore ye must NEEDS be subject, NOT ONLY for wrath, BUT ALSO for conscience sake.*

- The *conscience* now has within it, the privilege of having an understanding & appreciation of viewing that Human Government issue EXACTLY like God does, and see the **genius** of what He did when he 'fractured' the *power* into

powers—and to see exactly what it is that that Gov. is designed to do—and to be able to have the ‘eyes of your understanding’ cut through all of the garbage that governments get wrapped up in (and you’re not going to bother with ‘Political Science’ type issues, or debating the virtues of one kind of Gov. against another—or any of that kind of bologna) - but you’re going to just come along and recognize that that *ordinance of God* issue IS THERE! (And Thank God that it’s there!)

- And you understand that it’s not just there for the orderliness of it & being able to check violence—but along with all that, you understand that at the core of that *ordinance of God* is the methodology by which the Business Operations of God are designed to be carried out—and the government that you participate in and under which you live is designed, therefore to carry that out!

- And so there’s to be an **excitement**, therefore, to now Labor with God in the support of that government –and that takes you right to the issues there in (:6 and 7).

- With the Godly Thinking of (:1-2) and the Godly Conduct & Behavior of (:3-5) - we can now move on to: **THE GODLY LABOR.**

6 For for this cause pay ye tribute also: for they are God’s ministers, attending continually upon this very thing.

7 Render therefore to all their dues: tribute to whom tribute is due; custom to whom custom; fear to whom fear; honour to whom honour.

- **“For for”** - (this is the only time in Paul’s Epistles that he uses this double “for”) - and what you have here is a double use of the “for” of Reason.

- And this is going to make it so that the Godly C&B attaches itself to the Godly Labor—in other words it’s going to go back and take **one specific issue** (the most important issue of all in the Godly C&B) and grab hold of it, and then attach it to the Godly Labor as the **main reason** for the Godly labor.

- And this really is a marvelous example of the POWER of the English language to be absolutely PRECISE!

- And when you have a body of information that has some complexity to it (like we've just had in :1-5) - and when you want to be very specific and point to just one particular issue—it would be too vague to simply say, 'For this cause pay ye tribute also' — (wait a minute, there were **2 causes** at the end of :5 ... so which one are you talking about?) — you have to be more specific than that—and at the same time you want to put heavy emphasis upon the specific thing you're after—so you word it in such a way as to avoid confusion!

- And so to avoid confusion—and to be **precise**—the use of the double "*for*" puts the emphasis upon the nearest issue to it—and that's the issue of: *for conscience sake!*

- And that's what this first phrase of (:6) is doing—*For for THIS cause*—and the nearest *cause* or reason to this phrase is that final issue sitting at the end of (:5) - *for CONSCIENCE sake*—it's *for conscience sake* (that Sonship reason) that *ye pay tribute!*

- In other words—it's what you **KNOW** as a SON (what's now in your *conscience*) that materially affected the way in which you Conduct & Behave yourself like God does that now materially affects the way in which you spend your time Laboring together with God under the Governmental System in which you live!

- So (:6) says, *For for this cause* (for conscience sake) *pay ye tribute also:* — and that colon tells you to pause and consider that statement.

- It's *for conscience sake* (it's because you have some knowledge/information now existing in your *conscience* that's PRIVILEGED information that only a properly educated son has) that makes it so that your first act of Laboring together with your Father in connection with the particular *power/human government* under which you live is to *pay tribute!*

- And if you **don't** *pay tribute*—if you **don't** *subject yourself unto the higher powers* and Labor with God to support that Governing/Controlling power by *paying tribute*—then your *conscience* is going to **bother** you—to put it plainly, if you don't **gladly** support your Gov. by *paying tribute*, then you just won't sleep well—your conscience will bother you that much! [Because you know very well how BIG of an issue this is to your Father! ... and it should be to YOU!]

- And this is now the 3rd time in these 7 verses that you've been told something that should (if everything has done its effectual work) make it so that when it says up there in (:1), *Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers*—that you should **GLADLY** do that! (With real, genuine, Godly joy, zeal, enthusiasm, and gladness!) [Gladly pay your taxes!]

- 1) *Let every soul ...*
- 2) *resisteth (the very opposite of gladly)*
- 3) *for conscience sake—you will be unhappy if you don't!*

- *For for this cause (for conscience sake) pay ye tribute:*

- What is *tribute*?

- *tribute* = a sum of money paid to the government in return for peace and protection—*tribute* is a species of a tax—it's a tax that's forced upon the citizens of a nation in return for protection against violence (in support of police/law enforcement & the military of that nation; and generally serves to enrich the government).

- It's the general term used to indicate the monetary support of a government so that that government can continue doing it's job.

- And that money that's paid can go for a number of things—(for police, military—but also for roads and infrastructure, and even for a whole bunch of things that may be wasteful; or stupid; or even evil and sinful!)

- But your job in laboring with God as a “son” is to pay that *tribute* for *conscience sake*! — A son knows that even though a large part of his money is going to be wasted and put towards evil, sinful pursuits, a son knows that there is a BIGGER issue at hand: support of *the ordinance of God*! (And that government WILL use some of it to keep man's violence in check!) ... so he happily pays it!

- And even though you know it—it needs to be said: WHEN YOU ARE PAYING YOUR TAXES (as a properly educated son) YOU ARE LABOING TOGETHER WITH GOD IN WHAT HE'S DOING! (You're laboring with God in one of His Operations He wants to get accomplished!!!)

- And we again have another one of those times (right after the colon) here in :6 that ‘begs the question, Why?’ — and the remainder of :6 sets forth one more time (and re-enforces one more time) all of the “Steps” you took in your thinking to get to this point where you’ll gladly *subject yourself unto the higher powers*—and then actually DO IT (*pay ye tribute*) - and it won’t be by force or by coercion, or by pretense or done reluctantly or anything along those lines—(and because this issue is one whereby you can so easily get ‘off track’) - one more thing needs to be stated **and further amplified upon.**

- One more time—God has the apostle Paul emphasize the fact that your Thinking; and your C&B, and your Labor is DIFFERENT than anyone else’s—and it’s different because of what **DOMINATES** your thinking!!! Once again, God points to what makes His sons different and what **marks** His sons as His sons: **they Think, Live, and Labor exactly like God the Father does & like God the Son does!!!**

6 *For for this cause pay ye tribute also* (“also” - that is, along with being *subject* in C&B, also pay tribute): Why? ***for they are God’s ministers, attending continually upon this very thing.***

- And the final part of :6 is designed to take you right back to that most fundamental, Core, Seminal Issue when it comes to you, as a son, living in relation to the Authority of Human Government!

- That’s what dominates your thinking!

- “***for they are God’s ministers, ...***” — this is the 3rd time in this passage where God states this—3 times God confronts us with this issue—probably for a reason, right?

- What that does is, at 3 critical points in the passage, our Father kind of gives us a ‘test’ (so to speak) - in other words, He makes it so we are forced to think our way back to that most fundamental Core Issue of all—the issue of *the ordinance of God.*

- Just like before—the rulers of Gov. are *God’s ministers*—and the word *minister* takes you back to the issue when God ‘fractured’ the *power* into *powers*; *ordained* the *powers* to be the methodology by which He carries out His business in the ‘long-term’ (Post-Flood) - and He vested them with *the*

ordinance of God whereby every Gov. that will ever exist will seek to maintain order and keep man's ability to be violent under control and in check.

- That issue of a Ruler of Gov. being a *minister of God* acts as a 'trigger' mechanism for all that went on to get God's Thinking and God's Heart on the matter installed properly in your Thinking and in your heart!
 - And God's **not one bit** interested in WHO sits in that position of Gov.—it doesn't matter at all—even a rank unbeliever; a vile, wicked individual may be in that position—it doesn't matter—he/she is still *the minister of God.*
 - And I find that a fascinating matter—God can use even an unbeliever (even an Atheist!) as a *minister of God!*
 - And we may suffer great evil and great ill-effects from rulers of Gov.—but because they are *ministers of God*, THEY WILL HAVE TO ANSWER TO GOD FOR WHAT THEY DO—they'll have to deal with God's wrath and judgment for how they carried out their *ministry* & for abusing that *ministry!*
 - But you don't have to worry about that!
 - You and I are only asked to view Gov. the way our Father does; Think about it the way He does; Conduct yourself under it the way He would Himself; and the Labor with Him by perpetuating that Gov. by *paying tribute* so it can continue to exist.
 - Because as long as they're doing ONE THING—everything else is irrelevant—you might not like all the other things it does, but there's only ONE THING that Gov. has to do to be **valuable**:
- 6 ... *for they are God's ministers, attending continually upon this very thing.*
- And the ONE THING they do is what Paul says here is: **this very thing** — and they *attend* to it **CONTINUALLY!**
 - **They never stop**—(in all of stupid & goofy & evil they do) they never, ever stop *attending to this very thing!*

- And the **very thing** that ALL Rulers **attend continually upon** is: to maintain order in a civil society & keep the violence of men in check!

- In other words—the One Thing that all rulers of gov. **attend to continually (ALL OF THE TIME) IS THE ORDINANCE OF GOD!**

- And as long as they do that, then that Gov. is valuable, needful, and are functioning in a capacity that God created and designed for them to function in as His *ministers*.

- Rulers are NOT functioning as *ministers of God* when they feed the poor, impose universal health care, or any other way in which they think they are carrying out the “Golden Rule” — no — rather, they are *ministers of God* ONLY when they **attend continually upon this very thing** (maintaining order & keeping man’s violence in check!) [Because that’s what *the ordinance of God* is all about!]

- So — 6 *For for this cause pay ye tribute also: for they are God’s ministers, attending upon this very thing.*

- And now everything has been done—all of the effectual working of (:1-6) has finally come down to this—all of the adjustments have been made in your inner man—and now the concluding matter of Godly Labor can be stated.

7 *Render therefore to all their dues: tribute to whom tribute is due; custom to whom custom; fear to whom fear; honour to whom honour.*

- **Render** (to pay, to give, to contribute, to furnish) **therefore** (here’s the conclusion to the whole matter of this 3rd Component of Justice) **to all** (all Rulers of Gov. as ‘ministers of God’) **their dues** (that which is owed to them by means of support in order to maintain the Gov. that contains *the ordinance of God*):

- And that colon at the end of *dues* is not so much designed as a pause, but is used in another function of a colon, which is to enumerate a list of things—and Paul lists 4 things which can be grouped into 2 groups of 2.

- (1st Group) *tribute to whom tribute is due; custom to whom custom;*
(“Tribute” and “Custom”)
- (2nd Group) *fear to whom fear; honour to whom honour.*
(“Fear” and “Honour”)

- And even though we can say some things about *tribute, custom, fear, & honour*—these are still very generic terms—and they’re generic for a reason.

- And that’s because by being generic (or broad & general) God is having the apostle Paul use such generic terminology in order to describe a RANGE of things that falls under 2 particular categories that are the 2 **legitimate** categories for a son’s Godly Labor (to subject himself to the powers that be, and gladly support that government).

- And this is something a son can do **even if that Gov. is persecuting him!**

- By virtue of Human Government being *ordained of God* — being vested with *the ordinance of God*—and its Rulers being *ministers of God*—you as a son, have a Sonship Obligation to *render therefore to all their dues*—put simply, Knowing what Government is designed by God to do, (and that takes a lot of doing) — therefore, you are obliged to support it—and there are 2 basic ways you will do that:

1) *Render tribute* to whom it is due; and to *render custom* to whom it is due—(*Tribute to Custom*)

- *Tribute* (as we noted before) = a species of tax whereby a sum of money is paid to the government in return for maintaining the peace; for protection from criminals and foreign enemies; and for such things as roads & infrastructure that maintains an orderly society.

- And **ALL** citizens pay *tribute*.

- *Custom* = another species or form of a tax—but more particularly, it’s a tax paid by merchants on goods or merchandise that are either imported or exported—a tax usually passed on to the customers.

- *Custom* is therefore a tax on commodities that you consume; or a tax on the use of certain services— (what we call today an excise tax—on such things as tobacco, gasoline, and your internet provider).

- The *custom* is what's paid by the customer to the merchant as a tax upon the items or services he purchases or consumes within a country. (And it may vary from country to country, hence it's what's customarily charged by that country—whatever is the *custom* of that country or state).

- And where ALL citizens pay *tribute*—only those who purchase items or services that have a *custom* tax put upon it, pay *custom*. (Not necessarily all citizens pay *custom*.)

- So the range of *tribute* to *custom* goes from the general to the not-so general.

- But the point is—that the **range** of *tribute* to *custom* covers the whole range of what is considered any thing that would come under the category of monetary or financial support that a Government imposes—any taxation system comes under the category of either *tribute* or *custom*.

- Then the 2nd most basic way in which you are obliged to support your Government (knowing what it's designed by God to do) is:

2) *Render fear* to whom it is due; and to *render honour* to whom it is due—(*Fear* to *Honour*)

- *Fear* is the bigger of the two expressions in the sense that it's a dreadful appreciation for, or apprehension of impending danger or the prospect of some possible evil—and in view of the Government being vested with the authority to put to death violent men—that power & authority deserves to be rendered *fear* by its citizens—it's not to be 'trifled' with!

- And those in law enforcement, military, and in certain judicial positions fall under this category.

- i.e., those who ‘wield the sword of justice’.

- And I say it’s the ‘bigger’ issue of the 2, simply because this issue is **life-threatening**—you don’t mess around with the power & authority that can take you life!

- And your Godly Labor as a “son” is to **ever fear** that Governing/Controlling Power—and to **never NOT** be afraid of it; never challenge it; never oppose it—because it contains the very *ordinance of God* that keeps man’s ability to be violent under control!

- *Honour* = the esteem and respect paid to something or someone of worth; to regard something/someone with high respect due to their station, position, or office.

- Therefore, whereas the issue of *fear* goes toward Government in general (and its ability & authority to *execute wrath upon him that doeth evil*) - the issue of rendering *honour* goes toward the particular offices and positions that make up the Gov. under which we live.

- And the issue of rendering *honour* to whom it is due is NOT the issue of rendering *honour* to the actual **person**, but the **OFFICE** that the person holds!

- For example—it’s much like the issue of *honouring* your **parents**—and a father or a mother may be a SORRY person/individual—but even at that, they still hold a position or an office that demands respect and *honour*!

- And the issue of **rendering** *honour* is mainly an OUTWARD exercise or act—and what is the main way in which you act or show that you are *honouring* your parents? ... YOU **OBEY** THEM!

- And, chiefly, your Godly Sonship Labor in *rendering honour to whom honour is due* is going to involve your **obedience** to the offices & positions that make up the Gov. under which you live!

- And you're being obedient and *rendering honour* to those positions & offices because you see **past** the person—and you see the value and worth of those offices—you **value & esteem them** just like your Father does as *ministers of God* who are *attending continually upon this very thing* (providing peace & order by keeping the violence of men in check)!

... you're *rendering honour* to the very methodology by which your Father has determined to accomplish the long-term success of His business!!!

... and that's a gracious, joyful, magnificent privilege of Sonship Labor!!!

- So in view of all that, the issue of rendering *honour* is somewhat more 'narrow' in its scope than the issue of *fear*. (It's looking more at the individual offices that make up *the powers that be*.)

- And just as it did with *tribute* and *custom*—the range of *fear* to *honour* goes from the general to the not-so-general.

- The point, once again, is—that the **range of *fear* to *honour* covers the whole range of what is considered to be all forms of respect!**

- So then—there are **2 general, legitimate** categories for a son's Godly Labor in connection with Justice as it regards your Sonship relationship to Government (or *the powers that be*):

1) To Labor together with God **in the support of the STRUCTURE of the Government**—(by *rendering tribute to whom tribute is due; custom to whom custom;*) — financial & monetary support through taxation keeps the structure of the government functioning.

2) To Labor together with God **in the support of the OFFICES/POSITIONS that make up the Government**—(by *rendering fear to whom it is due; and honour to whom it is due*) — respect & obedience in support of the offices that administrate and/or *minister* the authority of the government.

- And when you properly understand & appreciate those Core, Seminal Issues (in the 4 Steps of the Godly Thinking) - which generates the Zeal for the Godly Conduct & Behavior—then there should be an appropriate Godly **Zeal & Enthusiasm** to *render* to the Government (or *the higher powers*) what is *due* in it a **Godly manner**:

1) To **GLADLY** support it financially by paying whatever taxes it imposes. (From the Federal, down to the Local level).

2) To **GLADLY** give respect to the offices of *the ministers of God*—knowing that they are the custodians of *the ordinance of God!*

- And remember that one of the major reasons for you being trained by your Father as His son in this issue of Justice and your relationship to Governing/Controlling Power—and one of the major reasons for why you should be zealous & enthusiastic to Labor with your Father in this way—is because **you're going to be part of His Government**; part of His Governing & Controlling Power in *the creature!* (When you are placed as a son & receive the *joint-inheritance with Christ*, you'll be placed in one of those ruling positions that make up the Government of the Heavenly Places!!!)

- Now I want to end this 3rd Component of Justice by taking you back to that Exhortation that we began with up in (:1) —

Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers.

- The truth is—after all that we've gone through—some 39 Lessons; over 15 weeks to get the full, effectual working of these 7 verses—having the very Thinking and Conduct & Behavior of God Himself effectually working within your inner man — you should now be able to look back at that Exhortation, and without one whit of reluctance; without one iota of force or coercion—GLADLY subject your soul unto the higher powers!

- And when I said that a son would gladly pay his taxes; and a properly educated son would gladly & enthusiastically be subject to the Government under which he lives—that should now make PERFECT SENSE to you! (And anything less, just wouldn't be the proper Sonship response!)

- And one other thing—you should now have a totally different understanding and appreciation for what “patriotism” is—(loyalty & devotion to one’s country) - that’s radically different from what you had before—your devotion to your country, your nation—isn’t because of its form of government; or its flag; or its venerated documents; or its national anthem; or even its military (per se) ... rather, your loyalty & devotion is toward the very same thing that God your Heavenly Father’s is—and that’s the issue of ***the ordinance of God*** that your nation and its government is vested with by God Himself!

- And folks, that **IS** radically different than the average patriotic American—or the average Christian Conservative American!

- And it’s radically different because in the area of Government, you have been *transformed by the renewing of your mind* and by that, you’ve been *conformed to the image of Christ!!!*

- And with that—your “Lower Order of Justice” that you have had built upon your general ‘sense of Justice’ by the course of this world and by the wisdom of this world—that should now be completely dismantled and dismissed—and fully replaced with Godly Justice: A Higher Order of Justice!

- A Higher Order of Justice in regards to your Personal Justice towards men in general who do you ‘dirt.’

- A Higher Order of Justice in regards to your (and your Father’s) mutual ENEMY.

- And A Higher Order of Justice in regards to the Established Authority of the Governing & Controlling “*higher powers*” of the Government under which you live.

- Your basic & fundamental *instruction of Justice* is now complete!

- Any Question? Comments? — (see Acts 25:1-11)

- VOLITION TESTING POINT: RESPONDING **POSITIVELY** & **PROPERLY!** (Proverbs 3:1-4—review)

- Now at this point—having now *received the instruction of Justice*—and having responded to it Positively & Properly—the expectation is that in all 3 of the Components that make up *the instruction of Justice*, there is (as we talked about several sessions ago) [there should be] an increase in the Godly Zeal, Ambition, & Enthusiasm (and gladness, if you will) to Live & Labor together with your Heavenly Father, just as He has taught you to do in Romans 12:17-13:7.

- And that’s an important issue—because it provides for you to have some features or some expectations of the Father that allows for you to ‘measure’ your Sonship progress, and to ensure that everything is running ‘well’ in your Godly edifying.

- But there’s another issue that we have to be confronted with before moving on to the next Sonship Decision-Making Skill (*receiving the instruction of Judgment*).

- In fact—when you reach the end of the instruction of Justice, you’re at one of the most important and critical points in Level I, Phase 2, Sonship Edification.

- And if everything has been properly doing its effectual job—and if, since we began the Sonship Curriculum back up in Romans 12:3 right up until this very moment at the end of Romans 13:7—if everything’s working as it should, then as far as the Godly Edifying goes, there are some things that your Father is getting “built” and generated within your inner man—some are just getting underway, others have already been underway for some time now—and these are some things that kind of are at work in the ‘background’ (so to speak), and are not always directly addressed in the Curriculum (sometimes they are, but sometimes they’re not), but they’re being developed in you, none the less—and there’s an expectation that the Father has that you’re getting these issues developed—[and there are ways to measure their development]. But there’s one particular issue that your Father has been developing that needs to be looked at once again.

- And it just goes hand-in-hand with that issue of the increased Godly Zeal & Enthusiasm for Thinking, Living, & Laboring with your Father in the field of Godly Justice (The Higher Order of Justice).

- And just as we noted the progressive development and growth in the Godly Zeal (to the point that you would “gladly” *let your soul be subject unto the higher powers*) - hand-in-hand with that (and working perfectly together with that) - and as a “**hallmark**” feature that testifies to the fact that your godly

edifying is going well & proper up until this point—is that there should be (along with the Godly Zeal), a corresponding **GROWTH IN GODLY LOVE!**

- And one of the main reasons why it's so essential to make sure that it's developed to the point where it's supposed to have developed at the end of the Godly Justice—is because the 2 Components of Godly Judgment that come up under our *instruction of Judgment*—the 1st Component demands that a certain level of Godly Love has been developed and is effectually working—**otherwise there will be NO capacity to make Godly Judgments solely on the basis of Godly Love!**

- And going on is pointless.

- The growth of Godly Love has been ongoing since we began our Sonship Education back in Romans 12:3.

- And since then, 3 Major Features of Godly Love have been generated: Selflessness, Kindness (Lovingkindness), and Tenderheartedness.

- And a 4th Major Feature of Godly Love has been generated by the effectual working of all 3 Components to our *instruction of Justice*—(i.e., from Romans 12:17-13:7).

- But before we deal with that—I think we need to address something so that we don't get off track here—and that is, due to our background in our old days of Systematic Theology and “ICE” teaching—you might get the idea that when you're talking about things like “Selflessness” and “Kindness” and “Tenderheartedness” and other things that we will come to understand & appreciate are Major Features of Godly Love—you might get the idea that those are just Attributes or Virtues that pretty much are ‘stand-alone’ issues—or, as we used to say, Those are just “categories” of Bible Doctrine all to themselves—and therefore should be dealt with as categories all by themselves.

- But that's NOT how God looks at them or deals with them—that's how Systematic, Categorical teaching **compartmentalizes** them!

- To illustrate how God Himself views these things—let's notice something about how our Father instructs us in the issue of His Godly Love—and how He so often does, teaches us about something and then at the appropriate time, He then tells us in a single word, what all that He's been teaching us can now be called.

- (see/read Romans 14:15) — That’s the very first time in God’s word (and the very first time in your Sonship Curriculum) that the word *charity* has been used—and notice that it isn’t analyzed; it isn’t defined; it isn’t explained at all—you’re simply expected to know what it is by this time!

- By the time you get to Romans 14:15, Godly Love & Charity is supposed to have been generated, and begun to function properly.

- [Note to self: At this point we dealt with the difference between “love” and “charity” — see Additional Notes on “Charity” pgs.1-3]

- (Note also I Corinthians 13:1-13)

- Notice how God gathers up a whole bunch of attributes or features of *charity* all together—He doesn’t (**always**) deal with them as “stand-alone” categories. (though sometimes He does have reason to do so).

- Now to get this next, 4th Major Feature of Godly Love that is expected to be generated by the time you get to the end of *the instruction of Justice* you’re going to have to go back over those 3 Components of Justice and think some more about each one of them—and try to perceive what kind of a feature of Godly Love is being dealt with in those 3 Components.

1st Component (Romans 12:17-18)

- [think about Rom. 2:4, and God having the power and the right to pour out His wrath, and yet holding it back and instead demonstrating His *goodness, forbearance, & longsuffering*, knowing that *the goodness of God leadeth to repentance*].

- That’s God’s “strength under control”!
[individually]

2nd Component (Romans 12:19-21)

- [think about Rom. 9:22-24 {which, by the way, tells you when the rapture will take place}]

- Again, that’s God’s “strength under control”!
[dispensationally]

3rd Component (Romans 13:1-7)

- [think about when you have the power to “resist the ordinance of God” but you don’t resist it—think about *letting your soul be subject unto the higher powers*]

- Now that’s your strength (as a son) under control! That’s you being pliant, bendable, amenable, submissive ...

- And when you’re talking about being pliant, bendable, amenable, submissive—when you’re talking about ‘strength under control’ - what is that? what can that be called in a single word? and what is the word God uses to describe these things?

- MEEKNESS (being MEEK)!

- By means of the Godly Thinking, the Godly Conduct & Behavior, and the Godly Labor of all 3 Components of our *instruction of Justice*—our Father has produced and generated in us the 4th Major Feature of Godly Love & Charity: MEEKNESS!

- Let’s just run some verses—and all I’m after here is that you see how (at times) God doesn’t always take the issue of *meekness* and consider it as a ‘stand-alone’ category of doctrine, but rather (at times) regards it as a feature or characteristic of Godly Love —

- I Corinthians 4:21
- Galatians 5:23; 6:1-3
- Ephesians 4:2
- Colossians 3:12-14
- I Timothy 6:11

- And let’s just note the instance where I’ve said that you were kind of ‘tipped off’ to this issue of meekness—or maybe a better way to say it is that you were ‘prompted’ to think about this feature of meekness in the Exhortations of the book of Proverbs where you find the corresponding post-doctrinal exhortation that a son receives after he has completed receiving *the instruction of Justice* —

- Proverbs 3:21-35 (see :27-35 [**34**])

- Now before going on to deal with and define and describe this issue of *meekness*—I want to say some things in connection with this “list” of these 7 Major Features or Characteristics of Godly Love that we’re compiling and being taught about.

- When we talk about Major Features of God’s Love as being *selfless, kind, lovingkindness, tenderheartedness, & meekness*—while those are Major Features of God’s love, at the exact same time, those are also features or aspects of God’s own Character & Essence—they are attributes of who God is.

- And the truth is—if you were to boil down all of the aspects and attributes of who and what God is—the most fundamental feature that God presents about Himself when it comes to His relationship with His people is that He is **LOVE!** (as John says, “*God is love*” [I John 4:8])

- And if LOVE is the term that God uses to do that—and that, therefore, covers EVERYTHING He ever does with anybody—well then, ALL of the words and terms that could be used to describe a **facet** of that Love are rather extensive.

- But in Level I Sonship Education—we get the Main, Major terms and terminology and features and characteristics of God’s Love taught to us—and there are 7 of them—and they all encompass (by what they say) **everything that is true** in connection with God’s Love—and all of the other words and terms that could be used to describe a nuance, or a particular trait or a sub-feature that would fall under these 7 Major Features—they are all gathered up under these particular 7 Features (just as all 7 of these Features are covered under the one issue of God’s Love).

- It’s like what God says to the Thessalonians: *But as touching brotherly love ye need not that I write unto you: for ye yourselves are **taught of God to love one another.*** (I Thess. 4:9) - (and there’s an awful lot contained in that phrase: “*taught of God to love one another*”!!)

- And as that’s taught to you of God—you come to realize that there are some Major terms/Features that you get taught that have names given to them that kind of ‘stand out’ (or are outstanding Features) of God’s own Love.

- They are definable and describable Major Features.

- And my point here is just to say that it's quite possible to think about (or hit upon) a lot of terms and phrases that may not at all be wrong, but may be more of the 'sub-feature' variety—but what we're after here are the **Major** Features of Godly Love.

- So my understanding is that the next Major Feature of Godly Love that gets generated by the time you come to the end of *the instruction of Justice* (at the end of Romans 13:7) is that Godly Love is MEEK (meekness).

- And you need to appreciate that *meekness* is a further progressive development of Godly Love being *selfless*, *kind*, and *tenderhearted*.

- In other words God's Love is **not compartmentalized**—*meekness* is **not compartmentalized**—(nor is the *selflessness*, or the *kindness*, or the *tenderheartedness*) - but rather, NONE of those things exist separate from the others—it's the issue that one of them is the most fundamental or radical root of them all (which is the *selflessness*, for none of them would exist without the *selflessness*) - and when it comes to God *teaching* us to love one another and to love like He does—He teaches it to us in a way that's designed to **naturally develop** within us!

- And God's designed it so that when one has been generated, then next one naturally grows out of, and naturally develops out of the that first one—and then the next one naturally grows/develops out of the first 2—and then the 4th one naturally grows/develops out of those first 3—and so forth.

- And if you think about it—by means of 2 things: 1) by the effectual working of the Godly *selflessness*, *kindness*, and *tenderheartedness*—and 2) by the effectual working of what the 3 Components of *the instruction of Justice* does to further advance the issue of Godly Love—the next, progressive and developed Major Feature of Godly Love is the issue of *meekness*—because all 3 of those Components of Justice has you being *meek* in some way in every one of them.

- In fact—*meekness* is an issue that's most often manifested when **Justice** situations are in view [though not exclusively]! And because this Feature of Godly Love is developed within the context of Justice—that underscores (all the more) my understanding that the next Major Feature of Godly Love is **Meekness**.

- And the truth is—the term that we were after (*meekness*) really has more to do with Justice than with anything else. (And we'll confirm that later on.)

- **MEEK/MEEKNESS**—what does *meekness* mean? what is *meekness*?

- *meek* = (Webster's 1828) The primary sense is flowing, liquid—to melt—Mild of temper; soft; gentle; not easily provoked or irritated; yielding; given to forbearance under injuries.

- (Webster, cont.) - humble, submissive, not proud,

- (OED) Gentle, courteous, kind—free from haughtiness and self-will; humble and submissive; patient and unresentful under injury and reproach.

- Oftentimes people don't define the word *meekness* properly—or they oftentimes make it out to be something bad and a stain upon someone's character—because when *meekness* is used in an improper way, some folks come along and describe a person who is *meek* as one who is **WEAK!**

- And because of that, we have a catchy or pithy old English saying or maxim that was developed to try to stave off that improper meaning of *meekness*: “**Meekness is NOT Weakness!**”

- And what is meant by that is—that someone who is *meek* is NOT someone who, by nature, is weak or inept or a “weak-sister” (a person who is timid/indecisive/undependable) - someone who easily cracks under pressure.

- In fact, oftentimes the way being *meek* is miss-used, is that person is often described as being a “**milk-toast**” (easily softened by milk) — used to describe a bad/undesirable trait in a person whereby they just ‘wilt’ in the face of any opposition or adversity!

- But the truth is— “**meekness is NOT weakness**” — in fact, meekness is actually “**strength under control**” — and even the Lord Jesus Christ Himself described Himself as being “**meek**” — “*Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: ... (Matthew 11:29).*”

- The misuse of the word *meekness* is often used to describe a 90lb. weakling who couldn't express POWER or MIGHT **if he wanted to!**

- (Charles Smith, “Synonyms Discriminated,” pg. 454)

Meekness differs from mildness, gentleness, and softness, in being never applied, like them, to the deportment, but only to the temper or character. But with the world at large it is not in favour; whence has been imposed upon it the idea of *excessive* submissiveness, and an absence of that “spirit” which more readily finds admiration. It may be observed that *meekness* at least **excludes obstinacy** as well as **pride**; while persons who have softness in manner are often found by no means wanting in self-will. *Meekness* results from the absence of arrogant self-will or self-assertion. **It is the quality which meets not violence with violence, or force with force, or clamour with clamour, but endures provocation and submits to wrong.**

- (George Crabb, “Crabb’s Synonymes,” pg. 359)

Meekness consists not only in an **unresisting**, but a **forgiving** temper, a temper that is **unruffled by injuries and provocations**.

- Notice how Noah Webster, Charles Smith, and George Crabb can't talk about *meekness* without injecting it into the context of JUSTICE!

- The truth is—you can't be *meek* unless you have a **Just cause**, and a **Just right** to **expend authority or power!**

- And therefore, you've got a Just cause/right to seek retribution or to seek recompense or to seek Justice.

- In other words—*meekness* is NOT the unwillingness to do something like that—rather, ***meekness* is the containment within yourself of your “rights” to redress something because you would rather pursue a course that, for some reason, is more important and more meaningful to you!** (*That's* why you're “*meek*”!)

- Now let's verify/confirm that.

- Isaiah 29—Here you have the issue of the remnant of Israel experiencing some injustices and some unfairness and some ungodly expressions in connection with the issue of Justice.

- And here God takes apostate Israel to task in connection with their own corruption, wickedness, and contrariness and rebelliousness.

- And He says some things here that contrast the attitude and the character of the righteous Remnant within the nation Israel with the apostate element within the nation Israel. (Especially as it exists out in the 4th and the 5th Install. of the 5th CoP.)

- And as He does that—God uses a term to describe the Remnant’s character in the face of the **great injustices** that they are receiving.

- In other words, the Remnant will be on the **unjust** end of receiving EVIL from apostate Israel—when apostate Israel becomes their *enemies*!

- And that righteous Remnant is going to **patiently wait** for the LORD to **avenge** them (as the Lord Jesus Christ Himself teaches them in Luke ch. 17 and 19).

- And there is something that is supposed to characterize their longsuffering and their patience in the face of all those injustices—and it’s something that is to characterize the way they had been learning and had been taught to think (which, of course is the issue of their Godly Sonship Edification).

- And the context here is one of the Remnant having to deal with injustices, and evil treatment—undeserved, unmerited unfair treatment.

- (see/read Isa. 29:18-21)

- Notice in the last 2 verses (:20-21) - you’ve got that issue for the reason for what (:18-19) says—and you’ve got this issue of “*the terrible one*” and he’s “*brought to nought*” - and you’ve got “*the scorner*” who gets “*consumed*” - and you’ve got “*all that watch for iniquity*” are being “*cut off*” — and they’re the ones who particularly “*make a man an offender for a word*” (and that’s a **legal offender**) - they’re out there scrutinizing the conduct of the members of the Remnant of Israel, and they’re looking for what they consider to be any *iniquity* so they can declare that person an *offender*—and haul them before the judicial system of apostate Israel, and hopefully put them to death!

- And that “*word*” of course, is the issue saying that the Christ/Messiah of Israel is Jesus of NAZARETH!

- And in the face of all this evil being done to them by the members of apostate Israel and by “*the terrible one*” (that Anti-Christ), the context here is one of a Judicial setting.

- And in this context—God uses a word to describe the members of the Remnant of Israel as they find themselves in this judicial setting and **NOT fighting against any of these injustices.**

-And that’s the word found in (:19) - *The meek ...*

- *Meekness* is the characteristic of Godly Love that is displayed by a properly educated son in the realm of **Justice**—and when **injustice** is done to him—

— When a son receives ‘dirt’ done to him and *evil* done to him by those he deals with on a daily basis—when it’s in his ‘rights’ and ‘power’ to *recompense* it back (or pay it back) in kind, he rather CONTAINS his ‘rights’ and CONTAINS his ‘power’ to pay back in kind, in order to pursue a course of action that is more important to him—and that is to deal with the one who has done him ‘dirt’ and *evil* on the basis of *goodness, forbearance, and longsuffering*—(and here’s the more important course of action) - *knowing that the goodness of God leads that person to repentance.* [It’s far more important for you to *provide things honest in the sight of all men!*]

- That’s a son operating with MEEKNESS!

- And when a son receives opposition and resistance and *evil* from his *enemy*—when he has the ‘right’ & ‘power’ to avenge himself—he rather CONTAINS that ‘right’ & ‘power’ in order to pursue a course of action that is more important to him than avenging his own cause—he puts *wrath* in its proper place (in the Lord’s Day of Wrath), and he pursues a course of action that will provide for a softening of his *enemy*’s thinking & heart in order to keep the door of opportunity open to present the Gospel of Christ to his *enemy* — and if he responds positively to it, no longer be his *enemy*. (and that’s more important to him than avenging himself!)

- That’s a son operating with MEEKNESS!

- And when a son lives under a government that does stupid, evil, wicked, and vile things to him—and when he has the ‘rights’ and the ‘power’ to resist it and oppose it, and become violent himself (like a “Zealot” in the Lord’s day—[even one of His 12 apostles {Simon, not Peter} was of this Jewish political party that did not hesitate to use violence and force to achieve their ends] - a son will rather CONTAIN his ‘rights’ and ‘power’ to redress, resist, and oppose *the powers that be* in order to pursue a course of action that is more important to him—he let’s his *soul be subject unto the higher powers* because he knows that *power contains* and maintains the ordinance of God; and the *ministers of God* that make up its offices & positions have the authority and the right to take his life, if necessary (and God’s won’t do anything to stop them from taking his life) - and the continuation of *the ordinance of God* (and all that that means) is more important to a son than resisting & opposing that Government.

- Who cares about all the ‘trashy’ things; and the no-consequence, meaningless things that you can get yourself wrapped up in as you read the newspaper every day & get bombarded with the news, telling you what’s going on in your local Gov., and your state Gov., and your National Gov., and the UN! Whoopie-do! — there’s something **far greater** at steak: that *ordinance of God!*

- So when you’ve got the opportunity to pay your taxes, pay them for THAT reason—Who cares if they give it to abortionists? God will settle the score with them about ALL that—and until then, you be meek and pay those taxes without complaint!

- And that’s a son operating with MEEKNESS!

- In all 3 Components of Justice, God our Father has, in each of those 3 Components, given us something that is FAR MORE IMPORTANT than pursuing our legal right or using our legitimate power to do otherwise!!!

- And in doing so, He has ingeniously taught us the 4th Major Feature of Godly Love & Charity of: MEEKNESS!

- Let's notice another place in God's word where *meekness* is dealt with in the context of Justice and having a Just cause and a Just right to expend authority or power.

- But where those who are *meek* are containing within themselves their "rights" to redress something or to recompense something—but because they would rather pursue a course of action that is far more important and more meaningful, they patiently **wait** & "give place" (as it were) to their vengeance and wrath.

- **Matthew 5**—The Lord's Sermon on the Mount—(The Beatitudes) [9 of them]

- By the way, the word "Beatitude" does not occur in the Bible—not that it's wrong to call them that) - but the word "Beatitude" = supreme blessedness—it comes down to English from the L. and F. for "blessed" + Latin suffix "tude" = a state of being; hence, a state of being blessed.

- (read :1-12)

- Setting: after the Lord's 'temptation' by Satan—at the very beginning of His public, earthly ministry —

- The SotM is NOT written you today! It is NOT designed to effectually work in you! — the SotM is designed to operate ONLY in God's program with Israel!!!

- In order to properly understand & appreciate the Lord's SotM, a MASSIVE amount of background work in connection with God's program with Israel needs to be understood and appreciated before you ever get to Matthew chapter 5! — but for time's sake, we'll just note a couple of things that will hopefully jog your memory and set the context enough to deal with the passage that we're after.

- It's often thought by many Bible teachers that the Lord Jesus Christ just kind of randomly walked around and just randomly said a bunch of nice things—kind of like He just made it all up as He went along! (WRONG) - the truth is, where He went & what He said was almost "scripted" (so to speak) back in the prophets!

- (see Isa. 61:1-3) - this is what the Lord began doing in Mat. 5—in the face of apostate Israel and all that they had done & were doing to the members of the nation Israel, and to the Remnant in particular!

- This is where the SotM (and the ‘Beatitudes’) comes from!
 [And a properly educated Jew would know that when the Messiah came, this would be one of the things He would do!
 — he would expect the Christ to do this!]

- Notice in (:1-2) that there’s a bunch of terminology that are **Justice-type issues**.

- Now to confirm all the more that when the Lord delivers the SotM in Mat. 5ff—the context involves evil, wicked, horrible injustices being done to the Remnant of Israel by the vain & apostate religious System of Israel

- (see Psalm 37:1-22) - [note: the *evildoers* and the *wicked* = the vain, [Psa. 149, too] religious leaders of Israel itself!]

- This is all about IN-Justices!

- This is all about containing their rights/power to recompense and avenge themselves for something far more important!

- This is all about waiting, instead, for the Lord to avenge their cause!

- **THIS IS ALL ABOUT MEEKNESS!!!**

- (back to Matt. 5:5—*Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.*)

- These 9 ‘Beatitudes’ are not just randomly put together—rather, they’re put together in a particular order that goes down through the way that Apostate Israel has badgered, and has brutalized, and has manipulated, and has mistreated & taken advantage of the members of the Remnant of Israel (in particular) [and the people in general].

- And by the time they get to this Climactic Stage in their program, they’re now going to be learning some doctrine that gets taught to them by their own Messiah (the Christ) - and He’s going to put it all together for them in an ‘Outline’ Form within that SotM—that is going to enable them to respond to all the unfairness and injustice that they’ve been on the receiving end of—and to do so in a way that’s going to be **rewardable** for them when the Kingdom gets established!

- And if you pay attention to what the Psalms & prophets set forth about the way in which the Remnant will be treated by the apostate, VRS of Israel—you’d know that one of the first things that they are going to be on the receiving end of: are all these **injustices!**

- And that's why the first of those Beatitudes are what they are—and why you have the *meeek* being mentioned within those first 3.

- And the issue is: *Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.*

- And when you go back in the Psalms and the prophets and get all the background work—and you look at the *meeek* in a larger context as it's set forth there—the LORD God talks about it there, and the Lord Jesus Christ talks about it in His earthly ministry —

— and you have Him taking the issue of the *widows* and the *fatherless*, and talking about the brutal treatment they received at the hands of the apostate, VRS of Israel—

— and you have the issue of the *widows* being the ones who have their lands taken away from them —

— and the *fatherless* are the ones who have their birthright taken away from them—(they can be the “*firstborn*” son, but since their father is not alive, those scoundrels of apostate Israel come along and deny them their right of inheritance) — or they ‘super-tax’ the land of their inheritance as the *firstborn*—and basically function like a “K-Street Lawyer” (so to speak) in connection with them - and “milk” them for every dime they’ve got!

- (see/read Isaiah 10:1-3)

- That's the “*meeek*” in the context of Matt. 5:5—and that's just a small part of the kind of **injustices** they are receiving from the VRS of apostate Israel!

- And the issue here in these Beatitudes and in the SotM is—that the Lord now comes along and teaches them to NOT get involved in the Law Courts and to waste their time in legal wranglings—and not to get involved in trying to ‘bribe’ one of the Judges in the Gate so that they’ll get a fair hearing, and all this kind of business.

- And He says, Look, they may take away all your inheritance and all you land—but you *meeek* ones, you WILL “*inherit the earth*” - because I’m going to GIVE it to you!!!”

- As part of the issue of God's Jehovah-ness & grace—He's going to do FOR them what they could not do for themselves!

- And as part of the entire "Salvation Package Deal" that they receive—and as part of the fulfillment of the Redeemer, Deliverer, and Avenger Mandates of the Davidic Covenant—and as part of the reward they'll get out when that Kingdom gets established—they WILL receive the *inheritance of the earth!!!*

- And on their Calendar of Events—that time was right on the 'door-step' of happening—so, so what? if they lose it all under the apostate VRS of Israel—they'll temporarily lose everything under the 5th Install. of the 5th CoP anyway—but right after that, they'll get their *inheritance of the earth!*

- And one of the things the Lord does in this SotM is to teach them, and to generate in them all this *selflessness* that He teaches them about in that SotM (which is the basis for their being *meek*) —

— and based upon their *selflessness*, they're able to come along and patiently **wait** upon the Lord in *meekness*—and recognize that there's a time coming when God is going to address all those concerns—and He's going to redress FOR them; and recompense FOR them; and avenge FOR them in connection with all these who have "fleeced" them and brutalized them!

- And as long as that 4th Install. went on, they were therefore taught to simply be *meek* in the meantime—
(see/read **Matt. 5:39-42!**)

— if they hit you on the right cheek, turn to him your other cheek; if they had to pay the guy off, then pay him off; if he's going to demand your coat, then give him your cloak also; if he demands you walk a mile with him, then go the extra mile and just get the guy off your back!

- And this is all because the issue is that there's something **far more important** going on—Who cares if he takes all your land and all

your money? — because the truth of the matter is: once that 5th Install. starts, and the Time Schedule starts—you're only going to have 3 1/2 years before you have to run into the mountains and into the wilderness, and you're not going to have your property anyway!

- And you have the **far more important** and **far more meaningful** issue of the Kingdom getting established; the Lord Delivering and Avenging His cause (and you); and the issue of reward out in that Kingdom that makes anything you possess in lands and businesses PALE by comparison!

- And so that's why you're going to be *meek* right now.

- In any other circumstances, you wouldn't have 'contained' your rights & your power to do something about it—but now you're going to 'contain' that—and you, instead, rather choose a different course of action for something that is **far more important!** ... you're going to be *meek!*

- And so you see that the *meek inheriting the earth* has NOTHING to do with you in this dispensation of grace whatsoever! — in fact, you ask most Christian folks today: What shall the *meek* inherit? ... and they'll rightly say, THE EARTH! — but they don't have a clue what that means! (they think that means they'll inherit it ... somehow)

- But the issue of *meekness* **IS** for us in this dispensation of grace! Because it's one of the Major Features of Godly Love & Charity!

- And our being *meek* has NOTHING whatsoever to do with us *inheriting the earth!!!* — that's NOT the “far more important and far more meaningful thing” that makes it so we are *meek!*

- But there **IS** something that is far more important and far more meaningful for us that makes it so that we **will** 'contain' our rights to redress; and our power to avenge ourselves—you may have the legal right to *recompense evil for evil*, but there's something **far more important than that**—and the “something” that's far more important is you making an IMPACT that's profitable & beneficial on the one who 'did you evil' (which is why, in your Con. & Beh., you're going to *provide things honest in the sight of all men*) —

— you're going to **provide** that individual with something!

— you don't want to take something FROM him—in fact, you'll actually PAY whatever you can (*as much as lieth in you*) to *live peaceably* with him!

- Because the issue is—there's something **greater** at stake here—and that's the issue of **being able to witness to him and to give him the Gospel of Christ so he can be saved from the debt & penalty of his sins!!!** (i.e., *knowing that the goodness of God leadeth him to repentance!*)

- And that's the same thing with your *enemy*.

- And the same thing applies to the Government in connection this time with preserving and maintaining that *ordinance of God!*

- So, once again, by this point in our Sonship Edification—along with our Father instructing us in fundamental Wisdom (and the ability to make wise Sonship decisions); and instructing us in fundamental Justice (and the ability to make Just Sonship decisions) - as that progressive development has been taking place—Godly Love & Charity has also been progressively developing.

- And at least 4 Major Features have been generated:

1) Selflessness, 2) Kindness, 3) Tenderheartedness, 4) Meekness

- And, again, our 'working definition' of Meekness goes like this:

Meekness is the containment within yourself of your "rights" to redress something because you would rather pursue a course of action that, for some reason, is more important and more meaningful to you.

- And the truth of the matter is—there is a 5th one that has already begun, and will need to be brought out some time in the 1st Component of our instruction of Godly Judgment.

- Now to kind of sum up this issue of Meekness being the next Major Feature in the growth of Godly Love & Charity—I want to remind you of something I said earlier on —

- One of the main reasons why it's so essential to make sure that godly Love & Charity has developed to the point where it's supposed to have developed at the end of the Godly Justice—is because the 1st Component of Godly *Judgment* demands that a level of Godly Love & Charity has been developed and is effectually working—otherwise there will be NO capacity to make Godly Judgments *solely* on the basis of Godly Love!

- And that's why Romans 13:8 says, *Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law.*

- And most of the time when ever people deal with verses 8, 9, and 10—they almost always only deal with the fact that whatever is done by Love is well-pleasing in God's sight.

- (Which is perfectly true and right—and I'm not trying to either deny that or to downplay that—because that IS right and true and proper—that's NOT wrong.)

- But Paul didn't need 3 verses to tell you that.

- Truth is—what Paul says in just (:8) alone makes it so that you automatically know that.

- But the reality is — Paul is dealing with much MORE than that!

- And what he says in all 3 verses, is said in a way that is designed to “click” with Godly Love & Charity when it has developed to a point where it has the capacity to make decisions SOLELY on the basis of IT and IT ALONE!!!

- And when it comes to *Judgments*—which is the issue of being able to make a decision upon a matter that requires **discernment** and **discriminating perception**—(because you don't have a ‘clear-cut’ declared response given to you—i.e., you're going to have to figure it out) — Godly Love is therefore expected to develop (in our edification) to a point where it's able to do that!

- And my point in all this is that—the effectual working of Romans 12:3—13:7 (when that's effectually working like it's supposed to), then our Godly Love is in a position to begin making discerning, discriminating decisions all on it's own!

- And therefore, in a sense—what we've arrived at here at then end of Romans 13:7 (and before going on to :8) - is another one of those Sonship Checkpoints—(it's really a **Mild Sonship Checkpoint**).

- And so, therefore, what we're going to have to do at this point—is to kind of put our studies in the book of Romans on “pause” (so to speak) - and we're going to have to do some work back in the Exhortations back in the book of Proverbs.

- And my understanding is that when you reach the end of Romans 13:7, you're at a '**transition point**' - because the corresponding Exhortations & Expectations back in the book of Proverbs indicate that in order to move into the *instruction of Judgment*—the decision-making skill of *Judgment* REQUIRES that you have all of the Godly Wisdom and all of the Godly Justice running well—because it's going to take all of the Godly Wisdom and all of the Godly Justice in order to make the *Judgments*.

- And a father knows that even though the first thing in his son's education is going to be the receiving of the 4 Sonship Decision-Making Skills—the father knows that those 4 skills are actually grouped into 2 sets of 2.

- And therefore when you as a son reach the end of the first 2 Decision-Making Skills—you've come to the point where a LEVEL OF ATTAINMENT has been reached.

- And the skill-sets you've gained, and the additional issues that those skill-sets have produced within you—(in order to not just give you the “doctrine,” but also produce your Father's mind & heart within your own heart) — those first 2 skill-sets (and your heart) are now developed to a point where they can now take on more and even advanced decision-making skill-sets—(the *Judgment*, and the *Equity*).

- And what's going to happen (if you DON'T have the full, effectual working of the Wisdom and the Justice and [at the very least], those first 4 Major Features of Godly Love) - you're going to get into what might be called a 'diminishing return' on all the doctrine in front of you.

- That is, you won't be able to get a sufficient enough effectual working of the *Judgment*—and then you'll get an even lesser amount of the effectual working of the *Equity*—and then you'll just get less and less and less of the end of Level I, and less and less of Level II.

- And, therefore, when it comes to *Equity*—you won't have the capacity to make the kind of equitable judgments you'll be called upon to make—because you're going to be able to not only come along and be able to identify a “weaker brother” as being “weaker” - but you'll also be able to identify what's making him “weak” - and you're going to be able to identify a whole bunch of things **without ASKING bout it!!**

- In *Equity*, you're going to be able to walk that 'fine line' between being a brother **with** him—and NOT being a "tutor and governor" **towards** him!

- And that's going to require all your *Wisdom*, your *Justice*, & your *Judgment* to do that!

- So—we're now at this kind of "Mild" Sonship Checkpoint.

- By now, things (your life) should have changed in a very noticeable way.

- The Father now takes you as His son who has now received the fundamental *instruction of Wisdom* and the fundamental *instruction of Justice*—and at this point you've kind of reached this 'landing' or this Mild Sonship Checkpoint—and it's like He takes his arm and puts it around your shoulders and kind of looks out at how things are going with you right now—and you and Him look at what life is now going to be like as a "son" with Wisdom & Justice.

- And you get to "see" how you'll be looked at by the world when you're MEEK!

- And you get to see what it's going to be like to encounter some opposition from the world—and more importantly, how your own FLESH is going to rise up and oppose your putting your sonship life into practice.

- And all those undesirable traits that the world ascribes to Meekness will now be ascribed to YOU!

- (see/read Matt. 27:35-44)

- Here, the Meekness of the Lord Jesus Christ is put on display. (This is all done in a context of Justice!)

- The Lord was being treated unfairly and unjustly — and He had every right to exercise His Justice against such brutality and injustice being done to Him—**but He doesn't do that!**

- And the reason He doesn't avenge, doesn't recompense, doesn't pour out His wrath ...

... is because He **sees** something and He **desires** something that is far more important to Him than the exercise of that Justice just yet! (REDEMPTION!)

- And so, as He's showing Meekness and holding back that wrath (and is "rejoicing against that judgment") - it's because He has the legal right and righteousness to act judicially if He wants to—but He perceives something else that He considers more important at the moment—and He therefore takes a course of action of Meekness—and He **contains** Himself (He contains His power and authority to execute wrath upon those dealing with Him so unfairly & unjustly).

- He says within Himself, "I've got the power and the authority and the right to judge and execute judgment and wrath, but because of a far more important issue at hand, I'll make the **choice** to **contain** all that for now" — **He's NOT being weak**, He's being Meek— He's not being reluctant; He's not impotent; **HE'S BEING MEEK!** (and the setting is one of Justice!)

- (see/read Psalm 25:1-9ff)

- And one of the many things that David brings up here (and that the Lord Jesus Christ dealt with in His earthly ministry as He provided for the fulfillment of the Redeemer Mandate of the Davidic Covenant; and that the Remnant of Israel will face in the Climactic Stage of God's program with Israel) will be all those things (especially in connection with the injustices done to them) [and is true of the kind of 'dirt' done to you; and the injustices done to you] — are all the things that produce FRUSTRATION in you!

- (and you got a 'taste' of that back in the 6th Component of Wisdom where the Tenderheartedness got developed) - [Romans 12:14]

- Because there, (in Rom. 12:13b, 14) you dealt with situations that could be genuinely **frustrating!**

- And when you're frustrated, you are tempted (either properly, or either improperly) to deal with someone in a way that 'gets them out of your way' (so to speak) - and redresses what they're doing that's frustrating to you.

- And once you've got some experience dealing with that under *Tenderheartedness*—that then paves the way for dealing with it in more intense situations when it's a judicial setting that produces the frustration, with a temptation to respond in a way that addresses what frustrated you. (and **get even** with that one who did you 'dirt').

- Now at this Mild Checkpoint, what we're going to be checking on is:

- 1) The effectual working of the doctrine contained in the 6 Components of the Godly **Wisdom**; [**REVIEW WISDOM!**]

(along with the Positive & Proper response to all 6 Components) [**REVIEW**]

(and along with your recognition of and perception of God's "Grand Design" for the Godly Edification of the Wisdom that's taking place within you) [**REVIEW**]

- 2) The effectual working of the doctrine contained in the 3 Components of the Godly **Justice**; [**REVIEW JUSTICE!**]

(along with your Positive & Proper Response to all 3 Components)

- 3) The progress and growth of Godly Love & Charity.

(that the Selflessness, Kindness, Tenderheartedness, and Meekness is really there)

(and most of all—that there's a steady **increase** of especially the issue of Selflessness that's supposed to be increasing and increasing all along the way).

- **Proverbs 3:21-35**—The Corresponding Exhortations to receiving the *instruction of Justice*.

- REVIEW THE IMPORTANCE OF THE EXHORTATIONS!

- The “mortar” concept. (the exhortations provide for the human spirit to be ‘**primed**’ to receive the information properly—and for that information to become permanent!)

- It’s here that our Father is going to insure that you (as His son/daughter) have responded Positively and Properly to what you’ve just learned.

- But it’s also in the Exhortations that our Father is going to expose a great deal of His own Godly **sentiments**—that is, He’s going to open up to us His “**heart**” on the matter—and therefore we’re going to get a lot of both His zeal, His ambition, and His enthusiasm—His sense of how **valuable** and **important** and **critical** the doctrine is He’s just taught you — as well as His sense of the dangers, opposition, and potential problems that we are apt to face once we’ve learned the doctrine He’s just taught us!

- And therefore, that means that more and more, the Exhortations are going to include the Father’s EXPECTATIONS for how we are to fully put what we’ve learned from Him **into practice** in all of the details of our lives! (**100%**, — not 10% or 50% or 70%)

- Which means that He’s not only going to exhort us and encourage us—but He’s also going to warn us and admonish us according to what we’ve just learned and how it’s going to have some **increased resistance and opposition** from various sources. (because we undergone an increase to our being *conformed to the image of His Son* and an increase in our emulation of **Him**)!

- And that’s a Big Deal to Him, **because He knows what you don’t know** in connection with the kind of opposition and resistance you’re going to get as you put ‘godliness’ into practice and on display in this world! (and how that will affect you!)

- As you scan over the Exhortation to our *instruction of Justice*—there are 5 sections to this Exhortation—marked off by the paragraph markers.
 - And if you paid attention to the structure of the Exhortations to our *instruction of Wisdom*, you'd notice that there are 4 basic sections of Exhortation, followed by a final section (or an addendum) that contains some further information (viz. :13-20).
 - And the Exhortations & Expectations that we receive at the end of our *instruction of Justice* are going to follow that same pattern.
 - And it's critical that you understand and appreciate that our godly Sonship Education (being an issue of Godly EDIFICATION) is NOT going to 'set aside' the *instruction of Wisdom* and merely focus upon the *instruction of Justice*—but rather, **the two** (Wisdom & Justice) are to be looked at as being JOINED TOGETHER (edification-wise) — and they (together) are now going to begin to effectually produce their "fruit"!
 - And just as it was with the Exhortations & Expectations to the Godly Wisdom—(i.e., having 4 sections, followed by an addendum type issue at the end) — our Father's Exhortations & Expectations for our Godly Wisdom & Justice (which is how it's supposed to be looked at) is going to have several sections to it (4 sections) with another 'tagged-on' addendum-type issue that's a further matter that you are expected to benefit from—that by the effectual working of everything you've learned so far in you Sonship Education, gives you the capacity to deal with it to it's fullness.
- Over-Simplified Outline:
 - (:21-26) — Outlines the benefits you're going to get if you keep all that you've learned before you and if you make full use of it.
 - (:27-29) — Exhorts and Admonishes you to 3 things that you're NOT supposed to do, having the effectual working of Godly Wisdom and Justice.
 - (:30) — Admonishes you to not be the source of "strife" toward others, but to maintain a peaceable relationship.

- (:31-32) — Admonishes you to not get ‘sucked-in’ by the temptation to ‘*recompense evil for evil*’ along with the men of this world and their ungodly ‘lower’ order of justice.

- (:33-35) — The Addendum or ‘tagged-on’ further matter—containing 3 matters of positive benefits given by the LORD as the son properly puts his Wisdom & Justice into practice in the details of his life—over against the negative and detrimental actions the LORD will take against the ungodly, lower order of Just actions that the paths of the men of this world take — (there’s a cursing for the *wicked* and a blessing for the *just*; there’s a curse for the *scorner* and a blessing for the *lowly*; there’s a blessing for the *wise* and a cursing for the *fool*.)

- Now, just taking a ‘surface’ reading of this passage—if you were to put your finger on a particular **word** that appears to be a kind of re-occurring ‘theme’ - what single word seems to just ‘stand out’ over all the rest?

- That word “**NOT!**”

(*let them not* — *Be not* — *Withhold not* — *Say not* — *Devise not* — *Strive not* — *Envy thou not*)

- In fact—the word “*not*” occurs 5x in (:1-20) in the Exhortation to Wisdom.

- But it occurs 9x in (:21-35) in our Exhortation to Wisdom & Justice.

- And I point that out because that will give you a sense of the **nature** of these Exhortations and Admonitions.

- And all these “*nots*” tells you that (overall) what the Father has in view here is that you are now going to encounter some very powerful TEMPTATIONS in connection with putting your Godly Wisdom & Justice into practice.

- You’re going to experience the issue of not seeming to “get ahead” while other men of this world **do** get ahead.

- You’re going to experience some problems and frustrations when you DON’T exercise your “rights” to redress something—but in meekness, pursue a course of action that is more important & meaningful to you.

- You're going to experience what it's like to be seemingly 'victimized' by others—all the while seeing them prosper while you're not.

- And the temptation is going to be for you to just start living like LOST people and walking in their paths and avenge yourself and be unjust like they are—and get a benefit NOW, rather than just 'staying the course' and believing that your Father will give you the benefits later on.

- And that means that the nature of the Fatherly Exhortations and Expectations are such that you're given to understand & appreciate that you may not see any benefit right away.

- Now at this point we need to say some things about how we're going to have to handle the information contained in Proverbs 3:21-35 that's very critical for us as we exist now in this present dispensation of grace in which we live as members of the church, the body of Christ.

- We need to understand and appreciate that there are some things said here that are strictly in the context of God's program with Israel - and strictly in the context of the Remnant of Israel having to live out in the Extension of Forbearance & Mercy— and in the first part of the 5th Install. - and there are things said that are germane to them, (exclusively within that setting).

- For example—especially there in (:25 [read]) - that's in their program - there's a promised time when the *desolation of the wicked comes* - (we don't have any such thing in this dispensation of grace).

- Now it's not that what's said in (:25 & 26) has absolutely no value as to the **nature** of what's being set forth there - it's just that you've got to honestly acknowledge the fact that when God wrote this portion of His word and set forth the format for Sonship Education — it's in God's program with Israel.

- (and when we were back in Romans chapter 8, we acknowledged the fact that we're only looking for the FORMAT for Sonship Education as found back in the book of Proverbs - and we're not following the actual doctrine that was given to the Remnant of Israel under God's program with Israel, because that won't help us in this dispensation of grace).

- And so some of the actual doctrinal details just don't fit with our program.

- And that makes it so that what you're after here is the issue of: Why would the Father come along - and after giving His son the instruction in Godly Justice - why would He now have to say some specific things about **it** exhortation-wise and expectation-wise that, even though He's taught the son what He taught him in Godly Justice, why that wouldn't be adequate enough for him to simply move right on to receiving the instruction of Judgment?

- But rather, instead of moving on, there's some uniqueness and some peculiar aspects - and some other matters that come up at the end of the instruction of Godly Justice - (especially since that's all ADDED to and ATTACHED to [edification-wise] the Godly Wisdom you've already received).

- And so when you look at Proverbs 3:21-35 - what we're after here is the issue of WHY are these things said (and not so much as WHAT is actually said) — and the **WHY** of it is applicable to us, even in this dispensation of grace when we've received our instruction of Wisdom and then built upon that, the instruction of Justice.

- And so one of the things we're after here is to take special note of the "TONE" of these Exhortations - (and that will tell us some very critical things).

- And one of the very obvious things about the **tone** of these Exhortations is that - as the Father is admonishing His son (at times), and exhorting His son - He makes it clear that REAL TEMPTATION is going to come his way!

- Now before moving on and looking further at the Fatherly Exhortations & Expectations at the end of receiving the instruction of Justice—I want to say some things in connection with how the Exhortations are structured at this point.

- And what I'm after here is that—at this Sonship Checkpoint, because of the critical point which you are at in your Sonship Education, it makes it necessary for the Father to exhort you a bit differently than He has before.

- And basically (and very simply put), because of what is going to take place next (in the instruction of *Judgment and Equity*) - the

Exhortations are going to do 2 things (and are going to be put into 2 groupings):

1) The Exhortations of Proverbs 3:21-35 are going to function as a “look back” as to what you’ve just learned with receiving the instruction of Wisdom and Justice.

- And while the nature of what is said there certainly deals with some real temptations that you (as a son) are going to have—those temptations are not really of the nature that stems from sin in your members, or from an increased opposition from the Policy of Evil—but rather are temptations & problems that stem from not making full use of the doctrine you just learned.

- But then—for the first time in the book of Proverbs—in chapter 4:1 you don’t have a “My son” - but you have “*Hear, ye children, ...*”

- And there are some 1) unique features behind Proverbs 4:1-9 that act, not so much as a Pre-Doctrinal Exhortation—but as a “Checkpoint” to ensure that all the Sonship doctrine you have learned is up and running well - all in preparation to the receiving *the instruction of Judgment*—and that’s the 2nd thing that these Exhortations are going to do.

2) The Exhortations of Proverbs 4:1-9 are going to function as a “look forward” and act as the actual “Checkpoint” in which you’re going to have to ensure that everything is running well up to this point — and to get an awareness of even greater temptations that you are going to face that mainly focus upon the increased resistance from sin in your members—but also looking forward to having to deal with resistance from the Satanic Policy of Evil.

- Now saying that—it should be understood that while real temptation is going to be faced by you at the end of Justice—that temptation is of a nature or of a variety that isn’t coming from sin in your members per se.

- (read Pro. 3:21-26)

- (:21) is an Admonition & wise counsel from the Father to the son to make FULL USE out of the instruction of the Godly Wisdom & Justice he’s just been given—and NOT to ‘cherry pick’ it!

- That is, to “***keep*** *sound wisdom and discretion*” - meaning, to keep what you’ve learned in Wisdom & Justice ever before you—that everything your eyes ‘see’ - you see through the ‘eyes of your understanding’ of the Wisdom & the Justice doctrines you’ve just been given.

- And the BIG THING in all this Post-Doctrinal Exhortation to Justice is that issue of making **FULL USE** of the Wisdom and the Justice in your Sonship Decision Making.

- And the temptation is going to be to only do **part** of it—i.e., the parts that you’re most comfortable with.

- And with both Wisdom & Justice **combined** (giving you some real *discretion*)—you’re to carefully weigh the facts of every situation and circumstance of your functional life—and avoid the danger of reacting according to the dictates of your flesh (i.e., not thinking *soberly*)—but with *discretion*, to therefore regulate your Conduct & Behavior according to the Godly Thinking you’ve received and then actually DO the work of the Godly Labor with your Heavenly Father—**and do it FULLY!**

- And especially in those Justice type situations—they’re going to present some *challenges* to you—because they may ‘hit a nerve’ or touch upon some things that are so ingrained in you by the natural sense of Justice (and sense of fairness) that you received from the course of this world—and since you haven’t really had a lot of *experience* with putting those Major Features of Godly Love and Charity into practice (especially the Meekness) — the temptation is going to be to HOLD BACK the actual DOING of the Godly Labor!

- And the Father knows that’s going to be the tendency of His son at this point (due to his lack of experience) - and so He wisely admonishes His son accordingly.

- (:22-26) goes on to outline the benefits of keeping all that you’ve learned always and ever before you (as your heart is ever increasing and being ‘enlarged’ with more and more pages of the book of your soul being written—and ever increasing in becoming the living ‘epistle of Christ’ [II Cor. 3:3], and again, making full use of the Sonship Curriculum.

- As (:22) says—the *wisdom and discretion* shall be *life* (functional life) *to your soul, and grace to your neck* (i.e., you’re more and more being *conformed to the image of Christ*)! [that’s how He T,L, Labors]

- And it's in those Justice situations—where, more often than not, you're going to be in a situation where real **frustration** can occur—because you're going to be on the receiving end of some injustices that kind of 'eat' at you—and gripe you—and burn you up (so to speak) — and that's where you are going to be naturally tempted to come along and easily decide: “All right, I won't *recompense evil for evil*—**but I sure don't feel like doing the “good”!**” (Rom.12:21)

- And the truth of the matter is—and the thing we've got to honestly face up to is—that, by nature, and by our natural sense of our lower order of Justice we've acquired from the course of this world: WE'RE JUST NOT VERY GOOD AT NOT GETTING “EVEN” WHEN SOMEBODY DOES “EVIL” TO US! (We're just not very good at naturally **not** avenging ourselves!) — [We're just not very good at being Meek!]

- And, folks, what all this boils down to is: In Justice-type situations, (more often than not), you're going to have the tendency to be **RELUCTANT** to put the Godly Thinking, Living, & Labor of Godly Justice into practice, FULLY!

- And that's what the bulk of this Exhortation of Prov. 3:21-35 is all about! (It's about the son's natural **RELUCTANCE** to make FULL USE of the Wisdom and the Justice he's just been taught!)

- Example of Reluctance: see Matt. 11:28-30 (following on the heels of comparing the Gentiles w/the VRS of Isr.—note the Meek issue) — then see Matt. 15:21-28 (the Gentile woman).

- When it comes to making sound, *discretionary*, Just decisions—there is a natural **Reluctance** component that's very likely to develop.

- And that's primarily because you're going to find yourself dealing with people in a potentially 'hostile' situation.

- For example—Romans 12:17 (1st Component)
“Recompense to no man evil for evil.”

- Someone has done *evil* to you—and the natural tendency is to Pay them Back in kind—but the Godly Thinking effectually works in you — and the Godly Love & Charity effectually works in you as well—and so that all makes it so you 'put the brakes' on paying them back.

- **But that's only one half of what's going on in that instruction of Godly Justice** with respect to common, every-day Justice situations with men.

- Because the other half of it is to take that Godly Meekness—and it wants to pursue a different course—rather than pursuing a course of retaliation, getting even, paying back, etc., — it wants to pursue a course of **honesty** (as Paul says) - “Provide things **honest** in the sight of all men.”

- And just to put it this way—that takes some GUTS to do that—in a situation in which a person in whose eyes you’re going to provide that **honesty** is NOT going to receive it well! (or at least not right away)

- (and what you’re trying to do is to disarm the situation and not make it any worse) - and you don’t really have any way of knowing if that’s going to take place—that’s why the Godly Labor is: ***If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men.*** — but sometimes it’s NOT going to be possible—but the issue is, if it’s not going to be possible, it’s not to be your fault!

- But because you’re in a situation in which the ability for the situation to become one that is actually PROFITABLE to the one who’s done you *evil*—since the matter entirely rests upon THEIR volition—and therefore the moment you get past the Godly Thinking and endeavor to put into effect the Godly Conduct & Behavior and Labor together with God in pursuing that course that makes for peace — the situation is really out of your hands.

- And because that’s the kind of situation you’re in—there can easily be a bit of **reluctance** or apprehension for fully following through on providing for the individual you’re dealing with to end up living *peaceably* with you.

- And remember that when it says to *Recompense to no man evil for evil* — that word “*evil*” is being used in a very generic and broad way—and it covers the whole gamut of things that can fall under that category of things that are *evil*.

- Some of which are going to be rather mild—and aren’t really all that hurtful or offensive—but they’re still *evil*—and they still produce a measure of irritation; a measure of annoyance; a measure of bothersome-ness; or a measure of hurt to you, but it just might not be all that bad.

- But then you could have something *evil* on the other end of the scale—and it could be intensely hurtful; intensely bothersome and troublesome—it could be mentally painful; maybe even physically painful.

- But my point is—that when we realize what’s potentially involved in that “*evil*” concept there—you can find yourself, therefore, in a situation in which you may have no trouble at all ‘*not recompensing evil for evil*’ - **but when it comes to ‘*providing things honest*’ in the sight of that guy—and doing everything within your power (as much as lieth in you) to live peaceably with that guy—that’s when you might become RELUCTANT (not as enthusiastic) to follow through on that in all the potential you have at your disposal to follow through on it!**

- And that’s what’s behind those Exhortations that correspond with the instruction of Godly Justice.

- That Rom. 12:17 issue matches up perfectly with Proverbs 3:27ff. (*Withhold not good from them to whom it is due, when it is in the power of thine hand to do it.*)

- And without really having any experience of going through what it’s like to be on the receiving end of the *evil* or the ‘dirt’ that men can do to you (with this *instruction of Justice*)—even when it’s in that ‘mild’ form—at first glance, you would tend to think: Why would my Father say that to me? Why would I “*withhold*” the “*good*”?

- And even though there’s going to be an increase of resistance from sin in your members—more often than not, at this point in which you’re strictly dealing with JUSTICE type situations—and with you being on the receiving end of something from someone that **isn’t “good”** - that hasn’t been profitable to you; that has been bothersome and troublesome to you — and on top of that, it wasn’t done to you as some kind of a practical joke, but it was done to you **with evil intent**—and the person who did it isn’t smiling at you—in fact he may sneer at you; snarl at you and things along those lines....

- And therefore when it comes to the issue of doing that “*good*” — when it comes to the issue of taking that Godly Love & Charity (with the Meekness now being developed) and then putting that into practice in a Justice-type situation—(where you’re now containing any desire to recompense back to him the evil he did to you ... and

... you're in a situation where you're NOT going to retaliate because there's something GREATER at stake—and the greater issue at stake is the issue of now **manifesting the Attitude of God Himself towards that individual**—[which is one of NOT retaliating and getting even with him and making him pay the penalty for his *evil*, right now— but to now extend *peace* to him] ...

... in view of that kind of a situation, there can be some resistance—not that you don't WANT to do it—but there could be some timidity in connection with it—a measure of apprehension in connection with it—and also your imagination can easily get in the way here—(i.e., “I just can't imagine that this is going to work”) - producing some doubt and some hesitation.

- And on top of that—you have the burden (in a good sense) of the work involved in Romans 12:18 where the onus of responsibility is placed upon us! — “*If it be possible*” (i.e., we're to take every action we can think of to take to live *peaceably*) — and we're Laboring together with God to provide for *peace* to exist—and not for any more *evil* to be done.

- Well, the truth is—you can very easily end up with either a bit, or a great deal of **RELUCTANCE** !

- And that Reluctance could largely be due to either the lack of **experience** with these Justice-type situations—or the fact that the *evil* that's done to you could have a measure of strong intimidation to it.

- But this is what that TONE to these Exhortations is all about (especially in Proverbs 3:27-29) - that's an Exhortation with an Admonition TONE to it that describes a Reluctance that the son is likely to have at this point—(that is, to '*withhold the good*'!)

- And when you *withhold* something, it's not that you're denying it to the person—nor is it that your thinking is such that you've never entertained the thought of doing them *good* (because the Godly Thinking makes it so you have) - and more than that, it's actually '*in the power of thine hand to do it*'!

- So it really comes down to the issue of allowing a Sonship Grace Opportunity to pass you by!

- And then (:28) comes along and says—*Say not to they neighbour, Go, and come again, and to morrow I will give; when thou hast it by thee.* — and that’s **procrastination!** - and it’s like you come up with the excuse that you’ll do it, **but not now**—I’ll do it **tomorrow!**

- Notice that it’s not the issue of being repulsed with your neighbour—or saying to him, ‘Get out of here! I don’t want you around me any more!’ ... it’s not that you **won’t** do it, it’s just that you **PUT IT OFF FOR ANOTHER TIME!**

- And “**time**” is going to be a big deal coming up!

- But the “root” that’s behind anything of a procrastinating nature is because of **RELUCTANCE** for some reason.

- And **reluctance** is a ‘resort’ that your thoughts come to, when, for some reason you find what you are intending to do **uncomfortable to you!** (or unpleasant to you)

- (**Not** that you find it **wrong**—in fact, the thing is, you know it’s **RIGHT!**)

- But something is making you uncomfortable—and reluctance is based upon the issue of something making you uncomfortable.

- And therefore, the issue is that you’ve done everything necessary for you to do the “*good*” you know you should do— but when it actually comes down to doing it — **you don’t make that final step and actually DO IT!**

- And the truth is—that’s an **easy** thing to take place—and that’s a **natural** thing to occur in these Justice-type situations.

- And it’s not like it’s some kind of sinful disobedience (because the nature of the Exhortations would be different) — but it’s dealing with a natural reluctance to make **FULL USE** of the doctrine you’ve been taught!

- The Father comes along and says, Look son, I know something about this—I know what’s going to happen to you—I know that the nature of Godly Justice-type situations are ones in which the person that you are dealing with has not been treating you right or well ...

... and it's one thing to come along, and on the basis of your Meekness, *not recompense evil for evil*—**but that's NOT all that Godly Justice does!**

- Godly Justice comes along and says, Instead of pursuing the course of 'getting even' with you—I'm going to pursue the course of making PEACE with you! (and *providing things honest* in your sight!)

- And folks—this is some real 'rubber-meets-the-road' type Sonship Decision-Making that has you experiencing (and that gives you the experiential training) to choose a path—and take it to its FULLNESS!

- And in a sense—this has you taking a Risk—you're going to take the risk of *providing some things honest* in the *sight* of this individual who may just laugh in your face—or who might be even more infuriated—**but there's the potential that it's going to pacify him!** (that is, 'pacify' him in the sense of being able to live *peaceably* with him—**because there's other things to get done with him!**)

- If he's an unjustified man—then the issue is to provide the avenue for presenting the Gospel of Christ to him!

- But the point here is to make you aware of a natural reluctance that is very likely to take place—but what's great about that is, that there's information contained in the *instruction of Justice* that provides for OVERCOMING that natural reluctance!

- And that's the issue of always perceiving the **"GOOD"**! and the *good* is the course of action you take that *provides things honest* (the truth and the reality of who you really are as a son "in Christ"); and whatever Labor you undertake to work with God to make it so that you *live peaceably* with that individual.

- And that's what dominates your thinking! And that's what overcomes the reluctance!

- And that same type of thing also applies to the 2nd Component of our *instruction of Justice* there in Romans 12:19-21 (read).

- And if you have trouble with reluctance in the 1st Component, then you'll really have trouble with it in the 2nd!

- Any Questions? Comments? so far?

Well, when you fail to do the *good* - that's all fine and well with the world — because there are those in the world that are *despisers of those that are good* (see II Tim. 3:3) - and therefore the easy course of action is to (**at best**) just come along and put the brakes on the Godly Labor! - and it's easy for us to be satisfied with LESS THAN MAKING FULL USE of what we've been instructed to do!

- And being tempted to do less than the fullness of what the doctrine provided for to take place - that becomes an even bigger issue under the instruction of Godly *Judgment* - and it becomes a bigger issue under the instruction of Godly *Equity* (which is why the instruction of *Equity* is the most extensive of them all) - because the situations that demand *Equity* are going to be ones where we are **tempted to the greatest degree to only do the minimum!**

- (And that's one of the reasons why in *the instruction of Equity* are built in to it almost all of the Exhortations & Expectations that are sitting back in Proverbs that correspond to it)!

- And that's because the temptation is going to be so strong there to not follow through **completely!**

- And the Exhortations of Proverbs 3:21-35 are to put that Meekness to its **full use** - because by **not** making full use of the Meekness, you're **holding back** what you *could* legally do - but you've chosen to NOT hold back that Meekness because something else is of greater importance - and based upon your **selflessness** and based upon the fact that you value & esteem the individual that's done you *the evil* (and what **he** needs rather than what you need) as more important: then you're Meek - and based upon that Meekness, therefore, you are to **follow through** on doing that thing that is of greater importance.

- And so, if it's *in the power of thine hand to do it*: then DO IT! DON'T PROCRASTINATE!

- And what that does (and why this is such a big deal with the Father) is - by doing it, you gain the EXPERIENCE - and with that experience of putting Meekness into practice (and following through with it) come all of the **skills** of Meekness - and without those skills, you're not going to have the necessary skills that are required for your *instruction of Godly Judgment* - because those skill require **all** of the skills that come from the Godly *Wisdom* and the Godly *Justice*.

- In fact, all of the Judgments that you're going to make in Godly *Judgment* are NOT 'arm chair' type judgments! -- They are judgments that have you out there DOING SOMETHING!

- So therefore—one of the last things that you have to do at the point of this Post-Doctrinal Exhortation to *receiving the instruction of Justice* is to carefully consider and honestly evaluate (not only the effectual working of the doctrine you've been taught) - but also (and just as importantly) consider & evaluate **the growth of the Godly Love and Charity** that has begun to develop in your inner man.

- In other words—make sure that the Selflessness, the Lovingkindness, the Tenderheartedness, and the Meekness are **really** there and running well.

- (That those things aren't just 'theory' to you—but they are a **real, genuine, living reality!!!**)

- And perhaps the most critical thing of all—(when it comes to you being able to successfully pass this Sonship Checkpoint) - is that the Godly Love & Charity has **grown** to the point where, by means of those 4 Major Features & Characteristics of Godly Love—you can begin to make some Wise and Just and Discretionary Sonship decisions based upon valuing and esteeming things just exactly like your Father does (and like His Son, the Lord Jesus Christ does)!

- And this is so critical because by the time you get to the end of Justice—you now have at least 9 areas of Godly Thinking and 9 areas of Godly Conduct & Behavior under your belt—(6 Components of Wisdom and 3 Components of Justice) - and more than that, you've got 9 areas where you are going to be Laboring and working together with God in His business—and that means that you are DOING some things—you're putting your functional, sanctified, sonship life into practice!

- But your Father puts a premium upon not just the **doing** or the labor aspect of your sanctified, functional, sonship life—but He puts a premium upon **doing it HIS WAY**—which means with His reasons for doing it; and with His Godly Attitude for doing it—which boils down to the issue of putting your sanctified sonship life into practice (with all of its Wisdom & Justice) by means of (and based upon) making full use of **Godly Love and Charity**!

- You have to ‘check’ to see that that Godly Love & Charity is SOUND and that your Godly Thinking in connection with Godly Love is always SOBER (without any influence of the course and wisdom of this world, but solely under the influence of how your Father thinks and how He generated it in your inner man)!

- And that’s such a critical matter because it’s quite possible to carry out the Godly Conduct & Behavior and the Godly Labor aspects of those 9 areas you’ve just learned about—and without the proper function of the Godly Love, **it counts for NOTHING! (it’s “good for nothing” - pointless and worthless in the eyes of God!)**

- And therefore it’s quite possible to have the old principle or axiom apply in that kind of a situation where: A RIGHT THING, DONE IN A WRONG WAY, STILL MAKES IT WRONG!

- It comes down to the difference between academic learning (or simply a mental acknowledging) of the issue [i.e., you could give the ‘right’ answer on a test]—and actually being “*led by the Spirit of God*”!

- Because of all the ministries of the Holy Spirit—the most excellent ministry of the Holy Spirit of all, is His ministry of Godly Love and Charity!

- (see I Corinthians 13 [whole chapter])

- In chapter 13—Paul begins to amplify upon that and show to the Corinthians what the *more excellent way* is that he just talked about at the end of chapter 12.

- Chapter 13 is broken down into 2 main Parts:

- Part 1 = (:1-7)

- Part 2—(:8-13)

- Paul is first of all going to talk about—and really, bring back into the minds of the Corinthian saints—the fundamental and foundational (and really, the most important of all) doctrines they’ve ever learned in their sonship education—**godly love and charity!**

- And it's critical to always appreciate the fact that, while your Father has taken you under His wing (so to speak) - and while He has now begun to personally instruct you as His son—it's still His **Spirit** that is *leading* you through the curriculum!

- And you need to appreciate the fact that the Holy Spirit has an important and integral roll to play in godly, sonship edification as well—and it is a roll that **goes on all the time that the education takes place!**

- Therefore, all the while sonship education is going on—God the Holy Spirit has several **ministries** to perform.

- And when it comes to the Holy Spirit's ministry to produce Godly Love & Charity—that all has to do with the kind of **POWER** you gain for getting your Father's norms and standards for what He values and for what He esteems.

- And when you've got the doctrine from the instruction of Wisdom & Justice ALONG WITH the proper growth of Godly Love & Charity—that gives you some incredibly powerful skill-sets for making proper Sonship decisions to the 'pleasure' of your Heavenly Father.

- In fact, godly love is so important and so critical and so powerful & necessary to a son's ability to make critical sonship decisions—that the issue of godly love & charity is brought into the picture here in I Cor. 13 in order to provide the Corinthians the ability to '**right themselves**' and to appreciate the permanent provision of *the more excellent way* of having in their hand the completed word of God that will replace the less excellent way of those temporary sp. gifts.

- Now I say all that just to say that when you think about being taught godly love from the very beginning of your sonship education—and you think about how the Holy Spirit has a roll to play in that—then you should recognize that producing godly love in you is one of the first **ministries** (education-wise) that the Holy Spirit performs in your inner man.

- In fact—just to underscore the importance of the proper growth & development of Godly Love as the most excellent ministry that the Holy Spirit has as He *leads* you through the curriculum and then *writes it upon the fleshy tables of your heart*—as you take Godly Love along with the doctrine you’re taught, and you begin to express it by your behavior and by laboring with that godly love **with** your Father in His business—what is your labor? what does your labor consist of? what does your labor produce? what other terminology can you say to express that?

*(Rom. 6:22) But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your **fruit unto holiness**, and the end everlasting life.*

- The use of godly love in the Labor aspect of your sonship life—can truly be said to be **fruit unto holiness**.

- And the Holy Spirit has a roll or ministry in producing that *fruit* of godly love.

- Now with those kind of connections being made—it should come as no surprise to you that when Paul (later on) lists the “*fruit of the Spirit*” - what is in the #1 ranking position?

*(Gal. 5:22) But the fruit of the Spirit is **love**, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, Meekness, temperance: ...*

- So therefore what you’ve got here in I Corinthians 13:1-7 — you’ve got the apostle Paul talking about **the most excellent ministry** that the Holy Spirit has.

- Actually, the Corinthians were looking at the sp. gifts as the most excellent ministry that the Holy Spirit had to them—and the most excellent ‘point of contact’ (so to speak) with the Holy Ghost. (of us, it would be those “*offices*”)

- But Paul will show in the first 7 verses that that’s NOT right! — but that there’s a whole other ministry that the Holy Spirit has that they’ve seem to have forgotten—(or at least they’re ignoring it) - and it’s the most excellent ministry of all, that the Holy Spirit has: and it is **charity** (godly love & charity)!

- And then beginning at (:8) - once Paul says what he does in (:1-7), he comes along and says, This most excellent ministry that the Holy Spirit has **will NEVER be done away with!**

- And it will **never** be replaced by some other ministry!

- But that's NOT true about the spiritual gifts—they **are** going to be done away—and they **are** going to be replaced with a more *excellent way* for accomplishing the *operations of God* that they're designed to accomplish.

- And that's the flow or sense & sequence to ch. 13—and you need to appreciate that.

- Let's look now at (:1-7) - and that most excellent ministry that the Holy Spirit has that will never fail or be done away with.

- (read :1-3)

- You see that Paul is talking about those sp. gifts (just as he has been since ch. 12) — but now he's going to have the Corinthians look at them, not only in connection with the *operations of God* and ranking them in order of importance as far as the local assembly is concerned — but now Paul is going to have them look at these sp. gifts with a view to recognize that they're not the **only** ministry of the Holy Spirit.

- And there's a ministry that the Holy Spirit has—that when you put it up against these sp. gifts—that if you had **all** these sp. gifts, but didn't have the benefit of this ministry, then you're **nothing** but a whole bunch of noise (*sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal*) - and on top of that it profits you **nothing!**

- Now there's an 'eye-opener'! — there's a ministry of the Holy Spirit that **exceeds** the possession of ANY sp. gift! — and if you don't have this ministry of the Holy Spirit then you're just spinning your wheels and **wasting** your time—and even if you have ALL the sp. gifts (or Laboring with God in those offices) **without** this ministry, then you're not even getting to first base with what God wants to do with you!!!

- So what in the world is this more excellent ministry of the Holy Spirit? — well, what's Paul comparing all these sp. gifts to? — **CHARITY!!!** (Godly Love & Charity)

- **charity** = (ἀγάπη) - love—and today we almost always think of *charity* as giving to the poor/needy — (which is a legitimate expression of *charity* [:3]) — but *charity* is a mental attitude of godly love in which you value and esteem someone or something to such a high degree that you value and esteem it (or him/her) **MORE THAN YOURSELF**—so that you are willing to give up of yourself for their benefit.
- And that's God's attitude—that's the fundamental and comprehensive concept for godliness and **sonship**!
- That's why it's the **first thing** you're taught as a son when you receive the *instruction of wisdom* from your Father—which is to think, behave, and labor like your Father does Himself—with godly love!
- And that's why the most excellent ministry of the Holy Spirit to you as your Father's son—is to first and foremost generate in you, and install in your heart godly love and charity! (to teach you to think and act and walk *charitably*—like God does, Himself)!
- And folks this is why you are confronted with the issue of God's **love** the way you are in the book of Romans! (progressive development)
 - Romans 5:5—*And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us.* (and then Paul amplifies upon that in [:6-10])
 - And you get that information at the **end** of the Doc. of your Justification and its results—because you can't go anywhere in your edification until you learn to love like God does—and how much He first of all values and esteems YOU by justifying you unto eternal life!
 - And that's going to be the basis upon which you're going to value and esteem other members of the church the body of Christ — and ALL men!
- And this is why you get (as the very first component to your sonship education in the *instruction of wisdom* the issue of God's love in Romans 12:3-16! (**Selflessness**))

- Again, in connection with *godly love & charity*—there’s a progressive development going on to it all —

- Once the foundation is laid of how much God values and esteems (*loves*) YOU in connection with providing you full assurance of your justified status (and the permanency of it) — and the first thing you are able to value and esteem like God does it to value & esteem the cross-work of the Lord Jesus Christ and its benefits to you **like God does!**

- Then you learn to value & esteem your sanctified position “in Christ” - which is to say, you learn to value & esteem your **sonship status** so that you come to possess “*the love of Christ*” — and you come to love your sonship life and the aims, goals, and objectives of it just like Christ Himself does and **just like your Father does!** (which is what happens from Romans 8:14-39)!

- And then as you begin your sonship education—you come to value & esteem other members of the church the body of Christ that are members of the local assembly with you—**just like God does!** (Selflessness: in Romans 12:3-8)!

- And that’s followed by coming to value & esteem other members of the church, the body of Christ with Godly Lovingkindness (in Romans 12:9-10)—and then valuing & esteeming both saints and lost people with Tenderheartedness (in Romans 12:13-15) - and then the 4th Major Feature of Godly Love gets generated in our *instruction of Justice*—which is the Godly Meekness (in Romans 12:17-13:7).

- But my point here is simply to point out that this *charity* issue in I Cor. 13 doesn’t just happen ‘out of the blue’ - but all along our Father has been setting before us this most excellent ministry of the His Spirit that has to do with us receiving godly love & charity—and by valuing & esteeming the way God does, we gain the comprehension of what godliness is all about!

- And hopefully by the little that we’ve covered—you should, to some degree, have some appreciation for the **huge impact** that the statement you come to in I Corinthians 13:8 should have upon you:

Charity never faileth: ...

- And so important is this issue of this most excellent ministry of the Holy Ghost—that if you're not allowing your Father to teach you to value & esteem as He does—it doesn't make one bit of difference whether you were to have ALL the sp. gifts that there are—because if that's the case, you're nothing but a **noise-maker** and you're doing nothing to help anyone else out—and it's not profiting you one bit to have those things!

- And folks, that means that even when the sp. gifts *were* in operation: even then, they were **NOT** the BIG issue!!!

- And this is what Paul is after in those first 7 verses of I Cor. 13.

- (read :4-7) - Here Paul gives the Corinthians a synopsis description of the *charity* of God—and the effectual working of the education of the *charity* of God in their lives (and the *fruit* it's designed to bear and the displays of that *charity* of God) - and those displays are all displays of **godliness**.

- And the reason why Paul cites *those* things as the display of godly love & charity is that it puts on display to the Corinthians that they've been 'missing the boat' on this most excellent ministry of the Holy Spirit.

- Because if you go through I & II Cor., you see all kinds of examples of them being **NOT** being *longsuffering* with one another; not being *kind* to one another; *envying*, yes; *vaunting* themselves, yes; *puffed up*, yes—and so on down the list!

- Paul manifests to them that they're not benefitting from this most excellent ministry of the Holy Spirit.

- And more than that—every single *operation of God* that He wanted to get accomplished in that assembly **was at a standstill!!!** (Nothing beneficial was taking place)!

- They were so **spiritually screwed up** because of their ignorance and the effects of the Satanic PoE amongst them—that the **best** thing the Holy Spirit could ever do for them: **they weren't benefitting from!!!**

- And they needed to see that—and they also needed to see that this most excellent ministry of the Holy Spirit (teaching godly love & charity) **will never cease to be the Spirit's most excellent ministry!**

- (read :8-13)

- (:8) - *Charity never faileth*: — **faileth** = *fail* is used here in a way that we often don't use it (although it still is used this way today, but rarely) — and when Paul says *but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail*—that doesn't mean that they will fail to come to pass —

- But the word *fail* here is used in the sense of when we would talk about an oil well *failing* or a well of water *failing*—the well **failed**—that doesn't mean that the well “didn't come to pass” - no—it means that the well ran out of water or ran out of oil—**it dried up**—and it's *failing* to give what it originally had to give—it doesn't have anything more *to* give.

- And the issue here is that *charity never faileth*—i.e., this most excellent ministry of the Holy Spirit (to teach you godly love & charity) - that's NEVER going to “run out” — there never will come a time when that's not going to have something to give.

- And there will never come a time when *charity* will cease being a service and ministry of the Holy Spirit.

- And that's never going to **not** be something that the Holy Spirit is in the process of doing with you and me as members of the church, the body of Christ!

- **BUT** ... that is NOT true when it comes to those sp. gifts!!!

- ALL of the spiritual gifts will be done away! — some of them will *fail*—some of them will *cease*—some of them will *vanish away*— but ALL of them are going to be replaced with something **more excellent**.

- There was a *more excellent way* (designed by God) that would be the means to accomplish what God once accomplished by means of those sp. gifts —

- Instead of sp. gifts, the **more excellent way** would be the **means** to accomplish the *differences of administrations* to the Lord—and ultimately the *more excellent way* would be the **means** to accomplish the *diversities of the operations* of God!

- And folks—that makes *the more excellent way* the most vital thing there is in existence in either the physical world or the spiritual world for godly sonship edification to take place!

- In fact, (just as “vital” implies) - it’s a matter of LIFE OR DEATH (functional life or functional death)!

- And that’s just what Paul sets forth in the remainder of (:8) and down through (:13).

- (:8) *Charity never faileth: **but** (adversative conj.) whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away.*

- This is the declaration by the apostle Paul that this method of sp. gifts are going to *fail*—and run out—and have nothing more to give—they are going to become unnecessary & useless—and the Holy Spirit is no longer going to be operating with them.

- Now notice in (:8) that you have 3 gifts mentions as going to be done away with—(*prophecies, tongues, and knowledge*) - Why these 3? and does this mean that only these 3 will be done away with, but all the others will still be in operation?

- My understanding is that Paul mentions these 3 to represent the entire list of sp. gifts that were mentioned back in 12:8-10.

- And again, this is **my understanding**—that the sp. gifts listed in 12:8-10 are grouped together into 3 groups— (#1 *wisdom & knowledge*—#2 *faith, healings, miracles, prophecy, & discerning of spirits*—#3 *tongues & the interpretation of tongues*) — and Paul takes one gift out of the 3 groups (i.e., *prophecies, tongues, & knowledge*) to represent all 3 groups or **all** the spiritual gifts.

- And there are going to be 3 shades of meaning to the “*done away*” concept that applies to those 3 groups—

- The group that has to do with *prophecies* (*faith, healings, miracles, prophecy, discerning of spirits*) — *they shall **fail***—they’re going to run out; and have nothing more to give; and become unnecessary.

- The group that is represented by the gift of *tongues* (*tongues & the interpretation of tongues*)— *they shall cease*—they're tied to a particular event, that when it occurs, they're going to just come to an abrupt stop!

- And the gifts that are represented by the gift of *knowledge* (*wisdom & knowledge*) — they're going to *vanish away* — they just disappear—you're going to look for them someday, and they're just not going to be there any more.

- And there's some fascinating things to study out about how these things historically occurred.

- And we'll see some more (and perhaps even greater) evidence that not just a *few* sp. gifts (or *part* of the sp. gifts) were *done away*—but **ALL** the sp. gifts were *done away* when the *more excellent way* was come in—but we'll see that as we go on through the remaining verses of ch. 13.

- But the issue here is that ALL the sp. gifts are going to be *done away* — (the process of doing away with them will be different as each group was *done away*—due to the impact that was being made as God replaced the *diversity of gifts* with the *more excellent way*).

- But the point is to contrast the temporary, less excellent way (of sp. gifts) with the permanent, most excellent ministry of the Holy Spirit: the teaching of godly love and *charity* (which ***never faileth!***)!

- And that most excellent ministry of the Holy Spirit will continue on throughout the duration of this disp. of grace!

- Now—**why** is that going to take place? - why are the *prophecies* going to *fail*? — why are the *tongues* going to *cease*? — why will the *knowledge vanish away*? ...

A: (:9) - *For we know in part, and we prophesy in part.*

- At the time in which the sp. gifts were in operation—this was the situation—and that situation was that they had only a PARTIAL understanding—and they possessed only a PARTIAL knowledge that God wanted them to possess as members of the church, the body of Christ.

- And in accordance with that, they could only *prophecy in part*—(and really all of the gifts were functioning in view of that and in accordance with that).

- And those sp. gifts were working to bring about a time in which their *knowledge* and understanding would no longer be '*partial*'!

- And folks, that means that any or all of the spiritual gifts (and their functions) is a tell-tale indicator of the fact **that they didn't have all of the information** (or knowledge or understanding) **that God wanted them to have!**

- And that means that if you're attempting to function in any or all of these sp. gifts today—by default, that's an **admission** on your part (if you're going to be honest about it) - that's an admission on your part that you only "*known in part*" - and you're admitting that **you don't have all God wants you to have knowledge-wise** — and that's an admission that **you don't have the complete word of God!!!**
(*which is an INSULT to God!*)

- And folks—that's how, by Satan counterfeiting the spiritual gifts today is an outright **attack** upon the word of God—an attack upon the completed word of God!

- But in Paul's day—as more & more of the *knowledge* comes, eventually their '*partial*' knowledge will no longer be '*partial*'! (eventually, it's going to be *complete*!!!)

- Eventually God is going to communicate all He wants to communicate to us, as the members of the church the body of Christ: **and when THAT time comes, there's not going to be any need for those spiritual gifts!**

- And when that time comes—you'll be possessors of something *more excellent* than any or all of those sp. gifts!

- You'll be possessors of a far superior way for God to accomplish the *diversity* of His *operations*!

- Now that's the **why**—but now **when** will that happen?

A: (:10) *But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away.*

- **“that which is perfect”** - What ever the “that” is here in (:10) - that is described as “perfect” —when you can identify it and define it— that IS *the more excellent way!*

- And “that which is perfect” is the antithesis (or exact opposite) of the ‘*knowing-in-part*’ (or partial knowledge) situation in (:9)!

- Now most critics of the Bible—and the position of those who would argue that sp. gifts are still in operation today— will say that what Paul is talking about in the phrase “*that which is perfect*” is the Lord Jesus Christ Himself.

- And so their reasoning is that—all the sp. gifts have to be still in operation today—because Paul says they’ll be in operation until “*that which is perfect*” (or the Lord Jesus Christ) “*is come*” - that is, the sp. gifts will be in operation until the Lord Jesus Christ comes back at His second coming to set up and establish His kingdom on this earth!

- And so there is a raging debate going on—especially between Charismatics/Pentecostals/Apostolic types and those who believe that some or all of the sp. gifts were only temporary and have now been *done away*.

- And a great deal of the controversy and the confusion and the debate—centers upon this very issue: Just what is “*that which is perfect*”???

- Some (including myself, at one time) will try to make their case from the “original Greek” — but the problem there is that you end up being inconsistent with how you handle other passages of God’s word—so the best thing to do is to jettison that way to make your case, and stick with a far better method of doing it than by going to the Greek.

- A far better way for understanding and appreciating who or what “*that which is perfect*” is—is to pay attention to the CONTEXT and allow the context to tell you the identity of “*that which is perfect.*”

- Context rules every other way of interpretation!!!

- And if you're honest with the context here—Paul is NOT talking about a Person here at all—Paul is NOT talking about the return of the Lord Jesus Christ—Paul is NOT talking about the establishment of the kingdom (because some will say, Ok, I see that Paul's not talking about a person—but that's ok because he doesn't have to if what he's talking about is when the kingdom of heaven comes then sp. gifts are still in operation) ... no, the establishment of the kingdom is in God's program with Israel and not in this disp. of grace—and the truth is, the Corinthians were supposed look for it and to be anticipating the coming in of "*that which is perfect*" - they were to be expecting to see that thing come in and be beneficiaries of it!

- And my point in all that is this—if this is talking about the kingdom of heaven coming in and being set up upon the earth—then there's absolutely no reason for the apostle Paul to be talking about it and showing the Corinthians this *more excellent way* **if they were NOT going to be participants in it!!!**

- In fact, in the very last verse of the chapter—Paul will tell them what now *abides*—and that's what they're to stick with!

- But the context **IS** talking about knowledge and the speaking forth of that *knowledge* (or prophecy)!!! [Which is THE WORD OF GOD]

- The identity of "*that which is perfect*" - by the power of the context telling you what it is—can be nothing (nor any One else) other than the OPPOSITE of that which is '*partial*'!

- And that which is '*partial*' in (:9) is **KNOWLEDGE** and the revelation from God (or **PROPHECY**) that provided the *knowledge!*

(:10) - And so—*But when that which is perfect* (when the perfect, perfected, that is to say, **complete** knowledge comes by means of the final revelation from God for us in this dispensation of grace) *is come, then that which is in part* (both the partial knowledge and the gifts that service it) *shall be done away.*

- "*that which is perfect*" therefore can be nothing other than the completed revelation from God in written form:
THE BIBLE!

- But the reason why spiritual gifts were in operation for a limited time at the beginning of this disp. of grace was because the full revelation of the knowledge from God for us in this disp. of grace (the complete written word of God) was NOT possessed yet!

- And God was accomplishing His *operations* that He wanted to get accomplished through those ‘less excellent’ sp. gifts—awaiting the time when the complete knowledge would be written down and was something they could hold in their hands—and His *more excellent*, superior written word of God (that’s always been superior to anything; and always been the most excellent means for Him to do things) is there—and when it’s there, the sp. gifts are *done away*—and His WORD now accomplishes those things (especially as it operates in God’s “sons” and their sonship education and sonship lives)! — His word now effectually works to accomplish those *operations of God*.

- And this was a natural thing those Corinthians should have expected to have happen—and (:11-13) are going to set that forth and set forth the grandeur of *the more excellent way* when it comes compared to the ‘less excellent’ and inferior sp. gift system that existed temporarily.

- And not only that—but Paul will set forth the permanent abiding status of the most excellent ministry the Holy Ghost has—which is the greatest of all.

- And as we will see—in the very lifetime of the apostle Paul, and in the very lifetime of these Corinthians saints—*that which is perfect* actually arrived—the *more excellent way* came in—and we operate upon that today!

- And in the lifetime of the apostle Paul and those Corinthian saints—God withdrew all the sp. gifts—and the only sp. gifts that have been in operation since that day have been either counterfeits or fakery and frauds!

- Now in (:11) Paul sets forth an illustrative analogy that underscores both the **naturalness** of the ‘less excellent way’ of the sp. gifts being replaced by the *more excellent way* of the completed written word of God—and the **zeal** and **enthusiasm** and **delight** of those sp. gifts being *done away* and replaced by *the more excellent way*.

- And then (:12) describes the **glory** and the **grandeur** that the Corinthians will have (and that we now have) when they come to possess the *more excellent way* (the complete written word of God) - and the tremendous **advantage** that gives you over that 'less excellent way.'

- And then (:13) comes along and, on the basis of *the more excellent way* having come in—it states the **lasting situation** that will exist throughout the duration of this dispensation of grace—and with the sp. gifts being *done away*, what now *abides* once that *more excellent way* has come in.

- For now—let's just focus upon what Paul says at the end of the chapter in verse 13 —

- Now the apostle Paul will come along in (:13) and in view of when the perfect, complete written word of God does come in—and the temporary (less-excellent) sp. gifts are *done away*—he sets forth what **will** permanently remain —

13 And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three;

- Notice again—when it comes to setting forth what **will** remain throughout the duration of this disp. of grace—**not one single spiritual gift is mentioned or listed** (because they are ALL going to be *done away*)!

- Of *faith, hope, and charity*—none of those are spiritual gifts!

- But these are 3 things that the Holy Ghost is concerned with doing throughout the duration of this disp. of grace **after** *the more excellent way* has come in.

- *And now abideth faith* — remember that *faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God*—you can't have that without the word of God.

- **hope**—you're going to learn that *hope* is another one of those massive (and massively powerful) doctrines that you began learning about back in Rom. 5 when you learned about *the hope of the glory of God*—and another powerful aspect of your *hope* in sonship establishment: the *hope* of what your sonship life with your Father is all about—(which is a *hope* that *saved* you from being victimized by the *sufferings of this present time*—and that *hope* is going to **grow** and **abound** (just like godly love and charity) - and it does so by

believing what God tells you so that you have absolute confidence in it!

- **charity**—godly love and charity—which provides all of your Father’s norms & standards for what He values and esteems—so that you can conduct yourself like He does (godly: like Father, like son!)

13 And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity.

- Any Questions???

- So now we stand at this Sonship Checkpoint having received the fundamental *instruction of Wisdom* and the fundamental *instruction of Justice*.

- The importance of this Checkpoint is for the Father to insure that you haven’t merely learned the doctrine academically or temporarily (so as to pass a test and then quickly forget what you’ve learned) — but to probe your heart and make sure that what you have learned **has materially changed your heart permanently and forever!**

- That is—that you now not only know and understand the doctrine you’ve learned—but that those things you’ve learned and those ‘living words of the Living God’ really, truly, and genuinely **LIVE IN YOU!** (in all the details of your life!)

- Much like you did back in Romans 6—when you “reckoned” yourself to be *dead to sin, and alive unto God*—and that became the reality of who you really are “in Christ” — now, when it comes to the 6 Components of Wisdom and the 3 Components of Justice—that’s now the living reality of who you really are “in Christ” as well!

- And so you sit down with your Father and you and Him review, assess, and evaluate your heart (your inner man) and make sure that all of the Components of Wisdom and Justice operate and function **EVERY SINGLE DAY OF YOUR LIFE!**

- (Review again the 6 Components of Wisdom; and the 3 Components of Justice).

- And then your Father Exhorts you to **make full use** of that Wisdom & Justice—and especially where Justice is concerned, to not give in

... to the temptation to only do the minimum—but to follow through with it—to **not procrastinate**—to make **full use** of it!

- Because the Father knows that if you don't follow through in *Just* decisions, you'll never be able to fully make the kind of *Judgments* and *Equitable* decisions that are going to be of a much harder variety—and which will require much more work and much more energy to follow through with those Sonship Decisions when you have to face them!

- (And that's critical—because if you fail to follow through completely in the work and the Labor aspects of Judgment & Equity, you'll end up **failing** to carry out the Operations of God that He desires to get accomplished in all those areas!)

- [You'll end up as a FOOLISH son in your Father's sight!]

- And that's what the Fatherly Exhortations and Expectations of Proverbs 3:21-35 are all about!

- But then—since our Father's design and purpose of instructing us in *Wisdom & Justice* the way He does is designed to get **Godly Love and Charity** to be generated—and for that Godly Love & Charity to have the proper amount of GROWTH to it (in preparation for the rigors of *receiving the instruction of Judgment & Equity*) - you and your Father are to sit down together and examine, assess, and evaluate that the Godly Love & Charity is **real** and **genuine** (it's not just theory to you) - and that it has grown to the point that you can, with absolute confidence, be fully persuaded that the Selflessness, the Lovingkindness, the Tenderheartedness, and the Meekness are genuinely there and operational and functioning in your heart according to Godliness!

- That is, that those Major Features of Godly Love aren't just warmed-over leftovers of love as you were taught by the wisdom of the men and the course of this world—but that has all been uprooted, dismissed, and replaced by selfless, kind, tenderhearted, and meek Love as God your Heavenly Father has taught you—and by the Spirit of God with the words of God, they've been properly generated in your inner man!

(which is the most excellent ministry of the Holy Spirit within you!)

- (Which is why we took the time to review I Corinthians 13 and see some of the corrective doctrine that Paul gave to the Corinthians who had failed in this very area! and caused a great deal of problems for them—to the point where when they ‘came together’ [or assembled together] it was *not for the better, but for the worse!* [*I Corinthians 11:17*]!)

- And (once again) - just to use that 1st Component of our *instruction of Justice* (in Romans 12:17-18) & the corresponding Exhortation (in Proverbs 3:27-29) as an example of not giving in to the temptation to be **RELUCTANT** to **follow through** and make **full use** of the instruction—and to put that together with the proper growth of the Godly Love —

— based upon the Godly Thinking (as the Thinking of your Father during this present dispensation of grace in which we live—which is one of: when ‘evil’ is done to Him, rather than judging that person by pouring out His wrath; or rather than *recompensing evil for evil*—He, instead, is treating that person with *goodness, forbearance, and longsuffering* in order that His *goodness* will perhaps *lead* that person to *repentance*) —

— based upon that Godly Thinking of your Father—then you, in turn, are going to think that same way too—and you’re going to *recompense to no man evil for evil*. (**for that very same reason**)

- But the temptation to be RELUCTANT is going to show up in the Godly Living and the Godly Labor. (where you’re going to have to ‘follow through’ and make full use of the doctrine)

- And so when it then comes to *providing things honest* in the sight of that man that’s done you *evil*—there HAS to be occupation with what that *honest* thing is, and doing that “*good*” (as Pro. 3:27 says).

- And where the Meekness shows up is that—*providing things honest*, and doing that *good*—**that’s got to mean more to you than anything else!** (that course of action means more to you, and is more important to you than any of the worldly satisfaction you would get by paying that guy back and getting even with him—or getting your ‘pound of flesh’!!!)

- And folks, that's the way the Godly Love is supposed to work—that's the way in which the Godly Love is supposed to grow and to develop—in the very order in which God generated it within you!!!

- In other words—God didn't just come along and generate Selflessness as one separate & distinct Feature all by itself—and then the Kindness as another separate & distinct Feature all by itself—and then the Tenderheartedness as a separate & distinct Feature that stands alone by itself—and then the Meekness as a separate, distinct Feature that stands alone by itself — NO!

(may not be the best way to say it, but for now ...)

- ALL OF THE FEATURES OF GODLY LOVE ARE DEVELOPED FROM THE PREVIOUS FEATURES OF GODLY LOVE!!! (except the 1st one, of course)

- Therefore, if the Selflessness and the Kindness and the Tenderheartedness ISN'T THERE—then the Meekness might be there only in the sense of '*not recompensing the evil*' - but the Tenderheartedness is NOT going to be **strong enough** to overcome your natural RELUCTANCE to do something *good* in the sight of that guy (to *provide some things honest in his sight*), to try to make it so that he'll live *peaceable* with you!

- (You'll back down—you'll withhold the good—you'll put it off and say, I'll try doing that tomorrow—maybe I can work up the courage tomorrow ...)

- And I'm going over all this (painstakingly) to show you how you can "Check" yourself—or measure yourself—to see if Godly Love has developed to the degree and into the strength that it needs to be for you to go on and get the rest of Level I Sonship Education.

- And if you are reluctant—and if you only go so far, but don't make full use of the doctrine—then that should tell you that one, or some, or all of the previous 3 Major Features of Godly Love isn't as strong within you as it needs to be.

- For instance, if in Meekness, you don't go on and do the *good* and *provide things honest* in that person's sight—then that ought to tell you that, as a 'son' **you don't have the Tenderheartedness that you think you have!!!**

- In fact—and to be more precise—as we have talked about before—it’s really that very first Major Feature of Godly Love (the **Selflessness**) which is the one that’s ALWAYS in existence and ALWAYS in operation, ALWAYS functioning.

- And the Kindness, the Tenderheartedness, the Meekness, (and even the last 3 Features of Godly Love) - those are all really **situational expressions** of that Selflessness getting **stronger** and **stronger** and **stronger!**)

- And that’s why in Level II Sonship Education—you’re always esteeming others BETTER than yourself!

- That Godly **Selfless** Love is so strong—that you view others better than you do yourself—and you **don’t doubt** that at all!

- And that’s not merely some phony, forced, pretended humility—no, THAT’S **GENUINE GODLY HUMILITY!!!**

- That’s genuine ‘*lowliness of mind*’ - that’s genuine **abasing** of yourself!!! — because you **genuinely** value & esteem those others MORE than you do yourself!

*** (see Ephesians 4:1-3 [:2]) ***

*** (see Philippians 2:1-4 [:3]) ***

- And you are able to do all that because that fundamental Godly Love & Charity has had all 7 Characteristics & Features developed within you—**and each one of them is that Selflessness getting stronger and stronger and stronger!**

- And when all 7 are there—the issue is: that other person is MORE IMPORTANT than you are!

- And eventually, you’ll come to the point where: ***Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.*** (*John 15:13*) - [which is what the apostle Paul goes on to illustrate in Philippians 2:5-8 (read)!]

- That’s how much “**better**” they are than you—you’re **willing to DIE for them!!**

- And the reason why any natural RELUCTANCE would be there—is because the Godly Selfless Love (with it's Kindness and Tenderheartedness) might not be as mature and as strong as it ought to be—to make it so that you can focus upon the *good* thing that you're doing—and THAT means MORE to you than the potential consequences of the one you're trying to pacify, not being pacified!

- And in the end—it all comes down to the issue that: we should be far more concerned with the effectual working of the Curriculum doing its job within us (*conforming us to the image of God's Son*, and enabling us to Labor together with God in what He's doing—and to get the Training and the Experience and the Skill acquisition for what our Vocation demands) - that ought to mean **more** to us than any consequence that would ever happen to us along the way!

- Well—we've spent a lot of time dealing with the Fatherly Exhortations & Expectations that you receive at the end of the *instruction of Justice*—(much more than we did [I think] than at the end of receiving the *instruction of Wisdom*).

- And that's because both, the 9 Components that make up our instruction of Wisdom & Justice, as well as the generation and growth of the Godly Love & Charity (as it's being learned, and as it's progressively taking place) HAS GOT TO BE THERE, effectually working in your inner man!

- It can't be there just 'theoretically' - it can't just be there as an "Ok, I know this information—I can regurgitate it for a test" — no, it's ACTUALLY got to be there and ACTUALLY be **built** upon each previous issue!

- And hopefully, that should make it so that you are deeply impressed with the "juncture" that we're coming to in Romans 13:8.

- Because that's where we really are—we're at a 'juncture' in the balance of our Level I Sonship Education.

- The 4 Areas of Sonship Decision-Making are really broken down into 2 Camps (so to speak) - the Wisdom & Justice go together—and once they're accomplished, they provide for a special capacity—and that special capacity is for Godly Love

... to be able to function as the sole ‘arbiter’ (so to speak) when it comes to making a decision!

- And now you’re going to get the instruction from the Father in **that kind** of Decision-Making!

END: INSTRUCTION OF WISDOM AND JUSTICE.

Receiving the instruction of ...

- JUDGMENT (or godly judgmental decision-making skills.)

- (see Table of Contents—Proverbs 1:2-3)

- **Definition**: the determination of the right, correct, and/or proper course of action to take absent an objective standard or authority in which to make an appeal.

- And when it comes now to you **as a son** *receiving the instruction of judgment* from your Father—that discriminating difference that we’ve noted that keeps us from confusing the two issues of *justice* and *judgment*—is that where *Justice* is concerned, you have either someone or some thing that has the absolute authority to declare what is right and what is wrong (an objective standard to appeal to) — but the issue in *Judgment* is one of **NOT** having an objective standard or authority in which to make an appeal—that therefore means that you’re going to be instructed in a body of information that is designed to impart the skills of how to make decisions all on your own—and to make decisions when there is no clear right or wrong!

- **Summary Statement**: To *receive the instruction of judgment* involves receiving instruction so as to have the fundamental capacity for making evaluations and judgments on issues about which the proper path to walk is not immediately clear.

- And we know that this is the proper context or way to view *judgment*—and narrow it down to just this issue—because we know that the word that was used just previous to it (*justice*) has already taken into account decision-making when you have an objective standard to appeal to that tells you: this is right, this is wrong in this type of situation.

- *Justice* is as if a judge is presented with a particular case where there is no doubt whatsoever about what has occurred—and it's an obvious breach of the law—and the judge can just come along and say, "There's no reason to even adjourn, I don't have to deliberate on this at all" and he just opens up the book of statutes and laws—the law is already on the books (so to speak) - and the judge renders an immediate, clear-cut verdict without further debate.

- *Justice* is as if there's no debate or deliberation needed; because the law's already on the books, and all you have to do is appeal to the written code.

- And when you get *justice* and *judgment* utilized in the same context—*justice* has an objective standard to it, and *judgment* does not.

- And *judgment* is the issue of that judge making his decision based upon the best evaluation, and most consistent evaluation he can make based upon precedence, the special facts or circumstances of the case, intent, and things along those lines.

- Hopefully at this point you're thinking about how things are given to you, not only in the book of Romans, but even on throughout Paul's epistles—because Paul will not only give us the **basic & fundamental instruction of judgment** — (as he did with the *Wisdom*, the *Justice*, and then as he will do with the *Equity*) — but he will bring them back up later on in order to give us **advanced instruction** on each of them—(to 'flesh out' our appreciation and **skillful use** of each of them; and to confront problems that arise because of either misuse or abuse or misunderstanding concerning each one of them. (ex., I Cor. 8:9; 10:23-33)

- And really, this is the very point at which most Christians either get into **legalism**—(see Galatians 2:4; 5:1, 13) — or else they just get **frustrated** in their Christian lives — because in the vast majority of cases, they have no information given to them to do the normal thing a son is supposed to do.

- Or else most Christians think that what they're supposed to achieve in their spiritual maturity is really the level of *justice*—that everything's going to be a white or black issue—or a clear-cut right and wrong issue—and the frustration is that when you actually go out

... and live your life, (or by the time you drive off the parking lot), you realize that life just isn't like that—and in fact, the majority of issues you're going to be dealing with aren't issue of *justice*, but are issues of *judgment*!

- And that stands to reason, because the majority of your life **isn't** lived as a child—most of your life is lived as an **adult**.

- And a child always wants a *just* decision—that's why they always appeal to mommy and daddy—because they want Mom and Dad to make their decisions for them!

- (By the way, this is what I talk about when I say that it's in *Judgment* where your Sonship life begins to **shine**—and even though you've always been dealt with by your Father as an adult son—it's really in *Judgment* where real ADULTHOOD gets underway!)

- *Judgmental* decisions means that there are **options**—in fact it could be there are **multiple options that could be decided for**.

- And it's right here that that keen and skillful ability or capacity to make godly sonship decisions really gets some **muscle**—because this is where you as a son are going to have several options available to you—and of the many decisions you *could* make, you're going to have to have the skill from being *instructed* in making *judgmental* decisions to choose the **one thing** to do out of many possible things that will be the one that your Heavenly Father will be most pleased with.

- And this really is where most Christians get bogged down and discouraged and desperate—because the questions that are most often on their mind are along the lines of: “Who should I date? Who should I marry? Which job should I take? What crowd should I hang around with? What should I drink? What should I eat? What should I wear? What music should I listen to...” — all those questions are asked because that sonship decision-making skill of *judgment* is **NOT** properly developed ... (if at all).

- And so—because of failing to be properly educated and properly edified as a “son” — this is where the vast majority of Christians today simply become Calvinistic in their thinking and in their Christian lives!!!

- And because they are frustrated with not being able to make *judgmental* decisions all on their own—they simply resort to the old “if it be God’s will” dodge—or “whatever God’s will is” - or “everything happens for a reason” - or a whole number of clever slogans that they express so that they have something to say—and so that they at least won’t look foolish in the eyes of their Christian friends & family!

- And the truth is—they can find some verses in the Bible, that, if taken out of their context, seems to back them up!

- And this is also where a whole lot of what most Christians call “prayer” is going to center upon—that is, when these hard *Judgment* type situations come up, that’s usually when they pray the most themselves—(or that’s usually when they request prayer) - and for the most part it’s praying to know what God’s **will** is in a particular *judgment* type situation!

- Most prayer is an attempt to **force** God to be their “*tutor and governor*” - and **force** God to by-pass their Sonship education and Sonship status—and **force** God to make all their *judgment* decisions **FOR** them!!!

- This is why most Christians lives are really just a big ‘roller coaster’ of ups & downs; highs & lows — because they don’t have anything in their spirit (their thinking) to calm their raging soul!

- And even though they would never admit it—and though they’ve totally convinced themselves otherwise—the reason why their life is a ‘roller coaster’ of ups & downs is because they’ve given themselves over to sheer LUCK!

- When they’re lucky and things work out: then God really blessed them—and when they’re unlucky and things don’t work out: then God is punishing them!

- **AND THAT’S NOT ONLY FRUSTRATING,
... THAT’S MADDENING!!!**

- That's totally inconsistent with being an Adult, Adopted Son—because it's **YOU** [as a properly educated and intelligent son] (not God) who, by the *renewing of your mind* are to *prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God!*

- And the truth of the matter is, that as soon as sonship is really comprehended by a Christian as it ought to be comprehended—the last thing he wants is for someone to take his own decision-making skills away from him and make decisions *for* him!

- This issue of sonship *judgmental* decision-making is really what's at the core of the issue that standing behind Paul's rebuke to the Corinthians over there in I Cor. 6—because the fact that they wanted unbelievers to **judge** them is so contrary, not only to sonship edification—but it's contrary to the very attitude that a son's supposed have about making decisions at all — truth of the matter is, they should have been coming along and saying, “Hey—you're not going to rob me of the privilege of making decisions as a son!”

- But a **child** would shy away from that—they would rather someone else make the decision for them! (childish/foolish)!

- So now let's describe more fully (from our summary statement of receiving the instruction of *judgment*) what this means specifically for us, the members of the new creature of the church the body of Christ in this dispensation of grace—or when it comes to us applying it as sons in this dispensation of grace:

- ***Receiving the instruction of judgment* involves receiving the instruction so as for us to have the fundamental capacity for making sound, sonship and godly evaluations and judgments on issues about which the proper path for us to walk is not immediately clear on issues upon which we must ponder, weigh the various options and evaluating them in godliness. This involves the capacity to evaluate and judge between various options confronting us; various opportunities given to us; various reactions we could give; and/or various courses of action we can take in any given situation—and to thereby determine what is good, or what is better, or what is best, and/or determine what is honorable or valuable or virtuous or what is excellent.**

- Now that's really a scope of the entire sonship curriculum that deals with this issue of godly *judgmental* decision-making — because it really takes into account more than just what Romans will give you as the fundamental issue of sonship *judgmental* decision-making, and it goes on to look at all that will be developed in this skill throughout the sonship curriculum contained in all of Paul's epistles.

- In other words, that statement takes you from the **milk** of the capacity that Romans gives, to the **meat** of the capacity that II Thessalonians gives.

- But when you think about it—those terms that I used there: good, better, best — honorable, valuable, virtuous, excellent — really, those are Paul's terms right from Romans through II Thessalonians.

- And they describe a **progress** to the *judgmental* decision-making skills of a son as he is edified by the curriculum—and you go from honorable to valuable to the virtuous to what is excellent!

- **see for example: Philippians 1:6-11 (:9-10)**

- And when you get the body of doctrine in Philippians that further instructs you in *judgment*—it's now instructing you in the *judgment* of what is **excellent** — you know the good and the better by then—and now you're dealing with the best and the excellent!

- So the overriding issue with making *judgmental* decisions has to do with there being the capacity for making evaluations and judgments on issues about which the proper path to walk or the proper thing to do is not immediately or abundantly clear.

- And so (obviously) when you've got several options set before you, and none of them seem to be a definite or absolute right or wrong choice — in fact, this is where you really begin to get skill and keen insight into making decisions when faced with what might be called a **right vs. a right** path or option or choice—and therefore we obviously **need** our Father's instruction in this decision-making skill of *judgment*!

- If I'm going to make these kind of decisions to the emulation of and to the **pleasure** of my Father—there's no way I'm going to do that by "chance" — or by "guessing" at it! (Or by just being 'lucky')!

- And usually, these types of decisions are all but ignored — and are most often overlooked by Christians as being real opportunities to **please** and **honor** God—even among many believers who **do** have some understanding of sonship.

- The Corinthians being a classic example—until Paul corrected them.
- But most of us—even if we’re not as bad as the Corinthians who all-out abuse our liberty—we usually don’t appreciate that, when you’re not faced with a right or wrong decision—and you’re not faced with a wise or foolish decision—but you’re faced with various options and opportunities, and you’re going to have to make a decision about what would be good, better, or best or what would be honorable or valuable or virtuous or excellent — all of that, more often than not, is usually discussed as just sonship liberties that I have open to me, **as if God really doesn’t care what the decision is that I make.**

- Like, well, God gives you the responsibility now as an adult son to make your own decisions, so just go right at it, and whatever decision you make is ok.

- And in the past this is about how it’s been handled by those who attempted to do something more with being adopted as God’s son than just recognizing that you’re now God’s heir via regeneration.

- And at the time, even the idea that you are this adopted son of God with this adult status of liberty and freedom— to be able to make decisions on your own — (which is a marked departure from the way most Christians are ever taught about this pre-determined, pre-set will that you are supposed to struggle and grope and cry and strain and wrestle to try to find) — and I recognize that even that much was revolutionary compared to that struggle most saints go through to find and hunt and go through some sort of sadistic type **spiritual safari** to find the will of God in so many areas of their life!

- And again, this is where there is so much discouragement and frustration in the Christian world—because when this issue of “God’s will” comes up—most Christians don’t know they’re sons—adopted, adult sons of God—and they have never been taught properly about the curriculum for their sonship life—and therefore they are always butting heads with God, doing all sorts of things, and taking all sorts of **desperate measures** to try to **divine** His will—or at least

... to get Him to tell them plainly what His will is in a given situation—(such as fasting, tithing, long, all-night prayers, pleading, crying, deprivation of all sorts, ... etc.) — and all the while God’s sitting up there saying, “Look, I’ve already made this as plain as day in my word—and if you’d just pay attention to what I say, you’d never be in this position!”

- So you’ve either got a vast majority of the body of Christ (believers, Christians) who are completely ignorant of the significance of what it means to be a son of God—and they are doing all these desperate things, (sincere as they may be), attempting to find the will of God for various issues in their life, — all the while not knowing that their sincere, desperate measures are NOT impressing God, and could never move God to do what they really want Him to do {i.e., to audibly tell them, or give them a sign, or by some kind of spiritual telepathy beam in the answer, or at least give them some sort of inner feeling [usually passed off as ‘I just got peace about it’]} — or — you’ve got Christians who have some understanding at least that they are adopted, adult sons of God, but when it comes to these ‘fuzzy’ areas where *judgmental* decisions are called for, they just act as if they’re trivial decisions because they’re not right or wrong, or wise vs. foolish decisions.

- But we’re to understand and appreciate that instead of attempting to move God by desperate measures in order to get Him to indicate to us in some audio/visual, or multimedia-type way what His will **is** in any given situation—we’re to understand that all these types of issues of determining what the will of God is, are really almost all dealt with by these sonship decision-making skills—especially the keen skills of sonship *judgmental* decision-making, and sonship *equitable* decision-making.

- And also, far from being trivial or unimportant—these *judgmental* decisions you make—even in very minor areas—aren’t ever to be viewed as small or minimal or unimportant—because with each *judgmental* decision you make, and as you gain skill to be able to **clearly** (not ‘give it your best guess’) but to clearly know which choice is good, better and best, or honorable, virtuous, and excellent; these are all opportunities given to us as sons to be able to **prove** our qualifications to be rewarded with positions of governmental/ruling authority — that they are opportunities for us to emulate and please our Father—to do the very thing Paul said of the Philippians: to “*approve things that are excellent*”!

- And when you see that—when you see the **progression** from what we're given as we first of all *receive the instruction of judgment* in Romans, and then see that that gets **added to** throughout the curriculum for sonship education to hone that skill to a very fine edge (so to speak) - you should never look at decisions where there's really no right or wrong decision as if God doesn't care which one you make—or that to God, it really doesn't matter which one you make—because that is flat-out wrong! that's not true—that a **false** understanding of *judgment*!!!

- If there's no clear right or wrong—and there's no clear wise path or foolish path we aren't to say, “Well, it really doesn't matter, either decision is fine.”

- **Because that's really not so**—God lists *receiving the instruction of judgment* right up there with *receiving the instruction of wisdom and justice*, and we're supposed to make even these **judgment calls** in our lives to the pleasure and to the emulation of our Father, and put on display our aptitude to be used by Him to govern in the heavenly places.

- And even in these *judgment calls* in my life, I can still make them **without guessing**, and make them **exactly** like my Father would make them Himself because He has *instructed* me in that very thing!

— Any Questions concerning the **Introduction** of *receiving the instruction of Judgment*?

- Do you have a basic (very basic) & fundamental understanding and appreciation for what the *instruction of Judgment* is for? (what it's goal & designed purpose is for?)

- NOTE: At this point we did an extensive review of both the instruction of Wisdom and the instruction of Justice.

- NOTE: Then we did a review of Prayer, Sonship Prayer, and the Searching of the Heart in Psalm 139.

(as per the following pages)

BLANK PAGE

- PRE-DOCTRINAL EXHORTATION TO RECEIVING THE INSTRUCTION OF JUDGMENT.

- Let's now turn our attention to the Exhortation that a son receives before the *instruction of judgment* gets underway.

- Proverbs 4:1-9 (read)

- At this point in your education as a “son” - you really need to be deeply and suitably impressed (just as your Father is impressed) with the fact that, having received the *instruction of Wisdom & Justice*—**you have now reached a MAJOR “Point of Attainment” or “Level of Attainment”**.

- By this point in your Sonship Education, you've now reached a point where a good amount of Level I God-Like-Ness has taken place—a fair measure of being *conformed to the image of God's Son* has taken place at the end of receiving the instruction of Wisdom & Justice.

- And by the effectual working of God's word in your inner man—and by the effectual and **full use** of the 6 Components of Wisdom and the 3 Components of Justice; as well as the growth and development of Godly Love & Charity—you are now well underway in emulating your Heavenly Father in all of the details of your life! (becoming “like Father, like son”)

- You now have ‘attained’ or ‘reached’ a point or a level of Godly Sonship **competence** (i.e., you're sufficiently capable and qualified to make sound, Godly, Sonship decisions in the areas of basic Wisdom and Justice) — and just as important, you can make those Wise & Just decisions based upon a very real and competent and genuine attainment of Godly Love!

- You're now half-way through receiving the 4 major Sonship Decision-Making Skills—and that's an achievement! ... that's an **attainment!** ... and that's something to acknowledge with some real Godly happiness, satisfaction, confidence and contentment!!!

- And there should be a GREAT amount of Godly ambition, enthusiasm, and ZEAL to not only put that *Wisdom & Justice* into practice—but to also **desire** to **get** the *Judgment* and the *Equity*!!! (and this is a MAJOR Sonship issue!!!)

- And so—at this ‘Point of Attainment’ things are now no longer being talked about just in ‘theory’ (so to speak) - but the real ‘rubber-meets-the-road’ type changes (or *transformation*) in your Thinking, and in your Conduct & Behavior are now taking place—as well as the actual work & Labor (that is, the actual DOING of the doctrine) is now taking place.

- (Does that describe YOU? ... or doesn't it???)

- Well—when you read the Pre-Doctrinal Exhortation here in Proverbs 4:1-9—even before you ever get to dealing with the details of it—there should be a couple of things that strike you and grab your attention —

— for one thing, it should strike you as kind of odd that your Father would say these kinds of things to you—(because it should occur to you that, “Haven’t I been doing this all along?” - “Why would my Father say this to me when I’ve already been doing these kinds of things?”)

— and the other thing that should grab your attention here is (once again) the **TONE** of this Exhortation! — (because by just the **tone** of the way in which this is worded, it’s apparent that our Father is really ‘amped-up’ [so to speak] - He’s not just ‘almost’ ... He’s really pleading with us here—He’s making a very strong and earnest appeal to us for some reason—(and even though the word isn’t used here ... He’s beseeking us! [He’s be-seeking us! - He’s intensely seeking something in us!])

- And He’s not only exhorting us—but He’s also admonishing us; cautioning us; warning us—(as in :2, :4, and :6).

- And one of the major things that should kind of ‘dawn’ on you — (just by what the Father says here; and by the Tone He takes) - is that with the Wisdom & Justice you’ve just received—when you **add** to that the *Judgment* that you’re about to get—even though you may think you’ve already been doing what your Father says here (and you’re right to think that) — **it must, therefore, be true that you’re now going to face real temptation and real opposition when it comes to receiving the instruction of Judgment that goes beyond anything you’ve experienced so far!**

- In other words—the challenges that lie ahead of you in *Judgment* are going to be **far greater** than you ever faced in Wisdom & Justice! (and that *IS* the truth of the matter!)
- Real, and more intensified temptation & opposition is now going to be coming your way that would make it so you might FAIL to do the things you're being exhorted here to do!
- So one of the obvious things about the **tone** of these Exhortations is that the Father makes it clear to His son that REAL TEMPATION and REAL OPPOSITION is going to come his way! (such as has not been experienced before)
- And because of the nature of these temptations & opposition—the Father has reason to come along and deal with some things that you would almost think would be rather uncharacteristic of a son, once he's got the Wisdom & Justice—**but the Father says it to him anyway!**
- And one of the things that we took note of back when we were in Sonship Establishment back in Romans 8 is that—once real, genuine *godliness* begins to get put on display (and an impact is being made by it) ***in the world***—then there's going to be a negative response on the part of the world to it!

- (see Romans 8:28-39)

- And the *world* (and by that, I mean, the wisdom of this world, the men of this world, and the ungodly course of this world that Satan has charted) - **THE WORLD** itself is going to be One of Three areas of opposition you're going to face—especially when you put on display in it your *instruction of Judgment!!!*
- This “world” is NOT ‘conformed’ to Godliness—this “world” is conformed to Satanliness!!!
- It has it's own counterfeit form of godliness—and it's own accepted form of religion and even Christianity that it can get along with very well—but **genuine Godliness is it's ENEMY**—and it's NOT compatible to genuine Godliness; and it won't tolerate it; and, more than that, it will seek to DESTROY IT! (don't doubt it!) [especially zeal/enthusiasm]
- As we noted before—there are men in this world that are *despisers of those that are good*—(see II Tim. 3:1-7 [:3]).

- Here you're told that one of the characteristic features of the evolution of man's ungodliness is the issue of becoming ***despisers*** of those that are ***good***, — and as man's ungodliness evolves, there's not only going to be the natural negative response of the world 'at large' to Godliness in its midst - but there's going to be certain men who are going to be ***despisers*** of saints who are "*good*"! (and as a son, YOU are going to be on the receiving end of that 'despising'!)

- Now along with the issue of the way in which the world is going to negatively respond to your Sonship life being put on display in the world 'at large' — there is going to be another, (or Second) **added danger:** which is **the way in which YOUR FLESH** [or sin in your members] **is going to respond!**

- And this gets into an area of 'heart-type' issues—and areas of your "*flesh*" that have never been touched upon, ever before in your life!!! — (there are a whole bunch of 'nerves' that have never been "hit" [so to speak] until you begin to put genuine Godliness into practice in this world!) [and you simply just have no experience with them yet].

- By the way—interestingly enough, as the instruction of Godly Judgment & Equity is given—and then on into Level II & III Sonship Education—the Father says some things from time to time that are specifically designed to “awaken” the son’s perception—and to make it so that he is “sensitive” to how sin in his own members is responding to what he’s just learned.

- ex. Galatians 5:11-18 (:17)

- And so the son has the issue of **sin in his members** on the **inside** - and **the world** that you're walking in on the **outside**, — and that world, (with all of the unrighteous and the unjust men of the world), is going to be **unconsciously** responding in a negative way to YOUR *Godliness*.

- And as you get to the final 2 areas of instruction in Level I Sonship Education - the Father's exhortations and expectations begin to work on that kind of perception! -- and some of the expectations He points out there is that He now expects His son to be aware of what's going on within him - and He expects His son to be aware of how the world is going to act with him & his Godliness in it!

- And the point is—that after the Father gives his son the instruction of Wisdom and Justice—He’s aware of what’s going on in His son’s heart—He’s aware of how sin in His son’s members is operating—(not just that it’s there; but how it reacts to the doctrine once it gets written down on the *fleshy tables* of His son’s heart as His son becomes the living “*epistle of Christ*”!)

- And these 2 areas of Opposition and Temptation are primarily involved in the 1st Component of the instruction of Judgment—but a 3rd area will be met & added to those in the 2nd Component!

- And this 3rd area of temptation & opposition gets addressed in the Exhortations on down in those first 6 verses of Proverbs chapter 5!

- And the 3rd area of Opposition & Temptation is going to come from (for the very first time) the Satanic Policy of Evil!

- And that's why the "*strange woman*" gets brought up (in Pro. 5:3-6) and how she plays the harlot and how she acts - because that's how you end up being **taught** how to recognize the seductions that are out there in the world - and how the world is going to work in order to get it so that it can entrap you and ensnare you.

- And the Father knows how the world is reacting to the Godliness that's beginning to be manifested by you as His son *in* the world - and He knows how the Policy of Evil is getting ready - (it still doesn't have the opportunity yet to respond ... **but that's coming!**) - and the Father knows the preparations it's making.

- And so it's in view of all that, that the Father is going to come along and make all His Exhortations and Expectations to His son based upon THAT!

- And just in the TONE of these Exhortations alone—you get the feeling that the Father knows that His son is going to be SORELY TEMPTED!

- And that's why it looks as though the son would say to his Father's Exhortations: “Didn’t I just learn that? ... Isn’t it just a “given” that I’d do that?” — but the Father knows that every form of doctrine that you receive ‘ups the ante’ (so to speak) - and that every form of

... doctrine that's learned produces it's increased negative response from 1) the *world* 'at large'; 2) from sin in your members; and from 3) the Policy of Evil that's just waiting in the wings!

- And that's why things are worded the way they are—and that's why you've got some admonishing being given to you (and some "beseeching") - and you've got some exhortations to you that are to immediately to go into action without delay!

- It's those kind of things that we need to appreciate and be deeply and suitably impressed with from these exhortations as sons in this dispensation of grace in which we live.

- Because while a lot of what's said in Proverbs 4:1-5:6 (detail-wise) has a lot to do with the Remnant Sons in God's program with Israel — the truth is, that for us as sons & members of the church the body of Christ - we, too, need to be aware of the issue of the world's negative response increasing; be aware of the issue of sin in our members 'doubling its efforts' (so to speak); and the Policy of Evil waiting in the wings (discerning how we're responding to the doctrine—looking for areas that can be exploited, and so forth) — but we've got our own particular Curriculum & instruction of Judgment in Romans 13:8-14 that's designed specifically for us in this dispensation of grace—and therefore, the same kind of need exists for us to be ON GUARD!

- And along with the Positive & Proper response to the doctrine you'll receive in Judgment (and Equity) - and once that doctrine gets written on your heart—you, therefore, need to make the determined choice (realizing that the 'ante' has just been 'up'ed' - and realizing the capacity you have with the instruction of Wisdom, Justice, and now Judgment) ...
to put it into practice!

- And if you're reluctant in any way at all—that's going to immediately be seized upon & exploited by these areas of Temptation and Opposition!!!

- And your entire Sonship life can easily be intimidated, and become useless, powerless, unprofitable, and unfruitful—and be relegated to being under the control of the Adversary's Policy of Evil along with the vast majority of Christianity today!

- And so—as you read down through the Fatherly Exhortations and Expectations of Proverbs chapter 4—it’s very apparent that the Father is taking a tone of fervency and intensity because the son now has the capacity to enter into godly judgments—(and the mark of maturity that these things are—being able to make independent type judgments) - all of which means that when that type of godliness gets put into action and gets worked out in the details of your life ...

... the world knows what’s going on;
 ... sin in your members knows what’s going on;
 ... and the policy of evil knows what’s going on ...

... and they’re going to respond to that and tempt that and oppose that increased maturity and increased godliness that there now is to your sonship life!

- Which makes the tone of the Father and the things the Father says here (exhortation-wise) a perfectly VALID, PROPER, AND PERFECTLY FITTING exhortation to the circumstances of sonship judgment!

- Now the kind of work that’s going to be required of you (which, by the way, this Exhortation makes you aware of) - is to take a relatively brief amount of information that’s designed to be the ‘guideline’ (so to speak) for which judgmental decisions are going to be made—and with that ‘guideline’ type information, you are then going to have to meet those circumstances and situations that arise in the details of your life that require a **judgment** to be made—and then you’re going to have to do such things as what Proverbs 4:25-27 talks about —

- (read Pro. 4:25-27)

- And because of what it is (judgment) - the way in which the instruction of judgment is going to be given is **different** than the way in which the instruction of wisdom and justice was given.

- Not that this is going to be a vastly different category of decision-making (because we’ve been making some judgments already—it’s just that they’ve been either wise or just judgments) - but now we’re going to receive some information that’s going to allow us to take the wisdom and the justice that we’ve already got and apply it to decision-making in which the options in the decision is NOT one that could be based simply upon wisdom or justice alone.

- And that's not to be a "scary" thing—because for one thing, you have the instruction of wisdom & justice; and you have the proper development & growth of godly love; and you have the development of the "*s*" *pirit which is of God* operating within you to the degree that it is; plus you will have the *instruction of judgment* itself (brief as it is); and you have sonship prayer — and all of that, **combined** is going to give you the capacity for making these kind of judgment type of decisions according to godliness (according to the way in which your Father makes them, Himself)!

- And you're going to have to take all that you've been given so far — and then when situations & circumstances arise that call for a judgment type decision—you're going to have to take what you've been given as a son; and then you're going to have to THINK, PONDER, MUSE about it ... **and you COME TO the decision!**

- It's a decision that, based upon some skill that's been developed within you (on the basis of applying wisdom and applying justice) - to look at the situation, and with a frame of reference you've got already, be able to sit down (so to speak) - and **think** the thing over; **weigh** out the ramifications of deciding this way or that way (or whatever) - and finally come to a decision that, "This is the best option in this given situation."

- And it may very well be just as simple as: This is a right decision, and this is a wrong decision—but the vast majority of the time (for the remainder of your sonship life once the instruction of judgment has been given) - the majority of the decisions you're going to make in the details of your life that are in keeping with your ongoing sonship education, are NOT decisions that are "right vs. wrong" — but are decisions of "foolishness vs. wisdom"!

- And because of that—that's the reason why you find both *wisdom* and *justice* being spoken about in this Exhortation to receiving the instruction of Judgment—because they both have a roll now to play—because making a wise judgmental decision takes both the wisdom and the justice that you've acquired and puts them to use (along with the instruction of judgment) - and allows for you to do just what it says in Proverbs 4:25-27.

- **“Ponder”** - (that’s a word you haven’t had yet) - and that’s why it comes up now— because you haven’t been in a situation where that process of your mind can work! - but now it can!!

- **Ponder** = to weigh in the mind; to compare the circumstances or consequences of an event—or the importance of the reasons for or against a decision. To consider carefully; to think over; to meditate upon.

- “Pondering” demands more than one issue being brought to bear upon the decision-making process. (You’re bringing wisdom AND justice [as well as all of the other things you’ve acquired] to bear upon where your *feet* are going to go!)

- And so you’re going to *ponder the path of your feet* — and you’re going to come along now, and because your Father isn’t going to outright tell you what to do—you’re kind of blazing a new trail—you’re moving into new territory (so to speak) - but the issue is: before you decide which path your feet are going to take, you first are going to PONDER IT!

- And you’re going to make a decision based upon *pondering!*

- And note that (not that it’s exactly the same concept) - but we have in our English Language a word that has as its radical root this word “ponder” - which is the word **preponderance** = a legal term that’s used in connection with the amassing of evidence— (the “preponderance of the evidence”) — which is a means of swaying a jury to believe in the truth of what has taken place.

- And what the prosecuting/defense attorney does is to amass all this evidence to support his case—and by the preponderance of it (which is the issue of the weight of it all) the jury is supposed to arrive at or COME TO a decision!

- And that’s what goes on in your thinking—something has **more weight** in your thinking when it comes to making a decision—and the wisdom, the justice, and the godly love (along with the instruction of judgment) - that “weight” is now going to be brought to bear upon the path of your feet! (and on the basis of that—*all your ways will be established!*) — you’ve got some heavy decision-making to do!

- Because the kind of skill you gain in the decision-making of godly judgment isn't *just* going to be the skill to perceive the 'right' or 'wrong' path (or course of action) - but to take the instruction of Wisdom, Justice, & Judgment; plus the Godly Love; plus the '*s'pirit which is of God* [Pro. 1:23] — and YOU are going to *ponder* a path for your *feet*—and the bottom line is that YOU are going to *let ALL your ways be established* — notice that it doesn't say, 'let God establish all your ways'!

- YOU define the path of your feet—and YOU then let all your ways be ESTABLISHED. (without looking at your Father to try to get some kind of 'indicator' from Him that your doing the right thing or not!)

- And again—this isn't to be a 'scary' thing—or something that is just fraught with doubt & uncertainty—no—because the truth of the matter is, what you've been given by your Father (the Wisdom, Justice, Judgment—the Godly Love—His 'spirit') has the capacity, the ability, and the power to accomplish all of this exactly as He would do it Himself—(because that IS how He does it, Himself!)

- And what is now beginning to happen (not in 'theory' but in a real, genuine, rubber-meets-the-road type way) - is that you are beginning to make decisions INDEPENDENT of your Father!

- Not that He ever strictly leaves you—(because He doesn't) — but one of the greatest aspects of adulthood type adoption of sons, is the issue of INDEPENDENT DECISION-MAKING!

- It's what you've longed for as a son—and it's what your Father has longed for as your Father—because it is what is going to make it so that you are qualified to work together with Him in all His business!

- And really, this isn't out of the realm of what happens with a natural father and his natural son—in fact, I can make decisions (judgments) based upon the wisdom, love, and spirit of my earthly father—and even though he's in God's heaven right now, I know he would be pleased with my decision!

- But the point is—YOU are going to determine and define *the path of your feet*—and it's going to take some heavy thinking (some *pondering*) at times for you to COME TO the decision you make!

- And that means that YOU, now, have to do some **planning** and some **purposing** in your sonship life!

- And in view of that, you'll be able to come along (on the basis of that planning) and say, "These are going to be my *ways*" — and then YOU'LL have to *establish* them!

- (That is, you'll have to do some preparation, some 'setting things up' [so to speak], make some provisions for what you planned for, etc.)

- So therefore, this really is getting into the arena of real, adulthood type decision-making—where you are going to determine a path to take in a given situation—and without wavering whatsoever, (based upon all that your Father has taught you and generated in your inner man) - you can confidently make a decision to take a particular path ... and you KNOW it's pleasing to your Father without Him ever coming along and telling you that it's well-pleasing in advance!

- And in your communion & fellowship in sonship prayer, you can come along and tell your Father that you've determined to do this ... or that.

- And the point is—that by the time you've been instructed in godly *judgment* as a son—by that time, you now know what your Father expects you to do—(you've got the capacity to discern what is well-pleasing to Him ... what His *good pleasure* is!) - [see Phil. 2:12-13]

- And notice that because of the capacity that your edification as a sons gives you—notice that you're supposed to make these kind of decisions with CONFIDENCE —

Pro. 4:27— Turn not to the right hand nor to the left— you're not going to waiver or be uncertain or any of that kind of business!

- And that's why you have the **determination** that (:25) talks about—your "*eyes are looking right on*".

- This is a son actually beginning to give manifest demonstration that he's emulating his Father!

- (Because that's how his Father acts—that's how his Father makes **confident** decisions—that's how his Father operates with **determination** and **without distraction**—without losing “**sight**” of the goal!)

- And to borrow the apostle Paul's expression over in Ephesians 1 — God *worketh all things after the counsel of his own will*: — and NOTHING deters Him from it!

- (and now that's what you're going to do, too!)

(MINI REVIEW)

- Now up to this point, what we've really been doing with the Fatherly Exhortation that corresponds to receiving *the instruction of Judgment*—is to kind of familiarize ourselves with the kind of TONE the Father takes with His sons—and just by that alone, it gives us a particular frame of reference (or sets our minds) just prior to getting the instruction of Judgment—(which is essential due to the demands & rigors of judgmental decision-making).

- And by both what the Father says, and the serious & urgent Tone in which He says it—we have come to appreciate the fact that:

- A level of attainment has been reached by the son (having received the instruction of Wisdom & Justice);

- The son is going to face stiff temptation & opposition from
1) The World; 2) his Flesh (sin in his members);
3) The Satanic Policy of Evil;

- The demands & rigors (the work) of Judgmental decision-making is going to be intensified more than ever before— (therefore we looked at the issue of *pondering* that your mind now *can* do, and *must* do in arriving at a *judgment*);

- And that judgmental decisions are going to be ... (far more than any decision up to this point), the issue of **Independent Decision-making** — using only what you have been taught by your Father in Wisdom & Justice; plus the growth of the godly love; and that *spirit which is of God*—and bringing all that to bear upon what judgment you make.

- Basic & Simple Breakdown of Proverbs chapter 4:

(:1-9) — An Evaluation of whether or not the son is ready to go on.
(and we'll talk more about this in a moment)

- Notice that you have a "*Hear, ye children,*" (in :1).

- And then in (:10), you go back to a "*Hear, O my son,*"

- And if you pay attention to what the Father says—you'll notice that after the evaluation issue in (:1-9) is finished—you have 2 times in chapter 4 in which the Father personally addresses His *son* (singular). [once in :10, and again in :20]

- Therefore what you have in the remainder of chapter 4—and which alerts you to what to expect in the *instruction of judgment*) is that you have **2 MAIN COMPONENTS** that makes up the *instruction of judgment*. (And, by the way, we have 2 Main Components to our *instruction of judgment* in Romans 13:8-14).

(:10-13) — Pre-Doctrinal Exhortation to Component #1

(:14-19) — Post-Doctrinal Exhortation to Component #1

(:20-22) — Pre-Doctrinal Exhortation to Component #2

(:23-27) — Post-Doctrinal Exhortation to Component #2

- And then, in Proverbs chapter 5 and vss. 1-6— you get a Post-Doctrinal Exhortation to the entire *instruction of judgment* (with another "*My son,*") before you once again go back to a "... *O ye children,*" in (:7).

- (Proverbs 4:1-9)

- These first 9 verses are UNIQUE! you haven't encountered anything like those first 9 verses yet! — there hasn't been a "*Hear, ye children,*" yet in the Exhortation & Expectation aspect of things. [there'll be more of them, but this is the first one]

- And in a sense—the first 9 verses are all **Evaluative**.

- They come along and, by what the Father says, He evaluates; and He provides for **the son to evaluate** whether he really is ready to go on.

- By what those first 9 verses say—the son is able to look back on his instruction of Wisdom & Justice—and he’s able to come along and say, either, Yes, it’s effectually worked within me to the point that I’m ready to go on; I can begin to handle the increased responsibility and the increased work-load that’s coming up under the *instruction of judgment*... or he’s going to have to come along and say, No, I don’t think I’m ready just yet!

- And this is essential—because you have to have the information contained in Wisdom & Justice (as well as the growth/development of the godly love) all up and running well & effectually working in your inner man—or else, you just won’t know what to do with the information you get in the *instruction of judgment*!

- It’s like in mathematics—you first have to have addition, subtraction, multiplication, & division, and up and running well before you ever get to doing algebra & quadratic equations! — (You just won’t have any capacity to handle 4 variables at once!)

- And receiving the *instruction of judgment* allows for you to handle a MULTIPLE of variables!

- And due to the nature of what’s up & coming in his education—(i.e., all of the rigors and demands that *judgment & equity* are going to take) — the son needs to make an honest self-evaluation—and the Father needs to make it along with him—to make sure that he’s ready for it!

- And that’s what the first 9 verses in Proverbs 4 are doing.

- And when it comes to: What is it that HAS to be there, in order for the son to go on? ...

- (note :4-7) — this is the ‘core issue’ ...

- Notice the verbal concept that gets repeated: (the “*get*” concept).

- And these “*get*” concepts are to underscore the son’s ATTITUDE towards his education at this point—and by kind of ‘harping’ on this (so to speak), the son is supposed to assess within himself whether he has fully profited by what he’s been taught so far.

- And by the Father saying it the way He does—with all this *get & getting* concept — it makes it so that son can come along and say: Did I “get it” or didn’t I???

- And by what (:6) says especially—the son can come along and assess: Do I love her, or don’t I??? (value & esteem her)

- And what this is, is a **marker of maturity** that’s being expected within the son at this particular time.

- And because of that, the Father doesn’t have to come along and tell the son what to think—but all He has to do is to exhort him; beseech him; and urge him—and the expectation is that (by doing that) the son can discern what is to be expected of him and what he’s supposed to be doing.

- (And that’s part of maturity and adulthood mind capacity).

- And it all boils down to the Father making the son aware of the fact that there’s something he’s supposed to be in possession of before we go on.

- And the Father is making sure that all of the sons He’s dealing with (i.e., His *children*) all [collectively] have got it before moving on.

- And the nature of this is—that you’re to be aware that NOTHING your Father has taught you is supposed to be compartmentalized — that is, none of what you’ve been taught is supposed to have been only learned to ‘pass a test’ - and then set aside! NO! You learned all that only so you could learn this next thing—and everything you’ve learned will be NEEDED in order to learn and do this next thing! (And without all that you’ve learned you WON’T learn this next thing!)

- And then the Father drives it all home (so to speak) especially in (:7) — for because of how critical this issue is, the Father comes along and cites an issue as “*the principal thing*” — and therefore, you’ve got to GET IT ... and furthermore, *with all your getting* get this other thing also—(which is the very thing He says back in :5).

- And it’s this issue of what He calls *wisdom*, and this issue of what He calls *understanding*.

- And all that’s being said here is said within a particular context!

- In the context—you've been given *the instruction of wisdom* (with all it's corresponding exhortations & expectations) — and the expectation is that, based upon the positive & proper response to all that—that you have been acquiring Wisdom; you've been making Wise decisions in the details of your life on the basis of that — and furthermore, that wisdom has produced within you this thing called *understanding*—and you can now operate confidently based upon that *understanding*.

- And by exhorting you as (:7) does, (with *wisdom* being *the principal thing*—i.e., what you MUST have before going on), you are then supposed to be able to determine if you're satisfied and convinced and confident that you've GOT IT.

- And then in (:8 & 9) there's the expectation that, based upon that, there should now be a properly increased godly zeal and enthusiasm for what's coming up, and for moving on—and you're expected to *exalt wisdom* and to *embrace her* (which are the natural fruits of that godly *love* for her as per :5) — and when that's properly done, that *wisdom & understanding* will give you a ***promotion*** and ***honour*** in connection with your sonship status. (based upon your demonstrated capacity/ability)

- And then (:9) tells you that by that proper and godly response, and by continuing to make full use of what you've learned, your benefit will be to have that wisdom give to your *head* an *ornament of grace*, and she'll *deliver* to you a *crown of glory!* (decoration)

- And that's really the end of the assessment.

- And there's supposed to be some real delight and joy and zeal for going on — and my understanding is that you're supposed to communicate that zeal and delight for getting it and for being ready to go on to your Father in your sonship prayer.

- And when that assessment has been made—then the Father begins once again addressing His son personally in (:10) as He and you actually move on to getting *the instruction of judgment*.

- So at this point—the question is, How does the son evaluate whether he's GOT IT or NOT? — How do you come along and confidently say, Father, I do have *wisdom* as the *principal thing*? I've got it, and I've gotten the *understanding* along with it. ???

- (there's something that the Father expects His son to utilize as the **CRITERION** for determining whether or not he's got the *wisdom* and got the *understanding*)
- And notice that the Father doesn't give the son any objective criterion for assessing these matters anywhere here in these 9 verses—so the most logical reason for why He doesn't do that would be because He's already given Him that criterion somewhere before you ever got to this point.
- In fact, He gave the son that criterion before the education ever began!
- And it should come as no surprise that the CRITERION is found back there in Proverbs chapter 2.
- The Father gave the son this criterion when He gave the son the ability to *perceive the words of understanding*!
 - Because He not only gave the son the ability to perceive what His words were designed to do—but He gave His son the ability to perceive **whether the words are DOING what they are designed to do!**
 - So the Father gave the son the capacity to determine whether he's actually getting the *wisdom* out of the *instruction of wisdom*—and whether he's getting the *justice* out of the *instruction of justice*.
 - And built into the curriculum is not only the teaching that gives you the information—but there's also built into it **the objective criterion for determining whether it's effectually working within you, or not!**
- (Pro. 2:1-4) - If all 3 of those commitments to getting your sonship education are met—then (:5) says, *Then shalt thou understand the fear of the LORD, and find the knowledge of God.* — and then it goes on — 6 *For the LORD giveth wisdom: out of his mouth cometh knowledge and understanding.* 7 *He layeth up sound wisdom for the righteous: he is a buckler to them that walk uprightly.* 8 *He keepeth the paths of judgment, and preserveth the way of his saints.* 9 ***Then shalt thou understand righteousness, and judgment, and equity; yea, every good path.***

- And it's that last part (especially :9) - that not only tells the son what he'll acquire knowledge-wise and sonship decision-making-wise by the education that has the wisdom and everything to it—but it also tells you that you're going to **UNDERSTAND IT!!**

- And if you “understand” something, therefore, then you understand **how it works!** ... you understand **that it DOES work!** ... and you understand **that it IS working!**

- So the truth of the matter is—if you can go back and objectively look at every Component of Wisdom to your initial instruction of godly wisdom—and every Component of Justice to your initial instruction of godly justice—and you can honestly say, I understand not only **WHAT** these things teach, but **HOW** they are effectually designed to work within me—and I understand how to make sonship decisions based upon them (based upon what [and only what] your Father taught you), **and I am doing so**—and you therefore **DO** understand *every good path* these things teach you in connection with the details of your life right now—and you're **walking** in them — **then you've got the wisdom and you've got the understanding you need!**

- And what this boils down to is—that you are honestly determining, based upon the objective criterion of knowing what the effectual working of the initial instruction of Wisdom & Justice is designed to do—you are evaluating whether it **IS** effectually working within you!

- In other words—if you are going into your business or job every day, and Romans 12:11 is **NOT** your reason for going to work for that day—then it's **NOT** effectually working within you! (3rd Component of Wisdom)

- And if you look at other members of the church the body of Christ—and you **DON'T** think of them as *members one of another* with you — then Wisdom is **NOT** effectually working within you!

- (and so forth and so on—through all 6 Components of Wisdom and all 3 Components of Justice).

- Now at this point—if you've been taking this preemptive type of Exhortation in Proverbs 4:1-9 seriously—and you've been evaluating if all of the components of wisdom & justice are effectually working

within you sufficiently enough for you to confidently say, Yes, I'm ready to go on to the *instruction of judgment*—I want to point out that it may very well be (even in the amount of time it's been since you've received that instruction up to now) - it may very well be that you can look at one or more of these Components and say, "Well, I really haven't encountered the particular situation that this Component or that Component talks about."

- And that may make it so you might come along and doubt yourself and think that you really aren't ready to go on.

- But I want you to understand that that's a NORMAL thing—because the truth is, not all of these issues come up on a daily basis; or on a weekly basis; or even on a yearly basis!

- And so in that case, the issue for you is to make an evaluation whereby you can come along and honestly say, "Ok, I clearly have the effectual working of 1, or 2, or 3, or 4 (or whatever many) of these Components to the degree that I DO have the "*understanding*" that I'm supposed to "*GET*" (as Prov. 4:5 & 7 and as Prov. 2 talks about)." — and so if that's the case, and if the issue is simply that one or more of the other Components to your Wisdom or your Justice just hasn't had a situation or circumstance present itself to you in order for you to operate upon it — then what you have to do in that case is to ask yourself, If that situation arises, DO YOU CONFIDENTLY KNOW WHAT TO DO???

- And since you've gained the EXPERIENCE of making full use of (actually DOING) what one or more (or several) of the Components set forth—(in other words, you've got the actual experience of the full effectual working of those components) — then you should be confident that you've got the effectual working of the rest, but you simply haven't had the opportunity yet to put them into practice.

- And that's a normal thing and that's a natural thing. And that shouldn't make it so you would say that you're not ready to go on.

- And so the serious, earnest evaluation of Prov. 4:1-9—(especially in :7 ... "*and with all thy getting get understanding.*") - is for you to honestly determine that you not only know what the Wisdom says; but also that you have actually made a sonship decision BY that wisdom—and then you have actually chosen or determined a course

of action—which means that you’ve ended up choosing a PATH to walk in, in connection with that Wisdom effectually working within you.

- And all that matches up perfectly with what it says back in Prov. 2:6 *the LORD giveth wisdom: out of his mouth cometh knowledge and understanding* - as well as (:9) *Then shalt thou understand righteousness, and judgment, and equity; yea, every good path.*

- And therefore, in order to have a ‘passing grade’ for this checkpoint is to not only **know** what your Father has taught you—but that you have actually made decisions based upon what he taught you in connection with the details of your life—and you’ve actually DONE the godly Thinking, the godly Conduct & Behavior, and the godly Labor ... you’ve actually DONE THE WORK ... the doctrine has actually worked~! and **worked itself out** in the details of your life!

- The evaluation you’ve got to have (and to engage in) is that you can honestly come along and say that the effectual working that’s designed to be produced in you from your instruction of wisdom & your instruction of justice **is doing its job** — and you ARE making wise sonship decisions (based upon the components of wisdom you’ve been given); you ARE making just sonship decisions (based upon the components of justice you’ve been given) - you’re comfortable making those decisions; you’re confident making those decisions—your Sonship Prayer with your Father (as you review your day with Him, and acquaint Him with all your ways) doesn’t have you hemming & hawing & halting in your communion with Him (wondering if you’ve really made a decision that’s wise), and all that kind of thing — but rather, based upon what He’s taught you, you KNOW you’ve made a wise decision, you KNOW you’ve made a just decision!

- And this is critical here—because the truth of the matter is, these decisions are easy & comfortable by far and by comparison to Judgmental & Equitable decisions—and if you can’t confidently make decisions when it’s easy & comfortable, you’re never going to be able to make decisions to the pleasure of your Father when you’re in an environment that’s NOT easy or comfortable to make decisions!

- And when that evaluation/assessment is over—and when you can honestly say that the doctrine is working—then that should give you (and it’s designed to produce within you) a **DESIRE** to **go on**—it should produce within you the confidence and the joy and the zeal for the wisdom you’ve got working within you so that you can come along and LOVE her; and EMBRACE her (& gain the benefits described in :8&9)— and you’re then in a position to “take it to another level” (so to speak) - [i.e., go on and get the *instruction of judgment & equity*.]

- So—we’ve reached the point where we’re finished with all the Wisdom & Justice—we’ve reached the end of the review—we’ve reached the end of the Sonship Checkpoint—we’ve reached the end of the assessment & the evaluation—and we’re at the point in which you should now be able to confidently say that you’re ready to go on. ... so are you?

- Well then, that takes us to looking briefly at the Pre-Doctrinal Exhortation to receiving the instruction of Judgment in Proverbs 4:10-13.

- (read Pro. 4:10-13)

- Now I want to return to something that we’ve mentioned before—and that is the issue of the URGENCY that there is to the Father’s exhortations here in Proverbs chapter 4.

- And we noted that sense of urgency in the TONE that the Father takes up in (:1-9) - but this issue gets focused upon here in (:10-13) as well.

- (note it especially there in :12—*When thou goest, thy steps shall not be straitened* [or bound; or narrowed; or cramped; or distressed, confined, perplexed—which points up the issue that a *straitening* can, indeed, occur—such as becoming “*straitened in your bowels*” as per II Cor. 6:12] **and when thou RUNNEST, thou shalt not stumble.** (you’re going to “run” now!)

- And even in (:13) you have *Take FAST hold of instruction*; (you’ve got that word “*fast*” used there as well)

- And really, this “running” issue is at the core of the Exhortation—and a sense of urgency has now entered into the picture.

- And there’s a natural aspect of that, especially in connection with the fact that this is being set forth in connection with God’s program with Israel.

- (And for the Members of the Remnant of Israel—**urgency** IS a big thing!) — [because the ‘Time Schedule’ is going to be clicking in] — and they do have ‘time constraints’ that are of a constraining nature in that 5th & final Installment — and therefore ‘urgency’ becomes a natural thing).

- But there’s also an ‘urgency’ factor (although, not of the exact same type) - but still an ‘urgency’ factor in connection with **us** in this dispensation of grace.

- And because of it, this is just a natural part of sonship education ... even in natural sonship education.

- Because there is a point at which the father, as he begins dealing with his son — and the education is well underway — that there’s so much that the father has that he needs to get his son involved in—and there’s aspects of his business that are coming up that he needs to be able to have his son prepared for & fully ready to be able to engage in — that he PRESSES his son to make sure that his son realizes that he CAN’T DAWDLE—he CAN’T WASTE TIME!

- And the son needs to realize and recognize that “**time is of the essence**” !

- And this TIME/TIMING issue **is** a factor now—and it’s all a part of the increased capacity that you now have as a son/daughter.

- And in this Pre-Doctrinal Exhortation—our Heavenly Father wants us to know/perceive that the ‘ante has been upped’ (so to speak) - meaning that with this increased capacity comes increased responsibility—and when the Father increases your responsibility, that means that your work-load is going to be increased—and with an increase in work-load comes the necessity to have to spend far more time (and spend it wisely) ... upon the aims, goals, and objectives of the Father’s business!

- And the Father’s expectation is that the son is going to ‘quicken his pace’ (so to speak) — and that the son now has the capacity to get more involved in the Father’s business operations!

- Again, (:12) says, *When thou goest, thy steps shall not be straitened; and when thou RUNNEST, thou shalt not stumble.* (Well, the son hasn’t “run” yet—but the expectation is that he’s going to now “run”)

- (this is the 1st time the issue of “running” comes up in the Fatherly Exhortations & Expectations!)

- And the son is now expected to “**run**” because he’s got the capacity to “run” now — he’s always been going (or walking) - but now he’s got the capacity to ‘quicken his pace’ - he’s got the capacity to actually “run”!

- And in our epistles of the apostle Paul, you have examples of that—especially when you contrast the way in which the Corinthians were moving along (badly—their sonship education had actually been brought to a halt) - [or the Galatians (*Ye did **run well**; who did hinder you that ye should not obey the truth? Gal. 5:7*)] — vs. — the way in which the Thessalonians were moving along.

- The Thessalonians were ones who “ran” — everything seemed to go well with them — and they RAPIDLY moved through material & RAPIDLY moved through the curriculum.

- And when you’ve got saints that respond like that, then that kind of speed occurs.

- But the truth of the matter is—THAT’S A DECISION THAT THE SON MAKES!!!

- He gets Exhorted to it by the Father—but he RESPONDS to it by his sonship decisions!

- And when a son responds to it well—and when he (at the exact same time) takes to heart all of the alerts and admonitions and warnings that the Father gives him concerning the Oppositions from the world; from sin in the son’s members; and from the Policy of Evil that are going to do everything they can to **slow down** that “running” (if not bring it to a **halt**) — if a son takes all those things to heart & responds Positively & Properly to them all—then he’s able to keep on running!

- And he’s able to go right through the rest of Level I Sonship Education (not that he does it in just a few weeks) - but he’s able to make rapid progress—and to ultimately get himself where he’s capable & ready to move into Level II.

- But this ‘urgency factor’ comes into play now—with taking on increased capacity & increased responsibility!

- And by having reached a level of attainment with the first 2 Major Sonship Decision-Making Skills (the Wisdom and the Justice) - you should now have a godly-generated **desire** and **zeal** and **enthusiasm** for now taking on even more capacity; and more responsibility; and more WORK— (especially of this **independent** variety that's even more indicative of adulthood sonship [functional, sanctified living]!

- And the *instruction of judgment* (and the *instruction of equity* that follows it) - both have an increased amount of responsibility to them; an increased amount of involvement in connection with thinking and discerning and perceiving and making discretionary judgments.

- Everything about sonship living has now been 'up'ed' or increased at this point.

- And the need for this Pre-Doctrinal Exhortation is that the son has to be made aware of the demands and the rigors that the remaining of his Level I Sonship Education is going to make on him—and he has to be made aware of the need for him to have all things running well at this point in order for the remainder of his Level I Sonship Education to WORK! (again, otherwise, you just won't know what to do with what you're told in the *instruction of judgment* and the *instruction of equity*—it's effectual working in your inner man will simply be **impossible!**)

- Now along with this **godly** 'urgency factor' that has now come into play— (that is, that TIME is going to be of the essence; and to make good use of your time—to spend your time wisely and in wise pursuits) — one other thing needs to be brought into the picture by way of an Exhortation just prior to receiving the instruction of judgment — and that is the issue of your **CONFIDENCE** ... confidence in the adult sonship decisions you're going to make as you begin to function independently from your Father just outright telling you what to do.

- One of the major aspects of the Fatherly Exhortations and Expectations made to the son before the instruction of judgment gets underway—is to make you aware of the nature of (or the kind of) decision-making that you're now going to have to do—and because the issue is now one of ***judgment***—where there are no specific things that identify a path for you to walk; where there are no specific things that identify a way for you to be able to come along and say

... “THIS is going to further my objectives when it comes to making progress in my Sonship Education and Laboring together with my Father in His business!”

- Well, all that has a way of breeding a LACK of confidence — especially BEFORE the education gets underway—when all you’re doing is coming to the realization that the nature of the kind of decision-making you’re now called upon to do is of an INDEPENDENT variety—of having to figure out a whole bunch of things all on your own (without your Father telling you what to do or what path to take) — well, all of that can make you downright fearful—where, at first you might feel as though you DON’T have the CONFIDENCE to do what judgment-type decisions demand!

- But the Father knows that—and so He provides for a ‘quelling’ (so to speak) of any anxiety that might be rising up in you when you first think about independent decision-making.

- And one of the ways the Father ‘quells’ that anxiety is to do the kind of review we’ve done—and to ensure that all that the Father has taught you is up and effectually working and running well within your inner man!

- And basically, the Father comes along and says, Ok, son, do you have all that I’ve taught you so far up & running well? ... (and you say, Yes, Father, I do) ... then the Father says, Alright, that’s all you need—you may not think it is, but trust Me, with all that I’ve taught you, there will be no doubt that you’ll make these judgmental decisions exactly like I would!

- And one of the things you have to recognize about your own ability and capacity now that you’ve received initial wisdom, justice ... and a 3rd capacity that came out of that: (wisdom & justice work together to produce *discretion*) ...is that now *judgment* is going to be added to that—and it’s much like a chemical reaction takes place in which all those ‘elements’ (when put together) are going to produce another capacity—which is the capacity for making *judgmental* decisions!

- Example: in chemistry, you dealt with something called a “**catalyst**” = a substance that gets added to a reaction—and it entered into the reaction—and works to increase the rate of the chemical reaction.

- (Now, there are a lot of other issues about a catalyst—some of which don't really apply, and where the illustration kind of breaks down—but in general, it is a good illustration.)

- The “catalyst” concept is a good one to think about—because when the *judgment* gets added to the *wisdom* and the *justice* (with the *discretion* that they've produced) — in a sense, the *judgment* is going to act like a ‘catalyst’ - and just like a chemical catalyst does, it's going to facilitate and provide for the previous chemicals or compounds to do something that they could not do before—(even though they were in a reaction already; and even though they were mixed together; and even though certain things **were** going on).

- But as soon as the ‘catalyst’ is added—then all those elements can do **far more** than they could do without that ‘catalyst’!

- And just to carry out the illustration a little further—oftentimes the catalyst is inert (unable to act) in and of itself unless it's added to a mixture to produce a furtherance in the reaction that's going on (or to produce a further capacity in the reaction that's going on).

- Point is—the catalyst (by itself) doesn't have much of anything that you can do with it.

- And in a sense—that's what we have going on here as you get the *instruction of judgment* underway in Romans 13:8ff.

8 *Owe no man any thing, but to love one another:*

- Well, before you can have any hope of that effectually working within you to ANY degree (1% or 5% or whatever) — you **obviously** have to have LOVE **already** in effect!

- Because you're not being told there to “start loving” - no - you're being told to do something in connection with “love” that ALREADY exists!

- And the issue here is—godly love has already been brought into existence by the effectual working of Romans 12:3ff—and now that the core Major Features of godly love have been brought into existence—the issue now is that some information ABOUT it; and a CHARGE in connection with it is going to be added to the mix!

- And by the effectual working of the nature *about* “love” - and the CHARGE that goes along with it—it’s going to enable the godly love & charity that’s already generated within us and is already working within us and is already being expressed by us and is already governing our Conduct & Behavior & our Laboring together with God in all the ways it’s been working all along — the CHARGE and the information contained in *judgment* is going to function like a ‘catalyst’ - and it’s going to do 2 Things!

- It’s going to ‘kick’ everything now into a higher gear (which is where the *running* come into play) - [and the ‘urgency factor’ come into play & where a heightening of everything now begins to happen].

- But it’s also going to give a greater *judgmental capacity* in connection with godly love & charity—which, **without** what is said in Romans 13:8-14, then our godly love & charity would be stalled & stuck where it is right now (at the end of Romans 13:7)!

- And therefore you couldn’t go on in to Romans chapter 14 & 15 and get the final 2 features of godly love & charity effectually working within you!

- And my point in all this is—that if you properly understand and appreciate HOW the *instruction of judgment* is designed to work **with all that has preceded it**—then you should have all the fear or the anxiety or dread of having to make independent type judgmental decisions relieved, dissipated, and dismissed from your thinking!

- In other words—you should anticipate that you’re going to have some real and powerful CONFIDENCE in making judgmental sonship decisions!

- And in the Fatherly Exhortations & Expectations—the Father kind of ‘prompts’ your thinking in connection with the kind of **confident** decision-making you’re going to have the capacity to engage in ...

(Proverbs 4)

11 I **have** taught thee in the way of wisdom (that’s done);
I **have** led thee in right paths (there’s the Justice—how to choose ‘right’ or righteous paths) — and all that is said in the PAST TENSE!

- Then, in (:12), the Father shifts gears from talking in the Past Tense (and what *has* been accomplished) - to talking in the FUTURE TENSE (and what *will* be taking place when the *instruction of judgment* gets put into effect).

- (And note the confidence that the Father inspires in His son in verse 12)!

12 When thou goest, thy steps shall not be straitened; and when thou runnest, thou shalt not stumble.

- And that's the AWARENESS that you are given concerning the effectual working of the *judgment* that's going to be added to all that you've learned so far.

- And previous to this—(just as it says in :11), the Father has “*led*” you in *right paths*—(which, by the way corresponds to what David said in the 139th Psalm) — but when the Father shifts to what He says in (:12), He indicates that **He is NOT going to be ‘leading’ you any longer!** (and in a sense, you don't have that ‘leading’ of the Father concept from this point on)! [though you do, and always will have the “leading of the Spirit”!]

- But this is where that ‘independent’ decision making comes into play—(not that the Father goes away) — but you are expected to be able to CONFIDENTLY choose and discern your own ‘right paths.’

- And this gets reinforced down in (:25-26) — YOU are going to have to ‘establish all your ways’ - the Father isn't going to tell you where to go! (You're going to have to *ponder the path of your feet*).

- Now what all this alerts you to is—that the nature of the information that's contained in the *instruction of judgment* is NOT going to be of an ‘identifiable’ nature—it's not going to say, “In this situation, this is the path; in this other situation, that's the path.” (as He did in the *wisdom* and the *justice*).

- But at the exact same time, you're to be prompted to and alerted to the fact that you WILL have the capacity to do that—and you're to have the CONFIDENCE that you will have the capacity to do that!

- And the reason for that confidence is because for one, you've got what's needed prior to getting the *instruction of judgment*—and for another, you're going to receive some *sayings* from your Father that are going to make it so that you have the capacity to **KNOW** with all **assurance** and with all **confidence** “every good path” (Pro. 2:9)!

- And if everything effectually works well within you—then you will confidently be able to determine a “good” path (which is all you may need to do at times) - or even to determine a “good,” or “better” or “best” path.

- And though you already have some measure of *discretion* ... that *discretion* is going to get even more powerful as you go on—and that is going to allow for you to make some real discretionary type **JUDGMENTS**.

- And the truth is—to make some discretionary decisions **takes some BOLDNESS; and it takes some CONFIDENCE; and it takes some CONVICTION!**

- And those are things that you are going to actually express to your Father in your communion & fellowship with Him in some intelligent Sonship Prayer.

- By the way—this independent type sonship decision-making skill not only makes it so that the Father kind of stays behind and allows the son to walk & run ahead of Him—and not only will YOU do the job of ‘establishing all your ways’ — but just as it says in Prov. 4:18 ... *the path of the just is as the shining light, that shineth more and more unto the perfect day* ... eventually, you're going to acquire the capacity to **enlighten your own path!**

- And with the instruction you've already got—and with the instruction you're going to be given—it's kind of like you've got a Miner's hat on (so to speak) that has that light that shines wherever you're looking!

- Well, hopefully, just by talking about the nature of *judgment* and what that instruction is going to be like—you get the sense of not only how you're going to be making *judgmental* sonship decisions—but you're **not daunted** by that or fearful of that—because you really do realize that you really do (and will) have the capacity to do just that! with some real, **godly boldness and confidence!**

- And if you understand and appreciate all that—(viz., how critical the instruction of judgment that you're about to receive is; and how it's designed to work together [as that 'catalyst'] with all the previous instruction of Wisdom & Justice)—to make it so you can (with confidence) make these independent type judgmental decisions—then that final statement to your Pre-Doctrinal Exhortation in Proverbs 4:13 makes a lot of sense ...

13 Take fast hold of instruction; let her not go: keep her; for she is thy life.

- And you should be deeply & suitably IMPRESSED with the GETTING of the *instruction of judgment*, just as you were with GETTING the *wisdom* and the *justice!*

- And so in your curriculum for sonship education—you're eventually supposed to come to a body of information that's described as *the instruction of judgment*.

- And what it's going to do is to function in a 'catalytic' type manner with the Wisdom and the Justice that has been learned—and it's going to amplify the capacity that already exists—and it's going to take the godly Love & Charity that has already been brought into existence—and it's going to bring it all to a new level—and then it's going to provide for you to realize that ...

... you've got all the information you need right now to be able to make every sonship decision that you'll be called upon to make for the rest of your Level I sonship life (and even on in to your Level II sonship life).

- And even though you're exhorted by the Father about these things even *before* the *instruction of judgment* gets underway (and rightly so) - and even though I can tell you that you will have the capacity to make judgmental, independent-type sonship decisions with full confidence (and boldness & conviction) by means of the acquired capacity you have attained right now—the truth is, your **awareness** of that **won't** take place until the *instruction of judgment* gets underway ... when you make that first "step" all on your own, and when you begin "running" all on your own.

- In other words—even though you fully BELIEVE what your Father tells you in the Exhortation (to counter any apprehension you may have)—your confidence level goes

up tremendously when you actually EXPERIENCE taking *steps* all on your own; and you experience your *steps* NOT being *straitened*—and when you EXPERIENCE *running*; and not *stumbling*!

- And Proverbs 4:12 is the Father telling His son (and making His son **aware**) that he's now got the **capacity** to go from Him and take his own *steps* and even *run*, and *run* well.

- But at first, the Father knows that you don't have any experience of that yet—and He knows that you're liable to think that when the path is NOT obvious before you (and the Father is not out in front leading you—the Father [more or less] says to you, "I've brought you to this point to start making decisions on your own—I'm going to stay here; you go on ahead.") — the Father knows that, at first, you're liable to think that you might just follow a path into a 'dead end' ... or follow a path that keeps on getting narrower & narrower until you can't go on any further.

- Or when you *run*—there's a natural apprehension that you may not be able to see everything on your path very well; and that you're going to *stumble* on something and fall down.

- But the son needs to (and you need to) realize that the ILLUMINATING CAPACITY—the LIGHT CAPACITY that this information is going to give is something that you just have to **experience** to really get the full-blown confidence and boldness you **want** to have and you **need** to have.

- And it's very similar to what we had when we came to Romans 8:16-39 ("to *perceive the words of understanding*" — when you had to come to the point where you had full confidence in the Father, and in the Curriculum He put in your hands [to do the job He told you it can do]) — well, the son now needs to perceive the full, effectual working of what this *instruction of judgment* is designed to do—and he needs to have the **confidence** that it will DO what it says it's designed to DO!

- It **will** provide the LIGHT—and it **will** provide the capacity to choose a path that DOESN'T have a 'dead end' to it! ... that DOESN'T have a *straitening* to it!

- Now let's come back to Romans 13:8-14 and notice one other issue.

- Now with all of the background type work we've done—and with a better appreciation for the **nature of the instruction** that goes on with the *instruction of judgment*—it should come as no surprise to find out that the nature of the information contained in our *instruction of judgment* is going to be a little bit different than the previous information—and you're expected to handle it a bit different than the previous information.

- And oftentimes the reason why the information contained in Romans 13:8-14 is NOT handled very well (and is often MIS-handled) is for one thing:

- not rightly dividing God's word and properly handling it in its dispensational setting—it's often taught that Paul is saying that we are to keep the 10 Commandments ...

- for another thing—the whole issue of sonship education (and the sense & sequence of Romans through Philemon being set forth as our Curriculum for godly edification today) isn't understood or appreciated ... and neither, therefore is there any appreciation for what Paul is doing with the information from Romans 12:3ff (i.e., giving us the instruction of wisdom, justice, judgment and equity—the 4 basic sonship decision-making skills)

- but the very fact that the *instruction of judgment* has a different **nature** to it, makes how this information is given and how it is handled to be a critical issue as to properly handling it or mishandling it.

- And what I'm after here is—the nature of the *instruction of judgment* (because it IS judgment) — has 'principle-izing' capacity to it!

- It has the capacity to produce within our minds "**principles**" — that, because they are "principles" — which, based upon the root element of that word (the word "Prince" = an upright, upstanding and outstanding Ruler to whom you look to for guidance) ...

... and the *instruction of judgment* is providing "principles" that we are to install in our understanding as '**Points for Guidance**' - and for evaluating potential paths —

... and for taking the previous instruction of *wisdom & justice* (and the *discretion* that it produces) - and it provides for us to incorporate all that information, and utilize it **in a more powerful way than we've ever utilized it before!**

- Because that's what's going on in the *instruction of judgment*—that's what the 'nature' of the *instruction of judgment* is all about!

- And that's the reason why these verses generally don't get taught properly and are so often mishandled.

- For example—you end up saying that (:8-10) is teaching us that if everything we do is done out of love, then it's well-pleasing to God — (and that's not a lie, that's true!) — but that's NOT all those verses say!!! (And all their details are not simply designed to come to THAT conclusion!)

- In fact, if that's the case, then God's using a awful lot of words that He really doesn't have to use, just to say that!

- And then when you get to the issue of Time in (:11-14) — there's more there than just the issue of “making good use of time” (which **is** there, and **is** true) — but you've got some information there ABOUT time, that allows you to make *judgments* as to what constitutes “good use of time”!

- But my point is that by understanding the nature of that information in Romans 13:8-14—it allows for you to approach it properly; handle it properly; and to perceive some things about it that you wouldn't perceive about it if you didn't know what it was designed to do.

- Romans 13:8-14—The Instruction of Judgment.

- Now, before we deal with the details of Romans 13:8-14 and the *instruction of judgment*—there is one final thing that we need to do—in connection with the growth & development of godly Love & Charity (which is going to be one of the biggest factors in making godly, wise, sonship *judgments* that are well-pleasing to God).

- As we have it developed within us at the present time—we have come to understand that there are at least 4 Major Features of godly love that have come into existence by the time you get to Rom. 13:8.

- Godly love first got generated within us in the 1st Component of *wisdom*—(in Romans 12:3, specifically) - and that was the issue of: Godly love is **SELFLESS**.

- And then, because if it's left there, the selflessness would constitute godly love being “**with** dissimulation” - and so we were exhorted in Romans 12:9 *Let love be without dissimulation*. — we quickly added to the 1st Major Feature of Godly Love, the characteristic that Godly love is **KIND**. (Which got produced by the rest of [:9], *Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good.*) [**lovingkindness**]

- Then—by making use of Selfless Lovingkindness in the 3rd & 4th Components of *wisdom*, that generated all on its own a 3rd Major Feature of Godly Love that was to go into action in the 5th Component of *wisdom* in Romans 12:13-15 — which was the characteristic that Godly love is **TENDERHEARTED**.

- And then by means of the effectual working of the 1st & 2nd Components of the *instruction of justice*, a 4th Major Feature of Godly Love came into existence—which was the characteristic that Godly Love is **MEEK** (meekness).

- Now, my understanding is that there is another 5th Major Feature of Godly Love that has also been brought into existence—and it was brought into existence in the *instruction of justice* as well.

- And it may be fairly said that the godly Meekness was brought into existence by the 1st Component of justice in Romans 12:17-18; and by the 2nd Component of justice in Romans 12:19-21.

- But there is another Major Feature of Godly Love that begins to get generated within you by the time you get to the end of the 2nd Component of justice—and then gets fully generated by the time you get to the end of the 3rd & final Component of justice in Romans 13:1-7.

- And it's especially there in Rom. 13:1-7 that I want to go back to in order to make sure that we've got this 5th Major Feature of Godly Love understood and appreciated—and in then end, recognized as up and running well within you.

- THE 5TH MAJOR FEATURE OF GODLY LOVE & CHARITY:

- The *instruction of judgment*—Rom. 13:8-14 (7 verses).

- There are 2 Components to it: (:8-10) & (:11-14)

- We are prompted to understand & appreciate that there are not 4, but 5 Major Features to godly love — (Rom. 13:8-10 [:9]) — God has the apostle Paul list 5 of the 10 Commandments.

- Which 5 are they? — (Why 5? why not 3 or 4? or why not all 10? — and why are they in this order?)

- Note the order — see Exo. 20:13-17 vs. Rom. 13:9

The Holy Spirit reverses the order of the first 2—(or the 6th & 7th Commandment) — why? — because He wants to correspond these 5 commandments to the growth & development of godly love.

- And each one of these Commandments is actually the **diametric opposite** or **antithesis** of a feature of godly love (in the very order the Features of godly love have been generated within you as you have gone through your sonship education so far).

- Now when you read the last verse of Romans 12 (:21) and when you read about our 3rd Component of *justice* in Rom. 13:1-7 — and when you especially read (:3 & :4) of Rom. 13 — what do you think this 5th Major Feature of Godly Love is?

- It's the issue of GOODNESS — **God's love promotes goodness!**

- But since **goodness** is a broad term—we're going to have to define it or describe it or label it with a little more precision than that.

- And by a little closer examination of what is said about a government (or one of those "*powers that be*"), we will be able to understand and appreciate (as well as describe or put another term together with **goodness** that will set it in a proper context that better describes this 5th Major Feature of Godly Love).

- And as we shall see—that term that will go with the issue of **goodness**—that better describes it, and that gives it a particular context—(and that, even though it will still be very broad and general—will, nevertheless, give it more precision in our thinking) ... is the term **BENEVOLENT**.

BENEVOLENT GOODNESS.

- “**Benevolence**” = (from *bene* = well, + *volo* = to will or wish) = a disposition to do good; desire to promote the happiness of others; generosity; a general state or disposition towards mankind at large.

- Websters 1828— “The *benevolence* of God is one of his moral attributes; that attribute which delights in the happiness of intelligent beings. “God is love.” (I John 4:8)”

- Truth is, this issue of ‘sonship goodness’ has been brought up 2 times since we began our sonship education—

- 1) Wisdom-Component 2—Rom. 12:9;
- 2) Wisdom-Component 6—Rom. 12:21.

- Now when we look with a little more perception as to what roll human government has (and that God has made it to be, regardless of what kind it is, or even what quality it is) - we will be able to make some connections with this issue of Benevolent Goodness being a Major Feature of God’s own Love, and a Major Feature of Godly Love & Charity that we are supposed to have operating within us as sons in connection with our *instruction of judgment*.

- Notice Romans 13:3 — (read)

- The first time we went through this we noted some specific things about that term “*good*” that comes up twice in (:3).

... *For rulers are not a terror to **good** works, but to the evil.* — and we noted there that the *good works* is the issue of ... (what?)

- *good works* = works of **peace; quietness; orderliness!**
(In other words, they are the exact **opposite** of works of *violence!*)

- The Godly Conduct and the Godly Behavior that is to be the **mark** of a properly educated “son of God” in terms of **Justice** in connection with the *powers that be* (the gov. under which he/she lives) - he’s to Conduct & Behave himself in ORDERLINESS, and living a “*quiet and peaceable life!*”

- And that’s a needful thing here in this earth; and it’s a needful thing out in the *creature* as well! (That’s part of what it means when God said, *For the creature was made subject to VANITY, ...*)

- *Rulers* (of **any** government at **any time**) are **NOT** a *terror* to works of peace/quietness/orderliness — and that’s a CONSTANT—that’s the way it’s always been since the Flood; that’s the way it is now; and that’s the way it will always be!

- You won’t incur the WRATH of the government for living a quite & peaceable life! (That’s what the gov. wants—even the biggest Dictator or Tyrant desires the people he governs to be peaceful and quiet and orderly).

- Some do this better than others—some worse—but they all do this to a sufficient degree! (sufficient for God’s purposes)

- So then—your Godly Sonship Conduct & Behavior where Justice is concerned in regards to your relationship to your Governmental *Power* is to do those **good works** (to live a life of orderliness, quietness, and peace). That’s the mark of Godly Justice that characterizes a son’s Godly Living in connection with his government!

- Then we had that term *good* come up again in (:3) ... *do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same:* — and we noted that the “*good*” here is talking about living a quiet, orderly, & peaceable life, too.

- Finally, in (:4), we have 3rd & final time the word “*good*” comes up in the 3rd Component of Justice — “*For he is the minister of God to thee for good.*”

- And what did we say that this *minister of God* (the ruler of government) was doing? ... What is the “*good*” that this governmental ruler is “*ministering*”?

- The *good* is NOT talking about a ruler *ministering* for God so as to keep sin in check and promote God's righteousness in the land where he governs!

- The *good* = the core, seminal issue of what his office is there for in the first place—to keep the violence of man under control so that God can continue carrying out His business in the long-term!

- The *good* is the issue of 'keeping the peace' - of keeping an orderly, quiet, peaceable empire, nation, state, city, or community! (He keeps man's violence in check!)

- Now what we need to better perceive with a little more accuracy here—is that there really isn't just **one** ministry of 'good' that God has designed all governments to be engaged in—but there are **two** ministries that they are engaged with.

- And in better perceiving this second one, we're going to add to our understanding of government being 'not a terror to good works [living a quiet & peaceable life], but to the evil [keeping man's violence in check]' ... we're going to add to that the issue of BENEVOLENCE.

- And you have the 1st ministry being mentioned there in (:3) - but then in (:4), you not only have the issue of keeping man's violence in check, but more specifically, when Paul says, *For he is a minister of God **TO THEE** for good*—my understanding is that there is more to it than just the issue of keeping man's violence in check, but we receive a further benefit from government (any government).

- Because this is a ministry specifically TO YOU, (singular), individually (for *good*)!

- And to get this—you have to go back (once again) to what is said up in (:1) ... *For there is no power (sing.) but of God.*

- And if you go back to when God originally gave that power to man (to Adam) on this earth (before sin was ever an issue in man or in the earth) - God gave Adam governmental power to subdue the earth and to have dominion over it.

- And our understanding is that when God gave Adam governmental or ruling power (with sin **not** being an issue in either him or in the earth) - that power was consistent with the very reason God established governmental power in the first place—in the heavenly realm of His creation, even before sin ever entered the picture there—and why was that?

- It was that God designed and intended that the methodology by which He would accomplish all His business [in heaven and in earth] would be by a set of CONTROLS (or “power” - governmental power).

- And what we need to think about a little more precisely is, that governmental power can (and does have) a *ministry* to you, individually, for “*good*” - both when sin and violence is an issue—and even when sin and violence is NOT an issue!

- And what we need to understand and appreciate is that resident in government—even in human government today—is something that is reflective of and consistent with the characteristic of God’s own LOVE!

- Granted, (just as it is with the issue of justice and keeping the violence of man in check) - **it isn’t perfect, it isn’t fully developed; it isn’t completely and accurately displayed in all it’s glory—but it IS resident there!**

- And it not only can be said of any governmental ruler today—but it could also be just as truly said of Adam himself that: *he is (was) the minister of God to thee for good.*

- And in Adam’s case—he was a *minister for good* (for the brief time sin was not in existence in the earth) to the animals, and to the woman.

- When God gave Adam this “power” to subdue and to have dominion — there wasn’t any ‘rebellion’ among the animal world (no sin).

- There were no other men—but there wasn’t any discord among the animals at all.

- And so Adam sets out to begin accomplishing God’s first order of business—he names the animals) - and then, because God is going to increase Adam’s work-load, he therefore needed an *help meet*.

- Now you have to think a little bit more carefully about just what Adam was going to do in order to go out and subdue the earth and have dominion over it (especially when sin wasn't an issue in either him or in the earth).

- And if it helps—you can just think about what the Bible talks about (in the book of the Revelation and other places) when our dispensation of grace is over and when God's program with Israel is over—and when all things have been reconciled back to God—and when Satan, sin, the plan & policy of evil are no longer an issue—and think about how that government & power of God will pick up with what He was doing in Genesis chapters 1 & 2 — and that the way in which that power (governmental, controlling power) works in God's everlasting kingdom and, therefore, functions in the way in which He created & intended it to work back with Adam.

- And when we do that—we can see some things that transpire, that then we can come along and say, Well, this is the way He wanted His business with His creation to work ... so back when God was dealing with Adam (before sin entered the picture), this is how He envisioned it working—this is what He wanted Adam to do.

- And it basically comes down to this:

God gave Adam “power” (and there weren't other men yet, so it wasn't power over men) **to organize creation SO THAT IT COULD RECEIVE THE “GOODNESS” OF GOD.**

- And this very thing gets accomplished when God fulfills His program with Israel, and when He establishes His kingdom upon the earth—both Israel and all the nations of the earth are going to receive the “goodness” of God—and, in fact, the earth itself and the heavenly places will finally be in a position to begin receiving the “goodness” of God!

- So Adam was going to go out—and speak with the animals about the “goodness” of God and what God had in store for them—(which was the issue that God was going to come to this earth and dwell on the earth with them and live among them) ... and the animals could speak back to Adam about all that—and they could converse about getting the first order of God's business accomplished on the earth!

... what???? animals talk????

- Notice that in Genesis 3:1—*Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of the tree of the garden?*

2 And the woman passed out! NO! ... she wasn't surprised at all ... she, in fact, carried on a conversation with the serpent as though this kind of thing went on all the time!

- In fact, the issue of the serpent being more *subtil* — subtility is something that you're only going to know exists (by and large) because you hear it (or because it's communicated to you)!

- And at least some of the animals had the ability to communicate (to speak) - some were probably smarter than others—some were more crafty than others—but the fact that the serpent was talking didn't make the woman run screaming back to Adam!

- The point is—obviously the animals were not placed on earth as mere decorations or as pets—(and they certainly were not placed on the earth for food ... at least in the beginning) — and they weren't put on the earth to maintain a delicate eco-system (like we hear about today—because they didn't eat each other as a 'food chain' until sin entered the world).

- The animals were placed on the earth with the ability to be **useful** to God and to Adam—to be communicated with and to—and Adam was given “power” (controlling power), not just arbitrarily (or just because God had the right to govern, and therefore He gave it to Adam) —

— rather, man was given “power” to provide for creation to be organized to receive the goodness of God—and therefore for the Benevolent Goodness of God to be bestowed upon it!

- And though you can talk about God's singular 'power' as a set of controls over His creation (and that's good, proper & right to do so) — but ultimately, **GOD IS FULL OF GOODNESS**—and **the mechanism for Him bestowing that goodness on His creation, is through the establishment of His government!**

- And that will ultimately happen in the heavenly places, too — (His goodness will be bestowed upon His creatures there).

- So the original goal of God creating this singular controlling “power” of government—and doing so before there was any sin or any ungodliness or wickedness that had to be ‘checked’ with justice and a judicial system—was to give God’s “son” (so to speak), Adam, (the pinnacle of God’s creation—created with the capacity for god-like-ness “godliness”) that controlling, governing “power” to go out and organize creation so that it could then receive God’s benevolent goodness when He comes to dwell among it.

- By the way—that was supposed to happen in very short order!

- Adam had a week to accomplish that—and on that 2nd Sabbath after the 1st, God was to come down to the earth, and bring His City with Him, erect it on the “beams” He laid for it, and establish His kingdom (His government; His governing, controlling power) upon it—then earth and the creatures in it would receive His benevolent goodness there in Eden, and then it would spread out over the whole earth from there.

- And all of the preparations for that event was to be done by one man and one woman and the animals in one week’s time!

- In connection with the benevolent goodness of God, (especially in connection with the Remnant of Israel when the kingdom gets established and they [and the whole earth begin receiving the Blessings from the Blessing mandate of the Davidic Covenant) ... see Psalm 107 (the 1st Psalm of the 5th Book)

(read : 1-9) - (:1), (:8), (:9)

- then look at (:15), (:21), (:31)

- But before Adam and the woman and the animals could get God’s first order of business underway—that “*serpent*” (Satan, the Adversary himself) struck—sin then entered the world as well as man himself, and violence came into existence on the earth, so much so that the violence of man threatened his very existence on the earth—and as we noted before; at the Flood, God fractures the “power” into “powers” - and now that “power” is going to rest, not in a single man, but in governments on the earth—and now that “power” is going to have not one, but two major functions!

- The fractured “power” still remains as a set of Controls that God has put upon His creation—and it still retains its original major function —(to be the methodology by which God is going to carry out all His business).

- And its First Major Function as it was given to Adam on the earth was to organize creation so that it can receive the GOODNESS of God.

- But now it’s going to have a Second Major Function—which is to keep man’s violence in check in order for God to still be successful in carrying out His business over the long term of human history!

- And my understanding is that, even as that fractured “power” ... even in all those “*powers that be*” (all of the forms and kinds and qualities of human governments that exist all over the world today) ... for well over 4,000 years since the Flood ... up to and including right now ... every government (some to a greater degree, some to a lesser degree), but every government in existence still retains these 2 major functions:

... (and they do so because they contain that **ordinance of God**) ... and we should now appreciate the fact that the *ordinance of God* is made up of these 2 very basic functions:

1) God established every governmental power as a means of maintaining order, and to ultimately keep man’s ability to be violent under control for the long-term success of God’s business.

- And now we can add to that—corresponding with that statement in Rom. 13:4 *For he is the minister of God to thee for good.* — we can add to that, this other basic function of *the powers that be* ...

2) God established every governmental power as a means of maintaining order (providing order to God’s creation), out of which BENEVEOLENT GOODNESS flows to those under it.

- Notice that, this “goodness” issue that was in existence *before* the Flood (all the way back with Adam) **wasn’t totally erased** *after* the Flood!

- And as we will see—God’s benevolent goodness flowing to all parts of this earth—and therefore God’s creation receiving the goodness of God—is going to ultimately get accomplished by **GOVERNMENT!**

- First, by the government of the Messiah of Israel (the Lord Jesus Christ in His kingdom on this earth) ... and then to the nations—where government by government, the nations provide for God’s **goodness** to spread over the whole earth!

For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.

Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this. (Isaiah 9:6-7)

- And if you think about it—with this additional function of human government (being the means by which **goodness** flows to those under it) ... that should just make it all the more a JOY to pay your taxes and live a quiet & peaceable life! (and to REJECT the often-time Christian UNGODLINESS of refusing to pay taxes and to gripe, complain, and moan about how bad government is!)

- Human government has a function to dispense **goodness** to its citizenry! (Just as much as it has a function to check the violence of its citizenry!)

- And government, the world over, still functions as a central *power* that dispenses **goodness** to those who live under it!

- And we have terms and phrases that we use in connection with that—such as “the public good” or “the good of the community” or even “the commonwealth” — and those agendas are all pursued by government—why? because they are a *minister of God to thee for good*.

- Now I recognize that the truth of the matter is—that when you talk about “the public good” and even that term that makes a lot of people cringe—the word “welfare” — I recognize that most of the “good” that the government provides is often-times a screwed up mess.

- And it’s haggled over; fought over; and abused ... but nevertheless, **it’s still pursued!**

- And most often it’s policies in connection with “the public good” are screwed up as well—but at least its policies are intended to be the benefit (or benevolence) for those who live under them!

- An example of this kind of “benevolent goodness” that government provides for is what is commonly called ‘infrastructure’ — that is, roads; power/electricity; water supply; public transportation; courts; school/educational systems.

- These are all remnants (remains) of that “other” major function of the “power” and of the *ordinance of God* contained in human government.

- And I know that it’s the common position of “Conservative Christian Americans” that the only thing that government should ever be involved in—is the issue of protecting us from violence within (criminals) and violence without (foreign enemies) — and therefore the only thing government should provide for is a police force and a military.

- (but it’s not unusual to find “Conservative Christian Americans” at odds with God’s word!)

- And we struggle with the “liberal” mind-set (which gets into pure Socialism) - we struggle with where to draw the line in these matters ... (or even if these things should exist at all).

- But the truth of the matter is—even in the most conservative Republic—you still have a population that has folks in it that are, (sometimes for no fault of their own), POOR; folks that have mental defects (and can’t help it; and can’t hold down a job); folks that have physical defects (of no fault of their own), and have no one who is related to them, or no one who loves and cares for them.

- And we often struggle with the issue that—on the one hand, it's very **Un-Christian** to be totally unsympathetic about those folks and their plight—but on the other hand, it's often the position that many take, that it's **not** government's job to be involved in any of that kind of thing.

- But even the biggest libertarian often has to admit that even though they hold to the position that government shouldn't be involved in most of these things—they often have to admit that when it comes to some 'infrastructure' issues, that government should be involved in some of those things.

- But what I'm telling you here is — THAT ***IS*** THE JOB OF GOVERNMENT! (to care about those things—and to provide for those kinds of things!)

- **And God's word backs me up on this!!!**

- For example—if you look at God's program with Israel, a huge amount of issues concerning Israel had to do with them as a NATION ... as a "National" entity—as a nation with a **government!** right? (a theocracy, but an "ocracy" [power, rule, authority] nonetheless)

- And after what took place at Mount Sinai—Israel demanded to go under God's Law—granted, a dumb thing to do, but nevertheless, God's Law was and is PERFECT.

- Therefore, if you were to look to a government that was intended to be GODLY (and as a godly pattern for a government to follow), then you'd have to look at theirs.

- Well—if you pay attention to what God tells Israel (government-wise) - and if you pay attention to what God sets forth in His judgments and statutes of the Law —

... their statutes and judgments functioned just as the apostle Paul describes in Ephesians 2:12 (read) ... and notice that terminology: *the commonwealth of Israel* [only time used]

- Notice that this is said in a context of describing what you were as a Gentile in "*time past*" — and he gives a list of things here: NONE OF WHICH ARE GOOD THINGS TO BE WITHOUT as a Gentile in "*time past*"!!!

- We often read this passage and seem to identify with being *without Christ; strangers from the covenants of promise; having no hope; without God in the world* — but we often don't really identify much with being *aliens from the commonwealth of Israel* ... and often our “conservative” leanings tend to cause us to ‘lean away’ from that *commonwealth* issue—(Oh my! it has the word “common” in it ... that’s kind of like “common-ism” or “communism”!)

- But most of the reason why we don't readily identify with being *aliens from the commonwealth of Israel* is because we have only a shallow understanding of God's program with Israel, and almost no understanding of Israel's *commonwealth* issue.

- It's a HUGE thing—(it's listed among huge things!)

- Israel isn't just a nation—(notice that God didn't say, ‘aliens from the nation of Israel’) — but Israel is a *commonwealth*.

- What is a “commonwealth”???

= (just as its name says), ‘wealth’ shared in ‘common’ - and if you look it up in the OED, the very first and most common definition is: Public welfare; **general good** or advantage.

- Actually, this is a huge doctrine—but God established the nation Israel as this “commonwealth” - in other words, the government of Israel (as prescribed by the Law), was to be a dispenser of some “good” that would be shared in “common” by all!

- Now it was NOT a ‘Communist’ set-up at all! nor was it a Socialist set-up of redistributing wealth!

- But if you pay attention to the judgments and statutes of the Law—you will find that God established a “commonwealth” of general GOOD to the citizenry of the members of the nation of Israel.

- For example, you'll find where God makes it so that the government of Israel was to provide for the ‘public good’ or welfare of the nation—to provide for the POOR of the nation (to make sure they had food) [the corners of the fields]

- And there were provisions for the poor, to make sure that they were not abused when they would go to take out a loan.
- There were provisions for those who could not take care of themselves.
- And if Israel had followed the Law properly—they would have been exposed to this issue of God’s **Benevolent Goodness through their government!** (And they most certainly will be, when God resumes & fulfills His program with Israel!)
- And under God’s program with Israel—because (among other things), it was a nation with a viable government—its rulers were intended to be (and to some degree, were) actual *ministers of God* to its citizenry *for good*.
- And regardless of what kind or what quality our present government is—the rulers of it are *ministers of God to us for good!*
- And what I’m saying is—that the idea of government trying to do “good” by its citizens—and caring about the welfare of its citizenry IS NOT UNGODLY AT ALL!
- Now the means to do that—(the means by which the government carries it out) may be most Ungodly ... but the point is, that it’s NOT out of the realm of what God created the “*powers that be*” (government) to do!
- But just think about the criminally insane—what if those folks were just roaming around in society? (they’d harm or kill folks, & people would probably kill them)
- The point is—that there is **nothing wrong** (in fact, is RIGHT) for government to take our tax dollars and use some of that money for the public good and the public welfare.
- And again (just as I said before) - it’s not perfect; it’s not complete; it’s not fully developed ... but it IS resident in the “*powers that be*” — and that is that God’s Love promotes Benevolent Goodness—He does things in a benevolent manner for the welfare of others!

- So just to ‘recap’ - the *ordinance of God* contained in all human government (in the “*powers that be*”) has at least 2 Major functions:

Rom 13:3 1) The *rulers of it are not a terror to good works, but to the evil*—Government keeps the violence of men in check;

Rom. 13:4 2) The *ruler of government is the minister of God to thee for good*—Along with providing for a quiet & peaceable life, government also organizes and promotes Benevolent Goodness to its citizenry.

- Both are matters God Himself ordained and established as the methodology by which He will carry out His business in the long-term. (especially now that sin has entered the earthly realm and after God brought in His “New World Order” after the Flood when He fractured the *power* into *powers*).

- Any questions? comments?

- Now at this point I just want to point out that it’s very easy to think about Benevolent Goodness (or just Goodness) - and UNDER-THINK it! — that is, to “imagine” that our list of the Major Features of Godly Love is kind of “out of order” — and to think that Benevolent Goodness is really the **most** fundamental and elementary and basic feature of all of God’s love.

- However, my understanding is that in the progressive development of Godly Love, this 5th Major Feature actually develops **out of the first 4**.

- That is, you have to first of all have the godly:
 - Selflessness and Kindness (lovingkindness);
 - out of which develops the Tenderheartedness;
 - then out of those 3 develops the Meekness;
 - and out of those 4 develops the Benevolent Goodness. (it’s 5th for a reason!)

- And really, in order to get this Benevolent Goodness to be the “godly” variety (rather than the ‘human-good’ variety) - that is, to be ‘God-like’ - to be what it is **to God** our Heavenly Father (as a feature of love as it operates within Him [within His heart], and which He then imparts and installs in our heart as His “son”) - in order for it to be “godly” Benevolent Goodness, it has taken everything that has been effectually working in your inner man from Romans 12:3-13:7 to get that job done properly!

- And as we will see later on in the Curriculum for our Sonship Education - where this development of Godly Love & Charity is going to go—(and why all the progressive development in this Godly Love has had to undergo these first 4 progressive “steps” (so to speak) and get it so that Godly Love as it operates within you has finally arrived at this issue of Benevolent Goodness ... where all this is going (once it has developed to the state of Benevolent Goodness), is: **for you to seek the good of others *before* yourself!**

- And ultimately, (as the Curriculum goes on), to seek it even **to your own detriment!** - and penultimately, to even **lay your life down for another!** (you’d die for them)

- And while we have (previous to Romans 13:1-7) encountered the issue of *good* and *goodness* in the Curriculum for our Sonship Education—(viz., 12:9 *Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good.* & 12:21 *Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.*) — by the time you get to the end of Rom. 13:7, it’s not merely the issue of godly *goodness*, but it’s the issue of godly **benevolent goodness.**

- And that **benevolent** aspect of goodness really is depicted in the *powers that be* (in government) - and God designed it to be that way—and that **benevolent** issue is the issue of being always **BENT** on goodness or always having a **bend** towards promoting the goodness of others in your thinking, living, and labor with God. (as reflected in government itself!)

- It’s not merely the issue of “God is good, and so we should be good, too” (true as that is) - but it’s the issue of: God’s not only “good” - but God’s Love is **benevolently** good—and that is no where better and more clearly put on display than in **government** (in the *ordinance of God* which all governments possess).

- And my understanding is that it’s when you get to that 3rd and final Component of Justice, that you have that issue of God’s Love being **benevolently** good set before you—and you, as a “son”, are supposed to perceive that—and by the effectual working of verses 1-7 of chapter 13, godly benevolent love gets generated within you!

- And now YOU (just like your Father) are strongly seeking the *good* of others—you're BENT on it!

- And my point is—that if you think about it—and if you realize that we're not just talking about goodness in general, but **benevolent** goodness—then it should make sense that it first takes Selflessness and Kindness; and then building on top of that, Tenderheartedness; and then building on top of that, Meekness—and then built on top of all of them, Benevolent Goodness.

- And that's the point of Rom. 13:4—*For he is the minister of God to thee for good.* — (that is, for YOU, as a saint/son) — because while the ungodly world (society at large) looks at its government and all that it does, and LEARNS NOTHING about God through it—but what we're taught (and let in on) in Rom. 13:4 is that we're supposed to see and learn about God's **benevolent** goodness **IN** the government! ... in *its* benevolent goodness! (because it was put there by God as an *ordinance*!) [and its *rulers minister* it!]

- As a “son” you see that benevolent goodness in government—and you **make the connection** as that being the very characteristic of your Father's Love! (He put it there as *the ordinance of God*—and given the unrighteousness and selfishness of sinful men, why would they ever do that? why does that element remain as an issue in all governments of the world? ... were it not for God putting it there?)

- It's kind of like that benevolent goodness, that's the ‘fingerprints of God’ left on it—that's how my Father is—that's a characteristic of my Father—and therefore that's going to be characteristic of **my** godly love & charity if I want to emulate Him!

- And since this is **godly** benevolent goodness—you're going to promote the good of others, not because they're good or because they deserve it—but by nature, (as a son of your Heavenly Father), that's what you're **BENT** upon! (because that's what He's **BENT** upon!) - whether they deserve it or not, whether they're saved or lost!

- And this is another one of those critical matters for you as a son in being trained up in your vocational training for your future work & labor in the creature—because the tables are going to be “reversed” —YOU are going to be the one in a rulership position in the *powers that be*—

... and you’re going to be trained to NOT abuse the power (as you make godly sonship judgments in it), but to always utilize that power for the promotion of goodness to others—and in that case, you’re going to do a lot like what Adam began doing before sin entered the picture—you’re going to labor with your Father, and you’re going to organize the heavenly creation so that it can receive the **goodness** of God in that realm!

- And with the Lord Jesus Christ being the “Head” and you being the “body” of that “new creature” — just as the Earth will have a Benevolent Ruler over it—so too, will the Heavenly Realm have a Benevolent Ruler over it — and more than that, the 2 realms of Heaven and Earth will be ruled with such compatible Benevolent precision, that BOTH realms can be brought together as ONE ... and just as Paul says at the end of Eph. 1 ... *and gave him to be the head over all things to the church, Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.*

- Therefore what we’re supposed to have learned as sons in our 3rd Component of Justice—is that by looking at the *ordinance of God* contained in human government—that my Father is Benevolent—my Father wants to bestow His goodness to others—and therefore, if I’m going to Love like Him, I need to have His benevolence generated within me, and I now need to be benevolent.

- And if that gets generated and up and running well—along with Selflessness, Kindness, Tenderheartedness, and Meekness—then I’m prepared to take that core of godly Love & Charity and begin to make **judgmental** decisions that will perfectly and exactly emulate my Heavenly Father (because I’ve been taught to love just like He does ... with the same terminology I’m used to, but taught to me by Him, and not by the wisdom & course of this evil ungodly world)!

- In other words, you're prepared now to make a whole bunch of *judgments* in connection with '*working no ill to your neighbour*' ... and by doing that, you're going to get to "practice" here on earth what you will be laboring with God to do in the heavenly realm—which is the issue of putting things in order (or organizing things in such a way) so that the GOODNESS of God can be received by God's creation.

- And you get the further benefit of doing that with a body of corruption yourself—and with sin in your members—and in a very hostile environment and if you can do it here (and with these bodies of corruption) - just think how effective you will do it that in the creature!

- Now before we finish dealing with this issue of Benevolent Goodness—we need to run some verses and see that God's word not only makes it clear that one of the major features or characteristics of God Himself is one of Benevolent Goodness, but that God's Benevolent Goodness is tied directly to His love—it's a major feature or characteristic of His love—and then to see that God has determined to incorporate His Benevolent Goodness into human government (especially the government of Israel).

- My understanding is that while this may be the time and place where you as a "son" are supposed to PERCEIVE Benevolent Goodness as being the 5th major feature of godly love—and the mechanism by which you perceive that is this other ministry of governmental power—my understanding is that this is NOT the first time you have ever been confronted with the fact that God and God's love **has** this issue of benevolent goodness as one of its major features.

- (see Isaiah 63:1-7 [:7])

- God has permanently left on this earth, a witness or testimony (so to speak) as to His love being Benevolent Goodness—and He's left Himself a testimony to that **in government**—(which is why, in Rom. 13, you had to go back to that original *power*, and then the *powers*, and then the *ordinance of God*) — and His Benevolent Goodness (in the context of government) is ministered by the rulers of a government—and the "*good*" in a context of government (and in the context of Romans 13:4) is that which is for the '**public welfare**' - it's **that which promotes the benefit of the citizenry.**

- And what we're after, in all this—is to make the connection with the “link” (so to speak) between the issue of **benevolent goodness** that's contained in the government (contained in the *ordinance of God*) - [which is the issue of promoting good for the public welfare] — (we're after the “link” between that) and the issue that **benevolent goodness** really is a particular aspect or feature of God's own Love (which, likewise, is the issue of **promoting good for other's welfare**).

- And God does so regardless of how others respond or treat Him—it is completely ‘without respect to persons’ - it's totally non-discriminating.

- That's why it's “Benevolent” goodness—because when a person or a government is **benevolent**, they are promoting the **good** of others, irrespective of anything about the one they're doing it to.

- And that's something that is *seen* in government—that's something that is *witnessed* by others when they look at government!

- So therefore in connection with God establishing human gov. to be the ‘*ordained ordinance*’ that it is—and doing it for the reason why He did it—(and in connection with “The New World Order” and in connection with the continuance of His design of the *power*; which allows Him to fulfill His plan & purpose) — **it also allowed Him to express an aspect of Himself that would be recognizable and identifiable and usable** by His own people in the New World Order.

- And until the dispensation of grace came in—the main way in which that was seen and acknowledged and used by anybody, was by Israel (specifically, in their government), where God put the fundamental *ordained ordinance* principle.

- (see Deuteronomy 4:5-8)

- And the issue was—that Israel's statutes & judgments *were* far more “righteous” than those of other nations—their wisdom & understanding *was* far superior than any other nation's — and the thing that put that on display to the highest degree was the fact that the welfare of the citizens of the nation Israel were provided for and were exalted by Israel's righteous statutes & judgments! [i.e., **government!**]

- In fact, their citizenry was specifically told **not** to “*covet*” ... told NOT to do those things that were for the promotion of their own welfare—but to work for the ‘commonwealth’ - for the promotion of their own mutual good—and to be benevolent, one towards another.

- Well, when this dispensation of grace comes in—and you’ve got members of the new creature of the body of Christ with their sonship education getting underway—by the time their sonship education gets to the issue of them understanding human government from God’s perspective—you’re supposed to understand and appreciate that resident within that human government (just like Israel was to understand it in connection with human government); God, in connection with the *ordinance*, established (by the issue of a government providing for the promotion of the public good), God put on display (or gave **witness** to) His own characteristic & feature of Godly Love that is about promoting the welfare of, and dispensing benevolent goodness upon others, irrespective of whether they respond to Him or not.

- (Paul himself refers to this issue ... [Acts 14] as something that the “nations” had the ability to respond to as a part of God’s “**witness**” of Himself)

- (see :15-17)

- That’s being spoken about in the context of a **NATION!**

- And God did benevolent *goodness*—even though they were His **enemies!** ... even though they **hated** Him!

- By the way—this is something that’s supposed to be understood in Romans 1:19-20 — this is one more thing about God that all men (unjustified men) can see and can testify to the fact that there is a God ... and one thing about Him is that He’s a **loving** God that promotes **good**; is ‘bent’ upon the good and the welfare of others ... and one of the major places on this earth where God has left for Himself a witness to that fact... is in government!

- Well, hopefully, you’re beginning to understand & appreciate the ‘link’ or the connection between the benevolent goodness contained in gov., and it testifying that it is a very feature of God’s own love.

- With that understood—let’s just run some passages that point out this witness or testimony to God’s benevolent goodness as it exists in human government—especially in connection with Israel’s government.

- Psalm 72 (book #2)

- (by the way, the Lord BLASTED the governmental leadership of Israel over their abuse and coveting and failure of being benevolently good to the members of the “flock” of Israel! [Mat. 23:14])

- Psalm 145 (book #5)

- Jeremiah 31— look at this ‘goodness’ concept and the fact that when God establishes His kingdom on the earth (as per His original purpose & design with the earth) His loving, benevolent goodness is going to go out from that government (kingdom) **to all the earth.**

- Look what is said before the context turns to the issue of the New Covenant ...

- (:10-14)

- Now you need to appreciate this within its overall context—and not just the overall context of Jeremiah, but the overall context of everything that’s been going on since God began dealing with the nation Israel under those 5 courses of punishment.

- And as you go through all of the information contained in the Prophets (Major: Isa., Jer./Lam. Eze., & Dan.—and then as the Minor Prophets loop back over the Major Prophets and give further details about them: Hosea-Malachi) — as the information cycles through the 5 CoP, you get further details about what God is going to be doing and what is going to be in existence when God fulfills His program with Israel.

- (Not that you haven’t already by this time been given some information about the Blessings that accrue from God’s established Kingdom—but now you’re going to get some particular information about those blessings that has to do with the ‘scope’ of this Kingdom **for the whole world’s benefit!!!**)

- And this is just as the Lord Himself talked about over in Matthew 25:31-34 —

— as He describes the issue of His judgment when the first 3 Mandates of the Davidic Covenant have been fulfilled and He comes to Israel as the “King” - and He sits upon “the throne of His glory” - and the nations get brought to Him—and He, as the “King” has a judgment, and He operates upon the basis of that Abrahamic Covenant—and the goat nations get separated from the sheep nations—and the blessings come upon the sheep, and the cursing comes upon the goats — and the issue is: who is going to become partaker of the blessing with the King’s people as He blesses them as their Blesser?

- well, when He says to the sheep on His right hand, “*inherit the kingdom prepared for YOU from the foundation of the world ... THAT’S* the issue going on in Jeremiah 31:10-14!

- The “nations” are in view—and the issue is one of them being a partaker of the blessings that Israel gets in that Kingdom!

- And an awful lot has been said about the “goodness” of the Lord to Israel already (viz., the 5th book of the Psalms) - but you’re given to understand that God’s goodness isn’t just contained to Israel—but when God can get the business dealing with the “parenthesis” between Gen. 3 and Rev. 20 accomplished—God’s goodness is going to be ministered to the whole world by means of His government (Kingdom).

- And the issue of the Blesser and His Blessings—and the benevolence that He bestows upon His people—and the goodness that He showers upon them: all gets offered to the **world at large!**

- And it gets offered to the world-at-large because, the truth of the matter is—**the purpose behind the establishment of God’s kingdom on this earth, (when it comes to what He wants to do to the creatures of His creation; that gets administered to by Him through the instrument of the governmental power He has instituted and that gets vested in His kingdom on this earth) - the main thing He’s after is the administration of His goodness to His creatures!** (and that begins to be focused upon at this particular cycle point in Jeremiah 31!)

- (And from this point on—*goodness* becomes an issue that all of the Prophets talk about [i.e., **godly** *goodness*!]).

- Notice (:10) [Jer. 31] — *Hear the word of the LORD, O ye nations, and declare it in the isles afar off*— this message goes out to the nations—and it’s to be declared to “*the isles afar off*” — and there’s not going to be a single Gentile entity that is not going to hear about this!

- And they’re to be told that: *He that scattered Israel will gather him, and keep him, as a shepherd doth his flock.*

- And then it’s put into its historical perspective when it takes place (you go from the Future Tense in :10 to the Past Tense in :11) — meaning that (:10) historically takes place AFTER the 1st, 2nd, and 3rd Mandates of the Davidic Covenant have been fulfilled ... *For the LORD hath redeemed Jacob (1st Mandate of the Dav. Cov.), and ransomed him from the hand of him that was stronger than he (2nd & 3rd Mandates of the Dav. Cov.).*

- 12 *Therefore they shall come and **sing** in the height of Zion* (the Lord is going to reign there as the King of kings & Lord of lords—there in the “height of Zion”, in other words, there in Jerusalem as the Capital City (so to speak) for His government) — *and shall flow together **TO THE GOODNESS OF THE LORD***— the “goodness” of the LORD will already be there for His people, (for the nation Israel)—and it’s there for them first—but then the ‘door of opportunity’ (so to speak) will be opened up to the nations as well ...

- [note that this was originally set forth in its basic information and scope-form back in Isa. 60, 61, & 62]

- see Isa. 60:1-3—God talks about the issue of Israel coming out of that ‘darkness’ of the Tribulation—a darkness that engulfs the whole earth—and the ‘light’ shines upon Israel there in Zion first, and then the Gentiles come to her ‘light’ — [which is where that issue of the “*outer darkness*” comes from that the Lord talks about in Matthew when He refers to the issue of being outside the Land is one of being in *outer darkness*—and the land of Israel being all ‘light’ - and the Gentiles come to her ‘light’ - which is when Israel fulfills the whole issue of being “*the light of the world*”] — sound familiar? (see Exodus 10:21-23—9th Plague)

- see also Isa. 61:9-11; & 62:1-4

- The point is that the Gentiles are going to be drawn to Israel by her 'light' - and a message goes out from Israel to the nations—and just as Ezekiel declares that message in more detail (in Eze. 36) when God describes the 'heart-change' that takes place in His people—and He describes the animosity that has always existed in connection with the Gentiles; and the old hatred that has always been there in the past (and has been fueled by the Satanic Policy of Evil against the nations) - and all that is now **gone**—and the 'heart' of His own people takes on God's own heart, and Israel becomes "benevolent" toward the Gentile nations — and as Israel becomes partakers of the 5th Mandate of the Davidic Covenant (the Blesser and His Blessings), God, through Israel, then offers those blessings to the Gentile nations!

- But the issue is—based upon what is set forth in Jeremiah 31—it's the issue of Israel fulfilling their roll in God's purpose for having His Kingdom on this Earth—and being the agency through which the administration of that Kingdom takes place—and to be the avenue for advancing the whole purpose God has in that Kingdom: **TO BE GOOD TO HIS CREATURES!**

- And Israel is going to take all the *goodness* that they've been beneficiaries of—and they are going to open the gates of their land (so to speak) - and they're going to offer the Gentiles to come in and to be partakers of that *goodness*!

- And then (just as Jer. 31:12 says), they'll get all the *goodness of the LORD, for their wheat, and for their wine, and for their oil, and for their young of the flock and of the herd ... and have their soul be as a watered garden; and they shall not sorrow any more at all.*

- Israel is going to get all that benefit at the first—and then that same thing is going to be offered to the Gentiles.

- And then ... *13 Then shall the virgin rejoice in the dance, both young men and old together: for I will turn their mourning into joy, and will comfort them, and make them rejoice from their sorrow.*

- Israel gets the benefits of that first—but then that's also offered to the Gentiles (which is how the Lord's kingdom spreads forth over all the earth) - that's how that 'light' goes out and dispels the 'darkness' ... and as it dispels the

‘darkness’, it dispels all the *sorrow* and all the *mourning*—
and it produces the *comfort* and the *joy*!

- And then in ... 14 *And I will satiate the soul of the priests with fatness, and my people shall be satisfied with my goodness, saith the LORD.*

- And just as the *soul* of Israel’s *priests* gets *satiated with fatness*, and their *people* get *satisfied with God’s goodness* — that also gets extended out to the nations as well!

- In fact, based upon what’s said here in Jeremiah 31—when Jeremiah, as the prophet that he is, functions out in the 5th Installment (which is why Israel looked for Jeremiah to come back to them [Mat. 16:14?])—this very part of Jeremiah functions as a preparatory message of the Remnant of Israel to the nations, so that when the full *redemption* of Jacob takes place, and the full *ransoming* takes place, and Israel becomes the full beneficiary of God’s *goodness*—those Gentile nations are going to be prepared for what’s coming their way, and for what’s going to be offered to them.

- And those Gentiles have the opportunity to recognize that when that ‘light’ begins to shine unto them—and they begin to hear that music of that *singing* (of :12) that’s coming out of the land of Israel and permeating the earth—and those songs of joy start to be heard—and you’ve got all the hills and the trees in the land of Israel ‘clapping’ - and the fountains of waters are bursting up and expressing their joy—and all that starts to filter through the environment of the earth—and the trees of the lands, and the mountains of the lands of the nations want to become participants in that joy as the Earth LIVES with God dwelling on the earth.

- Well, the issue is that there’s some preparatory work done for all that—and the Gentile nations are going to become the beneficiaries of God’s goodness through His kingdom that He sets up in and with the nation Israel!

- And actually, this issue goes right back to that issue with Moses and the ‘golden calf incident’ (and what we commonly call the “Reserve Clause” that God established in connection with the Law) - [Exodus 33:12-19] - and Moses said in :18, *I beseech thee, shew me thy glory.* And God said, *I will make all my goodness pass before thee, ...* (:19)

... and as God passes before Moses—and with every one of those things God proclaims in that Reserve Clause ... every one of those things is an expression of God's goodness!

- **GOODNESS**—that is the term that God uses to summarize everything about Himself in connection with everything He wants to be to the creatures He created in His creation!

... He wants to be GOOD to them—He wants to bestow GOODNESS (the sum & substance of His character & essence—the **totality of everything that He is!**)

... and He wants every creature to be a beneficiary of it!

- And the issue is that when He establishes His Kingdom (His own ruling & reigning **government**) ... that's what He does: He establishes the 'vehicle' (if you will) by which that *goodness* gets administered and bestowed **in an orderly manner** that provides for the benefits and the profits and the goals and the objectives of that *goodness*!

- In other words, **it's NOT bestowed for no reason at all**—rather, it's got goals and objectives **for the ages to come!**

- But the issue in the original *power* that establishes the *control* over creation in the form of a *government* that has *orderliness* to it—is designed to provide for the means for God's **goodness** to be **bestowed!** (ultimately)

- And all of the governments that exist today are mere faint copies of that original design—but “faint copies” nonetheless, they still retain (faint as it may be) God's original intended purpose!

- But that's what's going on here in Jeremiah 31—and as you go on, that gets repeated over in ch. 33 (with further detail/amplification) ...

- (see Jer. 33:9-16) ... ending with that 6th of the 7 Jehovah Compound Names: Jehovah-Zidkenu, fulfilling the Feast of the Day of Atonement (just prior to Jehovah-Shamma [described by Ezekiel (48:35)] and that fulfills the Feast of Tabernacles and that 2nd Sabbath after the 1st!)

- The truth of the matter is—that’s the very design and purpose God originally had when He said what He did in connection with Adam and in connection with the provision that was made for God’s kingdom to be established on this earth. (as we have noted before)

- Interestingly enough—when you open up your Bible to the very first chapter—of all the things you could get confronted with—and of all the things about God Himself that you could be told about ... you can’t get through the first 4 verses of your Bible before you’re confronted with God’s *goodness*!

- Because in the record of Genesis chapter 1—and the record of the six days of creation—God makes a declaration that what He has created and bestowed upon His creation is *goodness* ... “*God saw the light, that it was good*” (:4), and then again in (:10— 2X on Day 1); and then in (:12—Day 3); and then in (:18—Day 4); and then in (:21—Day 5); and finally in (:25 & :31—2X on Day 6)! **Total of 7 Times!!!**

- And then—from Genesis chapter 3 on throughout God’s word and on through time—with sin and evil and unrighteousness and ungodliness ever increasing & evolving—and with man ever devolving into greater and greater sin and ungodliness—this issue of what is “good” and what “goodness” is has been attacked, shaped, formed, molded and RE-DEFINED by the wisdom of men under the Satanic Policy of Evil!

- And what *good* and *goodness* is to God is almost totally lost in this present world—the issue that God’s *goodness* is Righteous and Holy—it’s just what the radical root of that word “good” means = that something or someone is perfectly fit and suited for God’s holy purpose and design—that something or someone is perfectly fit and suited for God’s PLEASURE!

- The truth is—most of what this world calls “good” is nothing more than **making it so that a wrong thing, if it’s done in a right way**, the world says, “That’s good”! (Or flipping it around the other way—**doing a wrong thing in a right way!**)

- But the ‘bottom line’ is: God, by nature, is full of *goodness*—and the power of human government (when God originally established it), was to be the vehicle for the bestowing of His **benevolent goodness** in an orderly manner upon His creatures!

- And that's why you and I learn about the 5th Major Feature of Godly Love out of Romans 13:1-7!

- And that's why a government by nature, is a *praiser of good* — it will *praise* anything that is benevolently good to its citizenry! (Rom. 13:3)

- And just as we looked at God's design & purpose to bestow good upon His creatures through government (especially through His own government—i.e., His kingdom) - [there in Isaiah and in Jeremiah] — and just as we have seen how WE are to deal with human government as “sons” (in our sonship education) ... and how we are supposed to perceive God's loving, benevolent goodness as part of that *ordinance of God*—so, too, are the members of the Remnant of Israel (as sons, and in their own sonship education) supposed to perceive all that, and be *subject unto the higher powers* like we are — but with an entirely different Order of God's business in view—it's not at all surprising, therefore, to find information in the Remnant Epistles that is very similar to what we have here in Romans 13:1-7!

- see I Peter 2:12-17

- And because we looked at how God's benevolent goodness gets bestowed upon His creatures though the vehicle of governmental power in an orderly manner back in God's “Time Past” program with the nation Israel—we just can't leave this issue without at least noting that what He declared He would do, actually ends up getting done!

- see Revelation 21:1-7; 23-27;
 22:1-5

- And just as an ‘addendum’ type issue—don't confuse the issue of Benevolent Goodness (or Benevolence) with Kindness—although the 2 are related (benevolent goodness being a further development of kindness).

- Basically, the issue of kindness is the starting point or ‘genesis’ of something out of which other things will emerge.

- And Romans 12:9 got that Godly kindness generated—and the basic issue there was that you want to do something that is profitable and beneficial to someone, rather than something that is hurtful and harmful to them.

- But in the issue of godly edifying and the issue of the growth and development of Godly Love—what at first only gets ‘generated’, it then grows to be what, by nature, exists within God Himself.

- And while that kindness is designed to be quite strong, even from the ‘get-go’ — it’s not as strong or as powerful as it’s going to be.

- And by the time you have the other Features of Godly Love generated and up & running well within you—they all provide for something that at first was simply a matter in your mind (or something your mind focused upon from time to time) ... to become something that fully occupies your mind!

- Because the issue of Godly Benevolent Goodness is the issue of your **mind now being occupied with promoting good!** ... your mind is now BENT upon the outworking of Godly Benevolent Goodness—(bent upon promoting the welfare of the ones we value & esteem)—[both with those in the local assembly who are members of our body—but then even beyond that, to men in this world] ... [which, if everything is running well, your godly love and your godly benevolent goodness is ready for it to move on to all men, because Rom. 13:8 is going to say, *Owe NO MAN any thing but to love one another.*]

- So simply put—the difference between kindness and benevolent goodness is the issue of the increase and growth of Godly Love & Charity! (It’s now the occupation of your mind! Your mind is full of it!) And it took the Selflessness, the Kindness, the Tenderheartedness, and the Meekness to get it to the point of Benevolent Goodness.

- With Benevolent Goodness, it’s like you look at the ones you value & esteem, and you say to yourself, “What can I do to benefit them the way my Father would want to benefit them Himself?” ... (in fact, those whom you value & esteem actually provoke that in you by this point—because of how much you value & esteem them—and because of how selfless you are at this point).

- Any Question, Comments?

- Well, at this point you have received the instruction of Wisdom and the instruction of Justice—you have received all 5 of the Major Features of Godly Love & Charity that form the core of all that Godly Love is—you have passed the Sonship Checkpoint (being checked out & reminded of these things by reviewing them all and evaluating their effectual working within you) — and you have received the initial Pre-Doctrinal Exhortation for getting the 1st Component of the instruction of Judgment—so that means that the next thing to do is to receive the instruction of Judgment.

RECEIVING THE INSTRUCTION OF JUDGMENT

- For us, as members of the new creature of the church the body of Christ in this present dispensation of grace—in the Curriculum for our Sonship Education—the initial instruction of Judgment is found in Romans 13:8-14.

- And since its been a good while since we talked about it—let’s just remind ourselves of what the instruction of Judgment is all about.

- Without looking at your notes—and without looking at a chart ... What is the major or core issue with the instruction of Judgment?

- Is it: to be given the skill to decide/determine what is good, or better, or best? NO!!!

- Because if that’s all it is—then there’s nothing inherently ‘godly’ about that—and the truth is, that’s not something that takes any real skill, because all you’re doing there is making a decision based upon nothing more than your personal preference! ... right?

- The core issue with the instruction of Judgment is the issue of having to make a decision (a judgmental decision) when it is NOT clear and/or NOT obvious what decision to make!!!

- And that means that the issues in making judgmental decisions are going to be far more complex than anything you’ve encountered so far in Wisdom and Justice!

- The work of judgment is much harder—you’re going to have to “ponder” it!

- see Chart #40 (review)

- see Chart #45 (the reality that there are 2 Components to our instruction of Judgment)

- see Chart #46

The 2 Components of godly judgment are going to deal with major, fundamental, but also, ongoing issues in connection with our sonship life (the details of our life; the ISSUES OF LIFE [Pro. 4:23—the only time that phrase occurs in the Bible]) as it pertains to the issue of us making wise judgments in connection with everything we do.

- And because of the nature of making godly judgmental decisions, we need a kind of ‘catch-all’ or ‘clearing-house’ type of instruction that will enable us to know what God’s will is (and to be able to discern it and confidently know what it is) - and then to conduct ourselves in accordance with it in any situation and with anybody that we ever deal with in the details of our lives.

- What I mean by a ‘catch-all’ type of instruction is that it’s something that encompasses a wide variety of situations and circumstances.

- It’s going to function as that Catalyst, but it’s going to be very brief—(not a ‘case-book’ type body of information).

- What is a ‘clearing-house’?

It was used over 100 years ago as an expression of banking — where adjustments were made to claims and checks and bills, by exchanging them and settling the balances—it was also used in railroading, as the railway clearing-house where a whole bunch of freight was assembled and the claims on that freight by different railways were all settled out and sent out.

- So it can be a central agency for settling mutual claims & accounts in the banking sense—or it can be a central agency for the distribution of freight in the railroad sense—but for our purposes, **it is a central agency for the collection, classification, and distribution of INFORMATION**—information that’s designed to combine with other information in order to settle out a matter to be decided on when the path to take is not clear or obvious.

- So the 2 Components are going to act as a kind of ‘clearing-house’ or ‘catch-all’ for really, ALL of the “*issues of life*” that require you to make godly judgments when there is no clear or obvious path to take.

- And the 2 Components actually complement one another (as we shall see).

- The 1st Component of our instruction of judgment (:8, 9, & 10) pertains to our capacity to know what the will of God is, and how He wants us to respond whenever we’re dealing with one another as members of the church the body of Christ—AND whenever we’re dealing with ALL MEN when we don’t have anything specific that has already been set forth to us in our instruction of godly wisdom and justice up until this point.

- Simply put (see chart) the 1st Component of Judgment deals with **Godly judgments in our dealings with others.**

- We’re always going to be dealing with people—with other saints in our local assembly; with other saints we meet and come into contact with that are not a part of our local assembly; and with friends, family, co-workers, and in general OTHER PEOPLE (saved and lost) out in the world at large.

- And therefore we always need to know how to be able to respond to people—and to have the confidence that we’re responding to them in accordance to GODLINESS and what is WELL-PLEASING in God’s sight, in however we respond or react towards them.

- And (:8-10) acts as that ‘clearing-house’ or ‘catch-all’ issue with respect to our dealings with other people ... and it provides for us to have that fundamental, ongoing judgmental capacity.

- The 2nd Component: simply put, deals with **godly judgments in our use of Time and how we spend it.** (see chart)

... (see Chart #47)

... (see Chart #48—Thinking/Living/Labor)

RECEIVING THE INSTRUCTION OF JUDGMENT:

- **1st Component: Godly Judgment in our Dealings with Others.**
(Romans 13:8-10)

- **Godly Thinking (:8)**

8 Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law.

- Now as we get ourselves underway with the Godly Thinking of our 1st Component of the instruction of judgment—I want to address a common misconception about this verse, and what is most commonly said in connection with it.

- More often than not, when most folks read that first part of (:8—*Owe no man any thing, but to love one another:*) - that statement is almost always thought of [and taught] as a verse in the Bible that pointedly tells a Christian that he is never supposed to be in financial debt to anyone (be it an individual person, or taking out a loan at a bank, or having student loans, or having a credit card [and using it], or anything along those lines).

- And the truth is, that's about all that's ever said about this verse. (and that's certainly good advice!)

- But my understanding is that this is NOT what this verse is saying or talking about.

- And one of the reasons why most folks who deal with this verse usually only get the one idea that what God is telling us here is that we're not to ever be in financial debt to anyone—is because (more often than not), they simply don't have any frame of reference for the sonship edification that's taking place here—or for the context in which this verse sits.

- The context (and the frame of reference) here is one of a saint who is being educated as a “son” in his godly edification, is now receiving his *instruction of judgment* (making wise, judgmental decisions in connection with his dealings with others) - and everything that has gone on from Romans 12:3 up to this point is all being brought to bear on this verse, and forms the frame of mind & contextual backdrop for what God has the apostle Paul say at this point.

- And if you're honest with this verse, and handling this verse honestly within the immediate context; (outside of money or finances being an issue in paying your taxes and customs) - the subject of 'Christian Indebtedness' **isn't part of this context at all**, and isn't anywhere near any of the surrounding verses!

- In other words—this verse does not occur in any kind of a dissertation or analysis or subject of how a Christian is supposed to deal with their finances and/or indebtedness!

- And even if all you do is take into account the immediate context of what (:7) set forth—you would recognize that the context in which the apostle Paul was dealing with in the preceding verses, was the issue of the proper response that God expects us to give to people (namely, to the rulers of government) to whom we DO find ourselves owing them something.

- And by what (:7) says, it tells you that there ARE situations where we NATURALLY owe people things (such as governmental rulers).

- And it doesn't matter if you're "free from financial debt" ... the truth is, you're **never** really totally free from financial debt! Because you still *owe* people the things mentioned up in (:7) - you naturally owe people things.

- They are "*due*" something - we owe them something—we owe them respect; we owe them honour; and in some ways we owe them money (tribute, custom, & taxes).

- And now in (:8), Paul is going to **extend** that issue as we begin receiving our instruction of godly Judgment to include **ALL MEN!**

- And we do *owe* "*all men*" something—we owe them an expression of godly love & charity—we owe treating them in the godly love that has been produced in us by the effectual working of Romans 12:3-13:7. (and that godly love is now in a state that it can be utilized in the judgments we make in our dealings with ALL MEN!)

- Because that's who we are now "in Christ" as "sons" of God who are being *conformed to the image of Christ* and emulating our Father. And His judgmental dealings with men today is based upon His godly love & charity—and as His adopted sons, that's how we're to deal with others as well.

- My point in all this is to simply say that you can't ignore the context in which this verse sits—and the context just isn't one of how Christians are supposed to deal with their finances.

- Now, with that said—(and knowing what you now know about your status as adult “sons” of God) - what does govern the way in which you spend your money; or get a loan; or use credit cards; or whatever??? (your LIBERTY as a son! and godly WISDOM in connection with that Liberty!)

- And therefore, it IS a wise thing to not be in financial debt—or to be in as little debt as possible! That's good common sense—that's good Christian common sense (due to your testimony in this world) - and that's a good area for you to either be 'wise' or 'foolish' with your sonship liberty!

- So you know from the context that what Paul is saying isn't 'Do not owe any man any thing at all in any way' — in fact, from the preceding context the idea is more along the lines of: 'Where all men are concerned, though you may owe them (at least some of them) one thing or another—the ONE thing you owe them ALL is godly love and charity!'

- Let's begin now looking at the details of the 1st Component of our instruction of godly judgment: Godly Judgments in our dealings with ALL MEN. (:8-10).

- And since we've identified that (:8) consists of the Godly Thinking, let's begin looking at the *renewing of our mind* in connection with the growth & development of Godly Love (with its 5 Major Features) and how that's going to be brought to bear upon all of the decisions we make as “sons” in connection with ALL MEN when the path to take with them is NOT obviously or immediately clear—and where real godly judgment is going to have to be utilized.

- THE GODLY THINKING (:8).

- Now just as we've acknowledged for every aspect of the Godly Thinking for every Component of our initial instruction of Wisdom and Justice—our sonship education consists of *conforming us to the image of God's Son* as we have our Father's heart properly installed in our heart (that we might emulate Him in all that we say and do).

- And as we've become accustomed to by now—we know that since we began our education in earnest, that each component of the Godly Thinking is going to do just what we were told (and what we acknowledged) would take place in our sonship education back in Romans 12:2 (*And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.*)

- And I point this out only to say that what Romans 13 and verse 8 is going to do—is to (because it is designed to **renew your mind**), it's going to challenge some ungodly thinking that already exists in your mind—and it's going to dismiss it; and then replace it with the Thinking of your Father.

- And I'm saying all this just to make sure that we don't do something with (:8) that is **very easy** to do—and that is to just rush right through it without allowing it to make the **necessary 'deep' impact** that it's designed to make!

- Now when you look at (:8) - what do you see about it that would indicate to you the number of 'steps' (so to speak) that make it up?

- (:8) is all one sentence—but it's divided up into two major clauses—(divided by that colon at the end of the word *another*).

- Therefore the Godly Thinking for the 1st Component of our instruction of Judgment has TWO PARTS to it.

- (Part 1) - *Owe no man any thing, but to love one another:*

- (Part 2) - *for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law.*

- Now as I said, it's very easy to simply come along and think: Ok, it says, *Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law.*—so all that means is that as long as I treat everybody in “love” (whatever that means), then I'm doing right in God's sight.

- But true as that may be, that's NOT all that's going on here ... and truth is, there's far more to it than that!

- And while what's said in (:8) is indeed simply stated—the truth is, there's a great deal going on here as it begins the process of setting up in our thinking that 'clearing-house' (or agency for the collection, classification, and distribution of Information) for us to have the capacity/ability to make keen judgments in connection with all men when the path to take with them is not immediately clear.

- And it takes 2 Critical Steps in order to get the Godly Thinking part of that accomplished!

- And neither of those 2 Steps are to be taken lightly or carelessly—but rather, there is a particular designed and deep impact that they are to make upon our inner man!

- Step 1 of the *renewing of our mind* (or the Godly Thinking).

8 *Owe no man any thing, but to love one another:*

- Setting aside that issue that we talked about—which was how this passage is most commonly dealt with—as if all that's being said here is that a Christian is never supposed to take out a loan at the bank or own/use a credit card) ... what's the first thing that pops into your mind with you see that expression, "***Owe no man any thing, but ...***" — you have those words *Owe no man* [and that word] *but ...*

- What does the word "*Owe*" mean?
(= to be **indebted**; to be obliged or bound to pay)

- And by saying it the way God has the apostle Paul say it (*Owe no man any thing, but ...*) — it's a characteristic of the 'style' (if you will) of our English Language to say: No matter who you may or may not owe something to, **YOU DO OWE SOMETHING TO EVERY SINGLE PERSON!**

- And the very first thing that's supposed to 'grab your attention' here is: **YOU REALLY DO OWE A DEBT TO EVERY MAN/WOMAN—you are **INDEBTED** to every **man** in some particular way!**

- And folks, that needs to 'sink in' - that needs to make a deep impact upon the way you Think! ... and if you're honest with yourself, you'll recognize that that is NOT the way most people naturally think ... because most people think **SELFISHLY** ... and to some extent you're inclined to think, "Hey, I don't owe you a thing, buddy!"

- But the way (:8) is phrased—it tells you that you do “*owe*” a debt, and that you are ‘indebted’ to every man in a particular way.

- And the truth of the matter is—that by the time you get from Romans 1:1 to this point in Romans 13:8—all that has gone on in your mind — by the effectual working of:

- the doctrine of your Justification by Grace through Faith and all of its results; (1st Cornerstone) [1-5]

- and by the effectual working of the doctrine of your Sanctification by Grace through Faith and all its results; (2nd Cornerstone) [6-8]

- and then by the effectual working of being established in the Doctrine of the Dispensation of Gentile Grace now in effect; (3rd Cornerstone) [9-11]

- and finally, by the effectual working of the doctrine of Walking Worthy of who God has made you to be “in Christ” Justification-wise & Sanctification-wise; (4th Cornerstone) [12-16] ...

... in view of, and in light of all that God has made you to be in Christ—one of the things that all that doctrine has been building and building to is ... to put you in a proper, right and godly position of being **indebted** to ALL MEN in a particular way!

- The deep impact that’s supposed to be made upon your Thinking (and that challenges your natural thinking you acquired by the wisdom of this world) - is that **there is something you can never ‘pay-in-full’ - there is a debt that you will ever have no matter what! (You and I “owe” all men an expression of godly love!)**

- You and I have been given something that is designed to benefit **all men**:

- you’ve been given the gospel of Christ (eternal life);
- you’ve been given the Holy Ghost;
- you’ve been given sanctified, functional life (the means to be “dead to sin” and “alive unto God” - the means to live out a life that honours God and one that God is pleased with, a life that can produce “fruit unto holiness” that God will accept;

- you've been given the adoption of sons as the means to put all your sanctified functional life "in Christ" into practice by Grace through Faith;
- you've been given the doctrine of the "mystery" (an essential doctrine for rightly dividing the word of truth—for properly handling the word of truth—and for recognizing that the program or business that God is in today and dealing with you about today is NOT His program with Israel—but rather, His never-before-known-about program or dispensation for repossessing the heavenly places from Satan and his cohorts);
- and along with having been given the adoption of sons, you've been given God's own initial Wisdom and Justice for wise & just sonship decision-making!

- Quite an impressive list, wouldn't you say?

- Therefore, you and I have been given, not only eternal life (and how to get it, and how to escape the wrath of God that was naturally against us) - but you've been given sanctified, functional life that allows for you to live in righteousness and holiness in God's sight—(to live godly or God-like in this present world and in these present 'bodies of corruption' with sin in their members—so you can escape being "under sin" and the power of sin in your members**but that's not all** ...

... MORE THAN THAT, YOU AND I HAVE HAD
GENERATED WITHIN US GODLY LOVE & CHARITY!
(the 5 Major, Core Features of Godly love)
[you've been taught to love the way God Himself loves]

- And the 'particular way' (that I've alluded to) that you and I are in "debt" to all men, is found in that second phrase of (:8) - ***but to love one another***:

- Therefore—all that can be now summed up in one single word: **LOVE** (and not just any old human or fleshly love, but God's Love—godly love!)

- And that statement of the Lord Jesus Christ [even though it was made to the members of the remnant of Israel under God's program with Israel] ... it has a parallel aspect to it that goes along with what we're talking about here: *For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required!*

- You and I are now in a position of being indebted to ALL MEN ... you *owe* all men an expression of God's love, just as it was given to, and expressed to YOU!

- And that is a 'debt' THAT NEVER GETS DISCHARGED!

8 *Owe no man any thing, **but to love one another:***

- That second phrase to this first clause of the Godly Thinking (*but to love one another*) - this is one of those cases where, if all you did was to crack the Bible open to this passage—or as some do, simply use it to cite or cross-reference some point in some particular sermon—it can easily have the ungodly, wisdom-of-this-world-taught love superimposed upon it! (and again, taken rather lightly)

- But if you've been properly taught & educated—by the time you get to this passage, you know that the word “*love*” is NOT just any old love (and it's not being used in any old way)—rather, it's the godly love you've had generated within you **from Romans 12:3-13:7!**

- And it has at least 5 identifiable, and definable Features to it!

- And the progressive development of Godly love started off with what foundational major feature? (Selflessness) ... and it started off being utilized where? (in the local assembly—you're going to selflessly labor in the local assembly, identifying certain needs and meeting them; functioning as a member of the body) ...

- and then when godly Lovingkindness was added to the selfless love—where was the context for that to be ministered? (again, in the local church—*Be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love*—it was how we relate to each other) ...

- but when we got to that issue of merciful Tenderheartedness there was a context and an application OUTSIDE of the local assembly ...

- and Meekness had an application OUTSIDE the local assembly ...

- and also Benevolent Goodness had an application OUTSIDE the local assembly.

- And therefore, by the time the 5 Major, Core Features of Godly love have been produced, and are up and running well within you—[by the time you get to :8 of ch. 13] - the WHOLE PACKAGE of our godly love is given an opportunity to deal with ANYBODY (or with ALL MEN!

- And our godly love is **expanding** beyond merely situational things to where we are going to now learn, the “**KEY**” to making *judgmental* decisions as a son of our Heavenly Father—the “key” to how God Himself makes all the *judgmental* decisions He makes!

- And that “key” is going to be found in the growth & development of Godly Love & Charity that God has developed with our inner man by the effectual working power of His living words, living in us!

- And what you’re now going to ‘let in’ on here—is that godly love & charity can be used (and has enormous power to be used) to do a whole bunch of things—to do a whole lot more than to merely have a ‘warm feeling’ about others; or to be ‘nice’ to others; or ‘get along well’ with others!

- For example, that “love” is now going to have the capacity and the power to **confidently define** what “*ill*” is—and for *never working ill to your neighbour* (to anybody else)!

- But as a ‘first-things-first’ issue—our instruction of godly love has taught us how to deal with saints; how to deal with lost people; and now we’re given instruction for a more ‘global’ application (so to speak) - that, You’re love is now going to EXPAND and EXTEND to ANYBODY at ANYTIME that you’re dealing with in ANY WAY!

- And the sonship decisions you’re going to make when it comes to a “*judgment*” **are going to be LOVE-BASED DECISIONS!** (love, in the sense of the 5 Core Major Features of godly love that have been generated within you).

- And to just address the colon at the end of the 1st Clause—you need to **pause** here long enough for that to make the deep impact it’s supposed to make before you go on — the impact of being always and happily in debt—in debt to ALL MEN—knowing full-well what was freely and graciously given to you, and is designed to be freely and graciously given away by you, to others—and that the debt you owe all men is an expression of godly love & charity!

- 8 *Owe no man any thing, but to **love one another***: — with any honesty of dealing with this text (and those last 3 words of the 1st Clause of [:8]), you HAVE to recognize that this “**love**” being spoken about here is NOT being brought into existence for the first time; nor is it the first time it’s being mentioned—but there is a context in which it sits; and a frame of reference for it that’s already been established; and a way to define it that’s already been provided for!

- Otherwise, all you’re ever going to do is to superimpose the natural, worldly, fleshly, and un-God-like descriptions, definitions, and parameters on it—and by doing that, totally MISS-apply and misunderstand what you’re supposed to be doing in making godly sonship *judgmental* decisions in connection with your dealings with all men in general.

- Simply put—the “*love*” in (:8) is NOT what love means to natural (lost) men; or even to improperly educated believers — it’s “*love*” in the sense of what it means to GOD! (And by now, you, as God’s adopted educated son should have that **exact same** understanding and appreciation!)

- Godly love is DESCRIBABLE: it has 5 Major Core Features to it (Selflessness; Kindness; Merciful Tenderheartedness; Meekness; and Benevolent Goodness) ... that’s what it **is** to GOD!

- Godly love is DEFINABLE—it’s defined by God Himself—there are WORDS that define it and words that bring it into existence:

- Selflessness: *to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith.* (Romans 12:3)

- Kindness (Lovingkindness): *Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good.* (Romans 12:9)

- Tenderheartedness: *Distributing to the necessity of saints; given to hospitality.* (Romans 12:13)

- Meekness: *Recompense to no man evil for evil ... avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath ... Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers ... Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God.* (Romans 12:17, 19; 13:1, 2)

- Benevolent Goodness: *For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil ... do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same: ... For he is the minister of God to thee for good.* (Romans 13:3, 4)

- And definition-wise: That's what "love" means to GOD!!!
(at its fundamental core)

- Hence, the "love" being talked about in Romans 13:8 is described, defined, and **controlled** by the information sitting in Romans 12:3-13:7 — and that keeps it from being abused and misused and **confused!**

- And I might add ... (and the reason I'm harping on this) ... is that by keeping this issue of "love" within the bounds that God Himself has set—godly love (and what it is to God; and what it means to God) is also the thing that makes it a **threat** to this world of ungodliness; and to the Adversary—and what makes it oftentimes repulsive to the world at large.

- Because, while on the one hand (or on one side of the coin), you're going to treat your "neighbor" in godly love (and working no "ill" to him) - and the course of action you often take is going to be easily accepted in the eyes of all men in general—the truth is, the majority of the time, your godly love & charity has in view the **SPIRITUAL BENEFIT** and **SPIRITUAL WELFARE** of all men!

- Your interest is always in either the salvation/justification of the lost man; or the godly edification of the saint!
(not in a meddlesome type way or a rude and harmful type way [truth bombs] - but nonetheless, the motive/aim of godly love is to justify the lost man and edify the saved man!)

- And you can run into resistance, opposition, and even hatred with both types of men!

- Where the **lost** is concerned—how were you told about their response to God's love? (especially His **goodness**?)

3 And thinkest thou this, O man, that judgest them which do such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the judgment of God?

4 Or despisest thou the riches of his goodness and forbearance and longsuffering; not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance?

- Notice that God has done a whole bunch of really **good** things to all men—all of which are non-offensive, non-threatening type things: such as, He provided an entire creation; warmth from the sun; day and night; air; water; food; weather patterns; governments; a marvelous human body with a brain, a soul, and a spirit that allows us to add up the facts of all this creation ... which leads us to God, Himself! (the aim of His loving *goodness* was to lead those lost men to *repentance*!)

- And yet, in light of all that loving goodness to men, how do they respond to it most generally?

5 But after thy hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God;
(Romans 2:3-5)

- In light of all that God has revealed about Himself to the human heart (& His **loving goodness** to all men)—more often than not, men hold that revelation (that *truth*) in *unrighteousness* (Romans 1:18)! [men will shake a fist at God and deny even His existence! and reject His goodness and His love toward them!]

- Now where the **saved** are concerned—look at just one example of how they responded to the apostle Paul when he tried to provide corrective doctrine for their godly edification ...

16 Am I therefore become your enemy, because I tell you the truth? (Galatians 4:16)

- Now are there any question about this “Part 1” to the Godly Thinking for our *instruction of judgment*?

- Notice again how ‘open-ended’ it is—or how it provides a wide range of **judgment type** decisions to be made on your part (where you’re going to have to do a lot of thinking and

pondering and figuring out in connection with that simple statement: *Owe no man any thing, but to love one another*).

- So does that first clause make sense? and most importantly, has it made the deep impact it needs to make so that it both challenges your previous Thinking—dismisses the ungodly Thinking—and replaces it with the godly Thinking?

- And really, (even though the way the godly Thinking works here *does* challenge your previous thinking, dismiss it, and replace it with the godly Thinking) - maybe that's not the best way (or the most precise way) to say it here—because since this is the *instruction of judgment* — it's not that there is some radical & new information—rather, it's going to take what you've already learned, and give you the CAPACITY to do a whole lot more with it!!!

- If so, then we've paused long enough at the colon, and are now ready to move on.

8 *Owe no man any thing, but to love one another*: (Part 1)

Now for (**Part 2**) ... *for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law*.

- Why does God **have** to say that? Why is this 2nd Part necessary? Why does He bring up the issue of the Law and the 'fulfilling of the law'? (and, by the way, that IS talking about the Law of Moses)

- The answer lies in where that final Clause of (:8) takes your thinking! and why God wants your thinking to go there!

- Granted, the last time the "Law" (the Law of Moses) was talked about was back in Romans 10:4,5 — and that's not a bad place to go, because an issue is mentioned in that passage that has to do with what we are being directed to in this passage ... (and that is the issue of "*righteousness*" !

- But my understanding is that this is pointing you back further than that—back to something that you're supposed to be able to come along now and make some connections with what is said here in Romans 13:8, with an issue that was put into your thinking long ago, and is **always an issue** all throughout your sanctified, functional, sonship life!

- Now before we go back to look at where “Part 2” to Rom. 13:8 is directing us to go— I do want to say that my understanding is that there are 2 major reasons why God has Paul say what he says in this 2nd Clause of (:8) [*for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law.*]

- One reason is obviously that it allows us to have the issue of the Law brought up in our thinking—so that it naturally leads to the natural outlet for the Godly Thinking into the Godly Conduct & Behavior of (:9) - and there, God is going to have us relate the 5 Major Features of Godly Love to 5 particular Commandments of the 10 Commandments.

- But there is another reason for “Part 2” to (:8) — which has to do with something particular and something not as obvious—but something just as critical to our being able to make confident, godly judgmental decisions as God’s “son”.

- So, when you think of that phrase: *for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law* — and what I’m especially after here is that final expression: “*hath fulfilled the law*” — when you think about something God said to you about ‘fulfilling the law’ - where does that take your thinking to?

- It’s supposed to take your thinking back to what you were taught from the very beginning of your instruction in your SANCTIFIED Position “in Christ” - (really all the way back to Romans chapter 6) — but even more specifically, to **Romans 8:1-4!** (especially :4)

- And the reason for that is because you are to understand and appreciate that the “*love*” being spoken of in Rom. 13:8 (the *love* that you owe to all men; and the *love* by which you are to love another) is a **godly** “love” that’s been generated out from your **sanctified, functional life!**

- And you are to connect this issue of “*he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law*” to an issue that makes that kind of *love*, GODLY *love* — and by doing that, you’re to recognize and realize what it is that separates the *love* by which you love (as a properly educated son) from the ‘love’ of this world and the fleshly, ungodly and corrupt and distorted use of love that natural men (lost men) and carnal men (carnal, worldly believers) engage in.

... and that’s the issue that this *love* comes from your **sanctified** life!

... your sanctified, FUNCTIONAL life! (which should immediately bring back into your thinking what is the major difference between being ‘functionally alive’ unto God, verses being ‘functionally dead’ unto God!

- This “love” (and all of the Thinking, the Conduct & Behavior, and the Labor engaged in, in connection with it) ... is all a **GRACE function**—it’s all BY GRACE THROUGH FAITH! It is NOT in any way, shape or form the ‘energy of the flesh’ type works!

- And that’s why you have the remainder of the (:8)—that’s why you need to have that 2nd Clause (or Part 2) attached to the 1st Clause (or Part 1)!

... to ensure that we’re not suddenly ‘flying off the tracks’ into human energy of the flesh ... but this is all in perfect accord and perfect keeping with **godly sanctification!** (and functional LIFE!)

- And this goes to that issue that you were made aware of in the Pre-Doctrinal Exhortation in connection with your FLESH to ‘re-double’ it’s efforts (so to speak) and oppose your putting your Sonship life on display in the world ‘at large.’

- Because when you’re at the point where you’re going to be making *judgment* type decisions (where you’re going to have to ponder, and think, and figure out a path to take—and planning is going to go into it all—and in some cases, making provisions for the planning to get done is going to take place) - and when you’re at the point of making **independent** judgments all on your own (based upon the development of godly love & charity) — it becomes very easy to simply operate upon the “love” you learned from this world, and therefore for the working out of it all to be by means of your FLESH and not BY GRACE (i.e., all that God has made you to be “in Christ” sanctification-wise)!

- And so special care is taken here to make sure that you always recognize and always operate upon GRACE — (all that your Father has **done** for you [that you could not do yourself]; and all that your Father has **taught** you [the living words of the living God, living in you by FAITH]) — you operate upon **Grace through Faith**, as all of the doctrine that makes up your sanctified position in Christ works out in the details of your life as God’s son.

- Therefore, this godly *judgment* isn't just taking the Wisdom & the Justice of Romans 12:3-13:7 — but it's got in view ALL you've been taught about sanctification-wise, and giving it ALL the capacity to now make godly *judgments*!

- Sonship is NOT an isolated, category of doctrine that ends up being compartmentalized — rather, the whole of your sanctified position “in Christ” is INTERFACED and CONNECTED and has sense & sequence to it, and progressive development to it!!! (from Rom. 6:1 to here!)

- And when God has the apostle Paul say, *Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law* — that “Part 2” (or 2nd Clause) harkens us back to how our sanctified position “in Christ” was taught to us, and how we were taught to put that static position into living, walking practice in the details of our life.

- (see notes on Romans 8:1-4)

[the thing being driven at is that issue of +R righteousness! - the “*righteousness of the law*” = the righteousness of God Himself] (Therefore, the thoughts we think; the words we say; the works of our members are all by grace through faith—they are all *righteous* and acceptable in God's sight!)

- This second Clause (Part 2) of the godly Thinking for making judgments has the phrase “*he that loveth another*” - and that is impossible to be properly understood and properly handled without keeping the issue of godly *love* in the context God put it in.

- (without describing it and defining it as the godly love that it is—from Romans 12:3-13:7)!!!

- And the point is—that if you will love like God loves, **then you will ALWAYS FULFILL HIS RIGHTEOUSNESS!!!** (you will always do what is acceptable & well-pleasing to Him!)

- And what you end up doing is that you take those 5 Major Features of Godly Love and use them as a ‘filter’ (so to speak) - that is, you are to take those 5 Features of Godly Love and allow them to be what we ‘filter’ all of our judgments through as they relate to other people in order to come to the proper, right, best judgment (or path to take).

- This is where we can bring forth (and have work out from within us) “*the righteousness of the law*” — in that your godly love has developed to the point that you can make judgments that are perfectly consistent with God’s righteousness—and are therefore perfectly acceptable & well-pleasing to Him.

- And that’s a huge issue when you think about how that when Israel was under that law contract—Israel was given the law and told, “Do this; Don’t do that” — but they had NO POWER to produce +R in their own flesh!

- BUT! as members of the new creature of the church the body of Christ in this dispensation of the grace of God — we’re given the power and the ability (through the effectual working of our curriculum for our sonship education) to look at the details of our lives; the situations that we face; the opportunities before us, and make godly judgments that are absolutely consistent with God’s righteousness ... in fact, we even bring forth the very “righteousness” that the Law demanded, but couldn’t be produced!

- And I point that out because the truth of the matter is—you learned some things back in Romans 6, 7, & 8 that are often talked about; taught on; & made a big deal of ... but the POWER to DO what Romans 6, 7, & 8 are telling you you’re going to be able to do is rarely understood!

- And what I mean by that is—just being able to say that you are “dead to sin” and “alive unto God” doesn’t mean that you’ll automatically stop sinning and automatically live pleasing in God’s sight! And just being all those things **positionally** “in Christ” doesn’t mean that you automatically bring forth fruit unto holiness—but rather, your sanctified position in Christ is designed to be put into practice and to functionally live unto God.

- And the power to do that is what those first 13 verses of Romans chapter 8 are all about!

- And in connection with our being able to make godly judgments—we’re taught that bringing forth fruit that God can accept (which is to say, bringing forth the *righteousness* of the law) does NOT come about just because you’re sanctified and you now have the capacity to do it—but that capacity finds its power and fruition (here in Romans 13:8) when you’ve got Godly Love established to this point.

- And at this point—with those 5 Major Features of Godly Love established within you, you can now look at the details of your life, and make *judgments* that are consistent with God’s righteousness— (that are what Israel couldn’t do) - and you can now do it, NOT because God commanded you to do it, but rather because you Think just like God does, and you’re *Walking after the Spirit* and being *led by the Spirit*—which means you are operating upon the power that God generates within you by means of the effectual working of His word as you BELIEVE it ... it’s all done **by grace through faith!**

- And then you’re Living like God; and then Laboring together with God ... and the end result of it all is that you are *fulfilling the righteousness of the law* (it’s all compatible with God’s own righteousness) when you “*love one another*” just as God Himself loves.

- And now—with the effectual working of how you are to put your sanctified position in Christ into practice—and with just those first 2 decision-making skills of Wisdom & Justice — is enough instruction as a son, for you to start making Judgments that are “righteous” in God’s sight (because they are godly [God-like] judgments)!

- And as you anticipate (:9) - which is where the apostle Paul elaborates upon the godly love whereby we are to “*love one another*” — it’s important to once again recognize that the “*love*” being spoken about in (:8) is specifically **God’s** love that has been generated within you from Romans 12:3-13:7 (with it’s Selflessness, Kindness, Tenderheartedness, Meekness, & Benevolent Goodness).

- And if you don't know that, then you really don’t have any idea what Paul’s talking about here in Rom. 13:8! And this whole passage is going to be useless to you!

- You can NOT ‘fulfill the law’ by *loving one another* if you don’t love like God loves.

- For instance—if you asked 100 Christians what it means to ‘*love one another*’, you’d get 100 different answers—some would try to remember I Cor. 13 (from different Bible versions) - and some would just give you the standard definitions of what love is to them (caring, affectionate, putting other’s needs ahead of your own, etc., etc.)

... and some of the things they'd come up with may be good, and may have some correlation with the truth—but it's very doubtful that you'd get even one who would say, Well, at least by the time you get to Romans 13:8, there's 5 Features to God's love: it's Selfless, Kind, Tenderhearted, Meek, and Benevolently Good.

- And if you can't say that, then you really can't '*love one another*' like you're supposed to, and therefore, you can't make the proper *judgments* that you're going to have to make as a "son" with any confidence that you're making the best one or the right one as God Himself would.

- Here, we're receiving the instruction of Judgment—therefore, when it comes to '*loving one another*' and '*he that loveth another hath fulfilled the [righteousness] of the law*' — what we're learning here is NOT "how" to love like God loves (because that's already been established) - what we're learning here is that those 5 Features of godly love provide you the capacity to bring forth the *righteousness* that the Law demanded.

- And that's how comprehensive your ability to make judgments is going to be, if that's working.

- And coming up in (:9), God's going to give us a "*saying*" that, when you're faced with making a *judgment*, that "*saying*" will allow for it to be brought to your mind; and think upon the proper information; then make the judgment, and confidently know that, even though it wasn't black ink on white paper that said, Mark, make that decision in this situation — nevertheless, it's just as real as if it was God telling you what to do - you just made the best decision! And you have then '*proved what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.*' (that's not only "righteous" - but that's also godly!)

- Now does the Godly Thinking makes sense? Questions?

- THE GODLY CONDUCT & BEHAVIOR (:9).

For this, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Thou shalt not covet; and if there be any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

- **“For this,”** — the “For” is a further explanation and further amplification—Paul is now going to expand upon what he just said in (:8).
 - And this points up the fact that when the Godly Thinking of (:8) has effectually worked—it should now generate a desire for it to be put into practice in your Conduct & Behavior as a son.
 - In other words—(:9) is going to be the natural ‘outlet’ for the Godly Thinking to transition from your mind to your living, functional life (your godly conduct & behavior).
- And then Paul is going to quote 5 of the 10 Commandments.
 - And these are specifically chosen—there’s a reason why these 5, and not all 10.
 - And then Paul adds to that, the further issue of: ***and if there be ANY other commandment, it is BRIEFLY comprehended in this saying, ...*** in other words, it doesn’t matter what the commandment was—the truth is, that the righteousness of God is consistent with the love of God—and if you respond to a situation properly with godly love, you will have made the right decision (the ‘righteous’ decision).
- So Paul lists 5 of the 10 Commandments for a purpose.
 - And the 5 Paul lists are #6, 7, 8, 9, and 10—if you go back and check them out as God gave them to Israel back in Exodus 20:13-17 you’ll see they are the last 5 of the 10.
 - However, as God gave them to Paul to put here in the book of Romans—God has Paul reverse the order of #6 & 7.
 - The original order: “Thou shalt not”
 - 6) kill
 - 7) commit adultery
 - 8) steal
 - 9) bear false witness
 - 10) covet
 - But God has Paul put “*commit adultery*” first, then “*kill*”. (And there is a purpose & a reason for that).

- And these are the portion of the 10 Commandments that deal with ‘all men’ - [or more specifically, an Israelite’s *neighbor*], (outside of his immediate family—or ‘honouring father and mother’).

- Some talk about these 5 as being the civil code that formed the conduct & behavior of how Israel was to deal with all men as their neighbor in society at large. (and rightly so)

- And what is going on here—and why God has Paul list these 5 of the 10 Commandments—and why He has Paul flip #6 & 7 around—is because each of these 5 Commandments (in the very order they are given here in [:9]) are designed to match up perfectly as the antithesis (or in direct contrast to; or the exact opposite of) of the 5 Major Features of Godly Love in the very order that those 5 Features were given to us in Romans 12:3-13:7.

- You have *Thou shalt not ... commit adultery, kill, steal, bear false witness, covet.*

- And so my understanding is that these match up with the 5 Features of Godly Love ...

- commit adultery (antithesis of) Selflessness
- kill (antithesis of) Kindness
- steal (antithesis of) Tenderheartedness
- bear false witness (antithesis of) Meekness
- covet (antithesis of) Benevolent Goodness

- And because we have done the work to go back and refresh and remind ourselves of what is sitting back in Romans 8:1-4—we should be able to understand and appreciate that what is going on here is NOT just a listing of 5 commandments that are the direct opposite of the 5 Features of godly love—it’s not just teaching you “opposites” (so to speak) - but because of our review, we know that what is being driven at here is that you recognize a POSITIVE aspect to all this.

- Meaning, by laying the “Thou shalt not” of the Commandment over against the Feature of Godly love—you’re to understand and appreciate that the Feature of Godly Love positively fulfills that “Thou shalt not” **in perfect Righteousness!** (And done so all by Grace through Faith—without any energy of our natural flesh!)

RECAP:

- So we have a statement or a “charge” given to us in the 1st Part of (:8) - *Owe no man any thing, but to love one another.* (And while it isn’t directly said, it is acting as a “saying” [more on that, later]).

- And this is “Part 1” of your Godly Thinking in connection with making godly judgments in the details of your life in connection with all men in general.

- And this is designed to be an impressive charge—that is, it’s designed to make a deep impression by which we are to perceive that the real “key” to making judgmental decisions that are well-pleasing to God is to take what we’ve been taught in Wisdom & Justice—and more importantly, to take the Godly Love that has been developed in us all along the way in our education as sons—and come to realize that it’s going to be by means of that **Godly Love** that our judgmental decisions are going to be made and based upon.

- This ‘charge’ prompts your Thinking to say, I need to now gather up all the information I’ve been taught by my Father in regards to how He makes His decisions; and the **power** by which He makes His decisions—which is by those 5 Major Features of Godly Love that I learned about in Wisdom & Justice) - and now that information has the capacity for **me** to make use of it in all areas of judgmental type decisions!

- And if you think about it—everything you’ve learned in Wisdom, Justice, and the discretion they produced—can all be boiled down to just this one issue: LOVE (godly love)!

- And that’s why (:8a) doesn’t say, ‘Owe no man any thing, but wisdom and justice:’

- And so we’re at this point to recognize that the information we’ve been taught regarding godly love is designed to equip us to make sound judgments/decisions as to what we should do, especially when we are in situations where we have no direct instruction; or have no previous experience or frame of reference.

- But your heart may be a bit fearful or apprehensive that you’ll mess up (which is natural when you are just beginning to make these independent type decisions) - so Paul is going to set forth some additional information in (:8b and :9) that will remedy that and give you some godly confidence.

- So 'Part 2' of the Godly Thinking of (:8) hearkens you back to what was said back in Romans 8:1-4 as you began to "*walk after the Spirit*" and put your sanctified position in Christ into practice in **righteousness**—and here in Romans 13:8-10 is where the 'rubber meets the road' (so to speak) where, by the effectual working of the sonship curriculum so far, as you utilize godly love in making judgmental decisions, you are to have the confidence in knowing that those decisions are "righteous" in God's sight—because, just as (:8b) says, *for he that loveth another* (with godly love as it was just taught to you) *hath fulfilled the law* (i.e., fulfilled the righteousness of the law).

- And that then leads naturally to the information that has to do with our godly Conduct & Behavior which will culminate in that "saying" *Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself*.

- So really, what you've got here in (:9) [in the Godly Living aspect to our instruction of judgment] is:

1) An impressive statement that **verifies** the truth about that "love" that you are to *love one another* with—that is, it verifies the truth that when you do love another with godly love, you, indeed (or in truth) have fulfilled the righteousness of the law.

2) When it comes to godly love as the critically needed thing for us as sons to make judgments that are compatible with the righteousness of God, (:9) **validates** the power and effectual working of godly love to do just that.

- And therefore it gives you the confidence that when you make judgments based upon godly love & charity, you are making decisions that are in perfect keeping with your Father's own righteousness and are well-pleasing in His sight.

- But before we deal with the details of (:9) - we need to be reminded about some basic issues about the Law and the 10 Commandments, especially.

- (see notes on "The Tenor of the Law")

- (see notes on John 5:32-47)

- Now by the time you have received your instruction of Wisdom & Justice—and have had produced within you the 5 Core Features of Godly Love—those 5 Features of Godly Love are designed to effectually produce within you a strong concern for the “welfare” of others—(especially for the spiritual “wealth” or “welfare” of others)!

- Which makes a lot of sense out of why God has the apostle Paul list the 5 of the 10 Commandments that he does—because not only are those 5 the complete opposite of each corresponding feature of godly love—but those 5 are all dealing with or are concerned with ‘others’ ... with all men ... or to put it another way, with your *neighbor*!

- And that makes the statement (or saying or principle) of Part 1 of the godly Thinking the natural thing that it should be: *Owe no man any thing but to love one another:*

- And since Godly Love is now going to be the basis upon which you are going to make wise judgmental decisions in connection with your dealings with all men (just like your Father does) - you need to connect some things in your thinking so that you will have absolute godly confidence that your conduct & behavior (which is based upon your godly thinking) is going to be acceptable to God, compatible with God’s righteousness, and as you were made aware of all the way back in Romans 6— *even so now yield your members servants to righteousness unto holiness.*

- And so the law comes up, not because you’re under it; or are commanded to keep it to put your sanctified position in Christ into practice—but because BY GRACE THROUGH FAITH (i.e., by means of the effectual working of the curriculum for your sonship education) - as you operate upon Godly Love & Charity, you really ARE fulfilling the righteousness of the law.

- In other words, the righteousness of God is consistent with the love of God—and if you respond to a situation with the love of God, you will have made the right/righteous decision!

- Hence: (Part 2) *for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law.* (that is, fulfilled the righteousness of the law)

- Now, why is that so? and how does that godly Thinking effectually work out in our godly Conduct & Behavior? (Paul expands in :9)

- And as we've noted, Paul now quotes 5 of the 10 Commandments — and as we've also noted, these are both specifically chosen and specifically ordered so that they match up with the order of the 5 Features of godly love as they were produced within us.

- And these 5 Commandments are designed to not merely teach you the opposite of what godly love is—but more importantly, (and what you MUST get out of all this) is that each feature of godly love FULFILLS PERFECTLY the particular law that is it's opposite partner (so to speak!)

- Put simply, **godly love fulfills the righteousness of the law!** (And you've received that godly love because you've been *walking after the Spirit*, and being *led by the Spirit of God* as a son!)

- And that's where your godly sonship confidence is going to come from as you make judgmental decisions by means of the godly love developed within you! (You'll confidently know that your decision is both righteous and godly!)

- So let's look at these 5 Commandments and see how they match up with the 5 Features of godly love—and more importantly see how godly love fulfills the righteousness of the law—which makes your sonship decisions in the realm of judgment, acceptable in God's sight (and really even more than that!)

- ***Thou shalt not commit adultery,***

- And my understanding is that the exact opposite of that (or its antithesis) is: The 1st Feature of Godly Love: **SELFLESSNESS.**

- What is "*adultery*"? — violation of the marriage bed; a married person having sexual relations with another (married or not).

- In fact, this particular law of Moses has found its way into our laws—truth is, adultery is considered a crime—granted, it's so common today that it's almost expected—but it's still regarded as a legal basis for divorce.

- It's first used in Exo. 20:14—and under God's program with Israel, it carried the DEATH PENALTY (Lev. 20:10 [both the man and the woman!]).

- So the Commandment is: *Thou shalt not commit adultery* — and at the outset, maybe you can easily see how godly Selflessness is the very opposite of committing adultery ... or maybe not.

- And here is where our reminder as to how the 10 Commandments were designed to be like that “Well-Head” issue—with a whole bunch of underlying sub-issues (or ‘lesser’ acts) that are just as unrighteous as the ultimate act (or the “Well-Head” issue) is going to help out.

- Because you kind of have to think about some of the surrounding or underlying thinking that would result in *committing adultery* (or *killing*, or *stealing*, or *bearing false witness* or *coveting*).

NOTE: It’s not that you can’t see how some of the 5 Features of godly love could match up with one of the other 5 Commandments or even more than one of the Commandments mentioned here—but the point is that there is something specific about each of the 5 Features of godly love that is being driven at in the matching up of it with the particular Commandment listed. (Each Command is the epitome of what comes from UNRIGHTEOUSNESS in the heart!)

- So with all that in mind—what’s the underlying motivation in *committing adultery*? (lust??? yes, but more than that)

- SELFISHNESS!; self-centeredness; self-importance; self-absorption, etc!

- Adultery is: you’ve got a spouse that you belong to—and the only thing that would motivate you to go and have a sexual relationship with someone who isn’t your spouse, is because you are SELFISH to the EXTREME!

- (based upon **selfish**, fleshly desires!)

- And so it’s pretty easy to see that *committing adultery* is the very **antithesis** of being SELFLESS! ... it’s the antithesis of the characteristic of God’s love that’s supposed to be established within you!

- But what is absolutely CRITICAL for you to understand and appreciate is NOT merely that *adultery* is the opposite of selflessness

... or that the only issue here is how not to commit adultery! ...

... but the issue is that you have this negative Commandment that is consistent with the very Righteousness of God Himself—and what you have to understand and appreciate here is that **YOUR GODLY LOVE KEEPS YOU FROM DOING THIS!!!**

- And it takes into consideration all of the underlying sub-type-issues of the heart and how you choose and determine and judge to act upon those heart issues! (Because this is the “Well-Head” issue, it accounts for the whole range of issues underlying it!) [how powerful love is!!!]

- i.e., you don't have to be told or commanded “not to commit adultery” ...

- No one, operating upon the basis of Godly Selfless Love would ever commit adultery (with or without a Commandment) ... because it would be selfish! ... and your Selfless Love wouldn't allow you to do that!

- And the point is—(the point in each of these is) - that your Godly Love has developed to the point where you can live righteously and godly in this world—with Godly Love as the principle factor in making your judgments! (your **guidance system**)

- So therefore, the RIGHTEOUSNESS of the law is fulfilled in Godly Love (Selflessness).

- ***Thou shalt not kill,***

- (Setting aside the issue of Capital Punishment, going to war, defending yourself, etc.) — Both the Hebrew (ratsach) and the Greek word (phoneuo) = to kill in the sense of committing murder.

- Obviously, this is the antithesis of **KINDNESS** (lovingkindness).

- The motivation to commit murder comes from such things as hatred, disdain, cruelty, envy, jealousy, rage, etc.

- Killing someone is a decision to do “evil” rather than to *abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good*—therefore *killing* is at the **far end** of the spectrum of UNKIND BEHAVIOR!!!

- And therefore, with the Characteristic of Godly Kindness operating within you—you don't have to be Commanded "not to kill" - you don't have to be told "not to kill" —

— because as a properly educated son, if God's love is effectually working within you, your Godly Love would **prohibit** you from EVER "killing" or committing murder!

- That doesn't mean that you could volitionally override it—and make a free-will choice—but under the 'Divine Guidance System' of Godly Love & Charity, you WON'T commit murder: because lovingkindness "*abhors that which is evil*" - hence, it wouldn't go out and commit a heinous act of evil against someone!

- So therefore, the RIGHTEOUSNESS of the Law is fulfilled in Godly Love (Kindness)!

- ***Thou shalt not steal***, [klepto, Gk.]

- Usually, when something is *stolen* (or you steal something) - it's done secretly, and it's done dishonestly. [which tells you that something is going wrong in a person's **heart**]

- What is the underlying motivation of the heart for *stealing*?

- (note that there may be a whole bunch of motivations for stealing [and you can imagine both a so-called 'good' scenario and a 'bad' scenario] ... but my understanding is that either way, at the moment of the 'taking' (or the stealing) a particular thought is reached—or a particular 'line' is crossed.)

- And at the moment of the stealing—even in the face of the consequences—the mind says, I just don't care, I'm going to take it!

- And therefore, if you take all of the underlying sub-issues of the heart in connection with *stealing*—the whole thing can be boiled down to one basic, fundamental issue: A HARD-HEART; HARD-HEARTEDNESS—the exact opposite of TENDERHEARTEDNESS!

- (complete insensitivity to others!) [I don't care, I'll take it anyway]

- And sealing something from someone signifies in the loudest of terms: I DON'T CARE ABOUT YOUR NEEDS!

- And what was it that you learned as a son, when it came to utilizing Godly Tenderheartedness back in the curriculum for your sonship education?

- Rom. 12:13—*Distributing* (not stealing) *to the necessity of saints; given to hospitality.*

- At the core of Godly Tenderheartedness is a godly and merciful compassion that cannot overlook another's 'necessity' — tenderheartedness CARES about the needs of others.

- Stealing says, I **don't care** about the impact from taking from you (or your family). [stealing the "toys for tots"]

- By the way—stealing is also Selfish; and Unkind—but at it's core, it **doesn't care** about the impact upon the person, because the one doing the stealing is simply HARD-HEARTED to it all!

- You steal say, food, from someone else—even if it is for feeding your own family—however it may or may not be justified, the matter still comes down to: "I don't care if you're hungry, My heart is **hard** towards you—I care more for me and mine than I do you and yours."

- Therefore, *stealing* is the antithesis of TENDERHEARTEDNESS.

- And, again, if Godly Love is effectually working within you as taught to you by your Father—then you don't have to be told 'not to steal' - you don't have to be given a law or a command 'not to steal' — because your Tender Heart would NOT allow you to take something from someone else—in fact, your Tender Heart wants to "*distribute*" to a saint's need or '*necessity*' (not to take or steal from him)!

- So therefore, the RIGHTEOUSNESS of the Law is fulfilled in Godly Love (Tenderheartedness)!

- (By the way—where the Law is concerned and how we are to put our sanctified position in Christ into practice in righteousness “under grace”—do you see how things have progressed and developed from Romans 6:14-15ff? via Rom. 8:1-4 via Rom. 12:3ff and on and on ...)

... Godly Love, a divine guidance system for making judgmental decisions as a son!

- ***Thou shalt not bear false witness,***

- (or as it's stated in Exodus 20:16—*Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour.*)

- Notice that it does not say, “Thou shalt not **lie**” - although lying is certainly involved in bearing false witness—and God's word certainly deals with lying and liars.

- What is the difference, setting-wise or frame-of-reference-wise between simply lying and ‘bearing false witness’?

- That word *witness* (or *false witness*) puts the issue in a LEGAL or COURTROOM setting or frame of reference—that is, it puts it in a context of **JUSTICE!**

- (and by the way, it's in our *instruction of Justice* that the Major Feature of Godly Love that matches up with and corresponds with this Commandment was generated within us!)

- “*Bearing false witness*” while it includes the idea of lying—it's a LEGAL expression of uttering falsehoods in the giving of testimony; to testify falsely; perjury; unjust slander; false accusation and the like—and it can be done either in a courtroom situation (publically), or even privately, outside of a courtroom by lying about someone or spreading rumors, innuendos, character assassination and so forth.

- What's the motivation underlying (or behind) *bearing false witness*? (for doing such a thing as that?) ... if you think about it, at kind of the ‘core’ of the issue is the issue of such things as self-promotion; self-preservation; saving face! ... and one of the major, core reasons behind ‘bearing false witness’ is the issue of bringing **HARM** to someone else! (maybe physically, maybe not physically)

- And to make matters worse, *bearing false witness* desires to do HARM to another **even though they don't deserve it!** (which makes it an INJUSTICE or an unjust act).

- It's the issue of—I want to see some punishment doled out on you ... and I'm willing to lie about it, and make it out so that you're made out to be guilty and worthy of the punishment or harm, even though you're not! (you're innocent).

- So if we keep thinking a bit more about the underlying motivation for someone to *bear false witness* against someone else—we sometimes express it in such a way as: “He's out to get you!”

- And no matter how it's justified in the mind of the one bearing false witness—and no matter how warped his thinking is—in *his* mind, he's not only inflicting trouble on another person, but his thinking is one of:

- GETTING EVEN
- **AVENGING HIMSELF!**

- And where does that kind of terminology take your thinking?

- Romans 12:17-21 (1st & 2nd Component of Justice)
Recompense to no man evil for evil.
Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written Vengeance is mine; I will repay, saith the Lord.

- And that's where your Father developed that 4th Feature of Godly Love: **MEEKNESS**.

- And **Meekness** is the antithesis of *bearing false witness*.

- Where *bearing false witness* takes a course of avenging or getting even—Meekness is not easily provoked or irritated; yielding; given to forbearance under injuries; humble, submissive, and patient; unresentful under injury and reproach ...

- Meekness is the containment within yourself of your 'rights' to redress something because you would rather pursue a course that, for some reason, is more important/meaningful to you.

- Godly Meekness doesn't seek self-promotion or 'saving face' - it's not resentful and bent upon 'getting even' and 'avenging' ...

... and even in an instance where you could justly have the right to be 'avenged' or have the right to some sort of legal satisfaction—Godly Meekness would rather contain all that, and pursue a course of action that is bigger and more important and more meaningful than even your own right to be avenged!

- And, once again, you don't need a Commandment or a Law (or to be told) not to *bear false witness*—because the Feature of Godly Love of Meekness keeps you from ever doing that.

- And again—therefore, the RIGHTEOUSNESS of the Law is fulfilled in Godly Love (Meekness).

- *Thou shalt not covet;*

- (or as it's stated in Exodus 20:17—*Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's house, thou shalt not covet thy neighbor's wife, nor his manservant, nor his maidservant, nor his ox, nor his ass, nor any thing that is thy neighbour's.)*

- Now since we've only got one Major Feature of Godly Love left — we will see that the issue *coveting* is the exact opposite of Godly **Benevolent Goodness**.

- But we need to do a little bit more work on this one to see how they do match up (as opposite numbers, so to speak).

- Most generally, the word *covet* is defined as: intense desire; an inordinate desire (usually for something that someone else has [and you don't want them to have it]); LUST. (true/right)

- *covet* (and similar terms) all come from essentially the same Greek word: ἐπιθυμία (*lust*) ἐπιθυμέω (*covet*) = from “ἐπι” (an intensifier) + “θυμος” = to breathe violently; to be all in a **heat**; concentrated, intense desire & longing; lust.

- And *covet* does mean an inordinate, longing desire for what belongs to another. (that is, when used in its **bad** sense).

- By the way—(just to correct a mistake I made a long time ago) — the word *covet* can be used in a **good** sense—in fact, Paul uses it in a good sense a couple of times —

But covet earnestly the best gifts: and yet shew I unto you a more excellent way. (1 Cor. 12:31)

... covet to prophesy ... (1 Cor. 14:39)

- But when the word *covet* is contained in the Law as it is in the 10th Commandment—you're in a context in which the issue of *coveting* is **Ungodly**—and not only does Exodus 20:17 make that apparent, but such a passage as Psalm 10:3 does as well (*For the wicked boasteth of his heart's desire, and blesseth the covetous, whom the LORD abhorreth.*)

- Now just as we've had to do for the previous 4 Commandments—we have to kind of come along and utilize our understanding and appreciation for how the Law was designed to work in connection with the “Big 10” (the 10 Commandments) —

— and what I mean by that, once again, is how the 10 Commandments were to function as that “Well-Head” or Comprehensive Commandment to a lot of other related sins and ungodliness that lie underneath it.

- And the “Well-Head” Commandment (of the 10) is designed to be able to dig down to other issues of the heart and make them known to you—and that's what we're after.

- And you have to do this kind of work here (for all 5) in order to get down to what it is, specifically, that is being driven at so that it ‘clicks’ in your thinking just how these 5 Commandments are the antithesis of the 5 Features of Godly Love—and **more importantly**, how each of those 5 Features of Godly Love really do fulfill the righteousness of the law! (confidence in your Godly Guidance Sys.)

[because until you get that, you really haven't got the effectual working of Romans 13:9 sufficient enough for you to put it into practice in your godly Conduct & Behavior in connection with making sonship judgments in your dealings with all men in general.] ... in other words, you won't be able to effectually *love thy neighbour as thyself!*

- So what we're after here is to think about *coveting*—and what can be 'attached' to it (so to speak) that puts it in an ungodly sense.

- Because the word *covet* itself, fundamentally doesn't do that. Otherwise, it could never be used in a good sense.

- In fact, Paul puts an adverb on it to exult the idea even further ... *covet earnestly the best gifts* ... (no idea at all that *covet* is ungodly)

- So there's got to be a concept or an issue that's attached to *coveting* that, when it's attached to it, **that's** what puts it in an ungodly realm.

- And that's how it's being used when it's put in one of those Commandments in the Law.

- And that's the context here in Romans 13:9 ... but it's also used that very same way back in **Romans 7:8!**

- (read Romans 7:7-8)

- What we're after is that word **concupiscence**—because that's the concept that the apostle Paul identifies with **ungodly coveting!**

- Notice that Paul didn't say: *But sin, taking occasion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of 'lust'* (even though he used that word back in [:7]) ... or *all manner of 'coveting'* ...

- Therefore, Paul's understanding in connection with ungodly *coveting* is that the general aspect of ungodliness that is attached to, or belongs to, or underlies ungodly *coveting* is: **concupiscence**.

- And on top of that—Paul says that when he tried to take that 10th Commandment and put his functional life in Christ into practice, that it *wrought in me all manner of concupiscence*.

- Therefore there's a number of manners of *concupiscence*—and Paul says, "Sin took occasion by the 10th Commandment (*thou shalt not covet*) and wrought in me every sort of vile, disgusting, disgraceful, rotten ugly ungodly category of *concupiscence* it could!"

- Now the “*manner*” of *concupiscence* that we’re most familiar with (if you’re familiar with the term at all) - would be **sexual** *concupiscence*. [see **I Thessalonians 4:3-5**]

- (but that’s only 1 “*manner*” of it!)

- So to get to the ‘root’ issue of ungodly *coveting* (and to discover how it stands as the very opposite of Benevolent Goodness) you have to think about what *concupiscence* is in a more generic way than just sexual lust.

- *Concupiscence* = made up of 3 parts:
 “con” + “cup” + “science”
 con - cup - science

- The Latin Prefix “con” = together with, or running together with, or putting together with.

- The word “science” is easy enough—it’s the basic issue of “knowledge” or “knowledge acquired through study” — primarily empirical knowledge (derived from observation) - hence, it’s “sensed” knowledge, [which is why it ends up being associated with sexual *concupiscence*, because of the ‘sensation’ involved].

- But the real core of the matter is the “**cup**” concept.

- And as we learned back in Romans 7, that’s a short form for the word “Cupid” (the Roman god of love).

- Far from being the sweet cherub seen at Valentine’s day, Cupid was a raunchy, obscene and vulgar Roman god. The Roman cult of Cupid believed that he ruled as the son of Night and the son of Hell, and that he mated with Chaos to produce both men and gods. He’s often depicted as carrying two sets of arrows: one set gold-headed, which inspired love; and the other lead-headed, which inspired hate.

- *Concupiscence* came to indicate extreme inordinate sexual appetite—and could be applied not only to sexual lust, but to extreme, vehement, carnal desire **for worldly things in general**. [what we call today, hedonism]

- And the truth of the matter is: CUPID IS SELF LOVE!

- And the basic concept involved in *concupiscence* is the issue of **satisfying your self & your senses and pursuing that because you think or act like you DESERVE it!**

- And that's the core issue in ungodly coveting—you long for something or desire or lust for something—but you do it for pure self-satisfaction because you want to receive whatever kind of profit, benefit, and joy that you can get out of it at the expense of someone else (or to the ignoring of someone else).

- By the way—godly coveting is to long for something, desire something that's profitable, beneficial, and helpful at the expense of yourself, for someone else!

(which is why, at the end of I Cor. 12, in dealing with all of the body-type godly Conduct & Behavior as members one of another, they're told to "covet earnestly the best gifts" for the mutual benefit of every other member of the body—not for their own self-satisfaction, benefit/profit!)

- And now you should begin to see how "*Thou shalt not covet*" really is the exact opposite of godly Benevolent Goodness.

- The underlying motivation of *coveting* is SELF love (or *concupiscence*) - it's the issue of selfishly satisfying yourself and your wants and your desires and your needs over and above anyone else's.

- In other words, *coveting* is the issue of solely being concerned with, and doing everything you can to promote **your own welfare** (fulfilling your own desires and sensual pleasures) - and with NO concern for the welfare of others!

- And the 5th feature of godly love (Benevolent Goodness) is the issue of being concerned with, and doing everything you can to promote & administrate the Goodness of God Himself to/for the welfare of others! (Because you value & esteem them the same way God values & esteems them!)

- And again—ungodly coveting is the exact opposite of godly Benevolent Goodness—because ungodly coveting is the issue of

promoting your own welfare; promoting your own good; seeking benevolence to come to you (especially at the expense of others) - and only being satisfied when you're on the receiving end of it — but Benevolent Goodness seeks the promotion, the welfare, the benefit of others (even at the expense of yourself!).

- And what all these 5 Major Features of Godly Love are going to do now (in the *instruction of godly judgment*)—now that they've been brought into existence and are up and running well—is that they are now going to have the capacity to recognize, discern and identify anything what would be “*ill*” to your neighbour!

- And on the basis of those 5 Features of Godly Love effectually operating within you—you do NOT want to work any “*ill*” to your neighbour!

- And so what God is having the apostle Paul do in citing those 5 Commandments and matching them up with the 5 Features of Godly Love (not merely as the exact opposite of them; but how they validate and verify the reality that the righteousness of the law is fulfilled when you love another exactly the way God Himself does) - what gets accomplished in all that is that you now have in your possession the mechanical means (so to speak) for making every judgmental decision in connection with your neighbour.

- Therefore, any *judgments* you make on the basis of recognizing an “*ill*” and then determining NOT to do it—**amounts to a full-fledged decision made on the basis of properly developed Godly Love!**

- And therefore by taking the time to give you the information in (:9) about those 5 Commandments—you get the time to recognize the development of godly love within you; and you get to recognize that your godly sonship Conduct & Behavior with regard to godly love is going to be righteous in God's sight; and you gain the confidence in the ‘guidance system’ that godly love is and is going to ever be to you in your sonship life! (in making *judgmental* and even *equitable* sonship decisions)

- So you don't need to be told—you don't need a Commandment or a Law to tell you not to *covet*—because your Benevolent Goodness would keep you from ever promoting your own good at the expense of others (or to the harm and neglect of others)!

- Your desire is to promote and administrate God's goodness to others.

- And therefore, the RIGHTEOUSNESS of the Law is fulfilled in godly love (in this case, in the feature of Benevolent Goodness).

- And before we go on—I just want to point out just how **glorious** it is to be able to have godly love developed within us by our Father, and then to operate upon that as the means by which we make adult, sonship *judgments* (not only acceptable in His sight, but to His pleasure).

- And what I'm after here is that by setting these 5 Commandments over against the 5 Features of Godly Love—you need to realize that more than just being 'righteous' and acceptable to God's justice—those decisions you make in sonship judgment **are going to be GODLY!**

- Why? Because you're going to make them for the **same reasons** your Father would make them!

- It's not just the issue of being told/commanded to make the right choice—and the you make it ... but you're going to make the right choice for the right reasons!

- In other words—(for instance with "*Thou shalt not commit adultery*") ... you, as a son, are never going to not commit adultery just because God said not to do it in the 10 Commandments!

- No. as a properly educated son, you're not going to commit adultery **BECAUSE YOU LOVE LIKE GOD DOES** with GODLY SELFLESS LOVE and because of that, you would NEVER hurt your spouse (you'd never indulge in that selfish behavior)!

- Now in both cases (1) being commanded; and (2) loving like God does—the "right" decision is made—but only one of them can be considered "God-like" (or godly) — and you not only get to make the correct choice, but you get to make godly *judgments!* (and genuine godliness is able to take place in the judgments you make)

- And folks, that's what it's all about with the issue of godly edification—with being conformed to the image of Christ—and emulating your Father in all you think/say/and do.

- Any questions? Comments?

- Now in view of all that—(:9) comes to the issue of just how it is that we are to Conduct and Behave ourselves as sons in connection with our dealings with all men (especially our “*neighbour*”).

- Once the 5 Commandments are given—and once you've come to understand and appreciate them in light of the 5 Major Features of Godly Love—and once you recognize that the judgments you make by means of that Godly Love will result in the very righteousness of God Himself (fulfilling the righteousness of the Law) - verse 9 goes on to say ...

9 ... and if there be any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

- **and if there be any other commandment**—the obvious thing at this point (after citing 5 of the 10 Commandments) is that since those 5 are fulfilled in righteousness by means of Godly Love effectually working within you—then it stands to reason that you can apply that same principle to the **whole** Law (all 600+ laws).

- So Paul goes on to say—**it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely,**

- “**briefly**” = in a way that occupies a few words, concisely; — and the issue here is that even though it's going to be few words and concise, the truth is, it's **not** going to be watered down or diminished in the sense of forgoing parts of it, rather, the Law can be (and is designed to be stated in a single thought or statement). [actually, 2 statements]

- “**comprehended**” = most generally: to lay hold of, to seize, to grasp, to “catch” — also, to lay hold of with the mind, to take in—to **lay hold of all the points of any thing and include them within the compass of a description or expression**—hence, to embrace all the parts of something, but to describe it in summary form. (OED)

- Notice that it does NOT say, “briefly stated” - No—it’s to be COMPREHENDED! — in fact, most, if not all of the newer/modern/so-called better English translations have: “summed up”.

- Granted, the Greek word can be translated a variety of ways — however, (as it always is), the King James translators saw something in the CONTEXT that demanded that the word *comprehended* is the most excellent choice of all!

- And when taken together, “*briefly comprehended*” embraces the issue of summing something up (although even that’s not really precise enough for what’s going on here) - but by using the word “*comprehended*” the translators picked up on the critical nature of what is being stressed and emphasized by Paul in Romans 13:9.

- We’re **not** after merely summing up the Law into one nice, neat statement for Reader’s Digest (*thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself*) - [as if that’s the goal of this little exercise] —

— rather, what the context is after here is to drive home a ‘**catalytic**’ *saying* or principle that a properly educated son can put together with all that he’s been taught up to this point—and then by means of that *saying*, end up with a powerful ‘divine guidance system’ installed in his inner man that gives him the capacity to make *judgmental* decisions just exactly like his Father does!

- And that doesn’t merely take ‘summing up’ ... **that takes comprehension!**

- “Comprehend” is actually an advanced and intensified form of “conceive” and “understand” — (George Crabb) - “To *conceive* is to put together in the mind; to *understand*, is to stand under, or near to the mind; to *comprehend* signifies **to seize or embrace in the mind.**”

“Conception is the simplest operation of the three; when we *conceive* we may have but one idea, when we *understand* or *comprehend* we have all the ideas which the subject is capable of producing.” (Crabb)

- (Charles Smith) - “We understand matters of ordinary discourse and the practical business of life. To comprehend is to **embrace a thing in all its compass and extent**.

I understand the meaning of a word—I comprehend the action of a machine.”

- So because of the critical nature that this *saying* is going to be to you as a son—the excellency of your King James Bible tells you that this isn’t just a summing up that’s going on here—but it’s a critical statement that is given in the form of a *saying* in which it is to be SEIZED upon and **EMBRACED** in your mind to the extent that it become the Prince-Ruler or Governor of your sonship Conduct & Behavior in connection with making *judgments* about your godly relationship with your “*neighbour*.”

- So we have ... “*and if there be any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, ...*” — we’ll leave off dealing with the issue of a “*saying*” for now, and we’ll come back to it later on.

- For now, notice that God doesn't have the apostle Paul say: ‘and if there be any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself’ ... but He adds that word namely.

- “*namely*” = particularly, especially, **above all**—in other words, what you’ve got here is its own “Well-Head” type issue—that is, what is contained in the following statement is to be regarded by you as a son (vital for your sonship “issues of life [functional life]” in connection with the *judgments* you make)—this is to be regarded as the “HEAD” of it all.

- The statement, *thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself* is supposed to be given “Head-Ship” **above all** that is contained in the Law.

- It is the single issue that stands at the Head of it all ... and as such, it’s going to become a PRINCIPLE to you as a son—it’s going to be the ‘Prince’ ruler that so occupies your mind that it will govern all of your godly sonship Conduct & Behavior in connection with it! (you’re to give it ‘Head-ship’ position, judgment-wise)

- And what you've got here is 'emphasis upon emphasis' (so to speak) - because when you understand and appreciate what a *saying* is to God, and how He intends for it to be used in sonship education—as we will see), that's putting very strong emphasis upon this statement just by itself.

- But because you have that additional wording, ***in this saying, namely, ...*** the word *namely* puts even greater force on the statement that follows it and therefore alerts you to the fact that this is something to be given great importance and demands great attention!

- By the effectual use of it will determine your *judgments* and what path you take in connection with them!

(Corresp. Exhor.)—*Take fast hold of instruction; let her not go: keep her; for she is thy life. (Pro. 4:13)*

- Therefore, after pulling out the 5 Commandments of the 10 that match up with their opposite number Feature of Godly Love—then God says:

... and if there be any other commandment (in the same manner that the previous 5 operated and were fulfilled in righteousness by means of the effectual working of Godly Love—in that same manner, the entire Law operates that way), it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

— in this case, it's the taking of something massive (such as the Law of Moses as contained especially in Exodus through Deuteronomy) and reducing/condensing/distilling it down to a single statement—and doing so without LOSING anything that's contained in the massive information of the Law.

- Godly Love—with its Selflessness, Kindness, Tenderheartedness, Meekness, and Benevolent Goodness is comprehensive enough, that if you operate upon the basis of **it**—then that provides for the righteousness of Law/God to be produced within you as you *walk after the Spirit*, and to be put on display as God's living word works out in your living, functional, sanctified sonship life!

- Put simply, the righteousness of the law is going to be fulfilled **in you**. And that's not a ho-hum thing! — That's **stunning**—because the **righteousness** of the law is the exact same thing as the very **righteousness** of God Himself!

- Now before we go back and consider what a *saying* is—let's first of all look at the *saying* that is to take 'head-ship' (so to speak) in our thinking and work itself out in our sonship Conduct & Behavior in connection with godly judgments.

- It's a very familiar expression: ***Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.***

- Obviously, you're not left to your own personal preferences as to the kind of love, or the manner of love, or defining love, or describing it — no — the "*love*" here is specifically described and defined in those 5 Core Features of Godly Love (S,K,T,M,B/G).

- Now this isn't the first time this statement has been made in God's word—in fact, you're probably most familiar with it as being something the Lord Jesus Christ said during His earthly ministry—which would put it in God's program with Israel.

- And since that's true, and since we're dealing with the way in which the righteousness of the Law of Moses was and is supposed to be understood to be 'fulfilled in righteousness' - I think it would be good to do a little background work here and gain some appreciation for this issue—because it's an issue in BOTH programs (in God's program with Israel, and in God's program with us, the members of the church, the body of Christ in this dispensation of grace).

- And that's due to the fact that Justification, Sanctification (spiritual fitness), and Sonship are common to both programs. (Of course, God's business is entirely different and distinct; and the doctrine to accomplish His business is different and distinct).

- BACKGROUND: Matthew 22

- This is late in the Lord's earthly ministry—He's almost to the point where He will no longer deal with the vain, religious leaders of Israel any longer (concluding them in ignorance) - but graciously, He still gives them a few more opportunities to change their mind!

- In the last 2/3 rds of the chapter, the Lord is going to deal with 3 groups of Israel's vain religious leaders: the Herodians (a powerful religious-political party aligned with King Herod—and always trying to ingratiate themselves with Caesar), the Sadducees, and the Pharisees.

- All 3 of these groups (groups that would normally hate each other) are all coming together in order to destroy the Lord's ministry and ultimately have Him killed.

- And each group is going to haul out their 'pet doctrine' (so to speak) and attack the Lord with it in hopes of tripping Him up and exposing Him for a phony.

- (read :15) - They're going to attempt to trap the Lord in a kind of spider 'web of foolishness' in hopes that as the Lord responds to it and tries to talk His way out of it—that He'll just get tangled up more and more until He's kind of like a bug ensnared in a spider's web.

- First up are the Herodians (religious, but mostly Political!)
- (read :16-22)

- Next up to bat are the Sadducees—and they are a religious bunch who were convinced in their own minds that they believed and held to the Law of Moses—but like all the other vain/religious leaders of Israel, they had corrupted the Law to suit their own preferences.

- And to really understand the Sadducees, you kind of have to know a little bit about what heavily influenced them — and to get that appreciation, you have to think a bit about what had gone on just prior to the Lord Jesus Christ coming into this world.

- The Sadducees' pet doctrine (or cornerstone doctrine) was that there was no such thing as "resurrection" from the dead.

- And one of the main reasons they held to this was that they deemed themselves to be (while religious) intellectually enlightened (so to speak).

- And you have to understand and appreciate that when the Lord's earthly ministry takes place—it's in the 4th Install. of the 5th CoP—and Israel had just come out of that 3rd Instal. (**silence of God**)!

- And during the 3rd Instal./5th CoP—during the silence of God—that was a time in which God not only went silent and there was a famine of the hearing of the words of God in the land of Israel—but God also allowed something to take place during that time in connection with the wisdom of man.

- God allowed the wisdom of this world to go to its greatest lengths, and have its ‘golden age’ (so to speak) and see if it would come to know God and recognize the truth as contained in His word.

- Remember that this was the time in which the real ‘heavy hitters’ of Greek philosophy were living and having an enormous impact and influence upon the world.

- Socrates (469-399 BC)

- Plato (427-347 BC)

- Aristotle (384-322 BC)

- By the way—the apostle Paul actually points to this over in I Cor. chapter 1—and he tells you there that when man tried to find God and truth and wisdom on his own, HE TOTALLY FAILED!

- The wisdom of this world found nothing!

- But what did emerge was a heavy reliance upon human reasoning to the point that it became the ‘final authority’ and God’s word was no longer the ‘final authority’.

- And for the Sadducees, human logic and human reason of Greek Philosophy and greatly influenced them—they didn’t believe the Scriptures as the ‘final authority’ or the repository of truth—they operated upon the authority of human reasoning which led to the issue of human SCIENCE! (ala Hippocrates)

- So while the Sadducees were religious (believing there was a God, and held to a corrupted version of the Law) - they were kind of the scientists of the vain/religious leadership of Israel. (in only the most basic sense of it)

- And therefore they believed there was no resurrection, no spirit, no angels, and other things along those lines.

- They were greatly influenced by Greek philosophy and elevated advances in science and philosophy above the authority of the word of God.

- (read :23-28)

- Now remember that they don't believe in a resurrection—but what they're doing is attempting to present what they consider is a foolish situation that (if there really is a resurrection) is a “catch” or a “gotcha” or an insurmountable problem based upon something Moses said back in the law.

- The idea is that if a man married a woman and died before having any children, then his brother could marry her and raise up children unto his brother—which had to do with providing for a legal heir and for purposes of inheritance of his brother's estate. (which is in Deut. 25)

- But the Sadducees come up with what they think is an impossible situation to ever rectify (if there really is such a thing as a resurrection) - and that is that 7 brothers take the same woman for their wife because each previous brother died before having children—and even the 7th died before having children ...

... then the dilemma is: Whose wife is she when they all die and are resurrected? Because all 7 have a legal claim on her as their wife—and since none of them had a child with her, then none of them could say they had a better claim than any of the other brothers ... so, “gotcha”! (hee hee hee, snicker)

- (read :29)

- (They didn't expect to hear that!) — they are in great error because they are operating upon another authority—the authority of pure human logic and the human scientific method based upon Greek philosophy. (All of which is not only prone to error, but **highly** prone to error!)

- (read :30)

- And first of all they're in error because they *don't know the scriptures* — because if they went by the written word of God, then they'd know that in connection with the resurrection, a **change** takes place that makes what they proposed a “**non-issue**”!

- Briefly put—there will be no marriage at all in the resurrection because there will be no death, hence no need to deal with legal heirs for the purpose of passing on lands and estates to the next generation (there won't be a "next generation")!

- Notice also that the Lord not only straightens them out in terms of the scriptures—but also the **angels!** (which they didn't believe in, either!!!)

- Well, that takes care of their stupid/foolish question—but the Lord is going to go after that second issue of "*Ye do err, not knowing ... the power of God.*"

- Because what the Sadducees are thinking in connection with there being no resurrection is the preposterous idea that God doesn't have the power to do it (that's just not very 'scientific'!)

- And if God doesn't have the power to raise the dead, then He's pretty wimpy/powerless ... and it's pretty foolish and irrational to worship a god like that! (you Sadducees are morons!)

- (read :31-32)

- The Lord takes them to Exodus 3:6—(burning bush = the bush is Israel; the burning indicates the nation enduring the fire of trial, tribulation, and the PoE against them [attempting to consume them, but not being able to because of God's Jehovahness & grace]).

- The critical thing here is that issue of "*I am*" not, "*I was*"! - this was said to Moses long after Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob had physically died ... but according to God, **they were still alive!** (Therefore, *God is not the God of the dead, but of the living!*)

- And that just destroyed their 'trap' — it destroyed their erroneous thinking about the resurrection, the spirit, and even the angels!

- (read :33) - When the Lord teaches God's word, He teaches it as one having authority because He handles it as the final authority that it is—and when the multitude hears Him teach it, they're astonished at His doctrine because when He handles what is said back in Exodus, He handles it as the final authority on the matter—He knew exactly what

God said—and He believed every word that was said, and didn't try to make the word of God bow down at the throne of human wisdom and human rationale, and human common sense, and scientific dictates like the Sadducees did! (sound familiar??)

- (read :34)

- So now common enemies put their differences aside and come together to get rid of the Lord—so “out number one” [Herodians– the Lord just destroyed their pet doctrine]; “out number two” [Sadducees—destroyed their pet doctrine], and now up to bat are the Pharisees (combined with the Sadducees).

- (read :35-36)

- “*the great commandment*” doesn't mean the longest—rather, just as the Law was set forth (back in the *tenor of the law*) in those 10 Commandments, which functioned as that “Well-Head” in which a whole bunch of other related issues were down underneath it, and each of the 10 functioned as a comprehensive commandment (or the epitome of it all) ... well, there are actually other commandments that functioned that exact same way. (more than just those 10)

- And the Lord doesn't cite any one of the “Big 10” - but rather cites two comprehensive commandments that **stand above** even the 10 Commandments ... and really, stands above even more than that!

- (read :37-39)

- And then the reason the Lord bring up the second issue is because of what He's going to say in :40 —

- (read :40)

- What the Lord is saying here is highly significant if this lawyer and the others in the audience (the Sadducees, and especially the Pharisees who prided themselves as being Biblical Scholars and experts in the Law of Moses) - if they would just think about what the Lord is saying here when he takes these 2 greatest commandments and adds to that, *On these two commandments hang all the law **and the prophets***. (more than just the law)

- Why add “*the prophets*”?

- First of all ... *on these **two** commandments hang **all the law** ...* (by the way, notice how that this ‘lawyer’ who is supposed to be an expert in the law—he thinks that there’s only 1 great commandment—and to his surprise, there’s actually 2! ... which exposes the fact that he really doesn’t know how the Law was designed to work!)

- Everything in the Law—as far as all its commandments and everything it says regarding God’s righteous commands, laws, statutes, etc. can be summarized in these two commands:

1) *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind.*

- This ‘side of the coin’ of the ‘greatest’ commandments of all—this one (and “first”) command is the summarization of all that is contained in the Law that deals first and foremost with: **THE PERFECTION OF GODLY LOVE TOWARD GOD HIMSELF.**

- Note: This is not the first time this statement is made in God’s word — Deuteronomy 6:5; 10:12; 30:6 (Palist. Cov.!)

2) *Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.*

- This is the other ‘side of the coin’ of the ‘greatest’ commandments of all—and this one is the summarization of all that is contained in the Law that deals with: **THE PERFECTION OF GODLY LOVE TOWARDS YOUR NEIGHBOUR.**

- Note: This isn’t the first time this statement is made in God’s word either —

- It actually gets going back in Exodus 23:4-5.
- Leviticus 19:18; 19:33-34

- Again, everything set forth in the Law can be summarized in those two commands: Perfection of love toward God; Perfection of love toward your neighbour.

- And if my understanding is correct, this issue (and these 2 greatest commands) are reflected even in the arrangement of (and the sense & sequence of) the 10 Commandments themselves. (see chart)

- And when it comes to what Paul sets forth in Romans 13:9 — by the time you get to that point, the first issue (or first ‘side of the coin’) - [which is the issue of the perfection of love toward God], should already be well underway!

- And the truth is—the principle of both of these 2 greatest commands are **true** in BOTH programs! (and would be true if God had 1,000 programs!)

- Now let’s get back to that issue of why the Lord doesn’t just say, *On these two commandments hang all the law* — but He adds a ‘kicker’ to that when He says, ... **and the prophets**. (and this will help us out to understand and appreciate how the law operated a little bit better background-wise)

- If you think about how and when God raised up prophets in Israel—and more importantly, **why** prophets began to be raised up in Israel—you’d appreciate that the ‘when’ was following the giving of the Law.

- And that was primarily due to what the Law contract amounted to, and especially the courses of punishment contained in it.

- And Israel would begin to experience those 5 Courses of Punishment and all of their curses due to the fact that Israel was failing to keep the Law contract.

- But what is sometimes overlooked (or not paid careful attention to) isn’t just the sin and unrighteousness and evil doing that Israel was involved with—but rather, those punishments were coming upon them so that it would make so they would realize the obvious truth that they were **NOT** loving the LORD their God *with all their heart, and with all their soul, and with all their mind*.

- ... and because they were **NOT** *loving their neighbour as themselves!!!*

- Otherwise, they would be getting all those blessings of the Law contract, instead of the cursings!

- But because they signed on to that Law contract—and because sin, indeed, was an issue—and because they weren’t doing everything that the Law says—therefore, they knowingly signed on to undergo those 5 courses of punishment.

- And in view of that—God began to raise up prophets to Israel as they underwent those 5 CoP in order to set forth God’s indictment against them.

- And if you pay attention to the indictments that God’s prophets laid against Israel—(or that God, through His prophets indicted Israel) - all those indictments; all those accusations of sin; all those manifestations of wickedness; all those declarations of trespasses and transgressions—and all of that kind of business—were all accusations and indictments and declarations of offenses and failings and so forth **in connection with those 2 summary commandments!** (that’s why)

- And at times—the prophets would be indicting Israel for failing to *love the LORD their God with all their heart, with all their soul, and with all their mind*

- And at other times—God would be indicting them through the prophets for failing to *love their neighbour as themselves.*

- And here in Matthew 22—by the Lord responding to the Lawyer’s question in that manner—and then when they get together with the Pharisees and mull this all over and think about it all—if there is any vestige of honesty of heart there—the response ought to be that they truly have NOT done either of those 2 commandments!

- And when the prophets came along and indicted them as a nation for that—it included **them, too!**

- And when you go back and look at the indictment of the prophets—and their indictment against the Nation Israel—and especially when you deal with those prophets that were raised up and functioned during the 2nd Install./5th CoP — (before the 3rd when God went “silent”) - prophets like Haggai, Zechariah, and Malachi—the Lord makes it plain & clear as He addresses the leaders of the vain religious system (the Priests & Chief Priests, and others that later on became called Pharisees & Sadducees) — God made sure that they understood that they were included in that indictment of the whole nation—and for failure that can be summarized by BOTH of those “greatest commandments”!

(and incredibly enough, the Lord then gives them another honest opportunity to change their minds in Matt. 22:41-46)

- Now the reason why I've dealt with some background information concerning this issue of the saying "*Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself*" is to make sure that we **don't make the mistake** of thinking that the apostle Paul is saying that we, (as adopted sons and members of the church the body of Christ in this present dispensation of grace in which we live), are supposed to put our sanctified, functional, sonship life that we have "in Christ" into practice by utilizing the Law of Moses to do it.

- (Which, if by now, you have the effectual working of Romans 6:14-8:13 [especially], you would **never ever** think of doing such a thing as that!!!)

- So, at this point, there's no danger in that! right?

- So the issue for us now is to understand and appreciate WHY this saying is to be the BIG THING that it is—in other words, why does Paul bring a commandment from God's program with Israel under the Law into our dispensation of grace and set it forth as a "*saying*" which is to function as a catalyst that allows for us to make godly sonship judgments—and to be part of our 'divine guidance system' in making those judgmental sonship decisions in connection with all men in general.

- Why can godly love (in those 5 Major Features of S,K,T,M,BG) be put into a single saying (*Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself*) and why can we as sons in this dispensation of grace be sure and confident that when we operate upon that saying in our dealings with all men in general, that we are NOT operating upon our flesh and our fleshly personal preferences—but rather, are operating under grace and fulfilling the righteousness of the Law as we behave and conduct ourselves accordingly, and as we labor with our Father to *work no ill to our neighbour* by utilizing godly love as it is expressed in that saying?

- How is it that we can confidently operate upon a saying that, up until this time was a commandment under the Law of Moses in God's program with Israel without ever thinking that we have to go back under the Law of Moses to do it?

- And when you can make some critical connection here—you'll get a far better understanding & appreciation for the might and POWER that Godly Love is and will continue to be throughout your sonship life!

- As well as gain a better/advanced understanding of how Biblical godly edification is designed to work.

- In it's most basic/fundamental function—the Law was designed to make it so that IF (and that's a 2nd Class Condition “if” - [“if” and it's NOT true]) - if a person could keep it perfectly, a person could produce his own justification and become righteous in God's sight; and produce his own sanctification and become holy in God's sight. (and be spiritually fit for God's use).

- Justification: Deuteronomy 6:24-25

24 *And the LORD commanded us to do all these statutes, to fear the LORD our God, for our good always, that he might preserve us alive, as it is at this day.*

25 ***And it shall be our righteousness**, if we observe to do all these commandments before the LORD our God, as he hath commanded us.*

- Sanctification: Leviticus 11:44-45

44 *For I am the LORD your God: **ye shall therefore sanctify yourselves**, and ye shall be holy; for I am holy: neither shall ye defile yourselves with any manner of creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.*

45 *For I am the LORD that bringeth you up out of the land of Egypt, to be your God: ye shall therefore be holy, for I am holy.*

- But the big problem (of course) is that the Law demands your flesh in order to be put into operation—and when your natural, sinful flesh grabs hold of the Law, it makes sin and sinning worse, not better (as per Romans 7).

- But just as Romans 7 teaches, that's my fault: **not** the fault of the Law—(*Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just [righteous], and good. Rom. 7:12*)

- Wherefore the Law is the expression of God's own **righteous and holy** norms and standards.

- Which means that the Law is the **exact equivalent** of God's perfect righteousness and God's perfect holiness.

- And again, perfect righteousness (or Justification) and perfect holiness (or Sanctification) are the Two essential requirements for a person to be spiritually fit in order to be utilized by God in His service and in His business.

- And this is true either under the Law in God's program with Israel, or under Grace in God's program with the body of Christ today!

- And my understanding is that what you are supposed to perceive (as you look back upon all the doctrine you've been taught—and as you gain a better appreciation for how the Law was designed to function) — is that whether it's under the Law or under Grace, **the whole issue of spiritual fitness “hangs” upon Godly Love and Charity!**

- In fact, you could say that all of Godly Edification “hangs” upon Godly Love and Charity! (regardless of what program you're in)!

- And so what you should be expecting to see take place is that somewhere in your godly sonship education, your Father is going to set out to produce His very own Love in your heart.

- And one side of it (so to speak) will have to do with the development of the perfection of love towards God Himself—and the other side of it will have to do with the development of the perfection of love towards your neighbour.

- Because, if you: 1) *Love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind ...* and 2) *Love thy neighbour as thyself ...* then you have fulfilled the righteousness of the law (because **ALL** the Law “hangs” upon those 2 things!)

- And that's **briefly** the way in which spiritual fitness gets accomplished—and how godly edification gets accomplished:
1) Perfection of love towards God; 2) Perfection of love towards your neighbour.

- And for us as members of the new creature of the church the body of Christ in this present dispensation of the Grace of God—the perfection of love towards God has gotten underway from Romans chapter 1 through chapter 11; and the perfection of love towards your neighbour has gotten underway in our Sonship Education from Romans 12:3 and following.

- And although the perfection of love towards God has already gotten underway from Romans 1 and following—it's not that it is finished by now, but it's going to continue going on through the Curriculum for our Sonship Education until it gets 'perfected.'

- You're going to learn to love God for a whole lot more reasons than you do right at this moment!!!

- This first issue of the Perfection of love towards God gets pointedly addressed in Romans 8:28—and then Paul deals with the Corinthians about their **lack** of loving God over in I Corinthians chapter 8—and then in II Timothy, Paul teaches that one of the hallmarks pertaining to the evolution of man’s ungodliness as this present dispensation of grace continues on, is that of Christians themselves becoming “*lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God.*”

- But since the Curriculum for our Sonship Education is now (in Romans 13:8-10) focusing upon the development, growth, and perfecting of Godly Love & Charity towards our neighbour—it can, (as Paul says), be *briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.*

- And the great thing that you can do by now—is to look back through the doctrine you’ve been taught—and comprehend how it is that GRACE has made it so you can Think, Live, and Labor (and do “good works”) unto God’s honor & glory, and to His pleasure ... not by means of the Law and Law-keeping—but by Grace through Faith!

- And you can know that doing “good works” (as Paul says in Eph. 2:10, *For we are his (God’s) workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto **good works**, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.*) — you know, therefore, that doing “good works” is NOT legalism; it’s NOT going under the Law; and it’s NOT inconsistent with GRACE in any way!

- And you can confidently know that, because you can make all of the proper “**connections**” with the doctrine you’ve been taught since you got the doctrine of your Sanctification underway—(in other words, you’ve got some real Sanctification intelligence!):

CONNECTIONS:

- Romans 5:20 ... But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound:
- Romans 6:4 ... even so we also should walk in newness of life.
- Romans 6:14 ... for ye are not under the law, but under grace.
- Romans 6:19 ... for as ye have yielded your members servants to uncleanness and to iniquity unto iniquity; even so now yield your members servants to righteousness unto holiness.

- Romans 6:22 ... But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.
- Romans 7:24, 25 ... O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death? I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. ...
- Romans 8:1 ... There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.
- Romans 8:4 ... That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit
- Romans 8:6 ... For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life [functional life] and peace.
- Romans 8:11 ... But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.
- Romans 8:13 ... For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live.
- Romans 8: 14, 15 ... For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God. For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear, but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.
- Romans 12:3-13:7—(the production, growth, and development of Godly Love in those 5 Major Features: S,K,T,M,BG)

- And when you can make all those “connections” - you can really begin to understand and appreciate in a far more deep and meaningful way what it means to be **UNDER GRACE!**

- Being “under grace” is NOT merely the issue of being able to “rightly divide the word of truth” — it’s FAR MORE than knowing “Time Past” “But Now” and “To Come”!!!!!!!

- You kind of get the idea of why Paul was so ecstatic and ‘fired up’ there in Romans 11:33 when he said, *O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding out!*

- And folks, all this is another advance in the understanding and appreciation of how godly edification works! And it produces a deep understanding and appreciation for the POWER of Godly Love & Charity!!!

- Now that we've gained a sufficient understanding and appreciation (or 'sonship intelligence') for this "*saying*" (*Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself*) — and **why** it is the **powerful thing** that it is — powerful enough so that it can come along and **regulate your Conduct & Behavior** (by Grace through Faith) in making judgmental sonship decisions in connection with how you respond, react, and relate to all men in general—the final thing to do (in dealing with our Godly Conduct & Behavior in [:9]) is to recognize what it means for our Father to give us this 'catalytic' type statement in the form of a "*saying*".

*9 ... and if there be any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this **saying**, namely, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.*

- As we've noted before—one of the reasons why Romans 13:8-14 is so often mishandled, or poorly handled is due to the lack of appreciation for the Sonship Curriculum in general (that this section is dealing with an adopted son receiving *the instruction of Judgment* as the 3rd of 4 fundamental sonship decision-making skills) ... but more than that, there is oftentimes a failure to appreciate the very fact that instruction in *judgment* has a **different nature** to it (than the instruction of Wisdom or Justice).

- Acting as that 'catalyst' - our instruction in *judgment* is going to take a relatively **small** amount of information and put it together with all that we've already learned, and all the godly edification that has now taken place within you—and it's got the capacity to produce within our minds "principles" that we are to install in our understanding — that, because they are "principles" (based upon the word "Prince"), they produce within our minds an upright, upstanding, and outstanding Ruler to whom you look to for **guidance**! (That 'divine guidance' system)

- And these *sayings* are going to act so as to give us 'points/posts of guidance' - and for evaluating potential 'paths' - and for taking the previous instruction of Wisdom, Justice, and Godly Love—and incorporate all that information, and utilize it in a more powerful way than we've ever utilized it before.

- First of all—notice carefully the terminology: Up to this point, that statement "*Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself*" has been called a "*commandment*" - and rightly so since it was made to be part of the Law of Moses under the Old Covenant.

- However, since we are not under the Law, but under Grace as the means for putting our sanctified, functional sonship life into practice — and since Godly Love & Charity is the means by which we are going to make *judgmental* decisions in our Conduct & Behavior towards all men in general—and since the *instruction of Judgment* has this different nature to it — then God has reason to change the terminology to perfectly fit both our being members of the new creature of the church the body of Christ in this present dispensation of grace; and to perfectly fit Sonship Education in connection with the nature of *the instruction of Judgment!* (What accuracy!)

- Therefore, we are not being given a ‘commandment’ as if we’re under the Law—but we are given a “**saying**” - and there’s something very **significant** about a *saying* to a properly educated son!

- When you look up the word *saying* in a dictionary (or in a dictionary of Synonyms [in order to get the shade of meaning of the word]) ...

- **Webster’s 1828** = “an expression; a sentence uttered; a declaration; a proverbial expression.” (not much help there)

- **OED** = an utterance, enunciation; recitation. Something said by a more or less distinguished person, an apophthegm, a dictum. Something commonly said; a proverb. The remarks of a person considered collectively. (not much help either)

- **George Crabb** gives a little more light on the subject:
— A *saying* is something that is said habitually.

- it’s the expression of a given sentiment.

- “sentiment” = (usually & most generally we think of a *sentiment* in only 1 way: the expression of one’s personal **feelings**) - however, while it does have to do with how a person ‘feels’ about something - the truth is that the word *sentiment* is an expression of a person’s **mental attitude**—of a person’s **attitude of either approval or disapproval**—it expresses a person’s view as to what is right or agreeable or ideal. (which naturally engenders emotion)

- a *saying* is a pointed sentiment pronounced by an individual, and **adopted by others**.

- (interestingly, Crabb notes that “a *saw* is a barbarous corruption of a *saying* current among the ignorant!”)

- a *saying* always carries the mind back to the one speaking!

- there is always one who speaks a *saying*—and there is always as much value and esteem placed upon the one who utters it, as much as on the *saying* itself! [end Crabb]

- And what we’re dealing with here is a *saying* of **GOD** our **Heavenly Father**—**NOT** of some stupid immoral philosopher who ends up committing suicide!!!

- Now when you look at the word *saying* only from a “word study” - or from a Dictionary definition (or even a Synonym Dictionary to get its shade of meaning) - in this case, you really don’t get much help.

- So you really can’t understand or appreciate **why** our Father gives us a *saying* here (to govern our Conduct & Behavior) simply by doing a word study on it—in fact, you will never find the meaning of a *saying* in the way in which it’s being used here in Romans 13:9 in any dictionary (English or Greek)!

- So what you have to do in this case is to find out from the word of God itself what a *saying* means to God Himself ... and what it means in the context of Sonship Education!

- And the reason why I’m making such a big deal out of this is because in Sonship Education, this is one of those “leaving home for good” matters that I often talk about.

- That is, with the *instruction of judgment*, you have reached a point where the nature of how you’re going to be taught by your Father makes a pointed “shift.”

- At the point of having received the instruction of Wisdom and the instruction of Justice—a shift takes place whereby as a son begins to be taught the rest of his Level I Sonship Education ... the father begins to utilize a method of teaching his son by way of giving his son some *sayings*—and those *sayings* are very powerful & power/capacity-producing things!

- And a son is supposed to perceive the power and the capacity that his Father's *sayings* are to him—they are matters that are critical to the success of his functional life **from now on!**

- So let's get a sufficient understanding & appreciation of what a *saying* is in connection with our Sonship Education.

- You're first alerted to the fact that you're going to be handling the information contained in the *instruction of Judgment* a little bit differently than you've handled the *instruction of Wisdom & Justice* in the corresponding Exhortations & Expectations to the *instruction of Judgment*.

- Proverbs 4

- The first 9 verses are the Fatherly Exhortations to His son as He and His son evaluate the son's education so far—and are given at that Sonship Checkpoint that we went over a prior to beginning our *instruction of Judgment*.

- Then (:10-13) form the Pre-Doctrinal Exhortation to receiving the 1st Component of the *instruction of Judgment*.

- Then (:14-19) form the Post-Doctrinal Exhortation after the 1st Component has been received.

- Then (:20-22) is the Pre-Doctrinal Exhortation to receiving the 2nd Component of the *instruction of Judgment*.

- And finally, (:23-27 especially, but also going on in chapter 5:1-6) are the Post-Doctrinal Exhortation after receiving the 2nd Component of the *instruction of Judgment*.

- And if you notice in the beginning of both the Pre-Doctrinal Exhor. to the 1st Component; and the Pre-Doctrinal Exhor. to the 2nd Component—in other words, in (:10), and in (:20) — you have, for the very first time since the Sonship Education has gotten underway, that word “*sayings*” ...

10 *Hear, O my son and receive my sayings; and the years of thy life shall be many.*

20 *My son, attend to my words; incline thine ear unto my sayings.*

- And it's no random accident that you have the apostle Paul saying there in Romans 13:9 ... *and if there be any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this **saying**, namely, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.*
- Because that word *saying* is supposed to match up with the Fatherly Exhortations to His son—that now, in the *instruction of Judgment*, the teaching is going to be based upon some sayings (and what those *sayings* have the power/capacity to do)!
- And Paul doesn't want you to treat that expression, *Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself* as a “commandment”—he wants you to treat it as a **saying**! (it can function as **both**!)
- And when you're dealing with *the instruction of Judgment*, you're dealing with some *sayings*—with information contained in the form of a *saying* (or more than one *saying*).
- And one thing that a properly educated son knows how to do—is how to deal with his Father's *sayings*.
- Because in Sonship Education, a *saying* isn't just treated merely as a pithy sentiment of his Father—or as a ‘Christian Slogan’ (that never accomplishes anything except to make bumper-sticker makers rich)!
- So we need to know what a *saying* is to God, and how He expects us to deal with a *saying*.
- (Note that a *commandment* is easy—you simply do what is said. But a *saying* is going after far more than simple obedience to a command!)
- My understanding is that when it comes to the Biblical understanding for the way in which God Himself uses a *saying*—especially in the education of His sons in making godly judgments—by the time you get to God giving you a *saying*, that *saying* stands at the end of an awful lot of issues that have been taught and understood by both Father and son—and therefore that *saying* has some strength and some capacity to it because it's not just some ‘cute-sy’ slogan, rather, it is the expression of the outcome of a whole bunch of doctrine!

- And the *saying* indicates to the son how the doctrine he's leaned can now be utilized—and how the Father intends for it to be **worked out** in the son's functional life—especially in making wise *judgments* in connection with others!

- (How do I know that? well, even though Paul gives it in a *saying* form, remember that the expression *Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself* was a **commandment** contained in the Law!)

- So if we can find a place in God's word where He indicates how it was that He composed the Law and **constructed** the Law—then we may find some indication as to how a *saying* works.

- **Psalm 119** — composed in 22 8-verse sections that follow the Hebrew alphabet—contained in Book V.

- The Remnant is instructed here in the way in which the Law is constructed—and basically, they are taught how they are going to be able to utilize the Law when God resumes His program with Israel.

- And God wisely, and ingeniously constructed the Law so that He could make full use of it—and do with it in all its various functions what He wanted and needed to do with it at every point in His Prog/w/Isr.

- And the members of the Remnant of Israel are the ones who are going to get instructed in all God's genius of how He constructed the Law to the hilt—because they're going to be the ones who take the Law as it will exist during the Kingdom, and proclaim it to the ends of the earth (as it says back in the preceding Psalms).

- (1st Section— :1-8)

- When it comes to the “instruction” section or aspect of the Law, they are made up of those components listed here.

- And my understanding is that one of the things mentioned here is the beginning of a *saying* ... (:4), that term “*precepts*”

- A *precept* is generally the beginning of a ‘concept’ - (and a concept is a putting together of all of the ‘cepts’ [= a thing laid down in the mind].

- And when you string a bunch of concepts together, one of the things you can make out of them is a *saying* (or *sayings*)!

- And that's why, when you're over in the book of Isaiah (28:10-13) - you have God indicting the apostate element in Israel as to their failure to be taught properly (in contrast to the members of the Remnant of Israel), and their failure to teach the Law properly—and their making a mockery out of the issue of: *“precept, upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little”*

- (That's how God designed the Law to be taught)

- And that's a bit of an insight into the **construction** of the instruction ministry of the Law.

- And the truth of the matter is, God has constructed our Sonship Education, too!

- The instruction of our Sonship Education is fully **constructed!** (and I know you know that by now)

- We know the general sense & sequence to Romans through Philemon—and we know the general format for our education as sons—and the various forms of doctrine that make up the various Levels (and Phases to the Levels) and so forth.

- But all I'm after in all this, is to point out (and to give you a small taste) of how God views a *saying*—and what all goes into a *saying* **from God's perspective.**

- And it's not just merely a short, pithy slogan—rather, it has some real might and power and capacity to it, because to God, His *sayings* are **constructed** from a great deal of sound doctrine! (the point being, they are CONSTRUCTED!)

- And because of how the godly edification has been taking place, we're able, therefore, to come to a point where we're able to deal with a section of it that's going to contain its information in these *sayings*.

- And what I'm after is that you understand & appreciate that a *saying* (or *sayings*) can only be properly handled when you have first of all learned and attained the effectual working of the precepts and the concepts [*line upon line*] and then the Form of sound doctrine—then you're finally ready to handle one of your Father's *sayings*!

- To God, since He **constructs** a *saying* (or **composes** a *saying*) - it's much like that 'proverbial onion' that can be peeled back, and there's more and more layers to it every time you peel back one layer.

- And I'm saying it that way just to get across to you that a *saying* has the capacity to be utilized at first down to the first layer of the 'onion' (so to speak) - but then, you realize that it's got far more capacity than that—because it's been designed to be utilized deeper and deeper (or in many more ways) than what it was at the first!

- And the *saying*, "*Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself*" is just like that! (and we'll continue using it in Equity and on and on ...)

- And godly sonship judgments will having you taking this *saying*, and at first, you'll perceive one or two uses for it—but as time and circumstances present themselves, you'll 'peel it back' some more (so to speak), and you'll perceive even more uses for it in more and more situations. (even on though Level I & II & III)

- (now, if we've got that much understood, then we've accomplished a great deal in getting to what a *saying* is to God, Himself).

- Therefore we can get a **working definition** of what a *saying* is to God, and how it is to be understood as a part of the Curriculum for our Sonship Education—especially in connection with making decisions as a properly educated son in the area of *judgments*:

- And remember that back in the corresponding Exhortation (after you have received the Wisdom and the Justice), and prior to receiving *the instruction of judgment*, you have that expression, "*keep sound wisdom and **discretion***" - and *discretion* alerts you to the fact that you're now moving out of 'black & white' issues into more 'grey' areas where you have to have a greater measure of increased keenness and insightful perception when it comes to making a decision—and yet make that decision with confidence and soundness and conviction that it's a right decision to make in areas where you're not dealing with simply right & wrong—but wise against foolish; good, better, or best; or wise against wiser, or wiser against wisest, and so forth.

- A *saying* is a briefly stated body of information that, by what it says, is designed to work with all that you have previously been taught—and provides for the capacity to produce critical insight; keen and sharp perception; and sound guidance in connection with judgmental decisions that are complex and demand pondering of the issues and factors involved in your decision.

-(THIS IS MOST CRITICAL OF ALL)!

- In other words—a *saying* is designed to so work with all that you have previously been taught in order to produce at least one Main Operating **Principle** (and sometimes more than one) to which you look to, for guidance. (in your decision-making)

- Note that a *saying* is NOT a ‘summary statement’ of a body of doctrine—rather, it’s a statement that’s designed to **provoke** [as a **catalyst**] a properly educated son to **perceive** the outworking of a body of doctrine (or doctrines) - [or of a Form or Forms of doctrine] unto a multitude of godly applications for a multitude of situations & circumstances!

- And to have a Principle/Principles that guides & rules his decisions—(that’s where the ‘godly guidance system’ comes from: a *saying* and the Principle/Principles that emerge from it!!!)

- Working Definition of a Sonship Saying:

A *saying* composed by God is a briefly stated body of information that, by what it says, is designed to so work with all that you have been taught, in order to produce one or more main operating Principles, which in turn, provides you the capacity for keen, sharp, critical insight & perception and sound godly guidance in making judgmental decisions that are complex and demand *pondering* of the many issues and factors involved in your decision—and will continue operational both now, and for the remainder of your sonship education.

- Now the way in which this directly pertains to what we have in Romans 13:9 (and really on through :14), is that it gives us the ability to realize that what we’ve got in this body of information (especially in the *sayings* that we have given to us):

- In (:9), “*Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself*” is a concise or *brief* statement that is given to us by our Father—and our Father knows what He’s doing at this point (He’s not just showing off His skill to ‘turn a phrase’ [so to speak])—He knows that His son has been properly taught what he needs to have been taught in order for this *saying* to be **meaningful** and **powerful** in making sonship judgmental decisions (in other words, it’s something far more than just a catchy slogan);

- and the Father knows that His son has been ‘intelligized’ (so to speak) by what he has been taught in the Curriculum so that His son will now sufficiently *comprehend* this *saying* and perceive the Main Operating Principle that comes from it;

- and He knows and expects that His son can now take the *saying* and the guiding Principle and utilize it as a powerful ‘guidance’ mechanism—and (in keeping with a what a *saying* is to Him), the Father knows that the son will value and esteem the *saying* just as much as he values & esteems the Father, hence this *saying* will have a MAJOR impact upon the son, and it will have MAJOR **usefulness** to the son. (does it?)

- Any questions as to what a *saying* is—or how it’s designed to work?
 Does the Godly Conduct & Behavior make sense?
 Any comments?

- THE GODLY LABOR (:10)

10 Love worketh no ill to his neighbour: therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.

- Now about this time, you’re probably wondering—if “*Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself*” is the “*saying*” ... then just exactly what is the Main Operating Principle that emerges from that saying? (especially in connection with how I am [as a properly educated “son”] to make critical & keen **judgments** in connection with all men in general (and in connection with my “*neighbour*” particularly)?

- Well, in this case, the apostle Paul actually tells you what the Main Operating Principle is to the *saying*, *Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself* ... he tells you what the effectual working of those 5 commandments he purposefully cited do when you turn them into this *saying*—they produce a particular Main Operating Principle ...

... it's what is said in the first part of (:10) ...

Love worketh no ill to his neighbour: (7 words) — and that colon tells you to pause long enough to get the effectual working of that first Clause before going on to the final one.

- The Main Operating Principle of the saying, “*Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself*” is: ***“Love worketh no ill to his neighbour:”***

- The whole issue in the principle that you're going to operate upon in making these sonship judgments—is the issue of ***“ILL”***!

- The effectual working of all of those 5 Features of Godly Love that are supposed to be in operation by the time you get here—(and in connection with when you get here) — make it so that you've got the capacity to discern anything that qualifies for being ***ILL***!

- Notice carefully what the verse does NOT say—it doesn't say, “A good Christian worketh no ill to his neighbour” - or, “Don't work ill to your neighbour” - or even, “A loving person doesn't work any ill to his neighbour” (which is often how this is taken) ... no

- It says, ***“Love”*** — ***“Love worketh no ill to his neighbour”***

- This is a Principle that directly focuses upon “love” - but not just any old natural love—it focuses upon GODLY LOVE ! (as it's just been taught and generated within you in the curriculum for Sonship Education!

- Selflessness, Kindness, Tenderheartedness, Meekness, and Benevolent Goodness—all give you the capacity to determine whether something is “*ill*” ... or not!

- And once you have come to the point where you can make a godly determination whether something is *ill* ...

... then the Principle is: do NOT work it towards your neighbour!

- And if you determine that it's NOT *ill* ...

... then the Principle is: go ahead and work it!

- Now before going on and dealing with the details of that little (but tremendously important) word “*ill*” — let’s make sure that we understand and appreciate a word that appears in both the *saying* and in the Main Operating Principle ... and that’s the word “***neighbour.***”

- Most commonly, we think of our *neighbour* as the person who lives next to where we live—that is, the houses, homes, people and families that live adjacent to our own property or house.

- But that’s NOT what the word *neighbour* means here.

- ***neighbour*** (older spelling) = from “neigh”, meaning near or next + “bour” or ‘boor’ = an agrarian or rural term referring to a husbandman (farmer), peasant, or countryman—and it came to mean one who occupied the same space as you do at a given time—a fellow-occupier.

- Hence, taken together, a NEIGH-BOUR carries a more **wide** meaning that simply those who live adjacent to your home or property.

- And in it’s wider sense, it means someone or anyone who is in close proximity to you. (By the way, you find the Lord dealing with this issue in His earthly ministry over in Luke 10)

- Simply put, in the sense that it’s used here in Romans 13:9 and 10, your *neighbour* is **anybody who is near you at any time.**

- So right now, it’s every person in this church! And the truth is, oftentimes your *neighbour* is going to be those who are fellow members of the church, the body of Christ.

- But it also includes anyone who is near you at any given moment of your life.

- Now in connection with the Principle for Sonship Decision-making with respect to *judgments*—viz., *Love worketh no ill to his neighbour*, — the 5 Features/Characteristics of Godly Love (S,K,T,M,BG) (as I said) give you the capacity to determine whether something is “*ill*” or not—and if it **is**, then the Principle is: don’t work it toward your *neighbour*; and if it’s **not**, then go ahead and work it.

- And when you do that—when you **“work”** it that way—then you’ll have the absolute assurance and confidence that you’ll be doing **righteousness** that’s fully acceptable to God’s Justice ... but more than that, you’ll be working and Laboring with your Father in a **godly** way. (You’ll be Thinking, Living, and Working exactly as He does!)

- And I say it that way because it’s not merely righteous and acceptable in God’s sight—but it’s actually more than that—it’s **well pleasing** in His sight!

- And I’m making this kind of ‘caveat’ because of just how critical and important Godly Love is—not only to your Sonship decision-making at this point in the Curriculum—but because of how critical it is to the remainder of your Sonship life!

- And you can get a feel for that in both areas in which failure can occur with your Sonship Education—both in Corinthians and in Galatians !

[1] Failures due to your own flesh and operating upon your own wisdom due to halting your Sonship Education at a particular point: I Cor. 8:1-3; 9-13

[2] Failures due to your flesh’s desire to operate under the Law and God’s program with Israel: Gal. 5:12-18

- When Romans 13:8-10 begin effectually working within you—this is actually the point at which the issue of being ‘well-pleasing’ in God’s sight comes into play—this is where it really begins to take place.

- And although the expression isn’t used here in Romans 13, when you go over to I & II Corinthians and Galatians—and you look at Paul dealing with saints in regard to how they’re handling and dealing with their Level I Sonship Education — and when you look at passages where Paul especially focuses upon their Godly Living—it’s there that Paul talks about the issue of their Conduct & Behavior being **“to the glory of God”!** (Which is the idea of being ‘well-pleasing’ in God’s sight)!

- Now that expression ‘well-pleased’ (or as Paul puts it, “*wellpleasing*” or just “*pleasing*”) occurs only a couple of times over in Level II Sonship Education—but my understanding is that you, as a “son” are supposed to begin to get the idea/feel for this—and for the difference between simply being ‘acceptable’ in God’s sight, verses the more advanced concept of being ‘well-pleasing’ in God’s sight by means of some terminology that God both **has** been using in your education, and **will** use as it continues on.

- And that’s the issue of doing all that you do to the “**GLORY**” of God! (and my understanding is that when something can be said to be ‘glorious’ in God’s sight—it **IS** totally “*pleasing*” to Him!)

- And this issue of doing what you do as a properly educated son to the “glory” of God—or to the “praise of His glory” is going to be a HUGE issue out in Level II Sonship Education! (but it **starts now**, and will be a big issue as you go on!)

- Now the word “glory” is an elusive term—it’s one of those words that’s just hard to pin down and get a definitive grip on.

- But when you talk about something that is either ‘glorious’ or something that is a ‘glory’ to someone—most commonly, it’s thought of as a way of greatly rejoicing and thrilling exaltation.

- It’s often described as something that we take great pleasure and joy in because it so thrills our hearts and minds.

- So just by that alone, it tells you that when something is a “glory” to you—it’s not something common, rather, it’s something that you **are not** (and just **can not**) be indifferent to at all!

- Anything that we (or God) would “glory” in (or that is a “glory” to us—or that is done to the “glory of God”) doesn’t just meet a ‘minimal’ requirement (so to speak) - but rather, it has such high value that it profoundly delights us (or God).

And that ‘high value’ means that it’s something that hasn’t just got an ‘acceptableness’ to it—(it does have that) - but it has much more than that—it has a degree of value that goes beyond the level of acceptability!

- Now if my understanding is correct—there are already issues that have to do with our Justification that both are a ‘glory’ to us (and to God Himself); and that we are to ‘glory in’.

- And—there are already issues in connection with our Sanctification that are ‘glorious’ to us, and that we are (again) to ‘glory in.’

- And the same can be said even for our Sonship Orientation and Sonship Establishment (that takes you through Romans 11:36).

- But it’s interesting to me that once the actual Sonship Education gets underway at Romans 12:3, the issue of ‘glory’ or ‘glorifying’ (that is: this expression that so describes God’s delight and pleasure in us as properly educated, properly living/laboring “sons”) doesn’t get brought up until the very end of our education in the 4 Sonship Decision-Making Skills!

- (Romans 15:6-7)

- and now compare that with ...

- (I Corinthians 1:10-11)!

- Now let's stop for a minute and think about what’s going on here in our Level I Instruction of Wisdom, Justice, Judgment, (and even Equity) ... especially in view of how our status as “sons” got under way all the way back from Romans 8:14ff.

- What is one of (actually, it’s the) BIGGEST issues with the adoption as God’s “son”? [LIBERTY]

- But what’s been going on since the education got underway from Romans 12:3ff? [GODLY LOVE & CHARITY]

- And what does that Godly Love teach you to do with your Sonship Liberty?

- It gives us the Godly capacity to **willingly give up the power of our personal liberty for the benefit of others whom we LOVE more than ourselves!**

- And that’s exactly what God Himself did!!! right? doesn’t God have the most ‘liberty’ of all? and yet, look how He graciously gave it up for you... for me!

- And just to be clear—Godly Love & Charity does NOT negate, nullify, cancel, or invalidate our Sonship Liberty! ... quite the opposite, in fact!

- As wonderful as our Sonship Liberty is—God didn't design it to stand alone all by itself! And he didn't design it to be divorced from the doctrine of our Godly Love & Charity either—the truth is, God designed the doctrine of our Sonship Liberty and the doctrine of our Godly Selfless Love **to go together!**

- In fact, we're supposed to be able to perceive that it's actually the doctrine of our Sonship Liberty that **provides** for the FULNESS of Godly Love & Charity to take place!

- (And that's exactly what Romans 12:3ff has been teaching us all along!)

- It's only when we have perfect Sonship Liberty and the **power** to do what we want to do for ourselves—that we can then make the wisest and most GODLY sonship decision of all—which is to freely and willingly GIVE UP that power and that Liberty for another's benefit!

- And since this strikes at the very "heart" of our Father—then you can see that when that gets produced in His son—then the Father is not only viewing His son's Thinking, C&B, Labor as 'acceptable' ... but He's viewing it as 'well-pleasing' ... in other words, **IT'S 'GLORIFYING' TO HIM!**

... and it's something we can then "GLORY" in as well!

- And this is what the apostle Paul is talking about over in I Cor. 10:23 *All things are lawful for me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but all things edify not.*

- Let's run some verse on this issue of how the outworking of the doctrine of Godly Love & Charity (built upon the doctrine of our Sonship Liberty) really is 'well-pleasing' in God's sight—and how this issue of "glory" expresses God's being 'well-pleased' when His sons have Liberty, but freely give it up for the benefit of others.

- Glory/Glorify/Glorified
- Rom. 8:17, 18, 30
 - 9:4, **23**—my understanding is that that expression, “*the riches of his glory*” — much like the expression you find over in Ephesians 1:7, 2:7 (*the riches of his grace*) and the *unsearchable riches of Christ* in Eph. 3:8 — my understanding is that that’s not simply talking about the dispensation of grace (or the *mystery of Christ*; or rightly dividing the word of truth) - [granted, it is that], but it’s also talking about the riches of His glory and grace found in our **sonship edification** in this dispensation of grace!

11:36

- Then you have nothing till

- Rom. 15:6, 7, **(17)**!
-

- I Cor. 1:31
- 3:21
- 5:6
- 6:20

*** I Cor. 9:15 — “*glorying*” = to walk in the FULNESS of Godly Love and Charity!

- I Cor. 10:31

*** I Cor. 13:1-13 (entire chapter) - CHARITY = godly thinking in action!

- I Cor. 16:24!
-

- II Cor. (a lot of verses could be looked at)
 - 8:24
 - 12:15 (love)
 - 12:19, 20
 - 13:11
-

- Galatians 5:13-15
-

- Ephesians 1:3-6

- Now my point in all this is just to say that even though some things got started along these lines even back when we received our *instruction of Wisdom*—and also *our instruction of Justice*—it’s really here in the *instruction of Judgment* where you’re supposed to be able to recognize and perceive that:

Ok, first of all, I’ve been adopted as a “son” - and the Big Thing in all that is that I now have all this adulthood type LIBERTY ... but as the education has gone along, I realize that I’m being taught by my Father how to **willingly give up** some of that Liberty for the benefit of others! (by means of being taught Godly Love & Charity—and having that installed properly in your heart & mind)

- And what that’s doing in your inner man is to make it so that you can come along and realize that there is a progressive development to your Thinking, to your Conduct & Behavior, and to your Labor (or your “*good works*”).

- And (rightly so) it starts off as something that is “acceptable” and right (or righteous) in God’s sight—but because of the nature of the instruction of Judgment (and the nature of Judgmental decision making), you begin to realize that how you Think, (and especially how you Conduct & Behave yourself and produce “*good works*” unto God) judgment-wise, your sonship life is moving beyond the basic issue of being righteous & acceptable in God’s sight, to being “well-pleasing” and “glorious” in God’s sight! (You’re progressively becoming more and more ‘God-Like’ [godly]!)

- And that’s going to begin happening in a very **real** way here in Rom. 13:8, 9, (and especially in :10).

- Simply put, as your Sonship Education continues on, there’s a greater awareness of the “quality” of the ‘good works’ that you’re producing (and that God’s Justice accepts) ... they are well-pleasing unto Him (to His own heart & mind).

- And even though that kind of terminology isn’t used in Romans 13:8-10 — it is resident there in the fact that the issue of “**Love worketh no ill to his neighbour:**” - that’s the issue of, We’ve been taught to love as God does—and our sonship decisions are being based upon it as it now exists in us in those 5 Major Features.

- And think of it: God is able to do something with you that He could never do with Israel under the Law!

- He is able to produce **Godliness** in you—and *conform you to the image of His Son*—and you are able to produce **fruit** (or good works) that are not only compatible with His +R & Justice, but beyond that, are *holy* and well-pleasing and glorious in His sight ... AND HE'S ABLE TO GET ALL THAT ACCOMPLISHED WITHOUT COMMANDING YOU TO DO IT—OR WITHOUT A SET OF COMMANDMENTS OF ANY KIND ... RATHER, HE'S ABLE TO DO ALL THAT BY 3 THINGS:

- by 1) GRACE (the provisions of the crosswork of the Lord Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit's baptizing you into Jesus Christ and thereby making you all that God designed for you to be "in Christ" ... all of that was freely giving to you by God)
- through 2) FAITH (the effectual working of the word of God in your inner man as you **believe** it—especially from Romans 6:1-13:10)
- producing 3) GODLY LOVE (those 5 Characteristics of S,K,T,M,BG that have been generated within you)!

- And you can now take your godly conformity to the image of Christ—and as an adult "son" yourself, you can begin making a **wide variety** of decisions as your Godly Love *works no ill to your neighbor*—and do so to your Father's pleasure and glory!

- That really does qualify as "**amazing**" or "**awesome**"!!!!

- The issue is that you now have the capacity to consistently be making decisions that are well-pleasing in God's sight on the basis of taking all 5 of those Features of Godly Love—and realizing that together (collectively), they provide the capacity to discern what is considered and can be described by God as *ill*.

- And they provide the capacity to, when it is discerned that a course of action would qualify for being *ill*, then Godly Love (with the level of maturity it has at this point) is able to identify it, and deny it, and pursue a course that is the exact **opposite** of *working ill*!

- And when that's done—you have the **confidence** that you've not only done what's RIGHTEOUS in God's sight—but you've done what's '**well-pleasing**' to God ...

... and that produces a fullness of godly **satisfaction** and **contentment** and **happiness!**

- And that's to be the character & nature of all your godly sonship decision-making from this point on—and all it does is just get better and better!

- So we need to understand and appreciate that wonderful little English word **ill** a little better.

- **Ill**—it occurs only 15x in the Bible—it only occurs 7x by itself (not linked to some other word) — and it only occurs 1x in the entire New Testament (here in Romans 13:10).

- **Ill** is a **very powerful, comprehensive term!**

- *ill* = (setting aside the issue of sickness or disease)

Webster's 1828

- Bad or evil in a general sense; contrary to good, physical or moral; applied to things; evil, wicked, wrong, iniquitous.

- Producing evil or misfortune.

- Unhealthy.

- Cross, crabbed, surly, peevish; as ill-natured, ill-tempered.

- Discordant, harsh, disagreeable.

- Unfavorable, suspicious; as when we say, This affair bears an ill-look or aspect.

- Rude, as in ill-mannered. Not proper.

- Depravity, misfortune, calamity, pain; whatever annoys or impairs happiness or prevents success.

OED (much the same as Webster's), but also...

- Doing or tending to do harm, hurtful, injurious, pernicious, noxious, mischievous, prejudicial, dangerous.

- Difficult, troublesome, hard to please.

- Sinful, wrong-doing.

- Hostile, **malevolent** [= desirous of evil to others; indicative of ill-will] (opposite of benevolent), unfriendly.

- And there are a bunch more ways of defining it.

- Now when it comes to getting a ‘working definition’ for what *ill* is (especially in the context of Romans 13:10) - we can come along and at least say that, Ok, by the way God has the apostle Paul say it in Romans 13:10—(by saying, “***Love*** *worketh no ill to his neighbour*”) ... then anything that can be described or defined as *ill* to my neighbour is the **opposite** of **GODLY LOVE**—that is, anything that is **inconsistent** with GODLY LOVE (i.e., the S,K,T,M,BG), that’s what *ill* is in this context!

- And please note that God doesn’t have Paul say, ‘S,K,T,M, BG worketh no ill to his neighbour’ ... no ... he says, ***LOVE*** *worketh no ill to his neighbour*.

- And I point that out again because it’s absolutely critical that you don’t have those 5 Features of Godly Love compartmentalized in your thinking as if they have no connection one with another—but you have to have them in your thinking as a **WHOLE** ... (they work together) ...

... that is, each one has been given in a progressive and developmental order so that the next one **comes from** the previous one! (one **leads** to the other)

- And when they all work together—and when you have them all effectually working with the Wisdom & the Justice—that’s when they provide you the capacity for discernment & **discretion** on an enormously wide range of situations and circumstances.

- In other words, that makes it so that, as you “*ponder*” a particular path (or course of action), you can operate with godly “*discretion*” (which is critical and essential in making judgmental type decisions).

- And on the basis of the Wisdom, Justice, the 5 Features of Godly Love, and the *discretion* that comes from all that—it therefore provides for the broad, comprehensive defining of what is **ILL**!

- And when you look up the definition of *ill* in any English Dictionary (including the OED and Webster’s 1828) - you know just by the way they define the word that *ill* is a very broad term—because they define it with other broad terms in and of themselves!

- And as we've seen—a whole bunch of things can be described as *ill* — and the truth is, *ill* is one of those 'relative' terms—and when you're dealing with a 'relative' term, you've got to have a fixed Standard or Authority—an Absolute that functions as a criterion upon which something can be called *ill* or not *ill*.

- And therefore for us as “sons” — the Standard/Authority/Criterion/ the Absolute for determining what *ill* is, is the effectual working of those 5 Features & Characteristics of Godly Love!

- Therefore by means of those 5 Features of Godly Love—there is a Standard or Absolute by which there are defining concepts already working within your inner man.

- And by doing what God does in (:9) - citing those 5 commandments (and the 'exercise' of the mind that's supposed to take place by them [with the 5 Features of Godly Love] - that allows for you to perceive a 'scope' for all that's involved in Selflessness vs. Selfishness; for all that's involved in Kindness vs. Unkindness; for Tenderheartedness vs. Hardheartedness; for Meeekness vs. Malevolence; and for Benevolent Goodness vs. Self Love!

- Now be careful here—because what you're supposed to be doing here—in connection with making a godly judgment regarding your *neighbor* and being able to determine what is *ill* towards him—you're not simply taking the 5 Features of Godly Love and determining that — but rather, you're going to be taking those 5 Features of Godly Love, and because of the way in which God gives you the information in (:9); you're to take those 5 Features of Godly Love PLUS what the **Law** sets forth as the **opposite end of the spectrum** of each one of those 5 Features—and it's by the effectual working of THAT information that allows for you to be able to come along and define when something is *ill*.

- In order to properly define what an *ill* is (according to godliness), you're going to have to think about those 5 Features of Godly Love as they set in opposition of (and in righteous fulfillment of) each of their corresponding Laws that are their direct opposite!

- And when we do that—we can therefore make a discerning, keen, sharp, decisive *judgment* in connection with our Conduct & Behavior when we have to *ponder a path*.

- And therefore, to have the confidence and conviction that we KNOW that it's the RIGHT *path*!

- (Because it doesn't work **ANY** *ill* to our *neighbour*).

- Notice that little word "**no**" ... *Love worketh no ill to his neighbour.*

- Notice that Paul didn't say, 'Love doesn't work ill to his neighbor.' (If he said it that way, "*ill*" could be thought of as one single thing).

... no—he says, "*Love worketh **NO** ill ...*"

- And he says it that way because (by stating it as he does with the word **no**—or as we might say "any ill") - the idea is that by saying it the way he does, he sets forth in your thinking that the word *ill* has a **plurality of concepts** (a wide variety of concepts).

- In other words, *ill* has a number of things that can be defined as *ill*.

- And the issue is that NONE of them—**not one of them** is going to be *worked* to his neighbour by a member of the church, the body of Christ that has Godly Love to this measure of maturity.

- There are **many** things that can be described as being *ill*.

- But in order to bring clear, definable, describable (you can put your finger on it, type definition) - you have been given by your Father the 5 Features of Godly Love (effectually operating in your inner man), and has set them in contrast to 5 Commandments from the Law that allows for you to have the capacity to define clearly an *ill* — and instead of working that, to be working the Godly Love.

- And therefore, to confidently know what we are supposed to be engaged in doing in the details of our lives in our dealings with other members of the church, the body of Christ, and with men in general.

- And that provides for you as a son to have the capacity to come along and give Absolute Definition (so to speak) to something that is *ill*, therefore—and out of character with Godly Love!

- (that's how your 'divine guidance system' works! ... but YOU have to do a lot of "work" with it! [it's **not** 'auto-pilot']!)

- And you're able therefore to come along and, on the basis of that—recognize *ill* whenever you see it; and whenever you're tempted with it; whenever a lust of it would ever occur within you to work it towards your neighbour —

— and on the basis of the power & might of your Sanctification (your functional life as you *walk after the Spirit*) - to, 'through the Spirit,' MORTIFY THAT *DEED* or CONCEPT (deny that ungodliness and worldly lust), and choose rather to live *soberly*—to think *soberly* and righteously, and to then produce the righteous & godly Conduct & Behavior, and then to Labor or work that out together with God in what He's doing—(in the Operation of God in putting the fullness of Godly Love on display to the pleasure and glory of the Father and the Son)!

- (see Romans 8:13)!

- So therefore, instead of thinking over a broad definition—it can all be boiled down to one word: **LOVE!** (S,K,T,M,BG)

- And right now, you have 5 things to think through in connection with what constitutes *ill* toward your neighbour.

- And without a STANDARD, this is so wide open that you're almost **lost** in the many definitions to ever nail down what *ill* is!

- So the 'working definition' for Sonship Education of the word *ill* is very simple: **anything that is inconsistent with or out of character with the absolute standard of Godly Love.**

- And then, after that colon of (:10) - the final clause can come along and say: ***therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.***

- Simply put—I don't need the Law to do this! I don't need the Law or a set of Commandments to 'work no ill to my neighbour' ... all I need are those 5 Features of Godly Love!

- This final clause to our 1st Component of our instruction of Judgment is a major Conclusion to the whole matter concerning our godly Thinking, Living, and Labor as properly educated and properly edified “sons” of our Heavenly Father when it comes to how we will make godly judgments in our dealings with anyone who is **near** us at any given moment (in other words, our *neighbour*).

- And again, the emphasis is being placed upon LOVE—the godly love & charity that’s been taught to you by your Father, and installed properly in your heart (on it’s ‘fleshy tables’) so that you now have the very same love that your Father does—and so that you now have the very same means to make judgments exactly like your Father does!

- And the genius of our Father is that He provided a way for you to be able to Think, Live, and Labor (work together with Him in His business) that not only is acceptable in His sight, but is also well-pleasing in His sight.

- And the ‘kicker’ of it all is that He has provided a way to do that, that is all **‘By grace, through faith’** without utilizing the Law at all—but at the exact same time, fulfills the Righteousness of the Law (without you ever being ‘under that Law’)!

- And therefore, by understanding and appreciating the POWER of your Sanctification—(that is, by making the connections with this instruction of Judgment and what was set forth to you back in Romans 8:1-13 (especially) - **you can now begin walking (even running) down paths of judgment with absolute confidence that your sonship judgment is proper, but more than that, you have the confidence that your “works” of judgment (so to speak) are godly (not in any way the works of your flesh)!**

- And the reason for that is because you are operating upon **GODLY LOVE** (those 5 Features of godly love, SKTMBG) as the absolute standard/criteria that guides your decisions of sonship judgment!

- *Therefore, love (5 Features) really is (and is proven to be) the fulfilling of the law*—God’s righteousness is fulfilled in us as we operate as sons according to God’s Grace (and what it provides [godly love]), and not according to our flesh!

- And the 1st Component of your *instruction of Judgment* has provided for your Godly Love to be prompted by that catalyst type saying (*Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself*) and by the Main Operating Principle that comes out of that saying: *Love worketh no ill to his neighbour* — and now you have the capacity to make godly judgments over a wide range of situations and circumstances that you will be confronted with in the details of your life in connection with your *neighbour*.

- Every judgment you make is supposed to be ‘FILTERED’ through that saying; and the main operating principle that comes out of it.

- Any Questions? Comments?

- To me—there are 2 things that need to be addressed at this point:

1) The issue that what this is teaching us as sons/daughters is NOT the issue of the world’s wisdom (and most of the wisdom of Christianity itself as it has come under the influence of the world’s wisdom—hence, not thinking *soberly*) - the issue is not one of, Ok, now that I have this **godly love**, and now that I’m supposed to be operating upon **it** as my guide to working no ill to my neighbour—and now that I’m operating upon this saying that is so deeply meshed in the world and its wisdom (*Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself*) ... **the issue is not that I am supposed to use my godly love in order to make the world a BETTER PLACE!**

- In fact—there’s another issue that has to immediately attach itself to this 1st Component so that you **won’t** make improper applications (as you think about all that the 1st Component IMPLIES) ... you then immediately have to take into consideration the issue of **TIME** and the best spending of your time!

- For example—the Lord Jesus Christ didn’t do that in His earthly ministry — and the apostle Paul didn’t do that in his ministry!!!

- (expand on both)

- You're concern in godly judgments towards your neighbour is going to be concerned with either, 1) his salvation, or 2) his godly edification!!!

2) Notice that it says, *Love worketh no ill to his neighbour*, — it doesn't say, "If you love your neighbour, he'll never be angry with you ... or he'll never hate you ... or he'll never respond negatively toward you ... or he'll never not "like" you!

- Keep in mind that someone taking 'hurt' to your godly love is NOT the same thing as working 'ill' to him!!!

- The issue is that you will **never** find (as a son) that you will ever have to work (or be forced to work) ill toward any person!

- In fact, God is never forced to work ill toward any person!

- Now I know that you can find instances in God's word where it says that He brings *evil* upon certain people—but that's couched in Him being provoked by them to have to punish or chastise them in view of the demands of His righteousness and justice (His holiness).

- In fact, those who find themselves in hell, and eventually in the Lake of Fire cannot be said or be ascribed as God working ill to them ... NO! He wasn't selfish or unkind or hardhearted or malevolent or full of self-love toward them at all!

- (they are, as Paul says in Romans 1—*holding the truth in unrighteousness!*)

- Truth is, some godly judgmental decisions you make will potentially leave some people angry with you and/or offended by you, and not liking you much at all!

- In fact, loving another person with godly love & charity will NOT always get you in their 'good graces' (so to speak)!

- Truth is, someone may ascribe your kindness as unkindness! (you can easily find yourself doing right by somebody, only to be accused of having done them wrong!)

- But what this gives you is the confidence to say ... “I did what God wanted me to do ... and the fact that they may be angry with me does not deter me, does not shake my confidence, does not make me wish I’d made a different decision” ... now, it’s true that you may wish they didn’t respond with anger or dislike—but you can still have the confidence and the godly contentment & satisfaction (and the JOY that you’re supposed to have) that you made a godly decision!

- The decision you came to was one that God can accept because it’s completely compatible with His love—and it’s one that you came to exactly as God would come to it Himself.

- But it’s going to take pondering and SKILL to make these adult sonship judgments—skill, because your goal is to communicate information from God—your goal is NOT to hurt them.

- See Paul, for example in Acts - 20:17ff

- 22:1-22

- II Cor. 11:7-11— notice that Paul doesn’t just come along and make a ‘judgment’ concerning the Corinthians and then just leave it at that (so to speak) - in other words, Paul didn’t take a particular course of action towards the Corinthians without informing them of the reasons for his course of action!

- Rather, in order for them to NOT get the wrong impression, Paul give them a lot of information concerning WHY he was taking the course of action he was taking.

- Paul simply found himself put in a position whereby he had to make a judgmental decision that did NOT include working any “ill” towards the Corinthians—and Paul’s goal was NOT to hurt them—so he tells them, “I’ve come to this conclusion, and here’s why ...”

- And then if they choose to be mad, offended, selfish, self-centered, (or whatever) - at least they now know that what Paul did, he did **because** of Godly Love & Charity, and **not** because he intentionally wanted to harm them.

- And my point here is just to say that you may find yourself in a position of making a judgmental sonship decision based upon Godly Love—and **you** may know that, but the person who may be mad at you because of it may NOT know why you did what you did [or said what you said] — and in that kind of a circumstance, part of the SKILL of making sonship judgments is going to determine to inform someone of the Godly Love-based judgment you made was for their benefit (either for their salvation, or for their godly edification)!

- First & foremost, you don't want to work any "ill" toward them—and secondly, you don't want to be perceived as working any "ill" toward them.

- But if you've explained it to them and they still take it bad or take it as harming them—then you've really done all you can do even though they don't understand your course of action. (or refuse to understand it)

- The goal is to make a godly judgment IN LOVE—and if you love them, you don't want there to be any misunderstanding.

- The 'bottom line' therefore is that you will never find yourself in a position where you're forced to work "ill" toward your "neighbour."

- (just as God Himself is never forced to violate His own Righteousness—[and godly love is the exact same thing as His Righteousness, right? ... remember, *therefore love is the fulfilling of the law* ... i.e., the very Righteousness of God Himself!])

- and since *Love worketh no ill to his neighbour*—you could say, The Righteousness of God works no ill to anyone ... EVER!!!

- God is never forced to do that—and as a properly educated "son", you're never forced to do that either!

- Any Questions? Comments? (ready to move on?)

- POST-DOCTRINAL EXHORTATION TO THE 1ST COMPONENT OF THE INSTRUCTION OF JUDGMENT: PROVERBS 4:14-19

- Review :10-13

- Read :14-19

- In view of the fact that, back when you were getting your Sonship Establishment in Romans 8:16-39 (and even on through chapters 9, 10, and 11) - back when you were to “*perceive the words of understanding*” ... you were exhorted by your Father with some ‘similar’ type terminology (see Pro. 2:10-15) — now in view of the fact that you were exhorted that way back then, why do you think that your Father would exhort you like this in Pro. 4:14-19? ... why does he have to say to you the things he says here (even though it sounds like & seems like what He’s already said to you before)?

- Remember that as you progress through your godly Sonship Education—on the one hand (one side of the coin), you gain and increase in being edified unto godliness (you’re becoming more and more ‘god-like’ — [like Father, like son]); and you’re becoming more and more ‘conformed to the image of Christ’; and you’re just on the cusp of beginning to make an impact in the heavenly realm; and you’re godly joy, zeal, enthusiasm, contentment and confidence is increasing as you get a better grasp upon what it means to be a properly educated son of your Heavenly Father (and it is wonderful and glorious and joyful to be in business with Him)

.... BUT, at the exact same time, you also have the other side of the coin—which is the fact that while your sonship education is going on (and is being successful to accomplish it’s aims, goals, and objectives) ... at the exact same time there are 3 major areas of opposition and resistance that are very aware of what is going on, too!

- And 2 of those 3 major areas of opposition and resistance come more fully into play at the end of your 1st Component of Judgment than at any time ever before!

- (By the way, this is where I’ve talked about before—that everything gets ‘anted-uped’ [so to speak] - the stakes get higher and higher—especially in Judgment & Equity)!

1) Your FLESH knows what's going on—and it's going to strengthen it's resistance and opposition to your continued sonship education (and being conformed to the image of Christ).

- You're still in a body with 'sin in its members' - and some areas of how you can be tempted to ungodly thinking, conduct and behavior has been awakened (whereas before, it would have never occurred to you that such thinking or such conduct could be considered ungodly). [government, ex.]

- And therefore, your flesh knows that—and will apply resistance, opposition and temptation on a greater level than you've experienced before. (make sense?)

2) Going hand-in-hand with your flesh is the issue of the fact that THIS WORLD (this ungodly world and the wisdom of this world and the course of this ungodly world) knows what's going on with you as well—and it's going to strengthen it's resistance and opposition to your continued sonship education (and being conformed to the image of Christ).

- And that's why you have the issue of "*evil men*" (or as we noted before in Pro. 2, "*the evil man*") being brought up here in Pro. 4:14-19! — (and that's why this is only the 2nd time the word *darkness* has been used—once in 2:13, and now in 4:19).

3) The 3rd area of resistance & opposition to your sonship education (and being conformed to the image of Christ) will come into play in the next Component of our instruction of Judgment—and that will be the SATANIC POLICY OF EVIL—because it knows what's going on, and it's going to actually qualify to begin opposing and resisting your sonship education—(which, by the way is why you'll need to *put on the armour of light*—and which is the reason why the Fatherly Exhortation brings up the *strange woman* in Proverbs 5:1-6).

- But for now, we're only concerned with the first 2—and the truth is that, my understanding is that your **flesh** and the **ungodly world** (or the *evil men*) are joined together in such a way that, while your flesh isn't directly mentioned in Pro. 4:14-19, **it is there**—it's not just implied to be there, but it's what the *evil man* appeals to! Your flesh gives the *evil man* the opportunity for success! (do you see that?
does that make sense?)

- Now when it comes to the opposition you'll face from *this world* — you now have an increased understanding and appreciation for what constitutes "*this world*" than ever before —

— you now have an increased understanding and appreciation for what constitutes "*this world*" (*Rom. 12:2*) that you have determined and presented yourself to your Father and His education in order to no longer be *conformed* to it, but rather *transformed by the renewing of your mind*—and an increase has been made in your inner man (as you are being conformed to the image of Christ) for what constitutes or makes up *this world* and the course of this world and the wisdom of this world and the justice of this world and the judgments of this world and the love of this world and the selflessness of this world and the kindness of this world and so forth and so on ...

- And because of your flesh (and sin in its members), your *renewed mind*, and your measure of conformity to the image of Christ—your edification unto godliness (being like Father, like son) [your sonship **soberness**]... is all susceptible to the pressures and temptations of being swayed or influenced by *evil men* (or the wisdom & course of *this world*)! [it shouldn't be easily susceptible, but susceptible nonetheless].

- Therefore it's right and proper and fitting that the Fatherly Exhortations and Expectations often times include warnings to the son of the inherent dangers and opposition and temptations that he's now going to face with the increased & greater ability and increased & greater capacity that he's developed and acquired in the progress of his sonship education. (and that's the case here).

- Now at this point in our godly edification in the book of Romans—let's just take stock of what we should have effectually working in our inner man as we have been getting the foundation for our godly edification:

- First "Cornerstone" - the Doctrine of our Justification by grace through faith and its results. (Romans 1-5)

- We've been forgiven of all our sins.

- We've been imputed with Christ's own Righteousness.

- We have Permanent 'At-One-Ment' - that is, "once saved, always saved" - "eternal security" - you can never be unsaved.

- Second “Cornerstone” - the Doctrine of our Sanctification by grace through faith and it’s results. (Romans 6:1-8:39)

- We learned that we now have a new identity “in Christ” by means of the Holy Spirit baptizing us “into Jesus Christ”. (which He did the very moment we were saved/justified) [NO WATER!]

- “In Christ” we have been made DEAD TO SIN and ALIVE UNTO GOD. (two very powerful & critical issues to the success of our sanctified/functional life “in Christ”)

- Putting our sanctified position “in Christ” into practice requires that we be “not under the law, but under grace.”

- We put our sanctified position “in Christ” into practice not by keeping the law, but rather by: 1) Walking after the Spirit; which is accomplished by 2) ‘Minding the things of the Spirit’; and by 3) The Spirit of God dwelling in you.

- Then we have the epitome (or ultimate aspect) of our sanctified position “in Christ” under grace: we have received the adoption of sons (*the Spirit of adoption*) - and from now on, our sanctified, functional life “in Christ” will be put into practice by means of our sonship status.

- And because of that, we then received our Sonship Orientation and our Sonship Establishment. (which took us to the end of Romans chapter 8)

- Third “Cornerstone” - as an ‘addendum’ to our Sonship Establishment, and because we function as sons in a distinct and different program to God’s program with Israel—we received our Establishment in the Doctrine of the Dispensation of Gentile Grace now in Effect. (Romans 9, 10, and 11)

- We came to understand and appreciate that God has temporarily suspended His program with Israel; that we live in a new and different dispensation that God formerly kept secret (a “*mystery*”); and that God will one day easily end this present dispensation of His grace and resume and fulfill His former program with Israel, just as He always said He would.

- Now we are in the Fourth & Final “Cornerstone” of our fundamental godly edification—which is our Level I Sonship Education proper—receiving the instruction in the 4 fundamental sonship decision-making skills—and getting established in walking worthy of who we are as justified, sanctified, sons in this dispensation of grace.
(Romans 12-16)

- You’ve received the instruction of fundamental Wisdom in 6 Components. (Along with that, you had generated within you the first 3 Major Features of Godly Love: Selflessness, Lovingkindness, and Tenderheartedness).

- Then you received the instruction of fundamental Justice in 3 Components. (And along with that, you had generated within you another 2 of the Major Features of Godly Love: Meekness and Benevolent Goodness).

- And then, with the instruction of Wisdom & Justice, along with the growth & development of the 5 Core Features of Godly Love—you have received the 1st Component of the instruction of Judgment (where those 5 Core Features of godly love become your ‘guidance system’ as you utilize the sayings of your Father in order to determine the paths you will take as you operate upon the principle of working no ill to your neighbour.

- Now when you kind of ‘take stock’ of where you are in your godly edification—even though we only hit the ‘highlights’ [so to speak]), you have to admit that you’ve really come a long way!

- In fact, you’re at a point in which real adulthood sonship living can now take place—you’re at a point where you’re going to determine to take certain “paths” - and those “paths” are going to make up your “way” as God’s son.

- You’re at a point where some real conformity to the image of Christ has been (or should be) taking place!

- And living as a son (with the working out of all that doctrine in the details of your life) - making wise, just, and judgmental decisions just like God the Father and God the Son would make them—means that as you do that in this present ungodly world, you should expect some resistance and opposition (some tribulations & distresses).

- (*tribulation & distress*) for no other reason than for who you are as a son (as a member of the church, the body of Christ).

- (Just as you have maybe experienced those “tribulations” of the gospel of Christ back in ch. 5) [and where you were first ‘saved by hope’ - and had to operate upon that ‘Hope Doctrine’]

- The truth is—as you go about putting your sanctified, functional, sonship life into practice in this world (at this point) some real LIGHT is being put on display in a world of DARKNESS!

- And again, I go back to what I said earlier—everything has gotten ‘anted-uped’ - an increase has been made in you becoming more God-like [Like Father, like son] - the stakes are higher ... but your flesh is going to oppose & resist that increase; and your flesh’s ‘siamese twin’ (so to speak) “*this world*” (this ungodly world) is going to oppose & resist that increased adult sonship decision-making!

- And therefore, that’s why the things said by the Father in the Exhortation of Proverbs 4:14-19 is perfectly fitting and perfectly in keeping and perfectly suited to where you are in your godly sonship edification.

- So let’s begin looking at the Exhortation that follows receiving the 1st Component of the instruction of judgment:

14 Enter not into the path of the wicked, and go not in the way of evil men.

- After receiving the 1st Component of Judgment, the Father’s exhortation immediately confronts you with the kind of opposition you’re going to face as you begin to “shine” as a ‘son’ in this present world—and this opposition is going to be increased exponentially.

- And it stands to reason that the very first kind of opposition you’re going to face comes from “*the wicked*” and those that make up *the wicked* in this world are “*evil men.*”

- And the opposition goes right after the very thing that marks you as a “sober” son who is now making godly judgments:

... and that is: 1) determining a certain *path of judgment* or a certain, godly course of action; and 2) that *path* (or *paths* as time goes on) make up the *way* of godly sonship judgments.

- Which is why God told you earlier on ... *He keepeth the paths of judgment, and preserveth the way of his saints. (Proverbs 2:8)*

- So the great temptation is going to be to *enter into the path of the wicked*—this present ungodly world is going to pressure you and intimidate you to bend to it; to bow to and submit to publically accepted courses of action (which comes not only from the ungodly world at-large, but also comes from the ungodly Christian world—and yes, there is such a thing—for much of Christianity is shaped and formed and molded by “*the wicked*” - that is, it has caved in to, and submitted to the great pressure and influence of the ungodly course of this world!) [occurring over thousands of years by now]!

- A great deal of the decisions you’ll make as a son is going to be brought into question, not merely by the lost people of this world, but by many saved persons who think you’re just taking your Christian life far too seriously (or taking the Bible far too seriously)! [you’re becoming ‘ink’ in a world of ‘water’ (so to speak)]

- Whatever “*the wicked*” are, at the root of it all is that they are **hostile to God and God’s word!**

- Interesting how the words *wicked* and *wickedness* are first used in God’s word ...

First used in Genesis 6:5 in connection with the condition that the world was in just prior to the Flood — *And GOD saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.*

And then soon after the Flood—when God raised up Abraham to begin the process of repossessing the Earth, the very next time the word is used is in connection with a **judgment** Lot made in his choice of where to dwell (which was in a city called Sodom) — *But the men of Sodom were wicked and sinners before the LORD exceedingly. (Genesis 13:13)*

- And so you're exhorted to *Enter NOT into the path of the wicked, and go NOT in the way of evil men.*

- And my understanding is that a person's *path* or *paths* (that is, the varied and many courses of action a person judges to take) make up his overall *way*. (and there can even be a plurality of *ways* where the course of this world is concerned—but there's only 1 overall *way* of a son)!

- For example: 'Well, that's the *ways* of a Mountain man'; or, 'That's the *ways* of the south', etc.

- In other words, while the *path* describes more detailed matters of specific courses of action—the *way* describes the overall course of life of the individual.

- And that's why you have 2 phrases in (:14).

- And in the 2nd phrase (*and go not in the way of evil men*) - you're to understand and appreciate that *the path of the wicked* ends up with your overall course of life being characterized by and describes as *the way of evil men*.

- And my understanding is that even though it's used here in the plural (*evil men*) - my understanding is that this is supposed to connect with the issue of "*the evil man*" we studied back in Proverbs 2:12.

- Brief Review of: THE "EVIL MAN" & "THE STRANGE WOMAN"

- And as I have told you before—my understanding of what these 2 expressions represent and are talking about when they come up in the education of us as sons is that—and to put it very simply and very briefly:

- *The evil man* = when used in the sense of what *the evil man/men* are to a son within sonship edification, it represents the natural evil and ungodliness of the world and/or the course of this world.

- *The strange woman* = represents an opposing spiritual and/or religious system generated by the Satanic Policy of Evil.

- Now, the *evil man*, as representing the natural evil and ungodliness of this world can be a bit confusing to those of us who have come out of the old systematic, categorical approach to Bible study and Bible learning. (And you could have a ‘snag’ in your thinking about it because of that.)

- And that’s because we were taught by the Bible scholars that the “world” or cosmos or cosmic system is tantamount to the Satanic system.

- (That is, I was taught that the cosmos is the Satanic system.)

- But my understanding is that (just like most Biblical issues and doctrines that systematic theology screws up) - that’s **not** how the Bible itself (or God Himself) views the natural ungodliness and evil of the course of this world.

- And I do, however, realize where and how the cosmic world system can be seen to be the same as the Satanic Policy of Evil—because it is true that there are occasions where the Satanic PoE **does** use the wisdom of this world to achieve its objectives—and I acknowledge that because of this, some would look at it as if they are talking about the exact same thing.

- But the satanic PoE and the course of this world (or wisdom of this world) are **not** the exact same thing!

- And the satanic PoE does have enough of its own unique features to it that makes it so that it needs to be dealt with as a **separate issue** all on its own—and needs to be dealt with **separate** from the wisdom of this world.

- And one of the things that alerts me to that, (even before I ever get to this dispensation of grace in which we live), is the reality of that in how God deals with it in His program with Israel.

- And if you go back to the commencement of God’s program with Israel as a nation—at the point in which God had called Abram—and then the nation got developed to the point where they had gone into the “*horror of great darkness*” that Abraham saw, and the fledgling nation has been in Egypt for 400 yrs., and then God raises up Moses and brings them out of the land of Egypt— and then as they begin moving toward the promised land to begin the process of the repossession of this earth from the Adversary and his cohorts —

— as God does that He begins to educate them into His Jehovah-ness and grace - and He provides 2 main phases to their education.

- And as that nation is brought out of Egypt—they begin to encounter some temptations that, if you pay attention to what’s going on, you’ll see how God Himself looks at both the wisdom of this world (the cosmos), and the satanic PoE.

- So when God brings Israel out of the land of Egypt and He begins to educate them in their absolute need for His J-ness & grace—He takes them through 5 trials for their education that all deals with that matter; (and later on those 5 trials will match up with the 5 mandates of the Davidic Covenant that will eventually put the fullness of God’s J-ness into effect to get them out of the predicament that they got themselves into and can’t get themselves out of).

- And within that education—when they end up being tempted as they are under that initial education they receive when they come out of Egypt—there are **2 MAIN categories** in which all those temptations fall! (not that there’s only 2 temptations—there’s many temptations, but all of them fall into only 2 main categories).

- And 1 of those main categories deals with **the world** that they had just come out of—(which was Egypt) - and they succumb to those temptations when you see them, in Numbers for example, pine for the “*cucumbers, and the melons, and the leeks, and the onions, and the garlick*” that they ate in Egypt freely.

- And what they’re doing is that they want to go back into the fashion of the world that they came out of and all that it offered — and that’s not to say that the Adversary has nothing at all to do with that, because he does—but my point is that when God deals with them for what they receive temptation-wise—**He looks at it as 2 categories of temptations.**

- 1) was to go back to Egypt to the world that they developed in, and that they knew—and that had all its attractions and all its fashion and all its materialism and all that kind of stuff...

- 2) they are going to encounter specifically designed temptations that don’t come from the world at large (so to speak), but come from the Adversary himself –**and are designed to have a specific affect on their inner man!**

- In fact, when you're over in our epistles—in I Corinthians 10—you have the apostle Paul actually utilizing this very period of Israel's program as our *ensample*—and he reminds us that when they went through those temptations—Paul actually comes along and takes those temptations and puts them in the same 2 categories!

- I Cor. 10:1-6 (:6—there's the evil man—the world they had come out of)
:7-12 (:1-10—there's the strange woman)

- So you've got the actual historical record and what God says about it there—then you've got the apostle Paul making a parallel to that as he instructs us in this dispensation of grace—plus when you get to dealing with the curriculum for sonship edification as it begins in the book of Proverbs and the details begin to be set forth and as the exhortations begin to be given—you find that Solomon is warned about 2 particular individuals that are going to oppose his sonship education and resist it—and they are described as potentially ruining his sonship education & edification—and they are called *the evil man* and *the strange woman*. (no coincidence—2 categories)

- And it's fascinating that as you go through the development of the outworking of God's program with Israel—when God describes the issue of them succumbing to those temptations and being overthrown in the wilderness, and He judges that generation, and He starts the next generation off after the 40 years of wilderness wandering—well, when He gives them the Deuteronomy (gives them the law the 2nd time) - He packages with the law (as Moses sets it forth) the issue of their failures succumbing to those very 2 categories of temptations.

- And He does that so that when they get into the land—they're prepared for experiencing the exact same 2 categories of temptations and stumbling blocks to them fulfilling God's plan & purpose for them.

- And now, when they enter the land—they're going to go back into the world—but this time it's the world of the Canaanites!

- And they're told not to look at what the Canaanites **do**—don't look at how prosperous they've been—don't look at their cities, etc.—in fact, they're told that when they go in, they are to destroy everything—in fact, they're told that they are not going to be able to even touch the fruit trees for 3 years!

- And what God does is, He prepares them for destroying the fashion of the world of the Canaanites—because that’s going to be the 1st major area of temptation that they’re going to have to deal with: **THE WORLD**—and what ungodly man produces and fashions in the world—whether the PoE has anything to do with it or not (granted, it augments it, helps it out, etc.) — **but man, on the basis of being an ungodly creature by nature (on his own), fashions his own ungodly world to live in.**

- see ex., Deut 6:10-13; 8:7-18

- But then—after that’s dealt with in the opening part of Deuteronomy, beginning in chapter 13 of Deut., God comes along and gives them a warning of another 2nd major category of temptation that comes from a specific person:

- Deut. 13:12-15 (:13) — called, “*the children of Belial*” (that’s the Policy of Evil!)

- “*The children of Belial*” is the Adversary’s name in God’s program with Israel when it came to the particular PoE that the Adversary was going to put together **against** Israel.

- And granted he works out there amongst the nations in their idolatry and everything—but the purpose of the Adversary in doing all that was **to infect Israel with it!**

- (And that’s why the concentration of it was in all the nations that surrounded Israel—and that’s why he didn’t really care what was going on down in Ethiopia or in the isles of the nations—that’s why he focused everything on that branch of Ham’s children: the Canaanites — because they were the ones in the land, and they were the ones surrounding the land).

- But the point is that when you get to Deut. 13, God begins dealing with **the 2nd major category of temptations**—and that’s the temptations that comes from the “*children of Belial*”.

- And when you come to view it this way, you come to realize that when God looks at the whole package of what His people are up against—and the opposition that they are going to have to deal with: when He looks at something that is outside of themselves, outside of their own sin nature—He sees 2 categories:

1) He sees the **world** they have come out of,

2) He sees the **Adversary**, and the fact that they no longer belong to the Adversary, but belong to God, being a special target that the Adversary sets his sights on in order to succeed with a particular aspect of his plan of evil—which is to have a **policy of evil** against God's own people to endeavor to thwart the advances God is making when it comes to dealing with Satan and his plan of evil. (repossess the earth)

- So God sees those 2 issues—and that all gets developed and advanced and progresses through Israel going through all 5 courses of punishment.

- And the Policy of Evil will, indeed, utilize the world and its attractiveness so that you sometimes can't make a sharp line of demarcation between the world and the PoE—they'll sometimes work in conjunction.

- In fact, **the world is never aware that the PoE is making use of it!**

- And the only one that's aware that the PoE can make use of the world is the Adversary himself—and the intelligent member of the remnant of Israel—or the intelligent member of the church, the body of Christ (an intelligized son).

- But because there's enough that the PoE can do that is separate on its own—and that it doesn't necessarily have to use the world as a part of it—it needs to be looked upon as a separate area of temptation. (Or separate area of opposition).

- And its fascinating that when you get to sonship edification, those 2 major areas of opposition and temptation gets brought up in the marvelous way only a proverbial style of teaching can do as 1) the evil man, and 2) the strange woman.

- The *evil man* is always associated with what is going on in the world at-large—and the *strange woman* is always after the **soul** and **spirit** of the son!

- And there's enough energy and enough ungodliness in the *world*, on its own, to trip a son up.

- But the PoE comes along (and it can make use of the *world*), but when a son starts withstanding the world, and making advances in his sonship education—that's when the PoE (*the strange woman*) comes into play.

- And when you follow those exhortations that David gives Solomon in connection with *the strange woman*—she's never spoken about as being out there "at-large" — she's always spoken about as being in a **particular place**—and setting her sights on **particular people**.

- And this is especially seen as you get into Level II — when David describes her activity, she's got a particular place where she dwells!

(see Pro. 7!)

- And the "*young man*" who is "*void of understanding*" — he wound up walking into that area of the city — and if he'd have been "wise" he'd have never been there in the first place!

- And she was there all dolled up—and she was there to entice him—she was there like bait—and that's why David describes here as, she's after the son's soul—she's after his "life" (she wants to destroy his functional life!)

- And that's what the PoE is always after.

- And when you get over to our epistles—that's exactly what you see, when, for instance, you get established as a son in chapter 8 of the book of Romans, and then you begin *receiving the instruction of wisdom, justice, and judgment, and equity* (over in chapter 12).

- And as you receive those bodies of information/doctrine—that's where those exhortations in Proverbs introduce *the evil man* and *the strange woman*.

- And when you start off in Romans 12—the first thing is, not to be "conformed to this world" (that's *the evil man*) — and then, when by the time you get down to the end of ch. 13 where you're receiving the instruction of *judgment*, you've got "the works of darkness" brought in—and that's the Adversary—(granted, he's largely operating through the world, but he's got some particular "*works of darkness*" that are designed to be **attractive** to God's sons.

- To just put it this way—she (the Adversary/strange woman) wants to **de-sanctify** God's **sanctified** people!

- And that's why you "*cast off*" those "*works of darkness*" — that's not the garb you want to wear—you want to "*put on the Lord Jesus Christ*" — and you need to realize at that point that you're up against an Adversary whose going to start by using what's easily available at his disposal—which is the natural ungodliness of this world.

- But when a son in this dispensation of grace rebuffs that *strange woman* and stands against that — just like back where the format for sonship edification alerted you to (in the book of Proverbs) — that opposition of the PoE will **intensify** — and Romans ends up with the declared statement of what the Adversary going to do now.

- He (the *strange woman*) shifts tactics— and now the attack is with God's word—but it's the miss-handling of it, and contrary doctrine— "*offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned*" (Rom. 16:17) - and by "*good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.*" (Rom. 16:18)

- So my understanding is that you have to differentiate between the 2, even though one borrows from the other frequently, but my understanding is that God views them as 2 different things.

- And you'll see that more and more, as a son progresses through his sonship education, that viewing these as 2 separate entities becomes more and more important.

- And this is especially true when the PoE finds it necessary to move away from the basic temptations resident within the *world* (*the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life*) — as a son moves into his more advanced areas of his sonship life (and this has a lot to do with what goes on in the inner man of a son who is now undergoing "*the sufferings of Christ*") — that's when the line between *the evil man* (the ungodliness of the world) and *the strange woman* (the opposing PoE) becomes **real sharp and clear**—and you begin to experience far more temptations from the PoE than you ever do by the *world*.

- And as sons grow and mature and become that “*wise man*” and that “*man of understanding*” - where the corresponding doctrine for us occurs in Eph., Phil., and Col., — it’s like the *world* becomes less and less of a temptation—and the big thing you’re up against is the Adversary and his PoE—which is why in Eph. 6 the issue of the “*whole armour of God*” is brought in there.

- Because for a Level II son, the *fashion of this world* has pretty much passed away—that’s not the greatest temptation to him—and now his **conversation** is in heaven—and the big thing the Adversary’s after is to stop that!

- And the Adversary knows that in order to stop that, his most effective tool **won’t** be anything from this *world*—it’s going to consist of crafty, subtle, distortions and miss-handlings and corrupted forms of BIBLE doctrine that has certain allurements and appeals and enticements to the son at that Level.

- And that’s why, when you’re following the curriculum for sonship edification along there in the book of Proverbs—and when those exhortations are given that match up with each component of the curriculum—and when you’re in Proverbs chapters 8 & 9 **wisdom** becomes personified into the one doing the talking, because the whole issue now is: *wisdom*, living in that son’s inner man, is up against that *strange woman*—the *evil man* has basically passed of the scene: he’s gone—he’s barely mentioned again.

- And (fascinating) — **look at chapter 9**—how it begins and how it ends!

- That *strange woman*—in order to succeed with her deception, **takes the very words out of the mouth of wisdom and adopts them as her own!** (*A form of godliness that denies the power thereof!*) - [II Tim. 3:1-5]

- The very same words that came out of her mouth are the very same words that came out of the mouth of *wisdom* after she had built her *house* out of those *seven pillars*!

END REVIEW OF THE EVIL MAN/STRANGE WOMAN.

- Now, back to Proverbs 4:14 —

14 Enter not into the path of the wicked (those that are hostile to God & God's word—which can be an unbeliever or a lost person/persons, and unfortunately, it can even be a believer), *and go not in the way of evil men.*

- The Father's exhortation here (actually, an exhortation of warning and admonition [= to put His son in mind of his duties; to counsel him against wrong practices or courses of action]) — focuses upon the 2 matters that are kind of the 'hallmark' features to godly **judgment**:

- 1) The son's *path* or *paths*;
- 2) The son's *way*.

- And these 2 issues are the 'core features' (so to speak) of **any** person who makes judgmental decisions—and are of special importance to making judgmental decisions as a properly educated son of God (i.e., making **GODLY** judgmental decisions).

- And this, again, is where real, adulthood-type sonship godliness (being Like Father, Like son) gets going and starts manifesting itself in this present world—[which is where it's supposed to start, but will eventually get manifested in the heavenly realm later on].

- And the nature of making godly judgmental decisions means that you are going to end up determining a particular *path* or godly course of action in connection with others (with your *neighbor*).

- And soon, you'll make more judgments in connection with even more people (*neighbors*) - and eventually you'll be determining more than one path to take—you'll make judgments (plural) that will (when taken together) end up defining your overall *way* as a properly educated son of your Heavenly Father.

- And this is the nature of judgmental decision-making (whether its godly or ungodly; saved or lost) - it's just the natural way that judgmental decision-making works itself out in the details of your life.

- And since neither the Adversary nor this world can 'read your mind' — the opposition & resistance to your judgmental decisions are going to immediately focus upon your course of action (your *path & way*) because that's where your godly judgmental decision-making gets manifested/put on display! (especially in the godly **Labor** aspect of it)

- And we were warned & exhorted back in Romans chapter 8—and the corresponding exhortation in Proverbs chapter 2—when we were “*to perceive the words of understanding*” (Sonship Establishment), that we were going to eventually face an *evil man* (**the world**, and all that it offers you—to tempt you); and then a Satanic Policy of Evil (a *strange woman*) that’s going to try to seduce you and get you to forsake your godly path—and eventually *separate* you from *the love of Christ*.

- My understanding is that Proverbs 4:14 (in both those phrases—*the path of the wicked* and *the way of evil men*) is focusing upon the issue of “*the evil man*” or “this world” in which we live.

- (Later on, after your *instruction of judgment* is completed, then you’ll face that *strange woman*—but ‘first things first.’)

- And there’s a great deal of information that we’ve already covered that has alerted us to just this very thing happening as we make advancements and attainments in our sonship education.

- Remember & connect some issues we’ve already covered:

- Back in Romans 6, you were first taught about your sanctified position & identity in Christ—and you were first taught that you are *dead to sin and alive unto God*.

- But that doesn’t mean that SIN is ‘dead to you’! (Sin is still in your ‘members’ ... and how will it make an appeal to you?)

A: Romans 6:12 — *Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it ...* (but the verse didn’t stop there) ... **in the LUSTS thereof**.

- Now connect that with the exhortation sitting in Proverbs 1:10 (Sonship Orientation) — *My son, if sinners entice thee, consent thou not*.

- After setting forth the fact that your first enemy to the success of your sonship life will be YOU (and sin in your members) - vs.10ff sets forth a second enemy to your sonship success—an enemy that will

tempt you in a specific way so that you end up opting for an **alternative PATH** rather than that of your Father's instruction.

- And where do you encounter "*sinner*"? — In the **WORLD** — and the world's enticements are going to set before you some **powerful alternatives** to the "path" you are walking!

- When you're walking as a son and being conformed to the image of Christ—and you begin to walk the paths of godly judgment—this world is so constructed & composed, i.e., it already has built into it an automatic response to godliness in its midst—and it will readily make an offer of an ungodly alternative as a **different path** to choose!

- And be warned: **it already has a ready ally at work within the very members of your body: YOUR FLESH!**

- And this world is designed to FEED YOUR LUSTS (it's major feature is that it's lust-feeding!) ... and that's the genius of what is built in to the course of this world!

- The course of this world is designed to exploit your lusts—to feed them—to develop those lusts—and to make it so that you spend your time and prioritize your life around those lusts!

- And my point in all this is that even though we are justified, sanctified saints—with the power of sin broken so that we are therefore *dead to sin*—the truth of the matter is that sin is still in our members, and when that is combined with living godly as a son (being conformed to the image of Christ) IN THIS WORLD and in the environment of the course of this world—sin in our members is going to appeal to us to follow a PATH that is according to the lusts of our FLESH—and therefore we could end up 'Entering into the path of the wicked, and going in the way of evil men.'

- So this isn't the first time you've had to deal with "the world" and it's natural, built-in negative response to godliness in its midst (you had to deal with that at the 'get-go' in Sonship Orientation [Proverbs 1:10-19]) - but now a much greater and much higher attainment of godliness has been achieved—so another round of negative reaction from the *evil man* (the world) is going to tempt/oppose/resist you!

- This Post-Doctrinal Exhortation (in Pro. 4:14-19) is given in view of the fact that you now have an **increased capacity** to make godly **judgments**—(increased responsibility, increased ability) - and now by living that out; and by the working out of that doctrine of godly *judgment* in the details of your life — you now have to **BEWARE** that the opposition against you (on every level) is going to correspondingly increase!

- And the first wave of opposition (so to speak) is going to come from this present evil, ungodly world (from *evil men*) who will entice, intimidate, and appeal to your **flesh** to enter into their ‘tried-and-true’ **path**—and to go (or walk) in their **way!**

- **And let’s get real practical and real honest here:**

- When you have been taught by your Father to think in terms of being always & alway ‘in debt’ to all men—for nothing more and nothing less than owing them an expression of godly *love* ...

... and then that that godly Thinking is supposed to have as its natural ‘outlet’ godly Conduct & Behavior that operates upon this chief saying of your Father, *namely, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself* ...

... and then that godly Thinking & godly Living enters into the godly Labor that has you operating upon the major Principle that *Love worketh no ill to his neighbour* ...

... in the brief (?) time that we’ve dealt with this (relatively speaking) - haven’t you already been tempted at times to just **chunk all that** and work a little *ill* to your neighbour? ... or maybe work **a lot** of *ill* to your neighbour? ... a little **justifiable** ‘tit for tat’???

- Truth is—like nothing else, **this** is going to be a clear measure to you if you’re truly **walking like a son** of your Father ... or NOT!

- There’s going to be a lot of temptation from those who don’t understand godly *judgment* at all to come along and tell you that you don’t know what you’re doing—that you’re ruining your life ...

... why in the world would you do that? ... that's stupid—and all the other things that comes from the 'vast majority' of the thinking of this world that says, No one makes decisions that way but God, and you're not God—so who do you think you are?

- And that means that the 'vast majority' of people that you're going to run in to, who can relate to how you're coming to your decision, and why you're doing the things your doing is going to be very, very SMALL (to say the least)!

- In fact, most of the saved people you run in to aren't going to understand your decision!

- Therefore you're going to get a lot of pressure to take a different course of action—(a different *path* and a different *way*)!

- And that's why the Father crafts the Exhortation the way He does:
Pro. 4: *14 Enter not into the path of the wicked, and go not in the way of evil men.*

- And that's why the Father then stacks up 4 admonitions or warnings that progressively develop from mild to severe!

15 Avoid it, pass not by it, turn from it, and pass away.

- And my understanding is that since the path or paths make up the component parts of the overall way of a son—it's only natural that the 4 admonitions of (:15) focus upon "it" being the overall *way* of evil men. (including all their paths)

- Unlike the men of this world—a "son" has a singular *way* that runs from the beginning of his sonship education to the end of it—and it is composed of many paths.

- And achieving the overall objective of that way is going to involve the son being set apart unto achieving that objective throughout the entire course of the curriculum.

- And I say that what you have in these 4 admonitions progressively goes from mild to severe in the sense that in that first one (*Avoid it*), it's as if *the way of evil men* is seen at a distance at first—it's kind of far out there alluring you—but then it's like, if that didn't do anything

... then it's pressure and it's allurements get a little closer and a little more personal ... so then you have (*pass not by it*)

... then if that doesn't do anything, it gets even closer and even more personal ... (*turn from it*) - now it's close enough that you can actually **turn** down its 'street' (so to speak)

... and if that doesn't do anything, then it gets closer still, and gets real personal (it gets right at some allurements that really resonate [musical term] with your **flesh**) ... so finally you have (*and pass away*) - and it's as if your very next step is to TURN DOWN that street and *go in the way of evil men* ... but even there, you still haven't committed to it, so **PASS AWAY!**

- Taken together—in (:14 and :15), your Father exhorts and warns and admonishes you **6 Times** about being tempted by *evil men*—(the **world** and its **wisdom**) - and in view of that alone, it should tell you something of the greatness of the temptation you're going to face as you ponder and finally make an intelligent *judgment* on a *path* of godliness—(indicating your *way*) as a son!

- And in **the order** in which the nature of the opposition and resistance to your godly sonship edification is going to be encountered (as godliness is working itself out in you [in the details of your life] as your sonship education is now well underway) — just as you were told before (back in Proverbs ch. 2) - now that you have not only been properly educated in fundamental *wisdom, justice*, and one-half of *judgmental* decision making skills—by now you've got some real EXPERIENCE with those skill sets—and now (in keeping with the **order** as it was set forth), the *evil man* and his *way* and his **associates** comes **first** (because they're '**of the world**').

- And "*the world*" gets the opportunity, first, to react to godliness in its midst—and to oppose the son and his godly edification.

- (and that's true in both Israel's program, and in this dispensation of grace)

- But then, as the education goes on—and as greater capacity & ability is given to a son by that education—so then is greater capacity given to the opposition—which is the very

principle that I Corinthians 10:13 operates on (*There hath no temptation taken you but such as is common to man: but God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able ...*)

- The point is (once again) - that when this critical juncture has been reached—in connection with *receiving the instruction of judgment*—and the son’s capacity has been up’ed—and he’s taking the issue of Godly Love & Charity to a new level (so to speak) ... so does *the evil man* have the opportunity to take things to a new level!

- Look once again at the terminology of this Fatherly Exhortation —

14 *Enter not into the path of the wicked, and go not in the way of evil men.*

15 *Avoid it, pass not by it, turn from it, and pass away.*

16 *For they sleep not, except they have done mischief; and their sleep is taken away, unless they cause some to fall.*

17 *For they eat the bread of wickedness, and drink the wine of violence.*

- Notice that although some information is given about the kind of *path* that *the evil men* walk in; and the *way* that they have—you need to appreciate that the things that are said by the Father to the son are all designed to make it so that he does not get ENTICED!

- These things are said so that the son doesn’t get covertly (or cunningly) ‘pulled in’ - so that he does not get taken unawares!

- Truth is—a craftiness is being described here in connection with *the path of the wicked* and *the way of evil men* .

- And the point here is NOT to simply point out to the son that the *path* and the *way of evil men* are evil and *wicked*—(which they are; and which the son should already be able to acknowledge by his understanding of what the world is) — but more than that, what’s being stressed to the son here is the fact that, Believe it or not, son, but you could be sucked in to that world!

- That’s why you’ve got those 4 expressions in (:15) that are designed to make it so that the son does NOT entertain what goes on in that *path* or in that *way* **FOR ONE MOMENT!!!**

- Truth is—if he starts entertaining it and thinking about it and just stands there looking at it—**his defenses will start to crumble!**

- Now after you get the strong warning and admonition (times 6) in (:14-15), the Father then gives the son 2 statements of further explanation and further amplification—you get the word “**For**” 2 times—once at the beginning of (:16) and again at the beginning of (:17).

- The Father now **has to explain** to the son just where *the path of the wicked and the way of evil men go*—which implies that if your Father didn’t tell you this, at the outset, you’d never know that this is where these paths and this way is going to end up!

- The point being that the *paths & ways of the evil man* (the world) are going to be **alluring** to the son—they’re going to look and feel attractive and **desirable**—and at the skill level you’re at, you’re most likely unable to perceive where the course of this world goes!

- And *sin in your mortal body* (i.e., your **flesh**) and *the lusts thereof* have an incredible and powerful attraction to the *paths and the way of evil men!*

- And although we could talk about this for a long time—understand that we’re not simply talking about obvious things of this world—such as murder, fornication, theft, drug and alcohol abuse, and so forth (though that’s certainly part of it)—but rather distinctions that run along the lines of what is less obvious, viz., **godly** vs. **ungodly!**

16 For they sleep not, except they have done mischief ([displeasing] see Smith’s, pg. 492); **and their sleep is taken away, unless they cause some to fall.**

- In other words—they’re going to be ‘**bent**’ on **taking you in!**

- They’ve been up all night figuring out how in the world they can **corrupt** you! — they want to cause you to **FALL!**

- That’s why you see that issue come up in our curriculum (not that it’s an exact parallel) in I Corinthians 10:12 — *Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall.*

- In the context of the Corinthians assuming that they could “stand” against the Policy of Evil ... they FELL!

- And there’s a **danger** of Sophomoric thinking taking place with the son.

- And that’s why the son has to do what Proverbs 4:13 said:
Take fast hold of instruction; let her not go: keep her; for she is thy life.

- So there’s going to be greater temptation from the world and it’s greater, crafty enticements for the son to ‘let go of his instruction’ in favor of what the wicked and the *evil men* have to offer!

17 For they eat the bread of wickedness, and drink the wine of violence.

- Notice how *wickedness* and *violence* are talked about as being eaten as *bread* and drunk as *wine* — the idea being that this is what the *evil men* (what the world) FEEDS ON! — the world **feeds** on these 2 things!

- *Wickedness* (that which is opposed to and hostile to God and God’s word) is to the mind of *evil men* (to this world and the men of this world) as *bread* is to their body! — they **feed** on it with a great appetite; and with great pleasure and take the highest satisfaction and utmost delight in it!

- And *violence* (harm/injury) is committed by *evil men* as if they were drinking a glass of wine—with joy & hilarity & merriment (great FUN)!

- (By the way—you’ve already been educated by your Father about *violence*—and just how significant that issue is to Him—back in the inst. of Justice!)

- Again, your Father is telling you all this because of just how crafty the world is to allure you—and because you may not perceive as you should just where the *paths & ways* of this world will end up taking you! — (it can easily end up with you taking a path that ends in you FALLING and getting involved in VIOLENCE! (maybe not overt & obvious *violence*, but rather much more subtle forms of harm and injury to others, but *violence* nonetheless!)

- And if you don't take this Exhortation seriously—and just as critical as the doctrine you just learned (use it as the 'mortar' that it's designed to be)—THIS IS EXACTLY WHAT YOU'LL END UP BEING INVOLVED WITH! (and as God's "son", you're a FOOLISH son to get involved with it!)

- And at this point in your education—you're NOT going to readily perceive where the end of these *paths* or this *way* goes.

- You may get pressured or enticed to think: Look, this person is a jerk—why should I give him an expression of godly love—he doesn't love me, he doesn't love anything, he's only going to be even more mad at me than he is right now—so I'm just going to take the course of this world (and the course that others around you want to see you factor into your decision). [i.e., family & friends rather than the Father]

- Truth is, the *evil men* of this world are going to try to STEER you (whether they know it or not; whether they actively participate in it or not) ... they're trying to steer you down a different path and a different way than what your Father is teaching you.

- And it's going to be TEMPTING to do it!

- The 'steering' mechanisms of this world are many: Religion; Science; Philosophy; Accepted Public Opinion; Education (public primary, secondary, and University level); Politics; Culture; Technology (social media); The Today Show. (how about modern Christianity itself?)

- And this gets very subtle when you're talking about what is godly vs. what is ungodly in this world (and where the *evil man* is concerned).

- Then in the last 2 verses of this Fatherly Exhortation—the Father contrasts the properly educated godly son with the ungodly *evil man*—and the terminology is very precise—since the son is just starting out, and is just now beginning to make judgments to determine a particular course of action to take, his "*path*" gets focused upon (his "*way*" is just being developed)—and where the *evil men* are concerned, their overall "*way*" gets focused upon so as to gather up into one ball of wax any and all their paths ... because they all lead to one single thing: **DARKNESS** vs. **the shining light** of godliness being manifested by the son!

- And if nothing else—just by the use of the terminology God uses in (:18 and :19 — “*light*” vs. “*darkness*”), you’re being made aware that the Father’s *way* (which is now becoming your way as your Father’s properly educated “son”) and the *way of evil men* (which is the *way* of this corrupted, ungodly world) **ARE POLAR OPPOSITES!** (“*sober*” vs. **DUI [Deciding Under the Influence]**)

- And what you’re now getting generated in your thinking is that when it comes to you, as a son, and the *paths* you take as a son, and the *way* that becomes your *way* as a son—has no room for “integration” - no room for “compromise” - no room for “concords” or agreements with this world and the course and wisdom of this world!

- In fact, this is a good place to just remind ourselves that the primary battlefield of both the *evil man* (the world) and the *strange woman* (the Policy of Evil) is a battle over WISDOM ... **a competing wisdom to your Father’s wisdom!**

- And one of the major/primary ways that this world and the men of this world get rid of God and God’s word is by their WISDOM (more than anything else)!

- For example—how many times have you heard someone (usually a very educated person) say, “There has to be more than one way to God [or to heaven] ... it just makes sense!” “There has to be more than one ‘Holy Scripture,’ ... it just makes sense!” [there’s their “wisdom” peeking out]

- or, how many times have you heard some Christian say, (or at least imply), “There has to be more than one way to please God and to live the Christian way of life ... after all, I’m very sincere ... there has to be a whole bunch of ways to serve God ... just look at all the Christian book best sellers ... dear old Dr. So And So said it ... it just makes sense!” [and there’s their “wisdom” peeking out]

- So we have (:18 & :19) - and the son, at this point in his education, has to be told this, too, — because he’s likely not to readily perceive this either.

18 But the path of the just is as the shining light, that shineth more and more unto the perfect day.

- The son is now in a position (and has the capacity and the ability) to lighten his own path—which he does by utilizing the Wisdom, Justice, Discretion, Godly Love & Charity, and the Sayings & Operating Principles of the 1st Component of Judgment.

- Utilizing what your Father has now taught you—you're able to make judgments in connection with your *neighbor* (near body; the body near you at any moment) - you're able to make godly judgments that are well-pleasing to your Father — and when you do that, you actually enlighten your own path.

- And this “*light*” is just at the beginning stage—it's going to grow just as it says, “*more and more unto the perfect day*” — and as you progress through the end of Level I Sonship Education and on into Level II Sonship Education, the issue of “*light*” (the light of God's wisdom and working together with Him in more and more of His ‘operations’) is going to grow stronger and become more and more brilliant until you become that “*perfect man*” (complete in your Father's instruction).

- Connect that with what Paul said in Romans 12:2 (*that ye may prove what is that good* (Thinking like God), *and acceptable* (Living like God), *and perfect* (Laboring together with God), *will of God*) ...

... and note that when you have been fully *conformed to the image of Christ* out in Level II Sonship Education, you are then looked at as being “*perfect*” (or complete—completely formed) - *Eph. 4:13 ... Till we all come ... unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ;*

- This whole issue of “*light*” is going to be more and more a part of our sonship life (functional life) as we make more and more progress in our godly edification.

- Now, don't confuse this with Israel's program—because a whole bunch of things are said about “*light*” in both God's program with Israel, and in God's program with us, the members of the church, the body of Christ — you find a bunch of things being said about “*light*” in the portion of God's word that pertains to Israel, and in the epistles of the apostle Paul (written to, for, and about us)!

- And one of the tendencies here is to bring in the issue that the Lord Jesus Christ stated back in Matthew's gospel when He delivered what is commonly called, "The Sermon On The Mount" ... *Ye are the light of the world* (Mat. 5:14)

... but that is talking about the members of the Remnant of Israel becoming the prophesied "light" to the Gentile Nations of the world. (And you ARE Gentiles—and although you *walk as children of light* in this present world, that's not the same thing as being the *light of the world!*) [that's a different operation of God in an entirely different program!]

- And both of God's programs include a 'perfect day': - when the Kingdom gets set up & established on this earth in Israel's program; and when this present dispensation of grace ends with us being *caught up together in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air* at the rapture. (NOTE: the rapture is NOT in view here!)

- But this does give you a very simple 'scope' of what your sonship life is now going to basically be about: **walking in paths of LIGHT** ... *light* that grows greater and greater as your godly sonship education continues on and on!

- And because the *way of the wicked* (the evil man) is *darkness*, that means that your sanctified functional life in Christ is going to get noticed more and more and become clearer and clearer to those *evil men* of this world! — and you're going to become more and more of a 'target' of those *evil men* of this world! (ex., John the Baptist, John 5:35)

19 The way of the wicked is as darkness: ...

- (which is an amazing statement in view of the so-called 'enlightenment' that this world has convinced themselves that they are part of and living in!)

- By the way—there's been more than one 'Age of Enlightenment' — there was one in the 3rd & 4th Century BC (Socrates/Plato/Aristotle)—there was one in the 16th Century AD (Galileo); the 17 Century (Newton) and the 18th Century (German Rationalism); 19th Century (Industrial Age); 20th Century (Einstein, Atomic Age); 21st Century (Computers, Social Media) ... and there'll be more and more!

- The world is enormously satisfied with all their ‘enlightenment’ - and they are totally unaware that in God’s sight, it’s nothing but *darkness*— (sin, ignorance, error, unbelief, wickedness and ungodliness)!

- And the way of *the evil man* (for all it’s advancement, enlightenment, progress, improvement, betterment, and evolution) it all ends up in utter **DARKNESS!**

- (see Job 5:7-14)

19 ... *they know not at what they stumble.*

- Notice how the world is going to view you as ‘stumbling’ around in a bunch of foolishness & ‘darkness’ yourself: (“What?! You believe the Bible is literally true? What a fool!) — and yet, God’s viewpoint is that the properly educated son (making godly judgments) is WISE and they are the ones that are fools!

- Remember—you’re going to *run and not stumble*—**but they are already stumbling**, and *they don’t even know what they’re stumbling at!*

- And when you *stumble*, you’re going to bring injury and harm and ruin to yourself!

- Without knowing it, they’re *stumbling* at God, at the Lord Jesus Christ, at Calvary’s Cross, ... and most of all **at God’s word!**

- And we could go on and on—but the point in this Exhortation is to now get you as a “son” to be on “**high alert**” that as you make decisions of the *judgment* variety (especially in regards to *working no ill to your neighbour* as you put to **WORK** the Wisdom, Justice, Discretion, and Godly Love) - that your **flesh** (and the lusts thereof) is going to be tempted—you’re going to get opposition & resistance from *evil men* (from men in this world) [this world has a LOT of advice, guidance, counsel, and wisdom to offer] - and it’s going to really appeal to you and entice you and try to steer you and influence you to walk the way it walks ... and leave the paths of your Father!

- And you should be far enough along to not have to have an ‘exhaustive study’ on the course of this world vs. the paths and way of proper godly sonship edification—and a great deal of this is going to have to be perceived by you (in the details of your life).

- (but, just as an example of the kinds of problems that can arise [and some of the more subtle kinds of problems, especially in the realm of Christianity itself and in local churches] ... see I Corinthians 1:10-31)

- So when it comes to *the evil man* and *the way of evil men*—(i.e., the world—a competing ungodly wisdom—a competing ungodly path—a competing ungodly way—with attractive, pleasing, alluring and tempting ‘steering mechanisms’ - designed to steer you to opt for **its** paths and **its** way rather than the *paths* and *way* of your Father) —

... and so when it comes to the world (*the evil man*) - a properly educated son (coming along and making decisions that require judgment) - you are to now have the ability and capacity to perceive that *the way of the wicked is as darkness: they know not at what they stumble.*

- You’re to perceive that their *way is as DARKNESS.*

- And in describing *the way of the wicked* (the *way of evil men*—that evil man) as *darkness*—in that context, *darkness* is supposed to make an impact upon you; it’s supposed to make a deep impression upon you because you’ve already encountered this terminology before; and you’ll encounter it even later on in your sonship curriculum. ... (in fact in Rom.13:12 ... “*works of darkness*”)

- Job 38:2

- Psalm 82:1-8 (:5)

- Colossians 1:13 (*darkness* [in this context] has power to it!)

- In fact, by now, you have been given enough information in Romans itself in order for you to be able to come along and define and describe (and perceive) what *this world* is.
[see Chart #72]

- (see **Notes on Romans 12, pgs. 85-89**)

- (one last comment on “the world”) — one of the reasons why we associate “the evil man” with “the world” is because by definition, *this world* (as used in both Rom. 12:2 and Gal. 1:4 [“*this present evil world*”]) **IS** the world of men.

- It is the present evil world of ungodly mankind.
- It is the “evil man” because it is the world of evil men.
- And in this context, the “world” is the ever evolving ungodly environment on this earth in which all men live ... and in which all men are partakers of ... and the power by which all men have come under the influence.
- The only exception to this is a justified member of the church, the body of Christ who has been properly edified unto godliness which is in faith.
- This world, being shaped and charted by both the sinfulness and ungodliness of men, as well as the influence of the Satanic Plan of Evil, is comprised of powerful darkness and wickedness as well as counterfeit light and fleshly goodness.
- The major characteristic feature of this world is a competing wisdom to the wisdom of God.
- The world has manifold steering and influencing mechanisms (including every ruling institution of men as well as all the arts and sciences) that deeply affect the way men think, behave, and spend their time—but the underlying feature of them all is that they are hostile to God and God’s word (God’s norms & standards of righteousness), and seek to act independent of God and God’s word (and establish their own norms and standards of righteousness)—promoting, applauding, and commending the works, energy, and production of man’s own flesh while oftentimes convincing themselves by some works or penance system that they are wholly acceptable in God’s sight or in each other’s sight.

- Any Questions? Comments?

- Before moving on—let’s just revisit an old friend—THE POSITIVE & PROPER RESPONSE.

RECEIVING THE INSTRUCTION OF JUDGMENT:

**- 2nd Component: Godly Judgments In Our Use of Time and How We Spend It.
(Romans 13:11-14)**

- Now you've got the Wisdom, Justice, Discretion, and those 5 Major Features of Godly Love—and you've got the 1st Component of the *instruction of Judgment* with the Godly Thinking (that you *Owe no man any thing, but to love one another*), the Godly Living (which includes that chief *saying of Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself*), and the Godly Labor (which includes the Main Operating Principle that *Love worketh no ill to his neighbour*).

- And therefore, that all works together in order for you to be able to; and have the capacity to, define “*ill*”.

- And on the basis of that, to be able to identify “*ill*” any time you would either be tempted to work it towards a neighbour; or to think of it and invent a response in accordance with it in reacting to your neighbour for something, or whatever—it gives us the capacity to discern that to be the “*ill*” that it is, and to choose to walk a different path—and to take those 5 Features of Godly Love, and to discern and to figure out and to decide on a response that's consistent with all 5 Features of Godly Love (which would be the opposite of something that is “*ill*”).

- And then we know (and have the confidence to know) that we've chosen the good path, and we're walking that good path.

- And then—that allow us to possess the ability to “*establish our ways*” from this point on.

- And that's the very point in which you then enter the 2nd Component of the *instruction of Judgment!*

- Now, don't get confused—because I've said that a son has one overall “way” - which is true—but the word *way* can be used in more than one way or in more than one sense.

- And if you remember back in Proverbs 2:8, you were told about that one overall “*way*” (*He keepeth the paths of judgment, and preserveth the way of his saints.*) — and then if you look down at the corresponding Exhortation that's given after receiving the 2nd Component of the instruction of Judgment (Proverbs 4:26—*Ponder the path of thy fee, and let all thy ways be established.*)

- My understanding is that when you're talking about *ways* (Plural) - you're talking about all of the various ways in which you go about carrying out the path you've chosen.

- And there may be a number of *ways* in which you chart out and carry out and labor with your Father in any particular *path* you choose to take as you *work no ill toward your neighbour*.

- So there's no conflict or no contradiction between what Proverbs 2:8 said and what Proverbs 4:26 says.

- But my point here is that when the 1st Component of the *instruction of judgment* is effectually working—and when you begin to have the ability and the capacity to discern *ill* toward your neighbour—and when you therefore have the capacity to make a sonship decision of godly judgment toward your neighbour that ends up with you confidently choosing the good path and walking that good path—and then possessing the ability to *establish your ways* from this point on ... that IS where you enter this 2nd Component of Judgment—that's the 'transition point' (so to speak).

- This is where you make a transition from the 1st to the 2nd Component of Judgment.

- And you then enter the issue of where Godliness **in connection with TIME** comes into play!

... because **TIME** is what you **have to understand properly** to *establish your ways*!

- Because you're now going to sit down and figure out what *ways* have to be pursued **and the time that needs to be given to them** to be able to begin to move and advance on in your sonship education with the capacity to have some more speed than you've had already. (that *running* concept)

- And when it comes to the issue of *establishing your ways*, the issue now is to be able to figure out and *establish* the *ways* that are going to enable you to make progress through the remainder of your sonship education without getting sidetracked; without getting detoured; without hitting 'dead ends'; without 'stumbling' — and to provide for the "*light*" to *shine more and more*—and to therefore provide for both, the greater visibility in the immediate vicinity where you are, but to also shine out so that you can see further down the road (so to speak) for what needs to be done.

- And the issue is to see the wise use of time that you'll be able to make in connection with getting to your objective.

- And all of a sudden, the points of attainment in the rest of your sonship education—throughout the balance of Level I, on throughout Level II all begin to become visible out in the distance!

- And the issue is to obtain the balance of your sonship education and avoid all of the pit-falls and the traps and detours and sidetracks that the world will throw in your way, and that the Policy of Evil will come along and throw in your way (with the *strange woman* coming along and alluring you to spend time with her for a little while).

- Now, when it comes to the information we're going to be given in the 2nd Component of Judgment regarding TIME—it's **not** information about time that's supposed to just give you a particular perspective on time—which is the way in which this portion of God's word is usually handled).
 - Granted, it certainly does that—but that's kind of a 'given' at this point—(because within one verse, Paul could have done that!) ... but there's much more information that just that issue!

 - Truth is, there's much more information contained in (:11-14) that goes beyond simply providing for a proper perspective on time—there's information given that allows for you to EVALUATE time—and to make decisions and judgments in connection with it—wise decisions—critical decisions—decisions that therefore allow you to come along and perceive what would be a great waste of time; or what would be a poor use of time; or what would not be as good a use of time as something else would be—or what would be a better use of time compared to what would be a good use of it—and even what would be the best use of time.

 - This information is designed for you to make those kind of judgments in the personal details of your life—in the personal things that you go through—in the personal things that you encounter—so that you can *establish your ways!*

- And therefore, just as it was with the 1st Component to our instruction of godly Judgment—this 2nd Component is going to act as that ‘Clearing House’ or ‘Catch-All’ type of instruction that will provide you with the capacity/ability to do what Romans 12:2 told you that you would be doing throughout the entirety of your sonship life—that is, that you will be able to determine all on your own THE WILL OF GOD—(or as it was said in Rom. 12:2 ... *that YE may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God*) — we’re going to be able to know and discern what God’s will is, and to conduct ourselves in accordance with it with anybody we ever deal with, and in ANY and EVERY situation and circumstance of our lives—in ALL of the details of our lives!

- And this 2nd Component of our instruction of Judgment here in Romans 13:11-14 is going to perfectly **complement** that ‘Clearing House’ or ‘Catch-All’ type instruction so that we can confidently make a decision as to what God’s will is in any particular situation in which we don’t have some concrete information about—or a particular verse or portion of God’s word that addresses it already in our frame of reference.

- And this 2nd Component complements the 1st Component by taking where we already are in our sonship education—and again in that ‘Clearing House’ or ‘Catch-All’ type manner—it has us look at **what is ahead of us** in our sonship lives TIME-WISE—and gives us some more of those *sayings* (that will act as that Catalyst) by which we get some further instruction that enables us to be able to make the best use, and the wisest use of the remaining time we have in our sonship lives—(whether we die before the dispensation of grace ends, or whether the dispensation of grace ends while we are still alive)!

- And we need to have this complementary Component to our instruction of Judgment because these 2 Components of our instruction of Judgment are fundamental, ongoing type capacities that we need to have—because they fundamentally figure in to every aspect and every detail of our sonship lives from here on out.

- Now—before moving on to dealing with Romans 13:11-14—let’s get the appropriate and corresponding Exhortation that the Father gives His son just prior to receiving this 2nd Component to his instruction of Judgment.

- **Proverbs 4:20-22 (read)**

- Once again—these Fatherly Exhortations and Expectations are given to a son in order to act as that ‘mortar’ in the building or edifying process—that is, they act in such a way so as to allow the doctrine the son is about to receive to not just be an academic study of God’s word, or not to treat the doctrine the son’s about to receive as just a “category” of doctrine that ends up merely being compartmentalized as just so much ‘Bible Data’ (so to speak) ...

... but rather, it allows for the son to see how the doctrine is designed to perfectly complement the previous doctrine—and to see how it’s all designed to attach itself to all that you’ve previously learned in your ongoing godly edifying. (to see it’s Sense & Sequence—and therefore to know WHY this is the next thing you **need** in your sonship education)!

- As we’ve noted before—the Pre-Doctrinal Exhortations are designed to ‘Prime the pump’ (so to speak) of the son’s inner man—that is, to get the son to recognize the importance of what his Father is about to give him (instruction-wise), and to get the son’s level of zeal and enthusiasm increased for getting the doctrine—and to make it so that the son’s inner man is ‘primed’ to not only get the doctrine, but once the doctrine is given, to give it the permanent place in his heart it need to have — and in the end, to have it written *upon the fleshy tables* of the son’s heart.

- And along with that—the Exhortations are the appropriate place for the Father to issue warnings and admonitions to His son about the pitfalls and dangers that His son will face as he gains the effectual working of the doctrine and becomes more and more ‘Like Father, like son’!

- And I say that because even though an Exhortation can be somewhat short—at the same time, it can be very intense! (Because the Father always knows more than the son—and the Father knows what the son **doesn’t** know in connection with what he’s going to face [both in this world, and in connection with the Policy of Evil] temptation-wise and opposition-wise and resistance-wise.

- And therefore, it’s no surprise to find that we’ve got a rather short Exhortation here in Proverbs 4:20-22—but at the same time, it’s a very intense & passionate Exhortation.

20 *My son, attend to my words; incline thine ear unto my sayings.*

- (notice again, that you have some terminology here that *seems* to be repetitive—it seems that you’ve heard this before—and some of it you have heard before ... but here’s the BIG difference: YOU ARE NOT AT THE SAME PLACE YOU WERE BEFORE! ... and there is a good reason why you need to have some things said to you that were perfectly fitted for the time and place you were at when they were first said to you—but now they are going to take on new and deeper meaning and impact in the current context of where you are in getting this 2nd Component of the instruction of Judgment).

- And notice the way in which this Fatherly Exhortation is constructed:

- First, you have (:20) — which has 2 major parts to it:

- 1) *My son, attend to my words;*
- 2) *incline thine ear unto my sayings.*

[**failure with either one will result in disaster!**]

- And then you have the remainder of what is said in (:21-22) that all have something to do with what was said in (:20) —

- Notice in (:21) you have the word “*them*” (twice) (meaning, “*my words*” and “*my sayings*”) — and (:21) is going to Exhort the son to do something important with his Father’s *words* and *sayings*. (you’re going to do 2 things with them)

- And then in (:22) you have the word “*they*” (again, hearkening back to those *words* and *sayings* of the Father) — and (:22, beginning with that word “*For*”) it’s going to further amplify and explain to the son the critical nature of the Father’s *words* and *sayings* (the kind of impact they are to have upon the son) and the **great benefit** that they are to the son for making the kind of judgments he’s going to make.

- Part 1 of the Exhortation of (:20) - *My son, **attend** to my words;*

- “**attend**” - This is only the 2nd time you’ve encountered the word *attend* in the book of Proverbs—the 1st time was in 4:1 in the Exhortation for the Sonship Checkpoint between Justice & Judgment.

- Both of the clauses of (:20) [both Part 1 & Part 2] are very intense—and this first one is indeed **very intense**—but (not in any way to minimize this first one), the second one is even more intense than this first one.

- And I say they're intense because there is an intensity here due to the inherent **dangers** that are just of an internal variety due to your flesh and your imagination and all of the things that can (and tends) to go in to the judgments you make from your own fleshly desires and from your own imagination.

- On top of that—you've got pressure and temptation from the wisdom of the world itself—and now you're going to add to that the allurements and opposition from the Satanic Policy of Evil (that *strange woman*) who is just waiting for you.

- So what you're getting here is a very powerful and strong exhortation that tells you that, more than ever before, you're going to be tempted to go by someone else's *words* than the *words* of your Father!

- By the way—this is NOT talking about 'attend' in the sense of the son's Commitment Level—(to be in 'Honest Attendance' in his Father's Bible Class) - because the son has been doing that all along.

- "*attend*" = in this context, to listen; to regard; to fix your attention upon—it literally means to 'stretch' or '**bend** **your mind to a thing**—used in a context of intensity and warning, it has the idea of heeding to a thing whereby if it's not heeded to, it's to your own peril!

- Much like the word *attention!* (even as used in the military)—which is to bring you to a state of focused attention, and dropping anything and everything else!

= When used from a Speaker's perspective, it has the idea of bending your mind to the Speaker's words until they are fully understood and appreciated.

= Used very powerfully here—it means to give your mind over to a subject (your Father's *words*) **to the disregard of any other subject or any other words!**

- “*My son, attend to **my words**;*” — to the words of your Father and no one else’s words—and by now, you know where your “*words of understanding*” are to be found!

- And there’s going to be some “*words*” that your Father is now going to give you that are going to act as that ‘catalyst’ to go along with all that you’ve been taught—that, together, they’re going to give you the remainder of your capacity for making godly sonship decisions in regards to TIME and will give you your full fundamental instruction in order to make godly judgments that are pleasing in His sight and that make it so **you** can determine & prove God’s will in any circumstance and in any situation.

- The temptation and pressure and influence and intimidation is to get you to ‘cast your Father’s words behind you’ and to be influenced by some words of someone else! (either your own words or the words of other men of this world or the words of *the strange woman—words without knowledge that darkeneth counsel!*)

- Part 2 of the Exhortation of (:20) - *incline thine ear unto my sayings.*

- “*incline thine ear*” - this is a phrase that you will remember that we had back in Proverbs 2:2 dealing with our Commitment to getting our Sonship Education back in Sonship Establishment.

- But now—(as I’ve pointed out) - this is **not** the issue of Honest Attendance—(because you’ve been doing that all along) — rather, you’ve now reached a critical point of attainment in connection with making godly *judgments*—and once again, the Father has reason to Exhort His son to further ‘*incline his ear*’ [not “*unto wisdom*” back in Pro. 2:2—but rather, “*unto my sayings*”].

- By the way—there are only 2 times in all of the Fatherly Exhortations that this phrase is used—once in connection with your Commitment to Honest Attendance to your Father’s education (to Bible Class) - and the only other time in connection with Judgment and properly handling your Father’s *sayings*.

- And that’s because of how critical and how important those *sayings* are going to be both in Judgment and in Equity— and on throughout your Sonship Education!

- Now when you “*incline your ear*” unto something—**it’s got your rapt attention!** — and you are purposefully shutting everything else out! (You don’t want to miss a word of it [of those sayings]!

- It’s an expression of bending your ear so that nothing else is heard—and nothing else is of greater importance than what your ear is hearing from your Father!

- It’s a phrase used to underscore the critical/vital nature and supreme importance of what you are now hearing from your Father!

- And the thing that now captures **all** of your attention and calls for you to give it supreme importance to the shutting out of everything else (and there will be a lot to have to shut out coming at you from *this world* [the evil man]) — the thing that’s got your rapt (deeply absorbed) attention is your Father’s **SAYINGS!**

- “*incline thine ear unto my sayings.*”

- Notice that little preposition “*unto*” — even when you go to an English Dictionary, the word *unto* is almost always said to be strictly a “Bible word” - and usually said to be nothing more than the Bible’s way of saying “to”.

- And while it is true that *unto* is basically a Bible word, it doesn’t mean the exact same thing as “to”.

- *Unto* is a much more intense form of the word “to” - in that *unto* expresses a total commitment and to give (in this case, these *sayings*) the complete weight they are intended to have.

- In fact, *unto* is so intense that it’s to be understood by the son that he’s to take these *sayings* of his Father as his own ‘life-blood’ (so to speak) [which will come up in :22] - and they are to become a permanent and useful tool for making godly *judgments*—so much so, that they are never to be forsaken —and if they are, it will end up in the son’s **ruin!**

- And that’s because it’s going to be by means of these *sayings* that your most powerful ability and capacity to make godly *judgments* and *equitable* judgments comes from!

- “*my sayings*” - again, there are a whole bunch of ‘sayings’ out there in the world that the men of this world use and have made up themselves—but these are **MY sayings**—the *sayings* that are specifically constructed by your Heavenly Father in order to be used by His sons for some of the most comprehensive decision-making skills that a human being will ever utilize!

- And you’re going to take these *sayings* and put them together with some things that you’ve already learned—and then you’re going to gain some insight so that you can come along and realize with a better understanding of how what you’ve already learned about works, and how what you’ve already learned can apply in more ways than what you’ve already recognized.

- And now you’ve got these *sayings* that (because of how they were put together) have meaning from the beginning to the end of them that become the PRINCIPLES by which you make these highly discerning or complex judgments (on the basis of them).

- “*sayings*” - We’ve already come to appreciate just what a *saying* is to a son—how a *saying* of God is constructed and how they are supposed to basically work.

- But I want to underscore that as they work with what you’ve already been taught—they are going to come along and by what they say, they are going to have you to be able to look back at the Wisdom, the Justice and the Godly Love—and to be able to determine what pieces of the Wisdom and what pieces of the Justice (what pieces of the information that we’ve learned) can be brought to bear when it comes to making these *judgments*.

- Because in some of the *judgments* you make—some of the information you’ve been taught just doesn't pertain or doesn't apply — and you’ve got to have some principles to operate upon in order to be able to come along and function like a FILTER (so to speak).

- In other words—the information contained in Romans 12:3 through 13:7 needs to have a FILTER—and these *sayings* act as that filter!

- And because you do have an awful lot of information and skill acquisition at your disposal for making complex *judgments*—then you have to have some means for being able to come along and filter out what, specifically, in that whole body of information **does** apply to this judgment, and what **doesn't**. (what's going to be really helpful to you, and what isn't!)

- (Much like an index functions in an Encyclopedia when you've got a question that needs to be answered).

- And that's the way these *sayings* are going to work with all that you've already been taught.

- And by what that *saying* says—it will allow for you to be able to filter through all the precepts and concepts and principles in the body of information that you've been taught and set aside the greatest bulk of information that's **not** going to help you out at all in this particular judgment—and then by properly utilizing that saying, it will (within the amount of information that **does** apply), it will allow for you to determine which applies good, better, and best; wise, wiser, or wisest.

- And that should make you appreciate all the more why the Father says what He says in that first sentence of the Exhortation in Proverbs 4:20 —

My son, attend to my words (bend your mind to My words to the disregard to any other words, because if you don't, it will be to your own peril); ***incline thine ear unto my sayings*** (make My sayings the most important things your ears ever hear—give them the full weight they're designed to have—absorb yourself in them).

- Now next you have (:21) which is going to exhort the son to do something important with the Father's *words* and *sayings* — and the son is to do 2 things with them ...

21 Let them not depart from thine eyes; (that's the 1st thing) ***keep them in the midst of thine heart.*** (that's the 2nds thing)

- “*them*” = The Father's *words* and especially, His *sayings*!

- *Let them not depart from thine eyes*—in other words, let them always be in sight—you’re going to have to read over them **and return to them again and again and again!**

- And that’s because, for one thing, they are going to GAIN in their strength and GAIN in their use and application both as you continue your growth in your sonship education, and as you encounter more and more varieties of circumstances and situations and details of your life that call upon you to make godly *judgments!*

- Furthermore, they are going to be used as that ‘filter’ that allows for you to make the best use of the information and skill sets that you’ve acquired ...

... and instead of the ‘steering mechanisms’ and ‘influencing mechanisms’ of *this world* (the *evil man*) that has deeply affected the way you Think, Behave, and spend your Time—and instead of being influenced by that *strange woman* (the Satanic Policy of Evil) - you’re going to be ‘steered’ and guided and influenced by your Father’s *words* and your Father’s *sayings* in all of the *paths* that makes up your *way* (the course of your sonship life)!

- **This is where the issue of the real dangers of NEGLECT comes into play!** (You can’t be successful in making godly *judgments* to the delight and pleasure of your Father **by neglecting these sayings!**)

- These *sayings* need to be ‘tended to’ (so to speak) - they need to be ever before your eyes—they need to be returned to time and time again because, by nature, they are designed to be useful in a growth sense—that is, as you grow in your sonship education, the *sayings* will grow in their usefulness in making even finer and more discriminating *judgments!*

- Now the 2nd thing that the son is exhorted to do with the Father’s *words* and *sayings* is in the second clause of (:21) ... ***keep them in the midst of thine heart.***

- Those *sayings* are supposed to be right there in the **middle** of the son’s heart—right in the **center** of the heart—because their job is to now function as the ‘clearing-house’ for all of the information that’s there in your heart!

- And they're going to function kind of like a 'Dispatcher' in a big Train Station—and it's like the Dispatcher comes along and says, You're to be loaded on that train for that destination; I don't need you on this train, I need this other thing—no, not this, not that, but THIS needs to go on this other train headed for this other destination—and so forth and so on.

- And all of the information from the sonship curriculum comes there into the heart—and there it get evaluated—and its ability to be applied to the situation at hand gets discerned—and then, only the information that's germane to the situation is given to the "spirit" — and then the spirit can think about it, and ponder it, and then make the choice (it can then judge) the right path to take.

- Now in (:22) we have the Exhortation as to the great **benefit** that the Father's *sayings* are going to be to the son from this point on in his sonship life.

- (And there are 2 parts or 2 major benefits that the son receives by properly handling the Father's *sayings*).

- And the 1st Part: ***For they are LIFE unto those that FIND them,***

- They are ***life***—the life-blood of the son's functional life—they will be able to open up more functional life upon more functional life throughout the remainder of the son's functional sanctified life!

- But notice that word "***find***" - they are *life* only "*unto those that find them*—well, if they're going to be 'given' to you, then why do you have to "*find*" them? (It's not like they're lost! - It's not like you have to go looking for them! Didn't the Father give those sayings to you? ... then why does the Father now have to say to the son, *they are life unto those that find them?*)

- Well, going back to (:21—*Let them not depart from thine eyes; keep them in the midst of thine heart.*) ... and then (:22) begins with that word ***For ... they are life unto those that find them***—and to further amplify upon what (:21) said, the Father is now making His son aware of the fact that **he's going to have to do a little more work** with these *sayings* **in order to get everything out of them that's built into them!**

- The point is: **THE SAYINGS RELEASE THEIR BENEFITS, THE MORE THEY'RE WORKED!**

- Truth is—the more the *sayings* are thought about and *pondered* over and the more they're used and exercised ... the more they yield more and more benefits (more and more power to make godly *judgments*)!

- And at first, you're only going to perceive a tiny amount of what it can do.

- And that's the genius of a *saying*—and no one constructs *sayings* (with more information packed into them) than God does!

- And that's why in the book of Romans—in just 7 verses, our entire *instruction of judgment* is contained in it!

- There's something to be **found**, discovered, uncovered, mined, etc., when you take a *saying* of your Father and work it, and work it, and work it some more!

- Now once again, that 1st Part of (:22) - *For they are LIFE unto those that find them, ...*

- And, of course, that *is* talking about **functional life**.

- And if you think back—we've had the issue of functional life brought up in every corresponding Exhortation for every area of instruction we've received so far—(in fact, we've even had the “*tree of life*” concept brought up [3:18]) — but this is the first time that a particular area of instruction where the information contained within it, **itself**, has been identified as **LIFE!**

- (and that's what these *sayings* function as)

- Since these *sayings* are going to be in the *midst of the heart*, operating as that ‘clearing-house’ - the power of their effectual working is designed to get stronger & stronger; and to increase & increase; and become more and more of an issue in the functional life of our sonship lives from the moment we get instructed in them until we either die, or this dispensation of grace ends!

- The *sayings* are now the ‘traffic managers’ (so to speak) of our functional life!

- In other words—when it comes to making *judgments*, they're going to **govern** our functional life from here on in.

- The *sayings* are designed to become a governor that takes the information you **have** learned and keeps it **tightly connected** with all the information you're **going** to learn because they are going to sit there in the *midst of your heart* and they're going to go back to what you have been taught and set aside what doesn't apply, and grab hold of what does, and then tie it together with what you going to be taught and then bring it all together in order to make some critical and sharp and wise decisions in the situations and details of your life.

(by the way, this is what separates a good education from a lousy one!)

- And by taking up residence in the *midst of our heart* (or being now the dominate thing in our heart)—all of the remainder of our instruction as sons is going to be run through these *sayings* from now on.

- And that's why the instruction about TIME is so important!

- And then finally, you have that 2nd phrase/benefit of (:22) - *For they are life unto those that find them, **and health to all their flesh.***

- "*health to all their flesh*" - (that is, when you "*find*" the benefits of those *sayings* as you work them and work them and work them some more).

- This final benefit of getting the 2nd Component of *the instruction of Judgment* (and the *sayings* that make it up) is much like the benefit that's described in the Fatherly Exhortation a son receives just before he begins his sonship education (Wisdom) back in Romans 12:3 -

Proverbs 3:8—*It* (doing what :7 describes: "Be not wise in thine own eyes: fear the LORD, and depart from evil.") *shall be **health to thy navel, and marrow to thy bones.***

- And there *is* an affect that sound doctrine has upon you that doesn't merely affect your *spirit* and your *soul*—but affects your body as well.

- And that's because—since we have, (as Paul says in I Cor. 15:44) a *natural body* and not a *spiritual body* right now—our body, therefore, responds to our *soul* and *not* to our *spirit*.

- In other words—our soul functions kind of like an 'interface' between our human spirit and our body.

- And so the body *responds* to the soul.

- And if things are therefore “quiet” (so to speak) in the soul—then the body is calm—(and I'm not talking about any physical illnesses here that can affect your body) - but I'm talking about your body's response to your soul.

- And the “*health*” here is NOT health from physical ailments as far as diseases go—or as far as accidents go, or anything along those lines—but it's talking about the body's response to what is going on in the soul.

- And that's what the body does—it responds to the soul—therefore one of the best ways to illustrate that is when you are in a situation where your body does something in response to your **emotions**. (which come from your soul)

- For example—if you've ever had to speak before an audience (make a toast, deliver a speech, teach a class, or whatever) - or if you've ever performed in front of a live audience (musically, or in sports, or whatever) — you have probably felt some kind of response in your stomach or in your bowels—(such as what is commonly called “butterflies in your stomach). [The Barney Fife effect]

- And you get real nervous and you get shaky and tense and even (in some cases) you throw up—or your bowels get distressed—all based upon your soul!

- In fact, even in the case of falling in love—we have a colloquial expression for this very thing—we often say we're “love sick”!

- And we use the word “sick” to refer to the fact that our body is responding to that—and we've got that emotional (soulish) response coming out through our body—(sweaty palms) where fear and anxiety has an affect on the body.

- Now these are the kind of things being spoken about here—it's the issue of a state of *health*—or the state of whatever you're talking about, **functioning normally**; without it being stressed and having an **abnormal** function as a result of that stress.

- (That's the basic concept of "*health*").

- Mental *health*, therefore, is a mind that is not in a state of distress—it's at PEACE—nothing's troubling it, or bothering it and therefore causing problems in the person's life. (You have mental *health*).

- And if you have Physical *health*—all the organs of your body are functioning as they are supposed to function—you don't have any disease that's afflicting you and causing an organ or part of your body to function abnormally. (You have physical *health*.)

- Now when David is talking about *health to all their flesh*—while this issue will have affects upon your physical health—what is in view here is actually **your spiritual wellbeing**—and not just any wellbeing (or general spiritual wellbeing) - but it's a particular spiritual wellbeing that's in view—which involves the issue of a particular **distress** that comes from a failure to properly utilize the Father's *sayings* (from letting them 'depart from your eyes' and from failing to 'keep them in the midst of your heart.')

- From now on, everything is going to 'hang' on these *sayings*—**this is critical information**—and a **crisis** develops in the sonship education **if the sayings can't effectually work!** (they're designed to be ever in the *midst of your heart*, and they're designed to be 'worked' constantly by the son!)

- And those *sayings* are going to be *health to ALL YOUR FLESH*—(not just your 'navel' [your guts]) - but to **ALL your flesh**—your entire spiritual wellbeing—and from that, your soul will be in a state of wellbeing, and then that will bring benefits & wellbeing to your whole body!

- And by putting to **use** your Father's instruction of Wisdom, Justice, and that Godly Love & Charity, and now this instruction of Judgment with these *sayings* and the **principles** that comes out of them—this will spare you from the kind of panic and distress that both your inner man and your flesh (body) can experience at the hands of that *evil man* and that *strange woman*!

- And keeping in mind that the major issue isn't merely your physical life—but your **functional life**—and the continuing growth of your functional life as a son under Level I Sonship Education—we're talking about not merely acquiring, but **exercising** your *instruction of wisdom, justice, judgment* (and eventually *equity*) - the issue is to be always gaining the skills and skill-sets that come from that, and the experience and the confidence that comes from that—and to broaden the original parameters in which our Father puts it, into other useful places.

- And that's achieved by our Father giving us these *sayings* out of which comes some **Principles** (acting as that “Prince” or top-level Ruler) - and a principle is a top-level decision-making capacity!

- And, in turn, they produce more and more life-blood of the sonship life.

- And as our heart gets enlarged, it gets greater capacity to “pump” those *sayings* and those principles in more and more godly thinking and godly decision-making!

- And this is an important part of the exhortation because of the dangers and pit-falls—and the kinds of resistance and opposition that you find in the surrounding context here in Proverbs 4:20-22 (again, with your flesh, the *evil man* [this world], and the *strange woman* [the PoE] that just waiting in the wings — (the point being, that now you're going to find that there's more involved than just some emotional stress that you're going to encounter as a son.

- Isn't one of the tactics of the Adversary that you were told about back in Romans 8 not only *tribulation*, but also ***distress?*** — but you're going to be able to handle the tactics that the Adversary brings against you as he tries to *separate you from the love of Christ*—and become that *more than conqueror* in that situation!

- Therefore, the *words* and *sayings* of your Father are going to be *health to all your flesh*—in other words, you'll emerge from those PoE tactics (from that battle) with total wellbeing and greater functional life than ever before!

END of the Pre-Doc. Exhortation to the 2nd Component of Judgment.

- ROMANS 13:11-14 (read)

- 4 verses; 4 sentences; 97 words — and yet, one of the most powerful sections in God’s word for making comprehensive and complex God-like (godly) judgments!
- And it’s going to be comprised of more than one *saying*—and these educational *sayings* have features to them (or have capacity to them) to produce Principles that will **govern** they way in which all of the information we’ve learned can be drawn upon to grab hold of the pertinent parts or pieces of it and then be utilized to make godly *judgments* in regard to TIME and our wisest use of it.
- And the *sayings* in this 2nd Component (just like in the 1st Component) are designed to be worked by you as a son in order to get the Main Operating Principle out of it.
- And then because of the nature of the education following the *instruction of Judgment* (the *instruction of Equity*) - these *sayings* and the Principles that are contained in them are going to be further developed and further recognized in the further education in our *instruction of Equity*.
- Therefore, because *Equity follows Judgment*, these *sayings* and the Principles contained in them are going to help us out and be useful to us in the *instruction of Equity* because *Equity* is **BUILT** upon our *instruction of Wisdom, Justice, and Judgment*.
- Simply put, this *instruction of Judgment* is designed to be utilized when it comes to our *instruction of Equity*.

- GENERAL BREAKDOWN OF (:11-14).

- How do you see the breakdown of this passage?
- Now, while it may not be as easily seen as it has been in our previous Components of our *instruction of Wisdom and Justice*—all of our information that’s contained in our *instruction of Judgment* is still doing the very same thing: **edifying us unto GODLINESS!**
 - In other words—godly edifying is still in view; and since becoming ‘godly’ (or God-like) entails Thinking like God, Living like God, and Laboring together with God—then my understanding is that we still have all 3 aspects of godliness being dealt with.

- And in (:11-14), we're going to find that there's a *saying* in connection with all 3 aspects of godliness.

- And here, (unlike :8-10, where we had 3 verses & 3 sentences that nicely broke down into the 3 aspects of godliness), here we have 4 verses and 4 sentences.

- Therefore, we're to expect that this breakdown of the 3 aspects of godliness isn't going to be quite as clearly or neatly packaged as it was in (:8-10).

- Well, we do have 4 verses/sentences—so we do have 4 complete thoughts.

- But it's perfectly right/fitting that we have a kind of 'godly bias' whereby we're looking for this passage to address those 3 aspects of godliness — so that's going to figure into our thinking as to how this passage is to be broken down—and along with that, there are some of those 'good-ol' English "words of logic" that come along and help us out as to just where those 3 aspects of godliness are found.

- So if you're not going to be sticking with merely the verse breaks (being 4 in number) - what you're looking for is where a transition is made between the godly Thinking and the godly Living—and then, between the godly Living and the godly Labor.

- (and just by 'default', we know that it all starts off with the godly Thinking in [:11])

- So as you read through this passage—where do you see the first time you can put your finger on something that clearly isn't talking about Thinking, but begins talking about actually *doing* something ... talking about actual Conduct & Behavior?

- Notice 3 particular words that begin to address the *doing* of the godly Thinking—or address the issue of Conducting and Behaving yourself in a particular way ...

... after the colon (:) in (:12) ... you have those 3 words, "***let us therefore ...***" — and then you're immediately confronted with *doing* something in reference to how you Behave— "***cast off ...***" — but there's even more information contained in the godly Living aspect ...

... you have in (:13) 3 more words that are perfectly fitting and perfectly in keeping with godly Conduct & Behavior ...
“Let us walk ...”

- Actually, you've got 3 ***“let us”*** phrases (actually those are **exhortations**)—2 in the last half of (:12), and 1 in (:13) - and the truth is, all 3 are dealing with issues that have you Conducting and Behaving yourself as the ‘natural outlet’ for the godly Thinking—all 3 of them have those words ***“let us”*** - and all of them are talking about the issue of godly Living.

- Truth is, you've got 2 Main Parts to the godly Living.

- And the 1st Part of the godly Con. & Beh. has **2 issues** involved in it—the 1st one is a negative, and the 2nd one is a positive—which is why it has 2 of those ***“let us”*** issues ...

1) *let us therefore cast off the works of darkness* (that's the negative aspect) ...

2) *and let us put on the armour of light.* (that's the positive aspect)

- And those **do** go closely together because they are separated by a mere comma (the least most powerful pause of the English punctuation marks).

- The you have the most powerful punctuation mark at the end of (:12) [that period] - but that's followed by another phrase of further Conduct & Behavior as noted by the 3rd ***“Let us”*** phrase beginning in (:13) and running all the way to the end of the verse.

- Therefore, the 2nd Main Part of the godly Living is all of (:13).

- So the **godly Thinking** is (:11 and the first part of :12)

11 And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep: for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed.

12 The night is far spent, the day is at hand: ...

- And the phrases and *sayings* contained in (:11-12a) [especially in connection with that issue of “**knowing the time**”] - that information is all designed to *renew our mind* and produce the godly Thinking about TIME.

- The whole ‘theme’ of (:11-12a) is designed to materially affect the way we **Think**—so that we have godly Thinking with regard to TIME.

- Then the **godly Living** is the last part of (:12) and all of (:13).

12 ... let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light.

13 Let us walk honestly, as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying.

- And the information contained in (:12b-13) is designed to produce the godly Conduct & Behavior in connection with our godly Thinking regarding TIME.

- And then that leaves us with the remainder of the information that sits in (:14) as the ‘natural outlet’ for all of the godly Thinking and the godly Living —

- The **godly Labor** is all of (:14).

“But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfill the lusts thereof.”

- And (:14) is designed to produce our godly Labor in view of the godly Thinking & the corresponding godly Conduct and Behavior about TIME.

- Now, let’s begin looking at the ‘bird’s-eye’ view of this passage overall—in other words, let’s look at how this whole thing is designed to effectually work. (THE EFFECTUAL WORKING OF ROMANS 13:11-14) - or what we might call GETTING READY FOR :11-14.

- Just by reading over this 2nd Component of Judgment—you should be able to appreciate that it’s all designed to make a material change in a particular issue in connection with how you perceive and regard and assess TIME.

- And the ‘particular issue’ about TIME that I’m after here, first and foremost is the issue of perceiving the **SERIOUSNESS** of **time** ... and along with that, perceiving the **seriousness of our attitude toward our sonship lives!**

- And not only does everything get ‘kicked up a notch’ (as far as your increased ability/capacity for making godly, God-pleasing decisions and judgments—and your impact is going to get ‘kicked up a notch’; but also the opposition & resistance is also going to get ‘kicked up a notch’ as well) — but along with all that, another thing that’s supposed to increase is your **ATTITUDE TOWARD YOUR SONSHIP LIFE**.

- And even though at the beginning of our sonship education we had, (by the effectual working of our Sonship Orientation & Sonship Establishment), we had all that godly zeal and enthusiasm to get our education going—and even though we presented ourselves to our Father (Rom. 12:1-2) with all that proper commitment to getting our sonship education underway—the truth of the matter is that the level of intensity that we possessed at that time was NOT designed to STAY at that level!

- Even though you couldn’t have imagined your zeal and enthusiasm could get any greater than it was back then—truth is, God designed it to grow and get greater and greater!

- And the only way that could take place was to get a ‘taste’ of what our sonship education is like—and to get the effectual working of that education going with us.

- In other words, it took place when we finally got a real (and not theoretical) grasp of the ‘rubber-meets-the-road’ outworking of it in the details of our lives—and got the experience of what that doctrine is doing **with** and **in** us—and experience some of the grandeur and the glory of it.

- And because of that, the ambition and the delight and the zeal & enthusiasm really does (or should) intensify!

- And when you get to this point—there is an expected measure of intensification of your zeal for your sonship life that’s to be taking place—which was part of what that Sonship Checkpoint was for in the beginning of Proverbs 4 [:1-9]).

- You were told there that when it comes to *wisdom* (and your sonship education) that you are to: ***Exalt** her, and she shall promote thee: she shall bring thee to **honour**, when thou dost **embrace** her. She shall give to thine head an ornament of grace; a crown of glory shall she deliver to thee. (Proverbs 4:8-9) ... those are all expression of the Father's expectation that you're to now LOVE "her" (your sonship education)!*

- As *wisdom* gets personified in you, you're to now LOVE her!

- (much like a man who's fallen in love with a woman—which, at first, you're content to just be in the room with her—but your love is designed to grow and intensify—to the point that you're not just content to be in the room with her, but you want to get closer to her; hold her hand; and **embrace** her)

- There's supposed to be a growing intensification of the love-relationship that we're having with our sonship education!

- And the Father is looking for that and expecting that to be taking place in the son.

- Truth of the matter is—those initial Commitment Levels (1 Honest Attendance; 2 Interactive Learning; 3 Top Priority) are supposed to have increased and are to be more powerful than they originally were.

- Well, the point is—that this increase in Commitment and increase in your zeal and enthusiasm for your sonship education—all has a direct bearing upon our godly Thinking in connection with TIME.

- Because, if you consider what's being said to you in just Romans 13:11—you can easily see that there's something that you're already to "know" about "time" ... *"And that, knowing the time, ..."* - there is something we know about 'the time' already—but Paul isn't just coming along and reminding us about that—he's actually providing us with some information that IF everything we have gone through already is effectually working within us as God has designed (which includes the issue of the increase to our zeal, enthusiasm, delight, and ambition for getting our sonship education even FURTHER

along than it is already—THEN that means that we are going to have a more insightful understanding and appreciation and a **valuing** with respect to TIME, more than we've already had!

- In other words—this isn't merely designed to get you to appreciate TIME as a 'precious commodity' - (truth is, that should have come out of the very beginning of our godly sanctification way back in Romans 6) ...

... nor are we going to merely recognize that time is something that we could easily waste—(which, again, is something we already know from the doctrine of our sanctification) ...

Rather, we are going to look at TIME, and see something far more INTENSE in connection with TIME.

- So therefore, to be honest, you need to ask yourself if your own personal evaluation of TIME has **changed** over the course of your sonship education???

- And what I'm after here isn't so much that you **just/only** have a better appreciation for the 'preciousness' of time—(for instance, that time is now a more precious commodity simply because you now see that the time you have alive on Earth right now is 'fleeting' and you feel the pressure to get as much of your sonship education as you can in the time you have left [either before you die or this dispensation of grace comes to an end]) ... that's a GOOD thing; and that's certainly part of the issue here.

- But to be more precise—when it comes to your personal evaluation of TIME—what should be changing now is kind of a combination of how precious time is along with an increased commitment and zeal, delight, and AMBITION (being "*diligent*") **about your Father's business** [grave/ambition/pleasure] and not just your personal job. (ref. Rom. 12:11)

- (not just zeal & ambition for your sonship education—but for **your entire sonship life** [including the greater opportunity to work and labor with your Father in more and greater aspects & operations of His business!])

- And I say all this because what this section of God's word is designed to do, (for one thing), it's going to take all the increased

zeal, delight, enthusiasm, and ambition that by now should be **increasing**—and it's now going to talk about TIME in a further way than you have ever thought about it up to this point.

- And that increased zeal & ambition **needs** to be there because the information contained in (:11-14) is designed to perfectly fit right in to—or latch on to that increased zeal & ambition for furthering your education as a son; and for getting more and more involved with the operations and business aspects of your Father!

- And the truth is—you should be at a point where you can say to yourself, 'Ah ha! I can make even **better** use of my time than I've been making use of it!' ... because some things are now going to come up that should (if all works well) **prompt** you to kind of 're-arrange' your life so that more time is going to be given to your Father's business than ever before!

- And if that increased zeal & ambition isn't to the point that it needs to be ...

(and that really was supposed to be checked out at the last Sonship Checkpoint—esp., Pro. 4:8 & 9 ... *exalt her ... embrace her*—where that love-relationship with *wisdom* is supposed to grow greater and greater)

... and to be able to work with the information about TIME (in Romans 13:11-14) and ALTER OUR ATTITUDE towards it even more ... then the information isn't going to do anything!

- This is just 'part & parcel' of how the information in our godly sonship edification (now with these *sayings*) is supposed to work with all of the effectual working of the information that's preceded it (and that not only includes the doctrine, but the whole 'heart' issue of the godly sentiments [likes & dislikes; and the zeal and ambition]).

- Truth is—if a saint/Christian reads (:11—12A), and all he ever gets out of it is that it's saying something to him that he already knows—then it's NOT effectually working AT ALL!

- Because it tells you that you already know some things about TIME—even though it may not have directly been spoken about in a doctrinal sense.

- Because the effectual working of your Justification (and all that's said about it in Romans 1-5) - and all that's said about your Sanctification (in Romans 6-8) - and all that's said about your Dispensational Orientation (in Romans 9-11) - has already taught you some things about TIME.

- You already know some things about your PERSONAL USE of TIME—and you already have a Dispensational Time-Perspective.

- And therefore, the tendency is to look at the information in 13:11ff as a mere review or a summary of what you've already learned and thought about in connection with TIME—which is NOT what's going on here!

- **This isn't a summary** of what you've already learned—rather, this is saying: In view of what you already HAVE come to understand & appreciate about TIME at this point; I'm now going to say some things about it that, IF your **commitment** to your sonship education has 'cranked up' the zeal, enthusiasm, & **ambition** to the point that it's supposed to be by now—I'm going to say some OTHER things about TIME that you've never thought about before!

- And because of that—you're going to make some **changes** in your life in connection with the TIME you have that you've never thought about making before!!

- And that's what makes it so that you can then come along and say, Ok—I'm now going to enter in to another aspect of my Father's business, that, for the first time in my sonship education, the door has now been opened to me to participate in it!

- (and that's going to be the issue of *putting on the armour of light!*)

- but there's a COMMITMENT to doing that!

- and it's going to require some more of your TIME to do that!

- because that involves a **BATTLE**—and for the first time in your life, you're going to begin doing some 'soldering' - and doing that requires an adjustment in your attitude about time!

- The truth is—you've been taught **well** by the wisdom of *this world* and by *the course of this world*—and even by some very specific things that the Satanic Policy of Evil has incorporated into the wisdom of this world—that affects the way in which you look at and view virtually every thing in your current frame of reference!

- And the bottom line of it all is that all that *this world* (and the Satanic Policy of Evil has incorporated in it) has had a huge effect upon your appreciation of TIME and how you spend it!

- Actually, the *power of this world* (and the Satanic course of it) is grossly underestimated in regard to just how deeply it has affected us — but we should be able to realize by now, that *this world* is ungodly — and rather than being conformed to the image of God [godliness], it's being conformed to the image of Satan [satanliness].

- It produces thinking, living, and laboring with the Adversary! — and the “kicker” is—it has the capacity to do that **without you ever noticing or realizing that it's being done to you!**

- And unless you have a solid, effectual working of Romans 6:1—13:7, you're likely to flare up or get emotional or fly off the handle when God (in His word) tells you something that runs counter to the course/wisdom of this world—and the truth is, the only way you'll ever know what's really going on in this world (and in the heavenly places) is when God tells you about it in His word! (not politicians; or the media [radio/tv]; or scientists; or professors)

- And oftentimes Christians do flare up when they encounter something in God's word that runs counter to what they have been so deeply taught (and so deeply embrace) by *this world* as it's cooperated with the Satanic Policy of Evil. (It often 'hits a nerve' so to speak).

- viz., evolution vs. creation; blessing vs. cursing; suffering; healing/miracles; and a whole lot more!

- And we're now going to get into a BATTLE concerning these things — because, as sons, we are being *conformed to the image of God's Son* (therefore to God Himself) - and our skill-sets for making godly decisions are increasing to the point of making godly *judgments*— and there is a corresponding issue regarding our capacity to begin engaging the Adversary and his 'dominion' or 'turf' (so to speak).

- Because with these godly sonship decision-making skill-sets, we're gaining the capacity for **governing** and **ruling** with God in God's business!
- And that battle is going right after the wisdom of this world and the Satanic course of this world—and it's going to deal with the accepted ungodly knowledge of and about this world and even about the heavenly places as well.
- Our sonship education from here on out is going to 'shed light' and expose "*the works of darkness*" that are so commonly only thought of in the way in which the wisdom of this world has always taught about them—and there are numerous things that are just taken for granted as a 'given' (so to speak) in connection with commonly and publicly accepted teaching and thinking (especially regarding the Earth, the people of the Earth, and even the heavenly places). [Time/Space/Matter]
- And just to give you a scope of things that our sonship education goes after—it deals with the commonly held view of men under the influence of the wisdom of this world and the Satanic Policy of Evil in connection with it (both lost men and even saved Christians who poorly or even hardly ever handle God's word) ... things like ...
 - the way you view and think about the Earth and the people in it—the physical Earth itself (evolution)—the nations of the Earth—the people of the earth—the "races" of the people of the Earth —
 - the governments and politics of the nations & people of the Earth —
 - the morals and values people of the Earth hold to —
 - the cultures of the peoples of the Earth —
 - the traditions of the peoples of the Earth —
 - the environment of the Earth—————
 - even the heavenly places—because you were taught that it's just "outer space" (the "big bang")—
 - the way in which the universe (outer space) works—how suns and planets and galaxies move and work —
 - the way in which you think about the "universe" (sun, moon, planets & stars)—and how we need to invest **time** and money and effort in space exploration as "the final frontier" —
 - and the pressure to inhabit other planets (like Mars) - and how the men of this world have a plan for utilizing outer space.

- And just to put it in a way for us as American citizens—this goes for the “left” (Democrats) [... well, sure, of course] - and for the “right” (Republicans) [even the “Tea Party” and Independents and Libertarians]— it goes for the unlearned and the realm of “higher education” — it goes for the rich and the poor — it goes for every so-called “race” of people (white, black, Indian, Asian, Spanish, Jewish, Arab, etc.) — it goes for all religions (and even atheists) — and it even goes for the majority of Christianity itself (due to failure to “rightly divide the word of truth” and just plain old sloppy and improper Bible handling)!

- The truth is—because of the success of the wisdom of this world and the Satanic Policy of Evil, very few people alive on this Earth right now have a clue as to ***God’s*** understanding about either the Earth (and those who inhabit it) or the heavenly realm (and what and who [if anyone]) inhabits it!

- And while the people of this world talk a lot about war and battle (the war on poverty, the war on women, the war on minorities, the war on culture, the war on freedom [especially sexual freedom], the war on democracy, the war on drugs, the war on morals, the war on our venerated traditions, the war on —(fill in the blank)—) ... the truth is, the people of this world (under the wisdom of this world and the Satanic Policy of Evil) haven’t got a clue about what the real battle is or where it’s being fought ... let alone how to fight it and win!

- They don’t even know what weapons are being used against them—or what weapons to use to fight and win this battle— (they don’t have a clue to what the *armour of light* is or how it’s to be used)!

- This is clearly demonstrated (if I may use this example without offending anybody) in the current “fight” for our country where you have the “right” (Conservatives) vs. the “left” (Liberals/Progressives).

- Ex., You often hear the “right” talk about saving the country and fighting for such things as:

- Conservative values
- What’s right vs. what’s wrong (it’s just wrong)
- The Founding Fathers
- Traditions
- What’s good for the culture, etc.

- And a great deal of TIME and energy is spent on this ‘fight’ (or battle) - and lot of recruiting goes on in connection with it—and a lot of Christians spend their **time** dealing with these things.

- But more importantly, there’s a whole bunch of folks out there that think that if we can just “get back” to the good old conservative values of our Founding Fathers and keep our good old traditions—and our good old values of what is right and wrong and what’s good for the culture ... then that will make things right ... or better ... or good ... or even godly!

- But the truth is—the talk show hosts on TV and Radio and news shows and websites and blogs—aren’t really addressing the major issue—and they view such written documents of men (such as the Declaration of Independence, the Constitution, the Gettysburg Address, etc.) as SACRED, and even INSPIRED texts—and that if we can just get back to them, then everything will be ok!

- Just look at Washington D.C. and see the monuments we’ve erected that depict something from old Babylon! {ex., the Washington monument is noting but a phallic symbol of old paganism}
[Babylon is part of our culture ... “right” or “left”!]

- In other words, they completely avoid the **real** and **only** Sacred and Inspired text: **THE HOLY BIBLE!**

- And without addressing that—the truth is, even among the most devout Conservatives—ultimately, **it’s just their OPINION!** about things!!!

- It’s NOT God’s perspective at all!
 (Without God’s word, **it’s just the opinions of men!**)

- Well, once again—we’re now at a point in which (for the very first time in your Christian life) we’re going to *put on the armour of light*.

- Which means that we’re now going to enter into a **battle**—and get to do some soldering—all of which makes **demands** upon both your **level of commitment** and your TIME! (and readjustments to your life are going to have to take place!)

- And more to the point—by kind of looking at what’s in view at the **end** of this Component to our godly *judgment*—[perhaps you have some dread or some apprehension or some reluctance ... or even just some plain ol’ uneasiness about engaging in some battle]—(which really should **not** be the case, but if it is) — then what I’m after here is just to get you to see the kind of impact that the godly Thinking in (:11-12a) has [when it latches on to the increased godly zeal, enthusiasm, and ambition] - and, by its effectual working, it will increase that godly zeal & ambition even more—and it will do what all of the Godly Thinking aspects of the doctrine we’ve dealt with previously in the curriculum is designed to do: IT WILL PRODUCE A GODLY **DESIRE** for the Conduct & Behavior in (:12b-13) to *cast off the works of darkness, and put on the armour of light!!!*

- The effectual working of the godly Thinking about TIME in (:11-12a) is designed to come along and have you **make a JUDGMENT in connection with how you live your life!**

- And it’s designed to make it so that you recognize that, in connection with the furtherance of your Sonship Education, **there’s a need to make a *judgment* about how you’re going to make the best use of your TIME from now on!**

- Because the next Operation of God (the next Order of your Father’s Business) that you’re going to have the PRIVILEGE of entering in to and participating with Him in—**is going to require some more of your TIME.**

- (it’s going to require a greater commitment of it!)

- This 2nd Component of Judgment is coming along and taking a hold of the increased zeal, ambition, and commitment for your sonship learning (that’s expected to be in place at this point) and open up to you the opportunity to do far MORE of your Father’s business than ever before!

- You not only have the opportunity to continue doing what you *have* been doing—but to now take on an even **greater** area of responsibility and opportunity in the Father’s business!

- And this should be met with a huge AMEN!/ABBA, FATHER!—the son should say, “Yes! This is exactly what I’ve been waiting for!”

- The truth of the matter is—that the godly Thinking in (:11-12a) is designed to ALTER your understanding and appreciation of not only TIME, but to alter your understanding & appreciation of your **LIFE** as a son, and as a member of the church the body of Christ ***IN* the TIME you have remaining in your life!**

- And it's an odd thing—that oftentimes Christians have a way of 'disengaging' from their Christianity (so to speak) - and what I mean by that is in regard to how much **time of their life** is spent actively engaged in and with the outworking of the doctrine that is written to, for, and about them (Romans through Philemon).

- Sometimes a Christian is only engaged for one hour (or even for 20 or 30 minutes) on Sunday morning—and then they walk out of the church and because the doctrine or teaching they heard has little to no effectual working, they simply disengage from that, and go right back to their normal fleshly thinking and living and laboring until next Sunday. (rarely, if ever, thinking about or living the outworking of the doctrine written to them for being godly in God's sight)

- And sometimes saints are only engaged in their Christian life when problems or tragedy or suffering comes into their life—and then they pray more and maybe even read the Bible more or whatever. (maybe even attend a mid-week service once in a while)

- But for those who take their Christian and spiritual life seriously—and who have been properly educated and edified (who desire to “walk in newness of life” and “walk after the Spirit and not after the flesh” and to no longer be “conformed to this world, but transformed by the renewing of the mind” ... for those who have been properly educated as “sons” to this point with the effectual working of Romans 12:3-13:10) ... by now you should have become aware of just how much of your life is going to be **given over** to being a “son” of your Heavenly Father!

- The sonship curriculum invades, encroaches, and penetrates EVERY ASPECT OF YOUR LIFE! (but it does it; and it's designed to do it, little by little—whereby as more and more of the doctrine gets written on the fleshy tables of your heart, more and more of your **life/time** gets affected by it!)

- Truth is—our Heavenly Father is the “living God” - and is desiring to “live” (and has designed it so that He can “live”) in the very place where He is supposed to be “living” today (which is in the very **body** of Christ [in all of the members of the church, the body of Christ]) - and living the “life” that He wants lived today (as it pertains to what He is **doing today** [in this dispensation of grace, rather than in His program with Israel])!

- Our Father wants to **manifest** some things in the life and time of this present dispensation of grace—and it’s simply **not enough** for those things to be written in a Book! (and to only be a “mystery” that’s only revealed in words written in a Book! and only understood in the Book!)

- In the time of this dispensation of grace, God desires to manifest/display the LIFE of Christ (the life of His body) in connection with the “mystery” and “wisdom” that He has kept secret and hidden until He revealed it to the apostle of the Gentiles: the apostle Paul!

- The “mystery of godliness” (I Tim. 3:16) is what God is doing today! (and the goal of the entire sanctification process and edification process with it’s entire ministry/outworking is contained in Paul’s epistles!)

- But having that all written in a Book isn’t enough—we are to be “living epistles” (II Cor. 3:3)!

- God wants to take Romans through Philemon off the page and put it on display thorough US! (the one new man; the new creature of the church the body of Christ)

- In other words—Romans through Philemon is designed to effectually work in such a way that you **become** Romans through Philemon—by the time you get to the end of the book of Philemon, **YOU ARE ROMANS THROUGH PHILEMON!**

- And my point in saying all that is to say that as you make further progress in your Sonship Education—more and more of your “**Time-Life**” is going to be given over to who you are as a “son” **in** your Father’s business—and this 2nd Component of godly *judgment* is where that gets addressed and confronted in a major way!

- And it has enormous benefits for you as a son! ... and should be met with enormous zeal, enthusiasm & ambition!

- And this should loom so grand in your sight by now, that if there is anything you're doing in your life (and spending your TIME on) that holds you back from the grand opportunity to labor more and more in your Father's business—then you should be able to come along and say, “FORGET IT — I'll rearrange my schedule, my time, and my life to get this!”

- The effectual working of Rom. 13:11-12a is designed to ALTER your understanding & appreciation of TIME— “**altered**” in the sense that we've got to come along and say, “I've got to take my own time, and alter it to fit in to this increased opportunity to labor in my Father's business!”

- Because, again, the issue of “*casting off the works of darkness, and putting on the armour of light*” is NOT the issue of what you have been previously taught in Romans 6, 7, & 8 — it is NOT the issue of simply not walking in sinful lusts and walking, instead, in righteousness!

- *Casting off the works of darkness and putting on the armour of light* is the issue of serving the Adversary notice that you're coming out to take him on!

... that you are ready, willing, and able to engage him in his Policy of Evil against you!

- And as you begin to enter the ‘soldiering’ aspect of the Father's business—the issue is very much like what God had the apostle Paul tell Timothy—a soldier cannot entangle himself with the affairs of this life (*No man that warreth entangleth himself with the affairs of this life; that he may please him who hath chosen him to be a soldier.*)

- A soldier has to determine that there are some things in this life that he cannot entangle himself with—because it will RUIN his soldiering!

- And that's what's going on here in the overall effectual working of Romans 13:11-14.

- What we've got contained in Rom. 13:11-14 is that when it works properly with all that has gone on before it—then, by **it's** effectual working, one of the first, complex, judgmental decisions it equips us to make is one that determines how much TIME we are going to give to the details of our individual daily lives, to ensuring that the rest of our Sonship Education can take place!

- And the nature of “the rest of our Sonship Education” is going to make a ‘shift’ at this point to the “**warfare**” aspect (so to speak) of engaging the Adversary and his Policy of Evil. (that now becomes THE BIG THING)!

- And with the ‘illumination’ that’s now taking place (and the “light” that’s now *shining more and more*) - just about all of the remaining aims, goals, and objectives—and the remaining Orders of Business & Business Operations of the Father — and just about every one of the points of attainment between Romans 13:11 to the end of II Thessalonians is through the path of engaging the Adversary and his Policy of Evil!

- (Which makes sense, when you realize what the Education is all about—because the bulk of the education, and the **bulk** of the training and capacities and experience and skill-acquisition that God has designed for us to gain by our Sonship Education have all been designed to come **at the expense of the Policy of Evil!**)

- And that’s all part of God’s genius - and the **glory** that “*redounds*” to Him in connection with our godly edification as His “son”!

- So really—one of the major goals (that deals with some very personal matters about your life and the TIME that you have remaining in your life) - one of the major issues of Rom. 13:11-14 is going to be focused upon whether or not that COMMITMENT that we already have to our Sonship Education has INCREASED to the point that it's supposed to have increased—because the first application of that doctrine to making a sonship *judgment* is going to be all about increasing the TIME of your life to enter in to the further aspects of your Father’s business—and to do it with the intelligent recognition that it not only IS a furtherance of our Father’s business, but moreover, it's a furtherance of our SANCTIFIED “WALK”!

- ... what we're actually doing here—in connection with engaging the Adversary in *casting off the works of darkness* and *putting on the armour of LIGHT*—what we're going to be doing in a far more advanced way than ever before, is that: we are **EXTENDING THE CAPACITY** that our fundamental sanctified position “in Christ” has given to us when it comes to **THE HOLINESS OF GOD!**

- That's the aim, goal, or objective of all of the *instruction of judgment*—(but especially :11-14) - and that's the next Order of Business or the next Operation of God that we have the privilege of entering into with our Father: **EXTENDING THE HOLINESS OF GOD!**

- That's what God now wants manifested (put on display) - both in this present world—and then from this present world into the heavenly places!

- And there has already been some things said to you—and some doctrine that got effectually working within you—that has ‘prompted’ your anticipation that somewhere and at sometime in the process of your godly edification, this very thing has to begin happening!

- And what I'm after is what was taught to you at the very beginning of your fundamental instruction about your Sanctified position that you have “in Christ” back in Romans 6:15-23. (read & review)

- We were told there (and taught there) in connection with understanding our sanctified position “in Christ” and being made *dead to sin, and alive unto God* in righteousness, through our Lord Jesus Christ—we were taught that now that we are ‘servants of righteousness’ that we now have *fruit unto holiness*—that's not just the issue of the fact that we can now bring forth *fruit* that the Justice of God can accept ...

... but in connection with the purpose of sanctification **in the first place**—the GOAL in “sanctification” (anything that God “sanctifies”) **IS TO EXTEND HIS HOLINESS!**

- And when God sanctified us—the **objective** of it, is to extend His holiness — and that's one of the **big issues** going on here in Romans 13:11-14.

- In connection with this further aspect of our Father’s business—(to engage the Policy of Evil) — it’s an opportunity to extend the holiness of God—and to (in a sense) generate some “**push-back**” to the Policy of Evil (and push the Policy of Evil back by that holiness being put on display)!

- And even though you may not (in fact, do not) have a good grasp on that (or good frame of reference for that, [most likely]) — if nothing else, that should get you to see something of the magnificence, and the grandeur, and the GLORY that there is to this further aspect of our Father’s business!

- The issue of *putting on the armour of light* isn’t just a ‘figure of speech’ that really has no meaning to it!

- That’s an expression that’s not only describing the fact that we’re now entering in to an engagement of BATTLE—but it’s a **particular kind of battle!**

- And LIGHT is designed to dispel DARKNESS!

- Anytime LIGHT comes into existence, DARKNESS is pushed off to the boundary to which that LIGHT can extend!

(just like when you enter a dark room and flip on the light—the light illuminates the room—and darkness no longer exists in that room)

(darkness only now exists where that light in the room cannot extend to)

- By the way—this is essential information to understand, or Ephesians chapters 4 & 5 won’t work! — you’ll never understand why the *fruit of the Spirit* is spoken of there in connection with us being *the children of light* and *light in the Lord*, and *walking as children of light*—and *having no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them*—and what does all that is this manifestation of LIGHT!

- And that’s the issue of taking this fundamental concept that you get taught here in Romans 13:11-14—and through

the **experience** of it in the balance of Level I Sonship Education—and through the implementation and acquisition of Level II Sonship Education: **having that LIGHT extend into the heavenly places!** ... (that's why our *conversation* is in *heaven* by that time—and that's why we will deal with the issue of *wrestling against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.*

- And the reason why we wrestle against them **is because our LIGHT, now, has left this world, and it's now affecting the heavenly places!**

- Well, I say all that just to underscore just how important this portion of God's word is! (and for you to get a further 'scope' of just how this portion of the curriculum is all designed to work.)

- RECAP: (after Spring Break)

- The issue in Romans 13:8-14 is the Father's basic instruction for His justified, sanctified "sons & daughters" to make godly ***judgments*** just like He does, Himself — the 3rd of 4 major sonship decision-making skills that are necessary for the kind of ruling, governing, and administrating that we will be involved in when we are 'placed' as "sons" in the creature (the heavenly places) when finally that realm is repossessed by God and liberated from its "vanity" and "bondage of corruption" when this dispensation of grace comes to an end.

- These *judgments* or judgmental-type decisions are going to comprise the bulk of decisions we ever make—they are judgments that are going to be made when the path to take is not immediately clear, but rather are going to have to be "pondered" over and are a bit more complex than what we've encountered so far—and they therefore require and demand more 'work' on our part to figure out.

- These *judgmental* decisions are going to be made by us, **without** our Father outright telling us what to do—and therefore they put us into a position of greater adulthood responsibility and greater adulthood independence than we've ever experienced before.

- Making proper and godly *judgments* **is going to demand and require that you have the full, effectual working of all that has preceded it—** especially the fundamental instruction of Wisdom, Justice, Discretion, and the 5 Major Features of Godly Love. (otherwise this will be worthless)

- Because of this—(because of the nature of what a *judgment* is) - the necessary information is very brief—and this is due to the fact that the Father needs only say very little that will act as a ‘catalyst’ that will cause the previous information to interact with it and produce even greater power to make godly *judgments* concerning (not so much ‘right or wrong’), but to determine what is wise or foolish—what is good, better, or best; what is wise, wiser, or wisest.

- Therefore the Father now begins speaking to His sons in the form of some *sayings* that take into consideration everything that has been previously learned, and by what they say, you have some brief, but further instruction that will make it so that you’re NOT just set ‘adrift’ and ‘rudderless’ in an ocean of murky possibilities—but rather, you have an internal, ‘inner man,’ edificationally-built ‘Guidance System’ that provides a “*shining light*” in the darkness in order for you to ‘navigate’ and be ‘steered’ by godly, wise judgments—operating upon the godly Main Operation Principles that come out of the Father’s *sayings* (rather than being ‘steered’ and influenced by the wisdom, justice, love, and principles of this evil, ungodly world).

- In this way—all of the information contained in Romans 13:8-14 acts as a kind of ‘clearing-house’ or ‘catch-all’ type of instruction.

- The *instruction of judgment* is broken up into 2 Main Components: the 1st (Rom. 13:8-10) dealing with (naturally enough) judgments in connection with men in general (with how we relate and interact with others) - or as God puts it, with our *neighbour* (near-body). [with both, other members of the body of Christ in our local assembly, and with all men in general—even lost men].

- The underlying aim, goal, & objective of the godly Thinking, Living, and Labor of the 1st Component therefore always has to do with either 1) the salvation/justification of the lost; or 2) the godly edifying of the saved.

- Now, turning our attention to the 2nd Component of our *instruction of judgment* contained in Romans 13:11-14—as we’ve noted before, this Component perfectly **complements** the 1st Component because when it comes to making godly *judgments* in connection with others (your *neighbour*) and *working no ill to your neighbour*—when it

comes to ‘judging’ certain paths to take with your neighbour—for one thing, that’s going to (naturally enough) make demands upon your TIME—but for another thing, making godly judgments (by nature) means that you are going to make some ‘plans’ - and plans and planning pertains to having to LOOK AHEAD. (at what lies out in front of you in the remainder of your Sonship Education and all of the **vocational training** that it entails).

- Because before you get your time ‘spread to thin’ (so to speak) [which can easily happen in the way in which you deal with your neighbour] - you really do need to get a clear view as to what lies ahead of you in your own vocational training so that **IT** takes the priority in how you manage your time.

- And therefore, **as** this information works as that ‘clearing-house’ (as we’ve noted before) - our Father has a very natural reason for you to LOOK AHEAD at the remainder of your Sonship Education TIME-WISE.

- And so we’re going to again get information and some of those *sayings* that are going to come along and enable us to make the BEST use (and the wisest use) of the remaining TIME we have in our sonship lives—depending upon whether we die before this dispensation of grace ends, or whether this dispensation of grace ends while we are still ‘alive and remaining.’

- And combined, - the 1st & 2nd Components really are the fundamental capacities for the *judgment* that we need to have, because they figure in to **every aspect** and **every detail** of sonship lives **from here on in**.

- **TIME** is clearly the issue in these 4 verses—

- You have it mentioned twice in (:11) - “*knowing the **time**”* and “*now it is high **time**”* ...

... and then you have the issue of time being spoken about in (:12) in a slightly different manner when Paul says, “*the night is far spent, the day is at hand*” ...

... and then the remainder of what is said all the way down through the end of (:14) is how you are to **respond to time** in both your godly Conduct & Behavior and in your godly Labor with God in what He is doing.

- So everything we're going to be dealing with in this 2nd Component of our *instruction of judgment* are matters all about **time**—and how time pertains to us as “sons” in our sonship lives from this point on.

- And a godly understanding and appreciation of **time** is the very thing we need at this point, in order to make some solid, confident, & wise *judgments* with respect to the time we have as sons—and to make the wisest use of our time—an furthermore, to engage in some things that we are now at the point (capacity-wise) in which we have the opportunity (and the time) to engage in as our Sonship Education progresses on.

- And just as any father-to-son education—(where the adoption of a son has in view the son entering in to his father's business) - there naturally comes a time in which the father is going to have to deal with the son in matters pertaining to “time” - and to give his son a view (or a ‘heads-up’) as to what all now lays out in front of him—and because of that, “time” therefore becomes a pressing matter as to its wise use—in other words, there comes a time when “time” is going to be presented to us as “**of the essence**” (so to speak).

- And the appropriate time that the father confronts his son about the issue of making wise use of his time, (naturally enough), takes place when the son has achieved the **capacity** to do some things that he previously didn't have the capacity to do. (and to enter in to more vocational training and more operations of his father's business)

- Well, by now the ‘stage’ should be ‘set’—the ‘pump’ should be ‘primed’ for us to now begin getting the effectual working of this 2nd Component to our *instruction of judgment*.

- THE GODLY THINKING.

- As we've noted before—this Component (as they all do) follows the pattern of edification unto **godliness**—and the first Aspect of Godliness is ‘Thinking the way God Himself Thinks’ — and the godly Thinking is what is said in all of (:11) and the first part of (:12).

11 And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep: for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed.

12 The night is far spent, the day is at hand: ...

- Now, just at the outset—when you read (:11-12a) - how are you being talked to? what is the nature (or manner) of the way you're being talked to? — (there's some *sayings*, yes) — but what is the **TONE** that's taken?

- A: You're being **exhorted** and **warned** (gently warned about something regarding the issue of TIME) — but also, you're being **CHARGED!**

- And when you're **charged** with something (or being given a **charge** about something) - what the Father is doing is imposing more duty and more responsibility for you to now engage in some additional aspects of His business—and He can now do that because you have reached a level of capacity and ability to go on into the additional aspects of His business operations.

- And by doing so, gain additional vocational training and experience and skill-acquisition!

- Notice: in (:11) — you're told, "*And that, knowing the time,*" ... and as soon as you're confronted with the issue of TIME (and some things you already know about time) - you're immediately **charged** to **do** something about your understanding of TIME—which is to "*awake out of sleep*" (and you're supposed to do just that—you're to *awake out of* the kind of "*sleep*" that's described there).

- And then, right after the last part of the godly Thinking gets stated in (:12a) - [*"The night is far spent, the day is at hand:"*] — then you are **charged** to respond in your godly Conduct & Behavior in a positive and proper and appropriate manner to all of the godly Thinking about TIME (but especially what's being dealt with in that first part of [:12]).

- And my point in all this is to get you to recognize and realize that contained in all of the godly Thinking (of :11-12a) - and our instruction about TIME that's going to comprise this 2nd Component to our *instruction of judgment* — (and that's going to challenge our old, natural, fleshly, and ungodly way we've always thought about TIME—and then come along and *transform* our thinking by *renewing our mind*—[giving us our Father's thinking & His mind in connection with TIME]) - **we're actually going to be taught about TIME in 2 Major ways or 2 Major aspects.**

- You've got contained in the godly Thinking about TIME, 2 Aspects—(kind of like Part 1 and Part 2—or **TIME I**, and **TIME II**).

- The first Aspect of the godly Thinking about Time is all of (:11) - and it has to be addressed first in order to get the godly Thinking about Time going at the logical and Biblical 'starting point' (so to speak) - or at it's most natural, 'first-things-first' starting point.

- And then the second Aspect of the godly Thinking about Time is set forth in (:12a) - and by what it brings into the mind, it's designed to latch on or attach itself with the first Aspect of godly Thinking about Time whereby the son will then have generated within his inner man the godly **desire** to Conduct & Behave himself (and the Labor with God) as described in the remainder of (:12), and in (:13-14).

- And the first aspect of the godly Thinking about Time (or TIME I) [as that proper 'starting point' and most natural starting point] is what may be called: **PERSONAL TIME**.

- (And just to make myself clear—when I say “Personal” Time—I **don't** mean what many folks most commonly think about when you use that phrase—that is, “Me-Time” or “My-Time” - meaning, time for me to go off and do whatever I want to do—to go out and ‘live it up’ or ‘blow off steam’ or ‘blow time’ doing what I want to do because I've been doing what everybody else wants me to do for too long, so to keep from cracking up, I'm going to get away and have some “Me-Time” [whatever that means to that person] ... again, that's NOT what I'm talking about here!)

- But by using the word “Personal” - I **do** mean your own personal time—in other words, (and simply put), I'm talking about **the time you have in your day and in your life, and the way you spend your own personal time on a daily basis.** (much more on this later)

- The second aspect of the godly Thinking about Time (or TIME II) [which is designed to naturally attach to TIME I [or Personal Time] is what may be called: **DISPENSATIONAL TIME** (and as we will see) the **TIMING** of this present dispensation of Gentile grace in which we live.

- Let's now begin looking at the details of (:11) - and the 1st Part of the Godly Thinking regarding TIME— and especially the issue of being squarely confronted by our Father with the issue of our **PERSONAL TIME** and how we are to wisely use it (and make the wisest use of it) - [which is a major issue in making godly sonship judgments—{judgments that are connected with your neighbour ... because, the question arises, “With so many opportunities, how will I have **time** for anything else?”}}, as well as with the remainder of our sonship life].

11 And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep: for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed.

- And just at the outset—whenever you start talking about Personal Time—(or your personal time you have in your day and in your life; and the way in which you spend your own personal time on a daily basis) — it's really a 'touchy' thing—(because it is so personal), and when you kind of invade upon very personal issues (such as how you determine 'priorities' and what takes 'priority' in your life), the tendency is to 'tread lightly' (so to speak) because of just how personal a matter it is to talk about how you spend your time.

- It's kind of like you take offence at it because it's such a **PRIVATE** matter—and if not properly prepared for it, it comes off as an **invasion of your privacy!**

- And this may be (at first) a bit of an uncomfortable & unpleasant subject to have to deal with—(because we're simply not used to anybody coming along and talking to us about how we use our personal time—in fact, we often 'flare up' when anyone talks to us this way, because we tend to immediately take exception to it because we tend to think, Hey, buddy, you don't know me; you don't know my life; you don't know the pressure I'm under; you don't know the responsibilities I have; you don't know the kind of stress I'm under ... how **dare** you talk to me about how I use or don't use my personal time!)

- And this goes to what I've talked about before—that many Christians have and hold to a viewpoint that, “Church is church, and my time is my time! ... I've got “church time” and then I've got my real life to live outside of church!”

- But the truth is, this shouldn't be a problem at all for you at this point—because you were already made aware of what Biblical

adoption is all about, and the demands that it makes upon your time (all of which was told to you way back in the beginning—when you first cried, *Abba, Father.*)

- You should know by now that your sanctified, functional life as a believer in Christ (and your godly edification) puts you in the position of what is commonly called, “Full-TIME Christian Service”!

- So my point is—that things are going to get **real personal**, and if that’s a problem, then something didn’t get effectually working prior to this!

- Because a properly educated son is actually LOOKING FORWARD to the time in which his Father invites him to spend more time in the Father’s business—which is an exciting thing to a son, because it means that he has demonstrated to his Father some real ability & capacity to become more involved and more engaged in the business.

- Now, in just looking at the entirety of the Godly Thinking of (:11-12a) — when you look at just the English punctuation marks, you notice that, even though there are 2 Main Aspects of Time being dealt with—there are actually 3 Parts to it all—or 3 main clauses.

TIME I (PERSONAL TIME)

Clause 1— *11 And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep:*

Clause 2— *for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed.*

TIME II (DISPENSATIONAL TIME/TIMING)

Clause 3— *12 The night is far spent, the day is at hand:*

- And I point this out because, while we do have 2 Main Aspects of Time being dealt with (and brought to our attention) in the Godly Thinking—the truth is, it’s going to take 3 Things (or 3 sayings) to challenge, uproot, and dismiss our improper thinking about Time, and *renew our mind* (our thinking) in order to make it God’s own Thinking (or godly Thinking) about Time—and it takes 2 sayings to generate the godly Thinking about our Personal Time, and then 1 additional saying to generate the godly Thinking about Disp. Time.

- And all 3 Clauses; and both of the 2 Major Aspects about Time (Personal Time & Dispensational Time/Timing) are supposed to all go together—they’re designed to be ONE PACKAGE of information that all goes together to *renew our mind* regarding TIME (as a whole) that will enable us as “sons” to make wise godly *judgments* in every detail of our lives.

- So let’s look at the details of the 1st Thing (Clause) that’s said to us in order to generate within us the godly Thinking regarding our PERSONAL TIME.

- **“*And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep:*”**

- **“*And that, ...*”** — the *And* tells you that this body of information is to immediately be ADDED to the previous information (without delay)!

- So once the 1st Component of *the instruction of judgment* in (:8-10) has done its effectual work, THIS 2nd Component is to immediately be added to it.

- **“*And that,*”** — the word *that* actually makes it so that you ‘**attach**’ this information to the previous information—it latches on to the “*this*” (:9) concerning ‘loving your neighbour as yourself’.

- **“*And that*”** makes it so that your mind does NOT compartmentalize these 2 Components, but rather makes it so that **you put them together**—and so that you see the naturalness of how this 2nd Component complements the 1st, and why it has to be addressed **in light of**, and **in view of** the 1st Component.

- It’s kind of like saying, ‘And now in view of loving your neighbour as yourself, and love working no ill to your neighbour’ — and because you may begin to think of a whole bunch of ways to not work any ill to your neighbour that would have you dedicating or blocking out a whole bunch of TIME to do a whole bunch of things to and for your neighbour—you need to now consider your TIME and the use of your TIME in a wise, godly manner that is in keeping with your **continued (on going)** Sonship Education & Edification.

- Notice that the wording of Romans 13:10 is very careful and precise in what it does NOT say

... it says, *Love worketh no ill to his neighbour*: ... it doesn't say, 'If you love your neighbour, then you should go out and work a whole bunch of things that are not ill to him.'

- In other words, it doesn't specifically tell you what **TO DO**, it specifically tells you what **NOT TO DO**.

- Now I say that very **carefully**—because I admit that it is **implied** that your Conduct & Behavior and your godly Labor toward your neighbour [near body] will always be consistent with those 5 Major Features of Godly Love—and because of that, you WILL set out to **do** some things toward your neighbour that continues to make the 'payments' (so to speak) of the happy, joyful debt that you *owe* to him— (which is an expression of Godly Love that has in view either his salvation or his godly edification). [and that's right, proper, and fitting]

- And (:8) makes it clear that you DO owe all men that expression of Godly Love, and that will require you to DO some things to/toward your neighbour.

- **And I do NOT want to, in any way, shape or form, minimize that issue!!!**

- But the truth is, considering your own godly Sonship Education/Edification (and the edification of the local assembly/body), while the negative aspect of "working **NO** ill to your neighbour" will be a **constant** and **consistent** and **ongoing** part of your godly *judgments* as a "son" — there is a PRIORITY regarding your TIME that makes it so that a wise son doesn't end up doing a whole bunch of things that impinge upon the TIME he has to get the rest of his Sonship Education—(and the PRIORITY of engaging in the **further operations** of his Father's business). (does that make sense?)

- My point here is to get you to see that, by using the simple words, "*And that, ...*" - that God is having the apostle Paul tell us that what we're about to get information-wise in this 2nd Component to our *instruction of judgment* is **naturally attached** to the 1st Component, and that there are some PRIORITY-DEMANDS on our TIME that have to be considered in ALL of the godly judgments you make in the details of your sonship life! (and the 2 Components, **combined**, will give you the capacity to make the **wis-EST** use of your time!)

- Now that should set us up nicely for the next phrase —

- “... **knowing the time,**” (*And that, knowing the time*)

- There’s something that you are to “*know*” - (to know the weight and force of it [so to speak]; to know the definite meaning of it—to know the value and preciousness of it—to have a particular perspective of it—to regard and cherish it—and to perceive clearly) about TIME!

- And you have to kind of think for a moment just where you are—or what you’re in the ‘midst’ of—that makes it so that TIME has become a **major** issue in your life—and your desire is to utilize that precious commodity towards some very particular aims, goals, and objectives that have become a PRIORITY to you so that what you do with your time has become important and meaningful to you unlike it is to anyone else on this Earth!

- By the way, by saying it this way—you are to understand and appreciate that this (and really, everything that’s said in all of :11) comes as **no surprise** to you at all [you’re **not** blindsided by it]—you already know something about TIME by this point—you were prepared for it in advance.

- So what is it about TIME that you “*know*”? What is “*the time*” that you know some things about now? that, by this simple expression: “*knowing the time*” it puts your mind and your thinking in the position that God wants it in so that, when He gives you a simple *saying*, will make it so that some Major Operating Principles emerge in your thinking whereby your mind starts getting *renewed* and you get your Father’s Own thinking in connection with TIME?

- For one thing—the very **environment** of time itself has changed in the way you perceive it—and that’s because you’ve entered into an **Education**—you see yourself in time differently than anyone else—because you have come to understand and appreciate that once you were saved/justified unto eternal life, God didn’t immediately take you off this Earth to God’s Heaven—He didn’t even give you an immortal, glorified body—He left you on this Earth with the same physical body you had before you were saved, with sin still in its members, and with you still in this present world.

[by **baptism**]

- But what **has** changed is that God has fully **identified** you in and with the Lord Jesus Christ Himself—He has made you *dead to sin*,

and alive unto God — He has broken the power and the strangle-hold that sin had in your life so that you can begin to Think the way He thinks—He has (by grace, through faith) made it so that you can begin to functionally live unto Him and produce *fruit* that His *holiness* can accept and be pleased with—He has made it so that you can have fellowship and communion with Him—He has done something about your mind and your body so that (by grace, through faith) you can put all that He has made you to be “in Christ” into proper, godly practice—He has adopted you as His “son” in order to Labor with Him and enter in to working together with Him in all His business—and then He has begun to personally educate you as His “son” and give you a vocational training for the most grand and glorious occupation that any human being could ever have: to liberate the creature from its vanity and bondage of corruption; to repossess the heavenly realm **and bring it to life** with the very life of God Himself!

- And I say all that to you because all of that has changed your perspective of your PERSONAL TIME—you’re not just ‘marking time’ and doing some good here and there until you finally get off this Earth and get shed of these bodies of corruption and go to a “better place”! (and until then, we just have to ‘grit our teeth’ till by and by, we get to “glory”!)

- To put it simply, you now see your PERSONAL TIME in reference to your Sonship Education and vocational training that as the apostle Paul says (and as I’ve quoted often times) ... *godliness is profitable unto all things, having promise of the life that now is, and of that which is to come. (1 Timothy 4:8)*

- So TIME to you isn’t just a ‘precious commodity’ (it is that, but it’s much more than that) - [in fact, a lot of lost people know that] - but for you, you’ve got some good, godly, additional ‘pressure’ or demands upon your time because of godly sanctification and the edificational education you’re getting that has a great impact upon your eternal life!

- And that makes it so that your PERSONAL TIME and the various PRIORITIES of your life (that will **expend** that time) matters deeply to you by now—(or at least it should, if everything’s been working and running well up to now).

- Therefore, because of the environment that your life-time is in as a “son” undergoing this godly edification and education (and all that it entails, demands, and calls for) - naturally enough, and as sure as you were made aware of in advance—you **know** that there are going to be times where things get “kicked up a notch” (so to speak) in connection with greater skill-acquisition; greater ability & capacity on your part; — and in connection with your Father giving you greater responsibility; and greater opportunities to be involved & engaged in His business operations.

- And that means that greater amounts of your **Personal Time** are going to be naturally given over to the education, and the involvement in your Father’s business.

- And the pressures, demands, priorities, and opportunities of a “son” of God are **unique** to the kind of pressures and the kind of demands, and the kind of priorities, and the kind of opportunities that are unique to the life, the life-style, and the life-TIME of a “son” and his on-going godly edification and educational/vocational training.

- And this isn’t anything really uncommon to some things that kind of parallel this issue in the realm of natural education and vocational training—Ex., it’s not at all uncommon to enter into a field of study/training for a particular job or career—to find that the teachers/instructors/professors tell the student, “Now if you expect to pass this class, you just can’t do it and work another job at the same time” (not that you’re going to have to give up your job—this is just an example); or to say, “If you are going to pass this class, you can’t be going on vacations” — in fact, some teachers will tell a student that if they even miss one class, it will put them in jeopardy of passing the course!

- And the truth is—when a young person gets to College or University, the prioritizing of their PERSONAL TIME is one of their biggest SHOCKS—and very often the failure of many college students is due to a failure to make the wisest use of their time!

- And so it is with you as a “son” of God in the education and in the vocational training that you are currently undergoing.

- And these are all things that you are to already “*know*” about time in that phrase of (:11) “*And that, knowing the time, ...*”

- You know the unique environment of the *time* you’re in—and you already know (because you’ve been told about it in advance) that given the high priority of your Sonship Education and the vocational training it offers you—you know that there’s coming a point in which you’re going to have to make some adjustments (priority-wise) to the amount of PERSONAL TIME you’re going to have to give to it in order to get everything your Father has designed for you to get out of it.

- And I’m intentionally focusing a lot of attention on this little phrase (*knowing the time*) because it really needs to make a **deep impact** upon you—it’s so easy to just skim over this phrase and go on to the next one—but it’s essential to have this step make you think hard about (or maybe to step back and look at your overall life as a “son” up to this point) and realize the way in which, by just what you’ve learned and are engaged in so far (in just the 6 Components of the Wisdom; the 3 Components of the Justice; and the 1st Component of the Judgment) - and how all that has made its way into the “time” of your **personal** life (and the details of your life) - and more importantly to realize that **the time has arrived** for you to have to devote even more time to it!

- And you need to be **suitably impressed** with *knowing the time* as NOT merely as an expression common to men in general—but as a ‘Sonship Expression’ about ‘sonship time.’

- So what we’ve got so far—is that when it comes to dealing with TIME I (OUR PERSONAL TIME) - there are 2 Major Parts (those 2 Clauses) to the godly Thinking in connection with our Personal Time:

(Clause 1) or Part 1—*And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep:*

(Clause 2) or Part 2—*for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed.*

- And “Part 1” has 3 “Steps” to it (so to speak) that are indicated to us by the use of those commas.

Part 1 Step 1— “*And that,*” — tells you that this body of information is to be immediately added to the previous information without delay—and while you do owe your neighbour an expression of godly love that will require you to do some things to/toward your neighbour—there is a ‘Priority-Demand’ upon your TIME that makes it so that you don’t end up doing a whole bunch of things that impinge upon your time to get the rest of your Sonship Education and engage in the further Operations of your Father’s business.

Step 2— “*knowing the time*” — tells you that you already know that you’re on “Sonship Time” (so to speak) - knowing that you have positively and properly responded to being edified, educated, and trained by God your Heavenly Father to work together with Him in all His business—and having reached a point of godly capacity/ability as a “son” — knowing the unique environment of the TIME of your life, therefore the time has arrived for making some **adjustments** to the **priorities** of your Personal Time in order to take full advantage of the greater opportunities to engage in more & more of your Father’s business.

- The truth is—there’s an AWARENESS regarding TIME that a son is to come to, at this particular point.

- You may not be able to ‘frame’ it in your thinking without some help (which is what this is giving you here) - but by what Paul says here is designed to bring to your mind that latent concept that it’s quite possible to ‘**run out of time**’ - or simply the issue of, “I need to get going a bit more and “get on the stick” (so to speak), because it’s obvious to me now that there’s so much out there and so much that I need.”

- And that concept now needs to be properly framed— and it needs some godly guidance & direction to it—because the BIG ISSUE here is that **you’ve got to be able to make a JUDGMENT** as a “son” - (**a WISE judgment**) in connection with the TIME that you perceive you need to **increase** investing in your Sonship Education.

- Therefore you need to have some information that's going to enable you to consistently make **wise judgments** in connection with how you are going to best utilize the TIME you have, and acquire more time to be able to make the necessary progress you need to make to be able to fulfill (as much as you can) of the remainder that there is to your Sonship Education.

- And what you're told here in (:11) takes that realization for just how much there is to learn and be involved with in the remaining "course" of your Sonship life—and by what's said here, you are to then perceive (as you examine your life and what you spend your time on) ... you're to begin seeing **just what it is that might be holding you back** (so to speak), or what might be "**robbing**" you of the time that you do have—and possibly not be making the best use of your time like you need to.

- And therefore, that's the kind of godly *judgments* you're going to have to make at this point: PERSONAL JUDGMENTS (because this is all about your Personal Time)!

- You all have very personal situations and personal circumstances that make up your life (and what you spend your time on and doing) - and an evaluation (an examination) is to take place—and some **alterations** and **re-prioritizing** is supposed to take place now in order to get the 'more time' you need.

- Make sense? Any questions? ... then that should set us up for Step 3 of this 1st Part to the godly Thinking regarding our Personal Time.

- Our godly Thinking in connection with making godly *judgments* as a "son" regarding the wise use of our Personal Time is contained in all of (:11) - but as we've noted before, (:11) is broken up into 2 major clauses (or 2 major Parts) —

- Part 1 = *And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep:*

- And Part 1 has 3 "Steps" to it marked out by the commas.
S1) *And that,* S2) *knowing the time,*

- And now we're ready for Step 3—***that now it is high time to awake out of sleep:***

- At this point, you should get the “pay-off” (so to speak), or the benefit of having taken careful notice of those first 2 “Steps” that lead your thinking in such a way, (and put your mind in the proper position), so that the final “Step” will have the “kick” to it that it’s supposed to have, and so that you’ll gain the full, depth of, and effectual working of the entire 1st Part of the *renewing of your mind* in connection with how you think about your Personal Time as a “son.”

- And what I want to focus your attention on for the moment in that final phrase of the 1st Part (or first clause) of (:11) is that little word “**NOW**” — *that now it is high time to awake out of sleep:* — (because it doesn’t say, ‘And that, knowing the time, that it is high time to awake out of sleep’ - which makes sense, but our Father adds that little word “**now**” to it in order to get you to “see” something and to THINK about something that’s important and essential to getting and gaining the Father’s own thinking about what TIME it is!

- And what I’m after here is that by saying it the way He does, the Father EXPECTS something to take place in your mind (in your inner man) - and what He expects to take place is an AWARENESS of TIME as a “son” - an awareness of your Personal Time and how much of it now needs to be invested in the Father’s business that lies ahead.

- And the truth of the matter is—and in view of all of the work that we’ve done in Bible class over the last month or so—(getting you to see the natural connection with this 2nd Component of our *instruction of judgment* that deals with TIME to the 1st Component dealing with godly judgment regarding our *neighbour* — then, getting you to see the general, overall design of this 2nd Component—and then the actual effectual working of those first 2 “Steps” of the godly Thinking regarding your Personal Time ... in view of all of that (and I know I have said this before, but now is where it comes into play) ... in view of all that, by the time Paul says, *And that, knowing the time,* ... AN AWARENESS is supposed to take place in your inner man!

- And in connection with your Personal Time: YOU KNOW WHAT TIME IT IS!

- And the truth is, most Christians DON’T know what time it is! — meaning, they don’t know “sonship time” - they don’t know “time” and “the time” the way God the Father knows “time” and what time it is.

- In fact, Romans, itself, tells you that if you're truly justified unto eternal life—and IF you are going to be properly taught about being justified unto eternal life (in Romans 1-5), and IF you *have* been taught about Justification and its results from the information written for you, to you, and about you in this present dispensation of grace in which you live— THEN, the average Christian should know that it's TIME to get their godly edification going—it's TIME to get their Sanctified position “in Christ” going (and put into practice)—then it's TIME to get their Sonship Education going—and by this point in Romans 13:11, it's TIME to take the godly edification and skill-sets that they've acquired and “kick them up a notch” to engage and participate in some further and greater and weightier and more advanced Operations of their Father's business!!

- So when you *know the time*—when you know what TIME it is at this point and in this context (i.e., Sonship Time) - then a particular AWARENESS comes to your mind—an awareness that it's now time to spend MORE TIME in connection with participating in the advanced Operations of your Father's business.

- And I say all that in order to allow your thinking (that's now in the position it needs to be in) to perceive that the very next thing that the Father says to you in (:11) not only makes perfect sense (and not only comes as no surprise)—but is the natural thing that the Father would say to His son who truly and effectually “knows the time” (knows Sonship Time).

- And along with that “*knowing the time*” there should be a compatible zeal, ambition, and godly DESIRE to enter in to the advanced Operations of the Father's business! (and to invest more TIME in it!)

- Just to go back to that illustration I've used before—it's just like in any natural “Father & Son” business—when the father asks his son to work more hours with him in his business—so the son has to ‘punch the time clock’ earlier—his work-load is going to now increase—and because of that, the son is supposed to become aware of the need to FIND MORE TIME to invest in his father's business (and if everything has worked properly, then the son should greatly desire to find more time to invest in the father's business). [it shouldn't be a, ‘Oh, no’ ... dragging the feet, reluctant type thing.]

- Well, that's the "**now**" concept here in (:11) - (of that first "**now**") "*that now it is high time to awake out of sleep:*

- There's a "**now**" AWARENESS that something further now has to be done—(in view of all that you've learned and the kind of commitment you have to getting the fullness of your Sonship Education) - there's now a need to **invest more time and energy** into it all.

- Now let's turn our attention to that rather familiar (?) phrase: *it is high time to awake out of sleep:*

- *it is high time* — what is that expression saying/implying?

- That's an expression indicating that an **opportunity** is ahead of you now—(or even right on the 'doorstep' [so to speak]) - **that you need to QUICKLY RESPOND TO**, and quickly 'get going' with—and the way in which you *have been* conducting yourself; and the amount of time you've been giving to the work you have been doing isn't going to 'cut it' any more—it's simply not going to be enough to get accomplished everything that lies ahead of you.

- And when we use the expression "*high time*" to do something — we often use that expression because someone has not taken advantage of something right away—or when someone hasn't planned things well enough—(and if physical sleep is involved, you just haven't set your alarm early enough).

- And the truth is—we most commonly use the expression "it's high time"—to get going, or whatever— in cases where some dragging of the feet, or some forgetfulness, or some failure to plan properly is in view.

- In other words, we most commonly use this expression in a situation where some **failure** is happening on the part of the one we're talking to.

- We most commonly think of that expression *it's high time* as a rebuke or a reproof or a reprimand for wrong doing.

- But the expression "*it is high time*" can also be used when there is no wrong doing being done—when no rebuke, reproof, or reprimand is necessary—when no real failure is taking place in the person at all; but rather, it can be used as an **exhortation** itself! (or a **charge**)

- The expression “*it’s high time*” (to get going) can actually be used BEFORE any forgetfulness or failure has occurred or comes into play.

- That expression can be used to simply realize that **what you have been doing, isn’t enough!**

- And because of what has now been set before you **as the future prospect**—or **as the future opportunity**—or how things are going to be going from now on—there’s the need to realize that you simply can’t maintain the ‘status quo’ any more—there has to be an **alteration** to how you’re going about doing things from now on. (There has to be a **change**).

- Because you’re going to have to adjust your TIME in order to fit the intensification of responsibility and opportunity that you’re now confronted with! (a **judgment** has to be made!)

- And that’s the issue here with the Roman saints that the apostle Paul is writing to.

- This isn’t Paul coming along and chewing out the Roman saints—it’s not a reprimand or a rebuke for some wrong doing on their part.

- Rather, it’s the proper articulation of the realization that **more time** is necessary—and an **adjustment to your time** has got to take place—and RIGHT NOW is the CRITICAL time to make sure you’ve done that before you go on!

- Because what is coming up (and what ‘going on’ means) - the aspect of the Father’s business that you’re going to be engaged in, is going to REQUIRE this furtherance of TIME!

- (It’s going to require the taking advantage of the further opportunities for being involved in more and even greater Operations of God’s business.)

- And just by looking ahead to the next Clause of (:11—*for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed*) - the truth is, we don’t want to RUN OUT OF TIME! — we don’t want to NOT be able to engage in this aspect of the Father’s business—to put it this way (and to say it in a way that, You don’t want to miss it) ... **the real GLORIES of Sonship are still ahead!**

- And everything that's been going on now has really been designed to **make it** so that you can **begin** to enter into the real "stuff" that Sonship's all about!

- For example: it's kind of like everything that's been going on up until now has been "boot camp" in military training—and you've learned all these things in order to make it so that you can go out and FIGHT a BATTLE.

- (the real "stuff" about soldiering **isn't** boot camp! - boot camp is what makes a 'soldier' out of you—the real "stuff" about soldiering is to be put into having to defending your country [or going to war])

- And here, we're supposed to understand and appreciate that all that we have gone through has put us in a position whereby we're going to be able to enter into far greater; far more magnificent; and far more glorious aspects of our Father's business!

- And in view of just how fantastic those opportunities are—we **don't want to miss out on it!**

- And the truth is—TIME is a commodity that can easily be **wasted**; plus, **we just don't know how much time we're going to have** —

— both with respect to either our physical life—or as far as the duration of this dispensation of grace goes.

- And therefore both, the expression "**now it is high time to awake out of sleep:**" and the expression "**for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed**" (both of those "**nows**") - those expressions bring together the realization that '**we've only just begun**' (so to speak) — and so what we have already gone through is now going to allow a 'Door of Opportunity' to be opened up that has fantastic details with respect to the "course" of our sonship life—in order for us to see and understand more than ever before, aspects of our Father's business than we've never even thought about before.

- And it's that kind of a realization should make it so you evaluate your TIME—and see if your use of the time you have is being used in its wisest way in order to be fully involved in all the further aspects of your Father's business. (And if not, to make some *judgments* about adjusting your time - to put more of it to use in these opportunities).

- Now I realize that this issue of Personal Time (and making the wisest use of it [which is the easy part]; but also making some *judgments* in connection with adjusting your time, and making some alterations in your time-schedule; and finding more time to invest in your Father's business [which is the hard part—because of the very personal nature of having to make some hard choices priority-wise]) I realize that since (:11-12a) is dealing with Godly Thinking—you may have some ungodly thinking that is being challenged right now — but remember that by **exactly** what God says here, it's all designed to have some real effectual working power so that *by* its effectual work, you end up having that ungodly thinking uprooted, dismissed, and replaced by God's own thinking in connection with your Personal Time.

- And each of the 3 Steps to Part 1 (*And that, / knowing the time, / that now it is high time to awake out of sleep;*) is essential to getting the Godly Thinking—but my understanding is that this **last Step** (Step 3) is the most essential in all of Part 1.

- That is, “***that now it is high time to awake out of sleep***”

- And of that phrase, the most critical thing of all (that really comes along and materially affects the way you *think* about your Personal Time—and gives you the **capacity** to make the kind of *judgments* about adjusting, altering, and prioritizing your Personal Time) is that “***sleep***” issue!

- Or the kind of ***sleep*** that a son at this point in his Sonship Education would naturally have.

- Now, remember that when you're told (and when the Romans were told), “***that now it is high time to awake out of sleep:***” - that's NOT a reprimand/reproof/rebuke—and it's not being said to them because of some kind of failure or wrong doing on their part (or on your part).

- Rather, that's an Exhortation—that's a Charge—it's an issue that's based upon a **realization** and an **awareness** that you have at this particular point (which is the issue of “*knowing the time*”) - and based upon that awareness, your desire is to implement some changes or some alterations to your Personal Time in view of all that lies ahead of you in the remainder of your Sonship Education—in other words, Don't get caught not having the TIME necessary to be able to take on the increased work-load that's now being given to you!

- And with this increased work-load—it only makes sense that if you've only been giving a certain amount of time to work in the Father's business so far—that now you're going to have to make an increase in the time spent in the Father's business that matches up with the increased work-load of the business.

- And so some alterations are going to have to take place in order to acquire **more time** to spend in the Father's business.

- Now, just saying that—what do you think you are going to be spending 'more time' on doing? ... and, in view of your life right now, where is this increased work-load going to manifest itself in your life (where is it going to 'show up' or make an impact)?

- For one thing—as I've noted before—as a "son" you really are in "full-time Christian service" (so to speak) — therefore more and more, as the doctrine of your godly sonship edification effectually works, it continues to invade (in a good sense) into more and more of the **details** of your life.

- More and more, as you are 'conformed to the image of Christ' - you DON'T do what many Christians do: you DON'T 'dis-engage' from your Christian life and engage in your 'secular' life (just to put it that way).

- You find that more and more of your private, personal life—and more and more of the **details** of your private & personal life) can be utilized as vocational training ground because more and more of the doctrine of your godly edification as a "son" sets its sights (so to speak) on invading into all of the deeply private, personal, (even secret) aspects and details of your life!

- And so you find yourself being "on call" or "on duty" far more than ever before!

- For another thing—since making godly *judgments* requires (by nature) more work—more thinking and pondering things through—and because the information that is given to you that gives you the capacity to make godly *judgments* are in the form of some sayings—and because *sayings* give up their benefits the more they're worked, (and because your Father isn't going to tell you what to do), then you're going to have to put **more time** and **work** into those *sayings*.

- So as you progress on in your sonship education, and in order to get the greatest benefit out of it—you're going to naturally have to spend more time in the personal STUDY of God's word itself!

- As I've said before—since you are designed to be “*the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart.*” (II Cor. 3:3) — Romans through Philemon is designed to be lifted off the pages of God's word and become alive in you! You ARE Romans through Philemon! (right now you're basically Rom. 1-13)

- And even though I am the Bishop & Pastor-Teacher of this church—and even though I do the work of the ‘stand-in’ (or surrogate father) - once we've entered into the Curriculum for our Sonship Education, part of my job is NOT telling you what to do, either, ... I am not your ‘tutor and governor’ ... and that means that more work is going to have to be done on your part as you ‘interact’ and ‘interface’ with the epistles of the apostle Paul that form our curriculum for godly edification!

- I'm not saying that you're going to be doing my job—(or even supposed to go on ahead and nail down the remainder of Paul's epistles) - but you may have to GO BACK and get some things better working or simply refreshed or make some connections that give you better understanding for whatever details of your life need attention.

- Simply put—as your Sonship Education moves on—you're going to have to give some more time to STUDY.

- Along with that—more time is going to have to be given to LEARNING—which means taking full advantage of the Bible classes taught here. (making sure you're not missing things—which means either physically getting to every class possible—or keeping current by catching up on the recorded messages)!

... because the truth is, you shouldn't want to miss anything!

- Simply put—you're going to have to give more time to ensure that the effectual working of what you are learning is doing it's job!

- And, naturally enough, more time given to STUDY and more time given to LEARNING and ensuring that the doctrine is effectually working within you (and working out through you) — more time is going to have to be given to SONSHIP PRAYER and communion and fellowship with your Father.

- There should be an increase to the time you spend with your Father—simply because you're going to be spending more time in His business operations!

- So hopefully that should give you some idea of where and what you are going to be spending more time on (and doing) as a requirement of the increased work-load and increased responsibility in the upcoming operations of your Father's business. (without me coming along and being your 'tutor and governor' and getting into your personal life and the details of it)

- And in view of all that—(sounding like a broken record) — you are going to, therefore, have to make a *judgment* or a decision to make a material alteration in the way in which you do things, in order to acquire **more time!**

- (now back to that "*sleep*" issue and the kind of *sleep* this is talking about)

- *now it is high time to awake out of sleep* — my understanding is that this isn't talking about actual, physical sleep—because, for one thing, that wasn't what was taking place with the Roman saints—and for another thing, this is actually functioning as a SAYING.

- And to put it simply—in view of the CONTEXT in which this sits, the kind of *sleep* this is talking about (just to illustrate it this way) is the amount of time that you give to yourself to have some R & R (rest & relaxation) [so to speak] **from your work**—and if you're honest with yourself, you can honestly evaluate whether or not you do think in terms of "Well, this is my time for my Christian life, and this is my time for the rest of my life" — and please don't misunderstand—I'm not saying that there aren't proper times for rest and relaxation—but the truth is, even R&R can be utilized for vocational training as a son!

- Simply put—in a context such as this—the *sleep*, **not** being physical sleep; and the *sleep not* being any wrong doing (such as being ‘asleep at the wheel’ while driving or doing your job); and the *sleep not* being actual sleeping in class—but in a context where God is exhorting you as His son (who is, and *has been* responding positively and properly to everything you’ve been taught) - the kind of “*sleep*” (or ‘sleep’ time) that perfectly fits (and is fitting to) this context **is simply the amount of time you are spending “away from work”** - that is, **away** from engaging in your Father’s business!

- And ‘sleepy-time’ (time spent doing other things with your other ‘life’ or ‘lives’) is going to have to be “restructured” (if you will) and some decisions and some *judgments* are going to have to be made in order to make some alterations in your Personal Time in order to accommodate **more time** being spent and utilized for your Father’s business operations.

- (And that should be a “Woo-Hoo”, “Oh, Yeah”, “Yippee” moment! ... and not an ‘oh, no!’ moment!)

- So when you take all 3 phrases of the 1st Clause (or Part 1) that deals with godly sonship *judgment* in connection with our Personal Time—we have:

And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep:

- And that final phrase — **“that now”** [with the increased ability and capacity and skill-sets that you’ve acquired at this point in your godly Sonship Education, NOW, RIGHT NOW is the time and the place to move out into increased work-load, increased responsibility, increased capacity to become more involved in your Father’s business than ever before] **“it is high time”** [the year, the month, the week, the day, the hour, the minute, even the very second that you’ve been long awaiting has finally arrived! ... ‘high time’ is a certain, definite fixed time in a son’s education when advancement & promotion in the Father’s business is going to be offered ... and it’s HERE right NOW!] **“to awake out of sleep”** [to make less (lessen) the *sleep* time of the time spent away from the Father’s work/business, and to make more (or increase) the ‘waking’ moments or the time spent at the Father’s work/business] :

- And as I've said before—my understanding is that this 3rd Phrase functions as one of those *sayings* —

— (review a Sonship Saying)

- So—when you think about that *saying* (“*that now it is high time to awake out of sleep:*”) — can you think of 1 [or more than 1]

Main Operating Principle that comes out of it?

- I can think of at least 3:

- 1) Don't waste time!
- 2) Find more time!
- 3) Make the best/wisest use of time!

- Granted, even the lost and the world hold these principles dear—but the big difference is that the lost and the world (and even a lot of Christians as well), DON'T KNOW THOSE FIRST TWO PHRASES (“*And that, knowing the time,*”) ... **THEY DON'T KNOW WHAT TIME IT IS!**

- And that context makes all the difference! ... the difference between (not just right and wrong), but GODLY vs. Ungodly use of Personal Time!

- The world/lost have their aims, goals, & objectives that these same 3 Principles (and that *saying*) would perfectly fit them ...

- Even the Adversary, Satan himself has his own aims, goals, and objectives that these same 3 Principles and this same *saying* would fit them, too!

- And I say that—only to once again point out that what is at stake here is GODLY vs. UNGODLY (Godly WISDOM vs. Ungodly WISDOM)!

- Once again—many of the names and terms are the same—but the CONTEXT makes all the difference!

- One last thing before moving on to Part 2 of our godly Thinking about our Personal Time—and that is, when taken together, this whole Clause “*And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep:*” - that really is a call, a charge, an exhortation for you to CHECK (checkpoint) and see that your continued Sonship Education

really is THE TOP PRIORITY of your life!

- And at this particular point in your Sonship Education—because of the particular demands that the remaining education/edification calls for—it's going to demand, therefore, an **increase in your commitment!**

- And the way in which that increased commitment takes place is that we have to make some wise *judgments* with respect to the Personal Time we have in the details of our own personal lives—and we make some wise decisions that end up with us finding **more** time to devote to the furtherance of our Sonship Education ... to be able to gain further experience with the doctrine; and further skill acquisition and training that we need.

- And the nature of the godly education/edification from now on, **demands** more time devoted to these things (to responding Positively & Properly to it all).

- And these highly discriminating godly *judgments* in connection with your Personal time (i.e., making the **best, wisest, and most profitable** use of your time), in order to get the **most** out of your Sonship Education—(and just to borrow an expression from Level II Sonship Education when things get 'cranked up' a notch further), this is actually the beginning of what Paul talks about over in Ephesians (5:16) and Colossians (4:5) when he talks about "*redeeming the time.*"

- And when you '**redeem** the time' - the basic concept of that is that you really ARE making the BEST USE OF TIME—and you're getting out of it all that's been designed by God for you to get out of it.

- Truth is, when you REDEEM time, you actually end up taking aspects out of it, **away from Another** who desires to use your time to his own advantage (and that's the Adversary, Satan himself)!

- Now going back to some things you were told about back in Romans 8—and in the Exhortations that matched up with it—you were actually primed for all this and prepared in advance for it!

- Sonship Commitment Levels

- See Proverbs 2:1-5 (:4)

- (note to self: at this point I reviewed The Top Priority commitment level from my notes on Romans 8—pgs. 362ff)

- Now at this point, we should have the full, effectual working of Part 1 that deals with the Godly Thinking for making godly judgments as a son in connection with our **Personal Time**:

11 And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep:

- And you should be able to understand and appreciate the 3 Steps that's involved in Part 1 of the Godly Thinking about your Personal Time as a son—and especially that *saying (that now it is high time to awake out of sleep)*, and the Main Operating Principles that come out of it (viz, 1. Don't waste time, 2. Find more time, 3. Make the best use of time).

- All of which makes sense (and only *will* make sense) when you already have effectually working of everything from Romans 12:3-13:10 — and makes sense in view of the upcoming grand opportunity of your Father increasing your workload and engaging and involving yourself in the next order of business: which is entering into BATTLE with the Satanic Policy of Evil, and the glorious opportunity to extend the HOLINESS of God by bringing the LIGHT of God into the darkness of this world.

- Therefore, we should now be ready for “Part 2” [#52] of the Godly Thinking in connection with our Personal Time as sons:

11 ... for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed.

- These 10 words make up the second Clause of the full sentence of (:11) - therefore, even though this 2nd Clause could stand on its own, but because you have that colon at the end of the word “*sleep:*” you know that this Clause or Thought is designed to go with the previous Clause or Thought.

- Therefore, it does, indeed, deal with our Godly Thinking about our Personal Time as a son—but by what it says, it takes our thinking and both Prompts it, and Positions it to seamlessly move to the 2nd Major Issue regarding time—(which is the issue of Disp. Time/Timing).

- So it kind of has this 2-fold function: 1) it nails down the final thing that we need to have in order to Think the way God Himself does about our Personal Time as members of the church, the body of Christ who are engaged in the Sonship Education/Edification; and 2) it makes a Natural Connection to the 2nd Major Aspect about Time (TIME II), which is the issue of Dispensational Time.

- And really, both of the Clauses of (:11) - [or all of :11] calls on you to **think back** to some things that you've already been taught and make sure that they're brought to the front of your thinking—and in this way, this is acting as a **minor Sonship Checkpoint** itself.

- It's as if the Father says to the son—Son, do you know what time it is? (which you should); do you know that it's high time to increase your workload? (which you should); are you going to make some *judgments* in connection with your Personal Time, and alter it to meet the demands of your continuing education? (which you should do as well).

- Once again, Part 2 of the Godly Thinking of our *instruction of judgment* concerning Time & how we spend it is ...

... for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed.

- The thing I want to first focus upon and nail down is that expression "***our salvation***" — just what "*salvation*" is Paul referring to here?

- Well, you know for sure that it's **not** talking about our salvation from the debt & penalty of our sins (or our justification) - because we already have that as a permanent and eternal possession from the very moment we believed in Christ as our only and all-sufficient Savior.

- And since Paul doesn't explain what *salvation* it is—then you know that it's a salvation that you've already been confronted with sometime before you got here.

- And while you may think back to a *salvation* spoken about back in Romans chapter 8—my understanding is that this *salvation* that Paul is talking about here was first presented to us back in Romans chapter 5—where a promised "*salvation*" was told to us about being saved from physically being here on this earth when the Lord's Day of Wrath and the revelation of His righteous judgment takes place.

- And that's what's going to take place when God ENDS this dispensation of grace—when the Lord Jesus Christ comes down from heaven and catches us up and away to Himself at what we commonly call the “rapture.” After which, God will resume and fulfill His program with Israel.

- Let's just run a couple of passages and refresh our thinking about this issue of the Lord's Day of Wrath and the revelation of His righteous judgment, and our promised *salvation* from it in any way, shape, or form.

- Romans 1:18-23;
1:32;
2:3-5, 8-9;
5:9-10 (see notes)

- (note to self—at this point I reviewed Rom. 5:9-10 from my Romans 5 notes—pg. 127ff)

- (also noted I Thes. 1:10; 5:9)

RECAP

- Once again, the 2nd Major Part to our Godly Thinking about our Personal Time—which is to become the ‘fabric’ of your mind in connection with making godly *judgments* as to the wisest use of your time) — is that final clause in (:11) - ***for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed.***

- The word “*salvation*” is NOT talking about our being saved from the debt & penalty of our sins (justification) - rather, it's a salvation that we were told about back in Romans ch. 5, which is the issue of being saved from “***wrath***” - God's wrath.

- Back then we learned that every unjustified person has an ‘appointment’ (so to speak) - an appointment to appear in “the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God” having come “short” of the glory of God.

- And there is, indeed, going to be “the day of the LORD'S wrath” take place on this earth when this dispensation ends — and those who are unjustified and living at that time will experience the Lord's day of wrath—and for those unjustified persons who die prior to that, they will experience the Lord's wrath in hell. (no unjustified person can or will escape it!)

- But Paul presents a 2-fold Punch that generates in us the absolute (without-a-shadow-of-a-doubt) confidence (hope) that those who are justified unto eternal life will NOT experience the wrath of God (or the Lord's day of wrath) at all—(recorded in Ch. 5:9 & 10).

- To do so, God would have to cease being God.
(Punch #1—[:9])

- To do so, the Lord Jesus Christ would have to be dead. (Punch #2—[:10])

- Now as we progressed on in our godly edification—especially in our sanctified position “in Christ” and putting our sanctified position into practice as adopted “sons” - that “hope” got added to in Ch. 8 in connection with the aspect of adoption that pertained to “the redemption of our body” [:23] - and again, we had our thinking taken to the time in which this dispensation of grace ends.

- And then we had some things said to us in the section that dealt with our fundamental understanding of the dispensation of Gentile grace that's now in effect—(in Romans 9, 10, & 11) - that once again had us think about when this dispensation of grace comes to an end.

- Ex., *Thou wilt say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in.
Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not highminded, **but fear:**
For if God spared not the natural branches, take heed lest he also spare not thee.
(Romans 11:19-21)*

- So now—when we are being given the *instruction of judgment* in Romans 13:11-14—there is something about the ending of this dispensation of grace that is to be in our thinking because it has a bearing upon our Personal Time as sons on this earth and how we are to wisely use our time.

- Hence, ***for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed***—and because justification is not in view, but putting our sanctified position in Christ into practice ***is*** in view—with all that we've been taught, we should recognize that “*our salvation*” is talking about the END of this

dispensation of grace, which, if we are physically alive on this earth when that time takes place, we will be taken off of this earth and therefore ‘saved’ from experiencing the Lord’s day of wrath—(which begins when this dispensation of grace comes to an end).

- Now before we say some more things about our being (as Paul puts it back in Ch.5, “saved by his life”) - let’s get a very simple and very basic understanding for that event that concludes this dispensation of grace (and which produces the “salvation” from the Lord’s day of wrath) being spoken about here in 13:11.

- We commonly refer to that event as “the rapture” of the church, the body of Christ.

- A (not even) SIMPLE SURVEY OF THE RAPTURE.

- There are 2 major portions of God’s word that give us further details about this event.

1) 1 Corinthians 15:50-53 (:52)

2) I Thessalonians 4:13-18 (:16)

(God’s terminology isn’t the word ‘rapture’, but being ***caught up***—but since no one has a problem with it, we’ll use the word ‘rapture’ to refer to our being *caught up*).

- All I’m after at this point—since we’re beginning to focus our attention upon the end of this disp. of grace (*for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed*) — let’s just look at the 3 things that are told to us that will occur both to end our disp. of grace, and at the same time resume God’s program with Israel.

- Let’s just give a simple survey of those 3 things mentioned in I Thess. 4:16— 1) A Shout; 2) The Voice of the Archangel; 3) The Trump of God.

- Truth is, the “*trump*” issue has already been dealt with back in I Corinthians 15—so that’s an issue that should already be understood — but now God adds 2 more issues to that “*trump*” that signals our rapture—2 more signals that actually occur before the “*trump*”.

- (By the way—my understanding is that these 3 signals all occur without a lot of intervening time in between them—they're a 'package' of signals that mark the end of this disp. of grace and the resumption of God's program w/ Israel).

[my understanding is that they occur one, right after the other in succession]

- THE SHOUT

- (κέλευσμα = an order, command, a stimulating cry, either that by which animals are roused and urged on by man, as horses by charioteers, hounds by hunters, etc., or that by which a signal is given to men, e.g. to rowers by the master of a ship, to soldiers by a commander).

- First of all, who's doing the "shouting"? (*the Lord himself*)

- note that "*himself*" - He's alive, and He's going to be personally involved in saving you from the Lord's day of wrath, just like we saw back in Romans 5:9-10!

- So why is the Lord shouting?

- The truth is—He's shouting because of the overall accomplishment that has taken place by His genius in suspending His program with Israel and bringing in an new, distinct, and different program—a "*dispensation of the grace of God*" for us Gentiles—a program that He had kept entirely a "mystery" until He revealed it to the apostle Paul!

- To really understand and appreciate the Lord's *shouting*, you have to **think about** the 'overall' accomplishments that He has for this "mystery" program in this disp. of Gentile grace (and at least have a basic understanding and appreciation for those accomplishments):

- what God was doing with Israel and His program for them (all having to do with repossessing this earth from Satan and his cohorts—and establishing His Kingdom residence on it)

- how that, wonderful as that is—it still leaves the largest part of God's creation under the usurped possession of the Adversary and his cohorts: viz., the Heavenly Places.

...need to think about ...

- how that (after Israel had reached that “*accursed from Christ*” status of Rom. 9:3), God turned to us Gentiles and changed our status in His sight—(we were TWICE dead Gentiles— “*dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh*”)

- which brings up the issue of Paul’s gospel that he had been ‘separated unto’ - because, for one thing, a “mystery” aspect to the gospel of Christ gets revealed—and that is that Christ not only redeemed & ransomed Israel (*For the LORD hath redeemed Jacob, and ransomed him from the hand of him that was stronger than he. Jer.31:11*), but in His cross-work, He provided redemption for us twice-dead Gentiles!

- And that means that not only did He redeem us, but His redemption also provided for our RANSOM! (*Who gave himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time. I Tim. 2:6*)

- And I bring that up only to say that you need to have in mind that there’s a LEGAL issue at stake here: whose legal possession you are—you were the legal possession of the Adversary, but now “in Christ” you are the legal possession of the Lord Himself!

- how that God is now no longer dealing with Israel, but is now creating One New Man of the church, the body of Christ - a “New Creature” - and that His aims, goals, and objectives with the new creature of the church, the body of Christ is a **heavenly** objective—to take that new creature and repossess the heavenly realm from Satan & his cohorts—and do it all LEGALLY!

- how that God has provided the revelation of the “mystery” and all it’s riches in the 13 epistles of the apostle Paul—which body of information provides for our full, godly, sonship edification—making us fully aware of what time it is and what we are being edified for, and trained for in connection with taking back that heavenly realm from the Adversary.

... need to think about ...

- that is, we will have the LEGAL right to occupy that heavenly realm; and we will have the LEGAL right to operate in it!

- how that our apostle Paul was *made an able minister of the new **testament***—and that the Lord Jesus Christ is the *firstborn among many brethren* — both of those things are LEGAL issues in connection with an INHERITANCE being in view!!

- how that for now over 2000 years, the Lord Jesus Christ has been patient, good, forbearing, and longsuffering (suffering loooong) - until the time in which He can come and get the new creature, the one new man of the church, the body of Christ and get what is rightfully and legally His!

- as THE SON, He not only will get His rightful inheritance here on this earth as King of kings and Lord of lords—but the “mystery” of His inheritance has to do with US and that heavenly realm (with Him as *the blessed and only Potentate*).

- and the truth is—there is a **great glory** to His “mystery” inheritance that brings the greatest crushing defeat and embarrassment to that old Devil!

- and basically, the nature of the Lord’s inheritance (and our inheritance as heirs of God and joint-heirs with Christ) and the glory and grandeur of it all gets revealed to us by Paul in the book of Ephesians — *The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of **the glory of his inheritance in the saints**.*

- YOU, this one new man, this new creature of the church, the body of Christ are HIS INHERITANCE! because it’s by means of the adopted sons of the new creature that the Lord will inherit the rest of God’s creation (the heavenly places)!

- The Lord has been patiently awaiting for over 2,000 years (seated at the Father’s right hand) for the day, the hour, the very moment that He can stand up and come back to catch up to Himself HIS INHERITANCE—to the utter chagrin and complete destruction of the Adversary!

...need to think about ...

- He suffered, bled, died, was buried, and rose again for that inheritance in the SAINTS!

- By the way, all these things and many more details, the Thessalonian saints understood and appreciated and were effectually working within them!

- So THAT'S what it is that the Lord has to SHOUT about!

- He has reason to SHOUT in connection with this catching us up and away to Himself—because that rapture will bring about the redemption of our body (we will get our immortal, glorified body as well as our inheritance in the heavenly realm) - and at the exact same time, the Lord will get HIS inheritance **through us** as He triumphs **with us!**

- He has reason to SHOUT because our “glory” is providing the Lord Jesus Christ with His “fullness” over all things in the entire universe!!!

- So we have the Lord Jesus Christ “himself” descending from heaven with a SHOUT—His “body”; the One New Man; the New Creature of the church, the body of Christ is now ready to be removed off of this earth and the liberation of the “creature” from its bondage of corruption is now to get underway up in the heavenly realm—and while we receive our inheritance as “heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ,” at the same time, the Lord Himself receives “the glory of his inheritance in the saints” in connection with all that He has designed, purposed, and planned to do with “the mystery” of this dispensation of Gentile grace and with the New Creature of the church the body of Christ.

- The SHOUT is therefore a signal that this dispensation of Gentile grace has come to an end ... but we know that that's NOT the end of the story

- Following the signal that the dispensation of Gentile grace has come to an end—a 2nd signal is given that among other things, signals the resumption of God's program with Israel—the commencement of the Lord's Day of Wrath—and some fierce BATTLES that are going to now take place and God is going to fulfill His program w/ Israel. ... therefore, it's not surprising to find that the next signal is ...

- THE VOICE OF THE ARCHANGEL

- Without going into a study of the whole angelic realm—this term “archangel” is used (surprisingly) only 2x in the Bible—here in I Thess. 4:16 (first use) - and then in Jude vs.9—which is where we have this archangel named/identified.

- (see Jude 9) - Michael

- “*archangel*” = simply, the chief of the angels; an angel of the highest rank (with great authority).

- “*Michael*” = who is like God.

- By the way, while various persons named Michael show up in the Bible—the archangel Michael comes up by name in Daniel, Jude, and the book of the Revelation.

- So what you’ve got there in I Thess. 4:16 is the “*voice*” of Michael “*the archangel*.”

- And it’s with the *voice* of Michael the archangel that we are most inclined to look out to that “**To Come**” portion of the Time Line that deals with the final installment of Israel’s 5th course of punishment when the Day of the Lord’s Wrath will take place.

- To get a sense of that—let’s run the verses that mention Michael the archangel:

- Dan. 10:13, 21 (note: *your* [Israel’s] *prince*)

- Dan. 12:1

- Jude 9 (noted above)

- Revelation 12:7

- As the “archangel” (the Chief Messenger and Chief Prince), Michael likely functions in various rolls—one of which is clearly as a General (so to speak) in charge of marshalling the military forces of his angels to war—and as such, he has some things to “say” with his “voice” as our dispensation comes to an end, and as God’s program with Israel gets back underway with the commencement of the Lord’s Day of Wrath.

- And apparently, the activities of the angels in which Michael is in charge of gets underway immediately upon the removal of the New

Creature of the church, the body of Christ as we are “caught up” at the rapture—both realms (the heavens and the earth) are now ready to be liberated from their bondage of corruption—and the angels play a roll in all that getting done.

- The “voice of the archangel,” Michael, is a signal to the angelic host/troops that all the ‘drilling’ & ‘field training exercising’ is over—and now the time for battle has arrived.

- And my understanding is, that even though the actual battle mentioned in Revelation 12 won’t get underway immediately upon our rapture, the truth is, Michael is going to begin the marshalling and assembling of his angelic troops right away.

- And this is in connection with some things that will be going on at the beginning of God’s resumption of His program with Israel—as the “little flock” of the Remnant of Israel gets generated and formed up.

- And there’s going to be some angelic provision and protection for that “little flock.” (Logistics)

- Notice again: Daniel 12:1

*And at that time shall Michael **stand up**,
the great prince with **standeth for the
children of thy people ...***

- Michael and his troops are not only going to attack and fight—but they’re also going to DEFEND that remnant of Israel.

- Under the command of Michael the Archangel, there are apparently a number of angels who are designated simply as “**watchers**” — (see **Dan. 4:13, 17, 23**) — and as the remnant gets formed from the 12 tribes of Israel, these “watcher” angels function as Israel’s **guardian angels**—they keep constant watch over the remnant in a world ruled by **darkness!**

- And these angelic beings will be sent into all the earth to be as described in Hebrews 1:14 (*Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?*) - which will take place when the Lord arises to have His day!

- Now, without going into any real detail here—I do want to mention that as the Archangel, Michael certainly knows the structure and makeup of both the heavenly realm and the earthly realm—the physical structure of them; the living organism structure of them; and even the spiritual structure of them; and how they can respond to one another (**Dan. 10:13**).

- Therefore, he knows that there are governmental powers and territories in the heavenly realm and how they correspond to the governmental territories, powers, and authorities on the earth.

- He also knows how the Gentile nations became corrupted by the Satanic policy of evil as it existed in (and corrupted) the heavenly realm, and then was able to, in turn, influence the Gentile nations on this earth as they “worshipped and served the creature more than the creator” — i.e., by their gods and idols and spiritual darkness.

- He knows how Israel interacted with the ungodly “powers” that energized the Gentile nations—where an ungodly invisible world was being made visible through manipulation and conditioning of those Gentile nations—and this invisible ungodly world isn’t just a random thing—rather, it’s intelligent, it has certain aims, goals, & objectives, and it is able to function in accordance with men on this earth, and with the “powers” and authorities of this earth!

- By the way, Israel was to be sanctified and holy among the nations—(but we know how that went) — and they knew this Satanic, ungodly, energy of darkness that ruled the Gentiles as “**Baal**” (which, by the way, occurs far more often than the word “Satan” in the OT).

- Now my point in all this is just to say that there is a whole lot more going on in the heavenly places and in the earth than meets the eye! and the nature of the battle and battles that are going to be waged out in the Lord’s day of wrath are going to be carried out by the most capable angelic ‘Field General’ of all time: the Archangel Michael!

- By the way, that “stage” that was set for these things to take place at the time of Acts 7, are all still ‘SET’ right now!

- As an aside, I do want to mention that (even though my thinking isn't all that clear on the subject) - but Michael may well have some things to do with us, the new creature of the church the body of Christ, in connection with our repossessing the heavenly realm and liberating the creature from the bondage of corruption.

- But for now—coming back to I Thessalonians 4:16—we have the 1st Signal for our being “caught up together” with the Lord: the Lord Himself will SHOUT in connection with the END of this dispensation of Gentile grace; then we will have the 2nd Signal at the rapture: THE VOICE OF THE ARCHANGEL (Michael), which will signal the RESUMPTION of God’s program and dealings with Israel ...

... by the way—not that it really means a whole lot—but did it cross your mind that when God went silent to Israel (3rd In./5th CoP), that He broke that silence with a “voice” of a “messenger crying in the wilderness” (the voice of John the Baptist) — and when this long period of silence for Israel is ended, it’s ended with a “voice” of another “messenger” (Michael), who will be giving a battle cry in another kind of “wilderness” (the heavens & the earth in the bondage of corruption)?

- THE TRUMP OF GOD

- There are only 2 passages in the Bible that refer to the “trump” of God—I Corinthians 15:52 and I Thessalonians 4:16 [Paul only]

51 Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed,

*52 In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last **trump**: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.*

(I Cor. 15:51-52)

- (and just from this passage, you know that the “trump” and the “trumpet” are **not** the same thing—you know that the “trump” is the **sound** that the “trumpet” makes).

*16 For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the **trump** of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: (I Thess. 4:16)*

- By the time you get to the book of I Corinthians, you should already be familiar with the significance of the “trumpet” in God’s program with Israel.

- And while my understanding is that this is NOT a trumpet associated with God’s program with Israel—at the same time, it IS the “*trump of **GOD***” - and since it’s *God’s* “trump”, there are some things about God’s use of trumpets in the Bible that will help us out with this particular trumpet that Paul refers to in connection with our rapture.

- Let’s run some verses: (and notice at times the particular terminology: the “***voice** of the trumpet*” and the “***sound** of the trumpet*”)

- Exodus 19:1-19 (:13 = first use); 20:18
- Joshua 6:4-6, 20
- Judges 7:16-18
- II Samuel 6:15
- II Chronicles 5:13-14
- Nehemiah 4:18-20
- Jeremiah 4:19
- Joel 2:1
- Zephaniah 1:14-17 (:16)
- Hebrews 12:18-29
- Revelation 1:10; 4:1; 8:13

- Now there’s a great deal of confusion surrounding the rapture in general—but there’s also a lot of confusion about this “*trump of God*” and the “*trumpet that shall sound*” and the “*last trump*” that the apostle Paul talks about.

- So let’s just make sure that we understand & appreciate what the *trumpet* that deals with our rapture (and the *last trump* that it makes) is **NOT** talking about!

- Some of the confusion surrounding the *trumpet/trump* that’s found in I Cor. 15:52 & I Thess. 4:16 is because some Bible teachers and commentaries try to link it with the last trumpet (of the 7 trumpet judgments) of the book of the Revelation.

- In most cases, the attempt to link what Paul says with the last of the 7 trumpet judgments in Revelation is most often

due to using a modern English translation rather than the KJ—and since they change the words “*last trump*” in I Cor. 15:52 to ‘**last trumpet**’ - then an easy connection can be made to the **last** of the 7 trumpet judgments in the book of the Revelation. (easy, but not too smart!)

- Plus, you can add to that the problems that arise from simply not recognizing the 2 Programs that God has put into effect (viz., God’s program with Israel and God’s program with this present dispensation of Gentile grace in which we live) - in other words, a whole lot of confusion exists due to simply **not** “rightly dividing the word of truth”!

- In the book of the Revelation, the Lord’s day of wrath and avenging judgment on this earth is presented in a series of judgments:

1) 7 Seals; 2) 7 Trumpets; 3) 7 Vials

- (By the way, the **7th Trumpet** is recorded in **Rev. 11:15**)

- Most commonly, these events are viewed as occurring in sequence, one right after the other—(i.e., first the 7 Seals, then after they are over, then the 7 Trumpets, and after they’re over, then the 7 Vials are poured out.)

- But my understanding is that these 3 sets of judgments occur in courses—that is, (put simply), you have the 7 Seals—then in the style that we call ‘Looping Parallelism’, John is given to see that the events of the 7 Trumpet judgments loop back and cover a portion of the 7 Seal judgments, and the 7 Trumpet judgments occur while the 7 Seal judgments are still going on—and then the information loops back one more time and you get the 7 Vial judgments that occur while the 7 Seals and the 7 Trumpets are continuing on.

- The point being—that the 7th Seal; the 7th Trumpet; and the 7th Vial all occur and converge at the exact same time!

- (Which will be what is called, “*the great and terrible day of the LORD*” [Joel 2:31]).

- These 3 sets of 7 judgments are all poured out so as to “fill up” the wrath of God—they will be the increasing of “sorrows” and “travail” during the Lord’s day of wrath—and they will get progressively worse and worse—and will follow the pattern of the plagues that occurred back when Moses dealt with Pharaoh back in Egypt.

- Back in Egypt you had God coming along and doing something (pouring out a plague) - and then He stops and allows for the people to respond before an even worse plague is poured out.

- So, too, in the book of the Revelation (see, for example what happens after the 6th Trumpet— Rev. 9:13-21—esp., [:20]).

- And just as it was with Pharaoh, their heart is going to be hardened even more with each judgment that comes upon them.

- And the truth is—that just as it was in Egypt with Pharaoh, so it will be during the Lord’s day of wrath—because even though you had a series of 10 plagues, it was still the same wrath of God—(see Rev. 11:3-6 [:6])

- These two witnesses (whether Moses & Elijah or not) - they are going to be bringing judgment upon the earth just as Moses and Elijah did back in their day.

- And even though you’ve got 7 Seals, 7 Trumpets, and 7 Vials—it’s all the same wrath—it’s a progressive worsening of the same wrath of God.

- That wrath has been progressively growing and growing from at least the time of Moses until it finally gets poured out in the Lord’s day of wrath!

- Now my point in all this is to say that if you are going to try to connect Paul’s trumpet (or “last trump”) with the 7th Trumpet judgment of the book of the Revelation, then you have one huge problem: YOU ARE MOST DEFINITELY **NOT** DELIVERED FROM THE WRATH TO COME! (which Paul tells us we are: Rom. 5:9-10; I Thess. 1:10; 5:9)

- Even if you put the 7 Seals/Trumpets/Vials end to end (in succession), you’re still going to have to go through all of the 7 Seals & 6 Trumpet judgments! — if the rapture doesn’t happen until the 7th Trumpet, then we DO experience the wrath of God! (which is NOT according to scripture!)

- On top of that—the 7th Trumpet is NOT the last trumpet sounded in God’s word—there’s trumpet sounding in connection with the physical return of the Lord Jesus Christ to the earth (even He’s going to blow a trumpet to gather the scattered remnant) - and there’s going to be trumpets sounded in the coronation ceremonies—as well as trumpets that will be sounded during the millennium.

- The point being—the “*last trump*” and the “*trumpet*” that Paul talks about in I Cor. 15:52, and the “*trump of God*” Paul talks about in I Thess. 4:16—are (first of all) both talking about the SAME *trumpet* and the same *trumps* or sounds that that *trumpet* makes—and (second of all) that same *trumpet* and the *trumps* it makes are all talking about the exact same EVENT: the Rapture!

- Furthermore, the *trumpet* and the *trumps* it makes (that Paul talks about in I Cor. 15:52 & I Thess. 4:16) are NOT found anywhere in the book of the Revelation!!!

- ONLY PAUL talks anything about **the Rapture Trumpet!** (and it’s trumps)!!

- So in view of all that—it’s clear that even though the terminology is the same (i.e., *trump*, *trumpet*) - the apostle Paul has a **particular** trumpet in view—it’s unique; it belongs to the Lord Himself; and is to be utilized specifically in connection with our rapture (catching us up and away unto Himself).

- So my understanding is, Paul’s use of the *trumpet* and the *trumps* it makes is the ‘Rapture Trumpet’ for us, the members of the new creature of the church the body of Christ in this present dispensation of Gentile grace, (and not a *trumpet* in connection with God’s program with Israel) - so let’s see some things about this unique ‘Rapture Trumpet.’

- Going back to our passage in I Cor. 15:52—*In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the LAST trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.*

- Again, the “*trump*” is the sound that the one, single “*trumpet*” is going to make at the rapture of the church, the body of Christ—(1 Trumpet that makes more than one Trump).

- So we've got 1 Trumpet making more than one Trump—so the question is, How many *trumps* are there? — or, If there is a “*last trump*”, then when was the ‘first’ *trump*? — (and are there any trumps in between the first and the last)? — well, the answer to that was previously given in our passage of I Corinthians 15.

- (read I Cor. 15:45-47)

- In this passage—(as it commonly is) - the word “*last*” is being used in connection with a duo of things—and as such, it often means, “second” - so:

- How many Trumpets do we have? (1)
- What does it uniquely have to do with? (our rapture)
- How many *trumps* (or sounds) does it make? (2)!
- Are there any in between? (No—how can you have one in between the “first” and the “last” if there are only 2? ... you can't!)

- it's really very simple!

- So then, another question—Why are there only 2 *trumps*?

- A: Because there are clearly only 2 groups in view!

- Group 1: “*the dead*” - or as Paul says in I Thess. 4:16, “*the dead in Christ*”.

- Group 2: **the living**—which is the “*we*” in I Cor. 15:52 (*we shall be changed*) - or as Paul says in I Thess. 4:17, “Then we which are alive and remain ...”

- The 2 Groups of the church, the body of Christ that will be dealt with at the rapture are the members of the body of Christ that have **died**, and the ones that are still **alive**. (simple)

- And in I Cor. 15:52, Paul focuses the attention upon the ***last trump*** that sounds for those who are **ALIVE** at the time of the rapture—(and **WE** [those who are **alive** at the time of the rapture] *shall be changed*).

- And if we are alive at that time, we **HAVE** to be “*changed*”!

- Why? because of what Paul just said previous to this:
- I Cor. (15:50 *Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption.*)
- In connection with our inheritance in the heavenly places, we simply cannot function in that realm with these earthly, physical bodies—and we will be given bodies that are ‘fit’ to function in the heavenly places!
- So when the Lord Jesus Christ comes to catch us up to be with Him, He comes with His *trumpet*—and that trumpet will be blown **twice!**
- And the LIVING will be changed at the LAST TRUMP, or the SECOND blowing of that one trumpet. (and that’s what the *last trump* is all about).
- So what happens at the 1st Trump? (see I Thess. 4:16—... *and the dead in Christ shall rise first:*) ... (then :17—*Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.*)
- When Christ comes to catch up the new creature of the church the body of Christ, the *trumpet* will sound twice—the **dead** in Christ will be raised at the 1st Trump; and the **living** shall be *changed* at the 2nd or Last Trump.
- And that’s why Paul says in I Thess. 4:15, *we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord shall not **prevent** them which are asleep* (or dead in Christ).
- The word *prevent* = to meet beforehand. If you are alive at the rapture, you simply cannot meet the Lord before those that are “dead in Christ” because the dead go up at the 1st Trump—the living don’t go until the Last Trump!
- The Lord Jesus Christ Himself is going to return with His trumpet to gather up the members of His “body” - whereby we will then begin to serve Him in the heavenly realm (or kingdom) in accordance with our heavenly identity, vocation and calling as the sons of God that we are.
- And folks, that’s our HOPE! - (see **Titus 2:11-14 [13a]**) ... that’s our BLESSED HOPE! (that’s our *salvation* that’s *nearer than when we believed*)!

- Let's notice something more in connection with our 'Rapture Trumpet' - (that is, the *trumpet* that shall *sound* and that *last trump [the trump of God]*).

- And what I'm after here is to recognize a parallel that exists in just how this present dispensation of Gentile grace was brought in—and how it's going to come to an end.

- You should have some appreciation for how the "stage" was set for the final installment to Israel's 5th CoP to get underway as the book of Acts opens up—and that the pouring out of the wrath of God (and the Lord's Day of Wrath) was all set to begin.

- (see Acts 1:9-12) - and notice that additional bit of information in (:12) - God intentionally wanted the apostles and the members of the Remnant of Israel to know that the very next time they would see the Lord—and according to their Time Schedule, the next time the Lord was to appear on this earth) would be when He returns to Mount Olivet! (i.e., the mount of Olives)!

- And for the apostles of Israel, and for the members of the Remnant of Israel—that's still a TRUE issue/doctrine/statement! (Those angels were telling the TRUTH!)

- And the truth is—God took measures to see to it that, even though we know that the Lord Jesus Christ did, indeed, return to this earth before His "second coming" to Israel—He still took certain measures to see to it that even though He would secretly return to the earth, He would **NOT** be seen **nor** would He be HEARD by Israel's apostles or the members of the Remnant of Israel!

- (God is very careful NOT to get Himself caught in a lie or in a contradiction!)

- We know that all of the things that are described and presented in Acts chapters 1-7 are all in perfect accordance with God's program with Israel continuing on, just as the Psalms and the Prophets foretold. (Nothing "new" gets underway at all).

- We also know that Acts chapter 8 ties up some “loose ends” (so to speak) concerning some things that the Lord had said concerning Samaria—and that some things that were supposed to be running along according to how the Lord had laid out the progress of the witness of Israel’s apostles (Acts 1:8, ... “*in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.*”) was not going as expected—but there was still nothing in Acts chapter 8 to indicate that God was going to interrupt or suspend His program with Israel.

- And even though we can now look at Acts 8 and see that, indeed, God was making preparations for suspending His program with Israel—God is still not lying or being inconsistent or being contradictory—because when God does resume His program with Israel, that pattern for the progression of His *witness* will still take place, just as He laid out.

- But we know that in Acts chapter 9, something **brand new**, something that the Psalms, the Prophets, the entire OT, and all 4 Gospel accounts **never** mentioned, hinted at, anticipated, or even foreshadowed, took place: The Lord Jesus Christ made an unexpected return to this earth and saved & raised up a brand new apostle (not one of the 12—not an apostle connected in any way to God’s program with Israel) - the apostle Paul!

- Rather than commencing with the Lord’s Day of Wrath, He instead revealed and committed *the revelation of the mystery* and all of the doctrine pertaining to it, to the apostle Paul—who is the apostle of us Gentiles: the “one new man”, the new creature of the church the body of Christ. (A “body” being formed by both Jew and Gentile in this present, new, and **secret** *dispensation of the grace of God.*)

- God interrupts His program with Israel (a program that has as its objective, the repossession of the Earth back to Himself from Satan and his cohorts) - and God unexpectedly brings in a new and distinct dispensation of Gentile grace (a program that has as its objective, the repossession of the Heavenly Places from Satan & his cohorts, with the “one new man”, the new creature of the church the body of Christ).

- Now what I’m after here—and what I want to focus upon (that will bring out this “parallel” issue that I talked about) is how this present disp. of grace **begins** and **ends**: **UNEXPECTED!**

- Truth is, there are some similarities between the way in which this disp. of grace begins and the way in which it ends.
- And what I'm really after here is something in connection with the *trump of God* and the sound that it makes.
- First of all—let's look at the passages that describe the beginning of this disp. of grace when the Lord Jesus Christ unexpectedly appeared on this earth—and that He ONLY appeared to the apostle Paul (or Saul of Tarsus, as he was known then) - and some details surrounding His appearing to Paul.
 - Acts 9:1-9 (:7)
 - Acts 22:1-10 (:9)
 - Acts 26:8-18 (:14 & 16a)
- Now Bible scoffers will come along and try to point out a bunch of supposed 'contradiction' with these three accounts:
 - In Acts 9:7, Paul's companions heard a "voice," but saw "no man" —
 - In Acts 9:4, Paul "fell to the earth" and his companions "stood" (:7) —
 - In Acts 26:14, everybody "were all fallen to the earth" —
 - In Acts 9:6, Paul goes to Damascus to be told what to do —
 - In Acts 26:16, the Lord gives Paul his commission right at that time (on the road) —
- But far from being any contradictions, all three accounts actually complement each other and give additional details.
 - When the light first appeared, the whole group fell down on the ground.
 - Paul then stayed on the ground while the rest got up.
 - Paul saw the Lord Jesus Christ Himself, while the rest only saw a light.
 - And Paul heard the actual words of the Lord, while the rest heard a "voice" speaking, but couldn't understand any of the words that it was saying.
 - And Paul did receive his commissioning right there on the road, but he also went into Damascus to receive additional information about his commission in (9:17-18).

- Now my understanding is that when the Lord speaks to Paul—the “voice” that is spoken about—(in view of the understanding of what the “voice” of God sounds like as given in the word of God preceding this) — (and in view of such a passage as Rev. 1:10-11, when John says that he was *in the Spirit on the Lord’s Day, and heard behind me a great voice, as of a trumpet,*) - my understanding is that when the Lord spoke, Paul hears the actual words, but all that the others hear is a voice-like TRUMPET sound!

- Kind of like if you were to blow a trumpet (a ram’s horn; or a shofar) - and while everybody else hears the ‘voice of the trumpet’ - only one man stand up and says, Did you hear what that ‘voice’ said?

- My understanding is that the “trumpet” is the very voice of the Lord!

- It seems as though whenever the Lord speaks in this manner, His voice sounds like a trumpet! (which isn’t far fetched: ever hear of a ‘megaphone’?)

- Now all I’m after here is, once again, to point out this similar or parallel issue as to how this dispensation of grace **began** and how it will **end**:

- it began with an unexpected return/appearance of the Lord Jesus Christ with a trumpet-like voice;

- only one man (Paul) saw the Lord and heard/understood what the trumpet-voice said;

- and when this disp. of grace ends, it will end with an unexpected return/appearance of the Lord Jesus Christ with a trumpet-like voice;

- and only “the one new man” of the church the body of Christ will see the Lord and hear/understand what the trumpet-voice says!

- (Now I say that only the members of the body of Christ will “see” him based upon the issue of those “clouds” talked about in I Thess. 4:17—and one of the things God uses clouds for is to provide a barrier between Him and others.)

- Today, in this dispensation of grace, we live in a time in which God's voice is **silent** (having been given the entire written word of God) - but when our rapture/departure takes place, God will begin to speak again (according to what the Prophets set forth).

- For over 2,000 years, though God has been **silent**, He has been displaying His *goodness, forbearance, and longsuffering*—it has been a time of grace without measure—but when this dispensation comes to an end, and God will once again begin speaking, and it will be to usher in the final series of events that will bring about the end of the world as we know it!

- (see Zephaniah 1:14-18)

- And because of the nature of now this disp. of grace ends and God's program with Israel resumes—there was/is a need for the apostle Paul to say some things about it because of those who will be **alive** at that time.

- (read once again I Thess. 5:1-11)

- Notice (:2—*the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night*) — that terminology comes right out of God's Prog./Isr.!

- And Paul's talking about things now from the perspective of God resuming His program with Israel when that “day of the Lord” gets underway.

- Matt. 24:42-44

- II Pet. 3:10

- Rev. 3:3; 16:15

- Now that “*thief in the night*” expression isn't how we view the end of our dispensation, but rather how we are to view the resumption of God's program with Israel—and that ‘Day of the Lord’ simply CANNOT overtake us as a *thief in the night*, because we will NOT be here!

- Simply, put, we're NOT awaiting the *thief in the night*, rather, we're awaiting the SHOUT, the VOICE OF THE ARCHANGEL, and the TRUMP OF GOD—which will signal that the *mystery* of the dispensation of Gentile grace is complete and we are gathered together to ever be with the Lord!

- One other thing that I believe that we need to have in our thinking (as background or backdrop material) as we get the effectual working of Romans 13:11b (*for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed*) - is to take a simple look at another passage that gives us some appreciation for the Time and Timing of this dispensation of grace, and how our Personal Time will need some wise judgments made about how you spend your time in the wisest possible way.

- II Thessalonians 2:1-8 (spec., :6-7)

- But first notice (:3).

- Because of the ‘trouble’ that was being caused to ‘shake’ their mind, Paul has reason to give them a quick review of the Lord’s Day from beginning to end.

- And one of the things they were to understand and appreciate was that the Day of Christ would not be happening “*except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition;*”

- And so if these saints (members of the one new man, the new creature of the church, the body of Christ) were actually **in** the Day of Christ—they would be able to tell it because there would be a *falling away* that happens first.

- So, first of all, my understanding is that this *falling away* is NOT talking about anything that happens to us (the body of Christ) during this disp. of grace—rather, this is talking about what will be happening to the Remnant AFTER we have been *gathered together unto him (:1)*, and once the Lord’s day gets underway.

- So that begs the question, What is this *falling away* all about?

- And my understanding is that it is a ‘falling away’ from some particular doctrine that was given to the Remnant, and that they will be operating upon in the 5th Inst./5th CoP.

- And if you go back to I Thess. 5:3, you’ll see what it is regards to: *Peace and safety!*

- The *falling away* deals with some corrupted/false doctrine that makes it so that the majority of the members of the nation Israel, will say “Peace & safety” when their program resumes.

- If anything was made plain and clear to the nation Israel, was that when the final installment of their program came—it would be anything BUT “Peace and safety”!!! (Matt. 10:34-39)

- (by the way, the Remnant will know this doctrine and will operate upon it!)

- They (the Remnant) will know that the nation Israel must now experience the wrath of God—the “time of Jacob’s trouble” - and do so because of the state it was in, just prior to God interrupting their program: they had become *accursed from Christ*; they had committed the “unpardonable sin” and blasphemed against the Holy Ghost.

- The vain & apostate element of the nation Israel had also consummated (so to speak); or mingled and joined their vain & apostate religious system with the course of this world (following the “way of Balaam”)

- In other words, the blending of the doctrines/religions of the Gentiles (Baal, Balaam, Babylon) with their apostate Jewish religion has paved the way for them to ‘fall away’ (as it were) from the corrective doctrine of the Psalms, the Prophets, and the Lord Himself—and reject any “time of Jacob’s trouble”, and instead accept the doctrine of the Assyrian (i.e., that Peace & Safety are what’s coming—“Everything’s Coming Up Roses”)

- By the time God’s program with Israel resumes, all of Israel (that vain, apostate element, as well as the faithful, believing Remnant) are accountable and responsible to know what “time” it is for them!

- They have all of God’s written word, too—they have the testimony of the Law and the Prophets, of Christ’s own ministry, as well as Paul’s epistles and the epistles of the Circumcision apostles.

- They should clearly know that the Assyrian (the Man of Sin) is what’s coming—and in connection with their program resuming right where it left off (and the “blasphemy against the Holy Ghost having been committed) - it would be insane to say, “Peace and safety” is what is coming!

- What's coming is the Lord's Day of Wrath—the final installment of that 5th CoP—the “time of Jacob's trouble” - the ‘baptism of fire’ that John the Baptist talked about—the time of global cataclysmic destruction that will cause the generation of apostasy to “pass away” along with the renewing of the heaven and the earth that will bring in the long-awaited “times of refreshing” and the “regeneration” of the world to come.

- Instead of saying “Peace and safety” - those members of the apostate element of Israel should be saying and doing what the Remnant of Israel will be saying and doing as per Psalm 2!

Kiss the Son, lest he be angry, and ye perish from the way, when his wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are all they that put their trust in him. (Psalm 2:12)

- But that vain, apostate element in Israel (as per their vain, religious system) will be saying “Peace and safety” due to operating upon the false prophets in their midst, rather than responding positively and properly to what the Law and the Prophets (and the Lord Jesus Christ Himself) set forth:

*And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.
And **many false prophets shall arise**, and shall deceive many.
And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold. (Matthew 24:10-12)*

- The apostate element of Israel are going to fully reject any idea of the coming judgment (the ‘tribulation’; the great and terrible day of the Lord), and are going to embrace the “peace and safety” kingdom message of the Assyrian—under Baal (but in the name of God) [i.e., the **mixture** or **blending** of Israel's corrupt religious system with the Gentile religious system under **Baal**]!

- And it's then that what the apostle Paul says in I Thessalonians will take place —

(I Thes. 5:3) - For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape.

(the “them” and “they” are NOT us!)

- By embracing the “Peace and safety” message of the false prophets, the apostate element of Israel performs an act of rebellion and repudiation (and total disregard) for what is written in the Law and the Prophets of God’s word.

- And they do that because of an ungodly “association” they have and an arrangement that they’ve made —

- (see Isa. 8:9-12)

- And this ‘mingling’ that will take place, and the history of Israel’s “whoredoms” will reach its climax by Satan’s false prophets in his ‘Back To Babel’ kingdom project.

- (see Jer. 23:15; Hos. 1:2; 2:2-4; 4:12; 4:4-5; Nahum 3:4-6; Matt. 16:6, 12)

- In the Day of the Lord, Israel will, indeed, be trusting in someone, but not in Jehovah—they will seek to fulfill their desire to be like all the other Gentile nations ([1st CoP] I Sam. 8:1-6; 19-20) — and they’ll do it by fully adopting Baal’s false religious system and Satan’s ‘course for this world.’

- And this is what the apostle Paul is talking about (and why he says what he does) in II Thessalonians 2, when he brings up the issue of ‘sending them *strong delusion*’ —

(see II Thes. 2:8-12 [:11])

- Well, that should give you a basic gist-understanding of what that issue is about in II Thess. 2:3 (that “*falling away*” issue) - and should now prepare us to look at what is sitting in (:6 & :7) - which we’ll look at next.

II Thessalonians 2:6-7

6 *And now ye know what withholdeth that he might be revealed in his time.*

7 *For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way.*

- Now even though you are in the most advanced epistle in Paul’s “church” epistles (and in the curriculum for our sonship education), Paul is reminding the Thes. saints of something they already know

about—(because they first came to know about it back in the book of Romans) - [see :5 *Remember ye not, that, when I was yet with you, I told you these things?*] — in fact, Paul will not only remind them of what they already know, but he will also give them exactly what he’s after in (:7).

- So when Paul says there in (:6), *And now ye know what withholdeth*, they are to already know what Paul is talking about. [let’s make sure we do, because with just the doctrine we now have in Romans 1-13, we should know this, too.]

- This all goes to some fundamental dispensational thinking and understanding about the Time and the Timing of this disp. of grace.

- In the context of talking about the end of our disp. of grace—(or our ‘blessed hope’ - or our *salvation* from the Lord’s Day of Wrath) - Paul says, *And now ye know **WHAT** withholdeth ...*

- Remember that, under the attacks from the Satanic PoE, the Thess. saints were in danger of having their mind ‘shaken’ from operating upon the ‘hope-doctrine’ that they would be saved from experiencing the “day of Christ” (or the Lord’s day of wrath).

- So after Paul comforts and calms their minds with the 1st part of the ‘recap’ of the doctrine of the Lord’s Day of wrath—(and after he has given them some information that they can operate upon to ‘settle’ their ‘troubled’ mind upon the truth of the matter: which is that, even in view of just how bad things currently are for them, NONE of the events that Paul mentions in [:3 & 4] are currently happening [which is why God has Paul choose the specific things he does in [:3-4]).

- So the first step in thwarting the PoE’s attempt to ‘shake their mind’ (faith & confidence & hope) of being **saved** from the day of wrath, is to say, Look, in the Day of Christ (when the Lord’s day of wrath takes place), these things (a, b, c, ...) will be taking place—so, are they now taking place? NO!, So you can’t possibly be in the Lord’s day of wrath, right? right!

- The next step is to bring a powerful doctrine back to their mind!

- Because there's some powerful doctrine that they were taught (and that began) back in Romans that was designed to be built into the grand and glorious Hope-Doctrine that is supposed to be operating in their mind and 'save' them from being victimized by the policy of evil.

- So the Thessalonians should perfectly know that the day of the Lord's wrath had not arrived (and they were NOT in it) - but moreover, they should know **WHY!**

- (and that's what :6 is telling them: Why isn't the day of Christ at hand?)

- Answer: ... *ye know* (from previous doctrine) *what withholdeth* ...

- "*withholdeth*" = to keep in check or under restraint; to keep from doing something.

- This is not talking about keeping the dispensation of grace from ending! — rather, it's talking about keeping the *man of sin* from being *revealed*—it's talking about keeping the *day of Christ* (the Lord's day of wrath) from taking place!

- That's why it says, *that HE might be revealed in HIS time.*

- In other words, *that "he" (the man of sin, the son of perdition) might be revealed in "his" (again referring to the man of sin's) time* (which will be in the day of wrath).

- And there's a **WHAT** that is currently keeping or restraining or *withholding* the Lord's day of wrath (and the revealing of the man of sin in his time) from taking place! [it's a "**what**" - it's a **thing**—so what is this thing that's holding off the Lord's day of wrath?]

- The answer is actually found in the beginning of (:7) - *For the mystery of iniquity doth already work:*

- The answer is: *the mystery of iniquity*

- And like most things in Paul's epistles—this issue of *the mystery of iniquity* that *doth already work* is commonly mishandled and misunderstood due to failure to 'rightly divide the word of truth' and sloppy/improper Bible handling.

- My understanding is that the expression “*the mystery*” is referring to just what we were told that this present disp. of Gentile grace **is** back in Romans 11:25 (read) — (as one of the ‘Essential Doctrines’ that are specifically marked out for attack by Satan and his PoE).

- “*The mystery*” is talking about this present disp. of Gentile grace—a ‘secret’ that God kept hid in Himself—a ‘secret’ that, among other things, has as its purpose the creation of “one new man” - of a “new creature” - of the “body of Christ” — by which God will reconcile and repossess the heavenly places back to Himself from Satan & his cohorts.

- And the truth is—that’s the answer to the “*what*” of (:6) - the ‘what’ or the ‘thing’ that is holding off the revealing of the man of sin **is the mystery** (**this present dispensation of Gentile grace**)!

- Now what gets some folks a little puzzled here is the full expression that the apostle Paul uses— “*the mystery of iniquity*” that Paul says “*doth already work*”.

- And what is commonly focused upon is the issue of the “*iniquity*” — and a whole bunch of things are taught and preached about all kinds of iniquity going on—and again, the big issue made out of this passage is very often the increase of sinful activity and the like.

- But the problem with that (aside from failing to ‘rightly divide the word of truth’) is that there really is no *mystery* about *iniquity* itself!

- Just as in a companion-type expression the apostle Paul uses “*the mystery of godliness*” (*I Tim. 3:16*) — again, there is no *mystery* about *godliness* itself—in fact, both terms “*iniquity*” and “*godliness*” (“*godly*”) occur in God’s program with Israel.

- But where “*godliness*” is concerned—there **IS** a *mystery* or ‘secret’ to it, in connection with what God is doing with *godliness* in this present dispensation of grace.

- Likewise, then, there is also a *mystery* or ‘secret’ to *iniquity*—but it’s also in direct connection with what God is doing with *iniquity* in this present dispensation of grace.

- Actually, one of the problems with properly handling the expression in (:7), “*the mystery of iniquity*” is one of going the **wrong direction**.

- Often times folks read or teach this as if it’s focusing upon the END of this disp., and talk about a bunch of sin and iniquity increasing and increasing—and is already ‘at work’ (which isn’t what this says at all!) .. just before the return of the Lord. (usually, the 2nd Coming of the Lord)

- Truth is—by saying it the way he does, (*For the mystery of iniquity doth already work*) - Paul is taking you **back** to the BEGINNING of this dispensation of grace—back to the REVELATION of the mystery & when it was revealed at the first! (to Paul)

- The “*mystery of iniquity*” is the designation that God gives to His formerly kept secret plan (to interrupt & suspend His plan & program to repossess the Earth & establish His kingdom/residence on it, and bring in a new/distinct dispensation of Gentile grace) - but with a particular view to the way in which He would respond to the “iniquity” of the world when it reached its climax—(which it did when Christ stood at the stoning of Stephen in Acts 7).

- And at that time, Satan had earned the right to reveal his “*man of sin.*” (but that all got put on ‘hold’)

- When **iniquity** reached its climax on Earth, (and the wrath of God had reached its climax) - just as it was spoken about, expected, and scheduled (by the Law, Prophets, Lord’s earthly ministry): the 5th & final Installment of the 5th CoP was to take place in which the final ‘contention’ between God and the Adversary (Satan Himself) would take place.

- And it would be in the opening phase of the 5th Inst. when Satan is legally able to reveal his “man of sin” and put him on display to his earthly usurped possession.

- BUT! God didn’t respond to the climax of “iniquity” with what was prophesied, or expected, or scheduled—rather, He responded with “*the mystery of iniquity*” — He responded to “iniquity” with a **secret** that He had kept—with iniquity at its climax; and with Satan having the legal right to unveil his “man of sin”, God suspended His program with Israel (and His contention with the Adversary over the Earth), and in the face of iniquity’s climax, He unveiled what could properly and fittingly called, “*the mystery of iniquity*”!

- (In which He now turns to the Gentiles, changes their status in His sight, and begins forming “the one new man” of the new creature of the church, the body of Christ—to contend with the Adversary over the Heavenly Places!)

- And now (in this dispensation of Gentile grace), God is putting His “new man” on display on the stage of this world while it is in its climax of “iniquity”!

- God is now putting His “one new man” of the church, the body of Christ on display—not only on the Earth as it languishes in its “iniquity” - but also making an impact on the heavenly realm as it languishes in its “iniquity” and “vanity” and “bondage of corruption”!

- God displays the fullness of His glory and wisdom by means of the church, the body of Christ all BEFORE He permits Satan to proceed with his earned right to reveal his “man of sin” to this world! (**which God has the legal right to do!**)

- That’s what “*the mystery of iniquity*” is all about!

- And that’s the WHAT of (:6) [*And now ye know WHAT withholdeth* (i.e., what that thing is that’s holding off the “man of sin”) *that he* (the “man of sin”) *might be revealed in his time* (when this disp. of grace comes to an end, and when the prophesied, expected, and scheduled 5th Inst. gets back underway).

- So we know what the “WHAT” is—and we should now be able to easily understand and appreciate what the “WHO” (and the “HE”) is in the remainder of (:7).

... *only **he who** now letteth will let, until **he** be taken out of the way.*

- This “mystery” dispensation of grace is what “*doth already work*”, and as such, it LEGALLY “*withholdeth*” the ‘man of sin’ being ‘*revealed in his time.*’

- While it is often taught that the *he/who* is the Holy Spirit—which makes no sense, because the Holy Spirit is still going to be operating out in the Lord’s day of wrath) - rather, the **he** and the **who** is none other than the one new man of the church, the body of Christ!

- (:7) ... **only he** (God's own godly man, the "one new man") **who now letteth will let ...**

- "*let*" - (a word we've already been confronted with back in Romans 1:13 [read]) = to hinder, prevent, obstruct, stand in the way of. (From the Old English *lettan* = to hinder or make late.)

... **until he** (the "one new man" of the church, the body of Christ) **be taken out of the way** (by our being gathered together unto Him at the rapture).

- God's own **godly man** (the "one new man") now legally "*lets*" (or is holding off/preventing/standing in the way) so that instead of "*that Wicked*" man of sin owning the right to the stage of the world, the "one new man" of the church, the body of Christ now legally owns the right to the stage of the world (so to speak).

- And until "he" (the "one new man") "*be taken out of the way*" (which will take place by the rapture—by our Lord Jesus Christ, and by "*our gathering together unto him*" (:1) - which speaks of what we were told back in I Thess. 4:16-17 [*Then we which are alive and remain shall be **caught up together** with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air ...*]) — **until then**, our right to the world's stage will not be legally relinquished!

- But when that time comes (when the rapture takes place), then Satan's legal right regarding his "man of sin" will then be able to be exercised—and he will exercise it!

- And that means that the things Paul talks about "that Wicked" one doing in the following verses, is **NOT** what he's doing now!

- That is, "*the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness ...*" (2 Thes. 2:9-10)!!!

- And I say that because it's so often taught that Satan is working just this way right now! at the present time! NO!!!

- These are things that the "man of sin" will do, and will have the legal right to do—ONLY in the Lord's Day of Wrath! (which is the very **context** Paul is talking about there!)

- (Satan's Policy of Evil tactics are different in this disp. of grace—they all have to do with a competing WISDOM that's specially crafted to deal with 1] Justification—perversions of the 'gospel of Christ'; and 2] Sanctification—perverted wisdom concerning rightly dividing the word of truth; perverted wisdom concerning Bible handling, Bible translations and so forth, and perverted wisdom in connection with godly edification (viz. being "dead to sin," "alive unto God," and the "adoption of sons").

- Today (in this disp. of grace—and through that portion of God's word written to, for, and about us [Rom. — Phl.]) we are taught by our apostle Paul to see Satan's working as "*the god of this world*"!

- But that said, (and true as that is) - Satan is kind of having to do 'double-duty' (so to speak) right now in this disp. of grace—and what I mean by that is, that even though he doesn't have the legal right to put his 'man of sin' on the world's stage (and produce the *signs and lying wonders* through him) - the one aspect of his 'double-duty' is in the area of that "competing WISDOM" that we just mentioned (and which we seem to be most familiar with) ...

... but there is another aspect of his 'double-duty' that we too often seem to either simply NOT recognize at all—or else even if we do recognize it, we commonly pass it off as rather harmless, or just misguided.

- And this is where some better understanding and appreciation for the Time/Timing of this disp. of grace comes into play.

- We'll get into more of this later on in Rom. 13:12, but for now, I just want to call your attention to the fact that a whole bunch of things (ungodly-wise, and policy of evil-wise) were coming to a 'head' just prior to God temporarily suspending His prog. w/ Isr. and bringing in this "mystery" disp. of Gentile grace.

- And all I'm after here is to say that my understanding is that some of the matters of the ungodliness and the policy of evil were NOT simply 'put on hold' - but rather, *some* are still kept 'alive and well' (so to speak) today—and have to be kept that way throughout this disp. of grace, in order to be utilized to their n'th degree in the Lord's DoW!

- (and by the way, the things we're going to talk about aren't the issue of us 'getting ahead' of ourselves in the curriculum for our Sonship Education—because the truth is, you've already been confronted with the majority of this issue in all that's written in Genesis—Acts; as well as some things you were told about in Romans ch. 1 especially, but also in 9-11).

- see, as just one example: Rom. 11:4

- Think for a moment about all the *ungodliness* in this world that the *wrath of God* is *against* (Rom. 1:18) ... especially in the realm of Gentile ungodliness ... can you name some things of that ungodliness that aren't specific sins, but are some of its means to **condition** and **control** your mind (what you think)?

- The pyramids (and the legends surrounding Isis and Osiris).

- The hidden, often baffling things that permeate cultures all around the world.

- The 'return' legends and counterfeit messianic concepts found scattered in religions and cultures all around the world (mahdi [prophesied redeemer of Islam]; avatar [a Hindu deity descending to earth]).

- Working hand-in-hand with that is UFO's (ufology) and the work of the sciences to discover the secrets and beginning of the universe—and these 'discoveries' work nicely into some religious type activities (shamanism, spiritism, seeking power from things such as crystals [healing power]).

- The giant figures in Peru; Stonehenge; giant heads of Easter Island, etc.

- Not to mention the 20 some major religions and the 4,000 some other religions in the world today—and not to mention all of the many philosophies in the world today.

- When you combine the religions, philosophies, cultures, legends, myths, & UFO's with SCIENCE (quantum physics, DNA, bioethics, cloning, bringing physical science together with computer science), **you've got some very powerful means to control and condition your mind!**

- And if you think about all these things as ‘streams’ flowing out from, and feeding back into one central ‘river’ - these streams of religion, mysticism, the arts & sciences and outright rebellion to the One True God—they all will ultimately be pulled together—they act as many different ‘harlots’ or ‘whores’ (so to speak), but they will ultimately be pulled together by their “MOTHER” —

- (see Rev. 17:1-5)

- In the ‘back to Babel’ project—the “Mother” is going to pull all her ‘daughters’ together through Baal’s false religious system—and all of the forces & energy of it as it operates in man’s rebellion against God, will culminate in that one who, as Paul states: ... *opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that his is God.* (2 Thes. 2:4)

- Hopefully, this gives you an inkling as to what this *withholding* that the *mystery* is actually holding back consists of—and what the *one new man* of the church, the body of Christ is doing as he *now letteth*, and *will let, until he be taken out of the way*.

- And hopefully, this gives you a better appreciation for *our salvation being nearer than when we believed!*

SUMMARY SO FAR (let’s step back and look at the big picture)

- Receiving the 3rd Major Sonship Decision-Making skill (*the instruction of **judgment***) begins in Romans 13:8 and runs to the end of the chapter in (:14).

[Rom. 12:3-13:7]

- Verses 8-10 takes the previous instruction of Wisdom, Justice, (and the Discretion that comes from them)—plus, the 5 Core Features of Godly Love that’s now been developed in you—and by utilizing ‘catalyst-type’ information (especially in the form of some *sayings*), you received instruction (and a doctrinal “exercise”) in connection with making wise & sound judgments in your relationships and dealings with all men in general.

- Ultimately operating upon the chief *saying* of godly judgment: *Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself*—and the Main Op. Princ.: *Love worketh no ill to his neighbour*

- By the way—that *saying* (*Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself*) - that DOESN'T mean that you are to love others **AS you love yourself** (which is the way this is often taken)!

- Truth is, if that's what you're to do, then your love toward others is going to be very **instable, inconsistent, and vacillating**—because, if there's no solid norms and standards for this, then your love for others will do nothing more than reflect your own instabilities and inconsistencies—and will be mere 'works of the flesh.'

- For example, one moment you might be in a 'dream world' of rather unreal and inflated self-love ... so are you then supposed to live in a 'dream world' regarding other people?

- Or, you might have done something dumb/stupid that you are 'kicking yourself' about and loathing yourself about ... so are you then supposed to loath your neighbour and boot him in the rear, like you've been doing to yourself??

- NO, of course not—loving your neighbour **as *thyself*** points to the solid, stable, consistent and godly norms and standards of Godly Love as it has been developed within your inner man by means of the doctrine of Romans 12:3-13:7 (being written upon the fleshy tables of your heart)!

- Therefore this keeps the outworking of this *saying* on a GRACE basis—because it's being done **by grace** (by all that God has made you to be in Christ, plus the doctrine God has given you to put your sanctified position in Christ into practice) **through faith** (by believing what that doctrine says—by positively and properly responding to it)!

- So then, due to the possibility of getting yourself (and your time) 'stretched to thin' (so to speak) by the many things that you could involve yourself with in connection with 'working no ill to your neighbour' - there is, therefore, a natural need for our Father to immediately confront us with the issue of **TIME**—both your Personal Time, and the Time & Timing of the particular program, dispensation, (or business) you are engaged in with your Father.

- And Romans 13:11-14 deals with the 2nd Component of our

instruction of Judgment—which is the issue of making wise and godly sonship decisions in connection with the use of our TIME.

- And the 1st aspect of Time deals with our Personal Time—which is all of (:11).

And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep: for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed.

- And the 1st Part of that deals with us knowing “What Time It Is” (Sonship Education Time) - and we have a *saying* that works together with all that we’ve learned so far to make it so that we are going to 1) Not waste time; 2) Find more of it; and 3) Make the best use of it.

Saying: *now it is high time to awake out of sleep*

- Then that is immediately followed by another *saying* that is designed for us to have the godly Thinking about our Personal Time in view of running out of time because this dispensation of grace in which we live could end at any moment—and then, since we are going to be no longer on this earth (that is, our TIME on this earth will be over) - that is supposed to make a particular impact upon our thinking regarding how we spend and utilize our time on this earth.

Saying: *for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed.*

- And we know that the *salvation* Paul speaks of is when we receive the *redemption of our body*—being ‘saved’ from *wrath* (from ever experiencing the Lord’s day of Wrath).

- And that understanding has taken us to having to deal with a little ‘background’ information concerning the end of this dispensation of grace at what we commonly call ‘the rapture’.

- So in our background work so far, we’ve looked at some of the things that we are told about in connection with being *caught up together ... to meet the Lord in the air*.

- We looked at the 3 Signals that end the disp. of grace:
1) A Shout; 2) The Voice of the Archangel; 3) The Trump of God.

- Secondly, we've looked at the Biblical reality of just **what** it is that is that is 'holding back' the Day of Christ (or the Lord's Day of Wrath): *the mystery of iniquity*.

- And with that, just **who** it is that is 'hindering' or 'standing in the way' of the Lord's Day of Wrath and the revealing of Satan's own "man of sin": **the "one new man" of the church, the body of Christ**.

- Now with that understood in a very basic way—I want to take this godly sense of the ending of this "mystery" dispensation of grace, with it's 'holding back' the Lord's Day of Wrath and the "one new man" that it's generating 'hindering' the revealing of the "man of sin" out in that Day of Wrath — I want to take the godly 'pressure' or 'pressing' feeling of that, and connect it to something that we've already been told—that should now cause some things to 'click' in your thinking—and bring about the kind of godly Thinking we should have as we work and ponder this saying: *for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed*.

- Because, the truth is, there SHOULD be some good, godly pressure 'pressing' us to use our time in the wisest possible way as "sons" who really do, 'Know What Time It Is'!!!

- Actually, there's a word that I'm after—one that God Himself uses in connection with all this: FEAR!

- see Romans 11:16-21 — (refer to previous notes: Romans 11, page 45-65)

- The Gentile "fear factor" is a **dispensational fear** concerning the **temporary** nature of this dispensation of Gentile grace.

- The "fear" is that":

- God will bring to an end this dispensation of grace—when He will no longer be operating upon His *goodness, forbearance and longsuffering* —

- and that God will put us Gentiles back into our former "far off" status as twice-dead Gentiles—and that we will no longer be in that place of special treatment that we enjoy today —

- it's a fear in knowing what lies ahead for the nation Israel and the Gentile Nations of the earth when God resumes His program with Israel and commences with His "day of wrath" in the time "To Come" —

- (This is the 'calm before the storm' - this is the greatest opportunity for both Jew and Gentile to be saved—and as that "one new man," to be edified unto godliness as adopted sons of God ... but that gracious opportunity is coming to an END!)

- This dispensational FEAR is designed to give us a particular sonship perspective concerning what TIME it is (and what Time it's NOT) - and this kind of sonship thinking should govern a son's thinking and conduct and labor—and by it, this dispensational fear will prevent the "conceit" and "highmindedness" which seems to dominate most saints thinking who don't appreciate what's going on today—(which leads to operating upon a bunch of false theological systems).

- Today (right now) God's desire is to bring all men to SALVATION, and NOT to judgment! (see I Tim. 2:4)

- HOW THIS "SAYING" WORKS —

- Now when it comes to operating upon that saying—(*for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed*) — a lot of things that that little 'catalyst' produces (as it works with all that we've learned so far) - in connection with having us especially and particularly think about this dispensation of grace coming to an **END**—it primarily causes you to think about the coming Lord's Day of Wrath as God resumes and fulfills His program with Israel—and along with that, some other things are brought to your mind that are to be a part of your godly Thinking as a "son" (judgment-wise) as well:

- It causes you to think about what you were taught back in Romans 5:9-10 (... *we shall be saved from wrath through him ... we shall be saved by his life*) - we, the members of the church, the body of Christ will be saved from ever experiencing God's wrath and the Day of Wrath.

- And from what we were taught in Romans 9-11, it causes you to think that this "mystery" dispensation of Gentile grace is actually the **thing** that is 'holding back' the Lord's Day of Wrath from taking place. (which Paul reminds the Thessalonian saints about)

- And it also causes you to think about being members of the “body of Christ” (the “*one new man*” as we’ll learn later on) and how that this “one body” that we are “in Christ” (Rom. 12:5) is **the one who**, (while we are still on this earth), are “hindering” Satan’s “man of sin” from being revealed. (which, again, is something Paul reminded the Thessalonian saints about) [and is why I say that we would be ‘in the way’ out in the Lord’s Day of Wrath]

- Therefore, but wording it the way God does (*for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed*) - that saying works together with the Wisdom, Justice, Judgment, Discretion, and Godly Love to cause us to think and to respond to **others** (our “neighbour”) just as we were thought about and how we were given the opportunity to respond to Paul’s gospel (the Gospel of Christ given to the apostle Paul in this dispensation of grace) when the opportunity to be saved from God’s wrath is being extended in a time in which God is NOT dealing with men in JUDGMENT and WRATH, but dealing with men in *goodness, forbearance, and longsuffering!*

- And then, from what we learned in Romans 11:16-25—we are NOT supposed to be longing and wishing that the rapture would take place and this dispensation come to an end—rather, we are to FEAR that God would end this dispensation—not, fearing for ourselves, but fearing for the Gentiles being put back into their status of no longer being specially treated by God—and having to go through and experience God’s wrath.

- The picture that God paints (so to speak) is that right now during this dispensation of Gentile grace, the Gentiles have access to the knowledge of God’s righteousness and God’s holiness—even to the point of understanding and appreciating that as members of the body of Christ, we have the privilege of God utilizing US to actually extend His holiness on this Earth (and eventually to the Heavenly Places as well).

- But we’ve already been told about what that Gentile status WAS like before God brought in this disp. of grace—and we are told what the Gentiles will go back to and be involved in doing when God brings this disp. to an end.

- (And this saying causes us to think about that as well) ...

- For the condition or status that the Gentile were in just prior to God suspending His wrath and bringing in a disp. of Gentile grace — (see Rom. 3:9-20— from Romans 3, pages 90-97) [Psa. 53]

- For the condition/status of the Gentiles when this disp. of grace ENDS—(see **Jude**)

- Before moving on to (:12a) and the issue of Dispensational Time & Timing—I want to just bring what we’ve studied over the last several lessons kind of ‘full-circle’ (if you will).

- In view of how this ‘precious commodity’ of our Time can be unwisely spent on foolish “paths” - and in view of how we can just simply get ourselves ‘spread so thin’ (so to speak) that our sonship education **suffers** for it—since we know what Time it is (it’s the time of the dispensation of the grace of God—and it’s the time for our education as sons to take the priority over all other uses of our time) — and most of all, since our Heavenly Father is now bidding us to engage in more aspects of His business and spend more time working together with Him—we have a “saying” to challenge our old thinking and get rid of that, and replace it with the thinking of our Father in regard to how we are going to effectually manage our time as His sons & daughters:

“... now it is high time to awake out of sleep:”

- In other words, it’s now high time to take some of the time we have been spending **away** from our Father’s work, and **give it over** to working more in His business.

- Therefore, we will make some discriminating judgments to
1) **not waste our time** on worthless pursuits; 2) make some priority adjustments to our time in order to **find more time** to spend involved with our Father’s business; and 3) always **make the best use of the time** we have left.

- Then that “saying” is immediately followed by another “saying” that is the natural next “Part” (Part 2) that goes to effectually renewing our mind (our thinking) in connection with our **Personal Time** as we are involved in our sonship education (and our godly edification).

“... for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed.”

- And, rightly so, by saying it the way He does, God is having us think about our *salvation* that has to do with us being saved from the Lord’s Day of Wrath—(which we were told about back in Romans 5).

- Therefore, we looked at the END of this disp. of grace—(the rapture) and those ‘signals’ that will be given when that event takes place—and we looked at the godly FEAR we are to have for God ending the time of Gentile ‘special treatment’ and putting the Gentiles back in their former “wild” and “far off” status.

- And, rightly so, that “saying” is supposed to work with what you’ve already been taught in Wisdom, Justice, and the 1st Component of Judgment (and the Godly Love) - and you’re to think about and respond to others (your neighbour) with a proper sense of urgency—(especially where their salvation is concerned and where their godly edifying is concerned).

- But I believe that there is one more thing (probably more than that) that we need to understand and appreciate about this “saying” - and rather than having ‘others’ in view, it has YOU in view as a “son” in regard to the priority and the importance and the **desire** of getting the REST of your sonship education. (especially entering into this next order of your Father’s business: dealing with the Satanic policy of evil)

- (this is where that godly **desire** to take the Thinking and put it into practice in your Conduct & Behavior really gets a ‘kick’ to it.)

- And a couple of things alert me to this: notice that you’re given that 1st “saying” (*now it is high time to awake out of sleep*) - which exhorts you to dedicate more of the time you spend away from the Father’s ‘work’ to the Father’s ‘work’ - and then you have that colon, (which tells you pause), but that this next thought is supposed to be connected with the previous thought—but you also have this 2nd “saying” beginning with the word “**for**” (which is a “for” of further explanation and further amplification) - and you’ve got another one of those English language style issues where something can be said that, while it’s not a question ... actually ‘begs’ a question.

now it is high time to awake out of sleep:

— WHY? (why do I need to dedicate more time to my sonship education and to my Father's business?) ... well ...

for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed.

— (that's why!)

- In other words, there's something that is supposed to effectually work within YOU (in your Thinking [inner man]) in regard to your own sanctified functional life as son that, by means of its effectual work, generates within you the DESIRE to go on and get this next order of your Father's business operating within you!

- And once again, it all has to do with that word *salvation*—and it being *nearer than when you believed!*

- So the final thing I want to do with this “saying” (again, to bring it kind of ‘full-circle’) is to look at where we were first told about the kind of salvation this is talking about—(which is back in Romans 5) — but this time I want to draw your attention to something fascinating about our salvation from the Lord's Day of Wrath that pertains especially to you as a “son” in this dispensation of grace.

- (because the truth is, if you're saved FROM something, it stands to reason, therefore, that you're also saved TO something!)

- And all I'm after at this point is to just get a general glimpse into what we are “saved” **to be doing** when this dispensation of grace ends. (and it's only general because that's really all I can say about it at this time)

- Rom. 5:1-2, 9-10

- Truth is, when we were first taught about our “hope” for being “saved from wrath” - we were actually taught **more** than simply the fact that when this disp. of grace ends, God will save us from experiencing His wrath.

- But just as (:2) ends, it says, *and rejoice in the hope of the GLORY of God*—in other words, we don't “rejoice” solely in being delivered from the wrath to come—but we “rejoice” in the “glory of God” - and that expression has a future ‘glory’ in view that we're going to receive (more than just a glorified, immortal body)!

- And we know this because as Paul deals with it in detail, he ends up saying in (:9-10), *Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him.* — (and that deals with the fact of it, but Paul then gives some additional information in [:10]) — *For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more, being reconciled, **we shall be saved by his life.***

- If all we needed was assurance of the FACT of being saved from God’s wrath, then all we needed was (:9).

- But we’re given the additional information that *we shall be saved by his LIFE!*

- And therefore, part of our “hope” in connection with the ending of this dispensation of grace—is that, along with being saved from the day of God’s wrath *through* Christ, we are also saved by His LIFE.

- And my understanding is that by saying it that way—we’re to understand that **we are going to actually participate with the Lord Jesus Christ in His “life” from that time on!**

- In other words, we’re going to participate with Christ in the glory of His functional life from the time this dispensation ends, and on.

- And what that implies is that we’re going to participate with Him, even when He has His “Day” — we’re actually going to be involved (and have a roll to play) in what He’s going to do in His “Day” when He begins to shine the light of His “Day” in the heavenly places ... and then eventually, here on this Earth!

- And because of that—(skipping ahead to Rom. 13) — an aspect of our Father’s business is to, right now, (before that “salvation” even comes—before the Lord even begins to have His “Day”), is for us to put on display that **we are ready for it!**

- (And to put on the *armour of light* that’s in keeping with it; and to begin to do some things that are actual ‘precursor’ challenges (so to speak) to the Adversary in connection with what is coming in that “Day”!)

- (That's why we're going to *walk honestly, as IN the day*)

- By the way—it's just this kind of thing that as members of the "one new man" the "new creature" of the church the body of Christ that we are—it's just this kind of provoking and irritating and 'jabbing' at the Adversary and his PoE ... (kind of like saying, Are you ready for what's coming?) ... that adds to our understanding and appreciation for the kind of IMPACT that we have the privilege of making to the heavenly places and to the angels that should give you an even greater appreciation for what is supposed to be taking place when we celebrate the Lord's Table together!!!

- And what we get here in Level I Sonship Education (Wisdom/ Justice/(discretion)/Godly Love/Judgment - [especially this 2nd Component]) is the BASIS for all of the 'skill-sets' that we need in order to participate in the Lord's **functional "life"** and to (as Paul says in I Cor. 6), *judge angels*, and be immediately put to use in the heavenly places as the Lord has His "Day" (when that realm is still in *bondage* and still in *vanity* and still *not clean in his sight [Job 15:15]*).

- This gives us the BASIC TRAINING for the fact that, when this dispensation of grace ends, and our promised *salvation* occurs—we're going to be functioning and participating with the Lord in His functional life from that point on—which involves Him executing His "Day" in the heavenly places—(and getting ready to execute His "Day" on the earth) - and when He begins executing His "Day" (just like the prophets declare—and just like the surrounding context of the passages Paul uses in Romans 9, 10, & 11), He begins to emanate His **LIGHT**—and as He begins to emanate His "light," He begins to **dispel** the Adversary's **DARKNESS!** (see Isa. 30:26 for ex.)

- And that first of all takes place in the heavenly places—and then there's a certain point in the resumption of God's program with Israel on the earth when the light will have been emanated enough in the heavenly places to provide for the Adversary to be removed (which is when that war in heaven takes place and he gets kicked out) —

— and that matches up to Daniel's time schedule (Dan. 8:23-24) in connection with the 'man of sin' on the earth (that Assyrian king of 'fierce countenance') gaining 'mighty power' at which time the Lord's Day begins to take place on the earth.

- And then the Lord will put his methodology into effect to deal with the darkness on the earth—and He'll begin to emanate the light on earth (beginning with His own members of the Remnant of Israel—and they begin to function as “the light of the world”).

- Now when I talk about the issue of our being “*saved by his life*” (Rom. 5:10) and our participation in the Lord’s functional life—let’s make sure that we don’t MIS-understand what I’m after here—

- First, I’m NOT saying that the Lord’s functional life doesn’t begin to operate until some time in the future—because that’s not true—He has been operating in functional life all along, and is doing so right now.

- Second, I’m NOT saying that it’s only when the end of this dispensation of grace takes place that we begin to participate in the Lord’s functional life—because, the truth is, that’s what our godly sonship edification does—it allows for us to participate in the Lord’s functional life right now, and for His *life* to be put on display in the details of our life (as we are conformed to the image of Christ) - [which is how both men and angels can “see” the life of the Lord today].

- So what I’m after is—we are, indeed, participating in the Lord’s functional life to certain degrees right now—BUT, you’re NOT participating in His functional life **out in “His Day”!**

- (and that’s what Romans 5 and 13 is talking about!)

- When Paul says in Romans 5:10, *we shall be saved by his life* ... (What “life”???) ... well, there’s a future life that you’re going to be *saved* by—there’s a **future** life that the Lord Jesus Christ is NOT living right now ... **and that’s the “life” of His “Day”!**

- Let’s note the ‘functional life’ of the Lord’s “Day” —

- (see **Psalm 110:1-7 [1:]**)

- This psalm describes the ‘functional life’ of the Lord’s Day.

- And just to get the frame of reference for when (on the Time Line) this was all set and ready to go ... (**Acts 2:32-36**)

- When the Lord Jesus Christ ascended up to the Father and sat down at the Father's right hand *until his foes are made his footstool*—that's the 'functional life' of the Lord's Day!

- The Lord was sitting at the Father's right hand ... waiting for the next aspect of His functional life to begin.

- And that's exactly what was getting ready to take place in Acts 2—and Peter was well aware of it!

- And when Stephen saw the Lord standing at the Father's right hand, (in Acts 7) - then just as it was told back in the prophets, He was going to then begin His functional life in connection with all the power that His Father had given to Him for having His Day.

- (see Matt. 28:18)

- Notice that at the end of the Lord's earthly ministry, before He ascended back up to the Father, He told the apostles that 'all power in heaven and earth' had been given to Him!

- But even though He had "all power in heaven and in earth", the truth is, He wasn't executing any of that power at that time!

- There's a particular "life" of the Lord Jesus Christ that the Prophets speak about that is *given* to Him following His successful performance of the 1st Mandate of the Davidic Covenant (Redeemer).

- And when the Lord Jesus Christ came back from the dead—God the Father **gave** it to Him! (gave that "life" to Him)

- Come back once again to Acts 2—(when Peter was explaining what all went on with Jesus Christ going back to the Father [Acts 1], and what was going on, and beginning to take place once the day of Pentecost *was fully come*) — Peter is going to quote from two Psalms that David wrote as a **prophet**.

- We noted before that Peter quotes from the 110th Psalm—but that's the second Psalm he quotes from.

- The first Psalm Peter quotes from is the 16th Psalm. (read Psalm 16) [esp. :8-11] - David is speaking about the resurrection of the Lord from the dead (and Peter is setting that issue before the men of Judaea & Jerusalem).

- But notice (:11 of Psa. 16) - *Thou wilt shew me the path of life: in thy presence is fulness of joy; at thy **right hand** there are pleasures for evermore.*

- So my understanding is that the Lord Jesus Christ comes back from the dead (His soul was not left in hell—His body was not allowed to see corruption) - He's then raised from the dead—and then His Father shows Him “the path of life” ... The Father says to the Son, Here's your functional life from now on—here's the path you're going to walk.

... But before you start walking it, Son, come back and sit down at my right hand until I make your foes your footstool!

- Then when the time is ready to make His foes His footstool—the Father will tell the Son to ‘stand up’ - and when He stands up, He'll then begin to walk the ‘path of life’!

- So—when we're told in Romans 5:10 that we are going to be *saved by his life* — we're going to be saved from the wrath to come, because when God ends this dispensation of grace, the Lord Jesus Christ begins walking His ‘path of life’!

- And the truth is—the 1st Part of that ‘path’ was never prophesied about and never spoken about—it's part of the “mystery” given to the apostle Paul.

- Because the 1st Part of that ‘path’ involves coming into the air of this earth and gathering the Lord's “new creature” of the members of the church, the body of Christ unto Himself and taking them into the heavenly places.

- Then He goes back to the very first point that was actually prophesied about that ‘path’ that He's going to walk.

- And if my understanding is correct—He takes us with Him! and we go with Him on that ‘path’!

- And before that ‘path’ ever comes to this earth—it runs all throughout the heavenly places. (liberating it)

- And as He goes on that path—He begins to shine—and in accordance with God's perfect plan & perfect timing: at the end of that path (just before it takes its final turn toward this

earth (at the end of the Time Schedule for the final installment in Israel's program) - He'll be shining so bright, that the final judgment (just before He returns) will be to plunge the earth into total darkness!

- And then (look at Malachi 4:2) - then He, as the ***S-U-N of righteousness*** shines forth—and then He will do what Zech. 13 goes on to describe.

- So once again, Romans 13:11b—***for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed.*** — and those 10 words form a very powerful “saying” that takes all that we've been taught up to this point and acts as a catalyst to give us capacity and ability to make some keen and insightful judgments in connection with our Personal Time.

- And since this is a “saying” - there are some Main Operating Principles that should have come out of it—(or that should have occurred to you by now [given the huge amount of time we've spent on it]) ... so what are some Principles that come out of this saying?

1) You could die at any moment.

2) The dispensation of grace could end at any moment.

- The big issue is, there is no guarantee of time—you don't know how much time you have left!

3) Be not highminded, but fear. (others [the lost] in view)

4) Prepare to function in “his life” that saves you from the Lord's Day of Wrath. (you in view)

- The big issue here is wisely spending your time on the worthwhile pursuit of witnessing to the lost, and godly edification.

- So we have the Godly Thinking about our Personal Time in regard to the 2nd Component of receiving the instruction of Judgment:

11 And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep: for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed.

- **QUESTIONS? COMMENTS?**

- Has your perspective changed in the way you view “time”?
- How would you use this saying to make godly judgments?
 - In view of the 1st Component of Judgment (the Godly Love that’s been developed within you being expressed to others; that saying, *Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself*, and *Love worketh no ill to your neighbour*) — how do the next 2 sayings in (:11) work to allow for you to make godly judgments in connection with your Personal Time?
 - And what does that 2nd saying (*for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed*) bring to bear upon you, that makes it so you are making judgments about time like your Father does?
- For one thing—that 2nd saying of (:11) establishes within you a sense of the “highness” or the high priority that your sonship education takes over everything else you do—(granted, you all have responsibilities, and this is not saying that you should ever ‘shirk’ those responsibilities). [this builds upon the priority you already have]
- Because you know that your Father is preparing you (through the effectual working of this curriculum for your sonship education) to participate in the functional “life” of the Lord Jesus Christ when He begins to execute His ‘path of life’ in the Lord’s Day of Wrath!
 - And with that time being “*nearer than when we believed*”, being a REALITY to you (again, not just that this disp. of grace may come to an end soon [true as that is]), but primarily, what’s to be in your mind is that, Your active participation with the functional life of the Lord Jesus Christ as He has His “Day” is near (nearer than yesterday) - and the preparation for that is something you want to invest your time in (because it’s going to be so grand/glorious)!
 - Truth is, this is the beginning of forming within you the judgmental skill-sets that will be expressed by Paul later on in I Corinthians [10:23] when he says, *all things are lawful for me, but all things are not expedient*—(that’s terminology about making judgments—there’s a bunch of things that you have the liberty to do, but not all of them are in your best

interest for the goals you have in view— the issue of ‘expediency’ is the idea of something that is going to expedite the process of getting where you want to go; it’s going to help you get to your objective of what you value/esteem.)

- In view of *knowing the time*, if that saying, *now it is high time to awake out of sleep*, and then that saying coupled with the next saying, *for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed*—if those sayings have done their effectual work to make that a living reality within you—then your mind (your godly thinking) is now in a position to get the next saying (*The night is far spent, the day is at hand*) — and those sayings together will, by their effectual work, make it so that your DESIRE is to do just what the godly Conduct & Behavior tells you to do: *let us **therefore** cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light. Let us walk honestly, as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying.*

- And of course, the Godly Thinking combined with the godly Conduct & Behavior will then effectually work to make it so that your DESIRE is to do just what the Godly Labor tells you to do: *put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof.*

- None of that Godly Conduct/Behavior or Godly Labor is possible unless these sayings that form the Godly Thinking are doing their job!

- And their job is to primarily make it so that you are willing to get into another aspect of your Father’s business—which is entering into the “battle” with the Adversary & his PoE.

- And though this passage is going to have use and implications for making judgments for the rest of your life—it’s first judgment that it allows you to make is, that you, indeed, want to take what you’ve learned and to now enter into the contention that your Father has with His adversary.

- And that’s one of the big reasons why the issue of *now is our salvation nearer than when we believed* bears upon your thinking—because as the Lord begins to execute His functional life in His “Day” - the next thing He’s going to do in that life (after He takes us to be with Him), is to start to purge the heavenly places (intelligencia/power/gov. structure)

... and to settle the contention with His adversary in the realm that we're going to occupy.

- And it's our recognition of this, and the "nearness" of this, and our participation in this—and the glory and excitement of participating in that—that's supposed to drive you to say, Of course, I want to "put on the armour", Of course, I want to serve notice that I'm ready to begin the 'soldering'!

- (Pro. 6:6-11—the sluggard son)

- The 2nd Major Aspect of the Godly Thinking in this 2nd Component of our instruction of judgment: (The issue of making godly judgments in the our use of Time and how we spend it) — **DISPENSATIONAL TIME/THE TIMING OF THIS DISPENSATION OF GRACE.**

- This is the 3rd and final "saying" that comprises our Godly Thinking—that challenges our old, natural thinking and uproots it and replaces it with the way God Himself thinks (*renewing our mind*).

- And in this case, it's godly thinking in connection with both "*knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep*" and "*for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed*" - and with those 2 "sayings" effectually working within you, you're now ready for what God has been driving at all along ...

12 The night is far spent, the day is at hand:

- Once again, because this is put in a "saying" form, it's not just an isolated phrase or 'slogan' that has no context—it's not just a quaint 'turn of a phrase' that's merely supposed to be used to goad you into doing something—(as if the words *the night* and *the day* are indefinite and indefinable or indescribable) —

— rather, those words and this saying is supposed to 'click' with and work with what you've already been taught from Romans 1 through 13:7 (and especially with what you were taught in Romans 9-11 about the change that God made in suspending His program with Israel and bringing in this "mystery" dispensation of Gentile grace, and then ending this dispensation of grace and resuming and fulfilling His prophesied program with Israel).

- And now the time has arrived for us to now make use of some information (especially in Rom. 9-11 where we got our dispensational ‘feet’ on the ground [so to speak]) - knowing who we are, and what we are a part of, and what we’re NOT a part of) — and now the time has come in our sonship education, to take a particular part of that information, and to be able to APPLY it to an aspect of our capacity (that we now have), to Labor with God in what He’s doing!

- In other words—when we deal with (:12, 13, and 14), we’re confronted with the fact that we’re now going to be in the position to enter into an aspect of our Father’s business that we have never been in before.

- As noted before, it’s by the effectual working of our sonship education (especially from Romans 12:3-13:10) that has given us that capacity!

- And this aspect of our Father’s business is a MAJOR aspect of His business with us (the body of Christ) in this disp. of grace.

- In fact, it’s such a BIG DEAL (and major issue), that the truth is, we’re going to be participating in it from now on!

- It’s an Operation of our Father’s business that won’t be just temporary—or fade away—or is just a compartmentalized doctrine that gets put on the shelf of your soul to collect dust.

- Actually, our entire sonship, godly edification has been leading up to this all along—and once we do begin participating in it, we’ll do so for the remainder of our life here on earth (until we either die, or God ends this disp. of grace).

- And hopefully, you can see how that, if this is an ongoing aspect of our sonship lives, then we’re going to have to be making ongoing and continuous JUDGMENTS in connection with this issue, from here on in.

- And of course, this major aspect (or Major Operation) of our Father’s business that we now get the privilege of participating in is: ENGAGING THE SATANIC POLICY OF EVIL. (and the remaining balance of your life and education as your Father’s “son/daughter” will have to do with this battle!)

- Note the difference between the Satanic **PLAN** of Evil & **POLICY** of Evil—

- **PLAN**—(basically, Isa. 14:14 [Gen. 14:18-19])

- The **POLICY** of Evil (for this disp.) endeavors to make a ‘closed issue’ out of the ‘open shew’ God has made out of Satan and his cohorts. (basically, I Cor. 11:26; Col. 2:15) [to keep the “revelation of the mystery” a mystery!]

- Now when you look out over the rest of the curriculum for our sonship education (the epistles of the apostle Paul) - you do, in fact, encounter a whole bunch of terminology that has to do with the Adversary’s policy of evil —

- Ex., *the wiles of the devil—wrestling against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against **spiritual** wickedness in high places—fiery darts of the wicked—Satan’s devices—his subtility—being beguiled (2 Cor.) and bewitched (Gal.) by him—being falsely persuaded—being taken in by enticing words—being spoiled and deceived—we’re told about Satan’s ministers in disguise—counterfeit signs—seducing ***spirits*** and doctrines of devils—false apostles—another ***spirit***—seducers—forms of godliness—winds of doctrine—sleight of men and cunning craftiness—giving place to the devil—turning aside after Satan—being taken in by the snare of the devil—and giving Satan opportunity to speak reproachfully.*

- All this, and more, is the environment in which we are called to put our functional, sanctified life “in Christ” into practice and to put on display the righteousness, holiness, light, and glory of God.

- But we’ve been told that this is the battle we will face:

- (see our ‘enemies’ in Rom. 8:33, 34, & 35)

- The ultimate goal of Satan’s policy of evil against us is to satisfy his seething hatred of being put to open shame by seeing that “*the preaching of Jesus Christ according to the revelation of the mystery which was kept secret since the world began*” is SILENCED from the pulpits of Bible teachers! (or at least mingled up and confused with God’s program with Israel!)

- This battle we're entering into (this warfare) is a **SPIRITUAL** warfare!

- And matters of the *spirit* are going to be more and more of an issue as we go on! (since competing wisdom is going to make it's appeal to our mind/spirit first and foremost!)

- (review the "spiritual" issue from Rom. 7:14—
[Rom. 7, pg. 228-233])

- The point is—something that is said to be "spiritual" :

- 1) Gets into your head and affects your MIND;
- 2) Has the **power** to MOTIVATE you;
- 3) Is ultimately designed to CHANGE YOU!

- And while we've mostly appreciated the term "*spiritual*" in connection with the Law, (and in terms of something good or godly) - since the nature of the battle that we're about to enter into is largely of a "spiritual" nature, I just wanted to make sure that we realize that just as something that can be described as "spiritual" in a good sense (for ex., by minding the things of the Spirit, being *spiritually minded*) having these 3 basic components to the issue of something that is *spiritual* — well, so too you need to recognize that something that can be described as "spiritual" (or as a "spirit") in a BAD sense has these same 3 basic components as well! (for ex., *spiritual wickedness in high places; seducing spirits; another spirit; the spirit of fear*)

- And we'll deal with this more as we go down through the passage (especially in connection with the "*works of darkness*").

- Now you when you read in (:12), "***The night is far spent, the day is at hand:***" - you can tell that you're still dealing with the issue of TIME—but the **kind** of time is obviously a bit different than the kind of TIME dealt with in (:11).

- My understanding is that the kind of time God is having the apostle Paul deal with in (:12) is NOT "Personal Time" - that is, it's not what is going on in your 24 hour days, and 7 days a week type thing.

- The "*night*" and the "*day*" is NOT referring to a 24 hour day.

- Rather, the kind of TIME being spoken about here is actually what we've called **DISPENSATIONAL TIMING**.

- Truth is, if you've paid attention from Genesis through the book of Acts, you should understand and appreciate that the terms "*The night*" and "*the day*" (as they are being used in this context) are **dispensational** terms that apply to God's program with Israel.

- And although those expressions are terminology that comes out of Israel's program, they are critical for us to appreciate when it comes to the TIMING of this dispensation of grace in which we live—and will ultimately have a bearing upon the judgments we make in regards to TIME and how we wisely spend it!

- And as we will see, even though these terms are most easily recognized as terms that apply to God's program with Israel—you have to also recognize that not only did Satan's PoE against Israel produce *the night* and will operate in *the day* of the Lord's wrath ... but there's a whole other side of it that pertains to how Satan utilized the Gentiles and Gentile ungodliness to corrupt & nearly destroy Israel!

- Now before we develop this in detail, let's just run some verses that give us a very basic 'frame of reference' (just to get the ball rolling).

- "*the day*" = The Lord's Day of Wrath

- (Let's just document that this is an expression God uses to describe the final installment of Israel's 5th CoP) [none of this is 'exhaustive'!]

- Job actually mentions it in a couple of passages (Job 20:28; 21:30) [don't read]

- Psalm 110:5

- Isaiah 13:6-13 (:9; :13)

- Zephaniah 1:14-18

- Revelation 6:12-17 (:17)

- "*The night*" (also carries with it the "darkness" concept—and is most easily seen in God's program with Israel ... but for now, let me just say that it's not exclusive to it!)

- Isaiah 8:19-22

- Micah 3:5-7

- John 1:1-5

- Now when I say that my understanding is that when the apostle Paul brings up the issue of *The night* and *the day* in (:12) - that those are **dispensational terms** that apply to God's program with Israel—I say that (and am persuaded of that) because of the CONTEXT in which those terms sit!

- It would be easy to just take (:12) alone (lifted out of its surrounding context) and say, Well, the terms “*night*” and “*day*” are just simply up for one's opinion—and it could be that all they are, are simply vague euphemisms, being used to kind of goad you to ‘get serious’ about your Christian life! (*‘The night is far spent, the day is at hand,’* so you better get with the program and get going, or else what you could get done today won't get done! type thing)

- But when you appreciate that this is actually the last of 3 ‘sayings’ that are designed to get Godly Thinking going in your inner man—by means of the context of those first 2 ‘sayings’, they **won't** allow for that kind of interpretation!

- “*Knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep:*” — and — “*for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed*” — the effectual working of those 2 sayings has set your mind/thinking on a particular path:

1) It's now the time for your sonship education to take place in this present dispensation of Gentile grace in which we live—and it's time to dedicate more time to working with our Heavenly Father in what He's doing now in this disp. of grace.

2) On top of that, we know that our opportunity to be prepared to participate in the “life” of the Lord Jesus Christ when He has His “day” (and when we experience our *salvation* from the Lord's day of wrath) is fleeting—that is, it's *nearer than when we believed*—and we could either die at any moment, or God could end this dispensation of grace at any moment.

- So it's in that vein of thinking or context (a dispensational context) that this next ‘saying’ occurs!

- Therefore your mind is now prompted and positioned to think dispensationally in this passage—and Paul hasn't shifted gears here— so therefore when you read, *The night is far spent, the day is at hand* - you're prompted to think of those two terms (*the night*, and *the day*) **in a dispensational framework**.

- And if you've been paying attention, you would immediately recall/recognize those terms as descriptive of some things that God has already said about:

1) The time in which He interrupted and suspended His program with Israel and **began** "*this mystery*" dispensation of His grace which He has kept hid and kept a mystery since the world began.

2) The time in which God will **end** this dispensation of grace and resume & fulfill His program and dealings with Israel in connection with the repossession of this earth.

- Therefore, (once again), those 2 expressions (*the night*, and *the day*) are dispensational terms that apply to God's program with Israel—and more than that, they are terms that apply specifically to the time or the TIMING in which God suspended His program with Israel, and when He will resume and fulfill His program with Israel.

- In other words, they are the 'bookends' (so to speak) of this present dispensation of grace in which we live!

- So you're really not supposed to read that first part of (:12) and wonder what in the world is Paul talking about—rather, there's some background information that we *should* already have gotten by the time you get here, that lets you know that those expressions are dealing with the TIMING of this dispensation of grace.

- And right now in our sonship education—as this is brought to our thinking—and is made to be one of the components of our godly thinking—we're now in a position to be able to think some very special and specific things about the dispensational timing of this disp. of grace.

- And not only does the expression *the night is far spent, the day is at hand* indicate it—but by the rest of what this passage says (:12b-14)...

... [*works of darkness*, putting on *the armour of light* and the 6 sinful things mentioned, etc.] it's also apparent that what we're dealing with here is the Adversary and his cohorts, and their Policy of Evil.

- And the issue is that we now get to enter into an aspect of our Father's business with Him in which we get to **contend** with the Adversary's Policy of Evil in a direct (and even provocative type manner), to God's honor & glory!

- The truth is—what we're after here is to gain a particular **viewpoint** and **perspective**—that is, God's own perspective and viewpoint with respect to this dispensation of grace in which we live—(not just the FACT of it [which we've got already]) - but the significance of it as far as the overall outworking of God's plan & purpose is concerned—and the particular point at which it was brought in, and the bearing that has upon the time in which it ends (and the resumption of things takes place). [and what **continues on** throughout this disp. of grace!]

- THE NIGHT

- Now we have a good, basic understanding and appreciation for the outworking of God's plan & purpose to contend with the Adversary in order to prove once and for all who really is the Most High God, Possessor of Heaven & Earth (which allows for us to properly rightly divide the word of truth).

- (brief explanation—TP, BN, TC—Acts 9, Trib., etc.)

- When it comes to that expression, *The night*, there's a great deal to understand about that—but first and foremost, since that expression indicates what state things were in when God interrupted/suspended His program w/ Israel, we need to appreciate that when that time arrived, a CRISIS had been reached whereby all things were set for God to pour out and have His day of wrath on this earth! (and is seen by what happens to Stephen in Acts 7)!

- In fact, not just 1 Crisis had been reach, but 2 Crises had been reached!

- And the 1st Crisis that had been reached—and the one that is probably most common to think about, and the easiest to grasp is the crisis concerning the nation Israel and the judgment that God was going to bring upon it. ... (we'll just briefly note that)

- Genesis 12:6
- 13:7
- 13:10-13 — (“Sodom” = burning—1st used in 10:19)
- 13:17 — (Abram’s gesture of possession)
- 14:17-24 (immediately gets caught up in the battles of the land—Lot gets taken)
- Melchizedek = King of +R; King of “Salem” (Peace)
- 15: Abram’s salvation—bloody lane
- 18-19: Destruction of Sodom & Gomorrah

- Jacob (Rachel/Leah & Laban)

- 31:19 — (1st use of “images”)
- 31:30 — (2nd use of “gods”; 1st use 3:5!)
- 35:1-5

- Note 1 other thing in **Exodus 32:1-4**

- This is the “molten calf” incident—and it’s commonly thought of that Aaron fashioned this idol (which he indeed did), but that it was just an idol or god (singular) [in the movies, anyway] — but notice what the people of Israel said about it: ***These be thy gods (plural), O Israel, which brought the up out of the land of Egypt.***

- There’s a lot of fascinating things to deal with here—but for now, let’s just identify the idol or god that this “molten calf” is supposed to be associated with.

- Psalm 106:19-22 (:19-20)

- Here you have identified that the “calf” was the calf of an “ox” - and my understanding is that the image of an ox was the image of the god of **Assyria!** — (it’s commonly thought of that the ox was an idol of Egypt)

- The “molten calf” was an idol directly associated with Assyria!

- This is a huge issue because of the significance of Assyria to Satan himself—because Assyria is going to be a major issue in his plans to retain possession of the earth—which is why it was such a great sin—so much so that God was going to wipe them all out and start again with just Moses!

- And what Israel had actually begun to do here is to enter into becoming Satan’s lawful captives **all over again**—and becoming neutralized and unfit for God’s use of them to repossess the earth and establish His kingdom on it.

- And when Israel worshipped the “molten calf” and acknowledge that **it** was what brought them out of the land of Egypt—they were basically acknowledging that Satan had delivered them, and willingly enter into fellowship with him!

- Being a “molten” image, it came from **fire**—and being a “calf” it therefore had to have been given birth by some ‘parent ox’, i.e., the god of Assyria—therefore, by recognizing both the “calf” and the ‘parent god’ - that’s why the people said, “These by thy gods, O Israel.”

- You can even go further with this issue because if Israel accepted this Assyrian “calf” as their god PLUS its ‘parent god’ - then basically, they were saying that this offspring of the parent god has SAVED them from their bondage in Egypt, and would ultimately lead them to the god from which it was originally born! (hello Canaanites, Assyria, and Satan himself!)

- Now, therefore, when you look at the nation Israel (and God’s program with Israel) - in connection with the way in which the Satanic Policy of Evil dealt with them—WHAT IS THE DESIRED EFFECT?

- (to **destroy one relationship** [their relationship with the One True God {Jehovah}] — and then to pave the way for establishing another relationship with another “god” [the Assyrian/Antichrist])!

- Notice the progression of the attacks of the SPOE that go hand-in-hand with Israel going under the 5 courses of punishment:

- Judges 2:1-5, 11-16 (1st CoP)

- Note in the 3rd CoP (see Rom. 9, pg. 193, 194—contrary)

- Hosea 1:1-9

- Now as I say, when you get to the event of the stoning of Stephen—my understanding is that a particular CRISIS had been reached—in fact there are 2 CRISES that are reached:

- 1) with Israel
- 2) with the World At-Large

- Now before we deal with this any further—I just want to point out that we have actually been alerted to these crises before we ever got to Romans 13:12 and the saying, *The night is far spent, the day is at hand*.

- **SETTING THE STAGE FOR “THE NIGHT”** (picking up some doctrinal ‘threads’ that will help us greatly to intelligently understand and appreciate this thing called “*the night*”).

- Romans 3:9-20 (Iniquity of the Gentiles and the Iniquity of the Jews.)

- Although the apostle Paul sets forth the Gentile Iniquity first (and rightly so) - since we’ve already dealt with this (though it’s been many years ago) - I want to deal look at the issue of Jewish Iniquity first. (see Rom. 3 notes—pg., 98-102)

- (Rom. 3:13-18) - (see definition of “Iniquity”)

- And as I say—my understanding is that the iniquity of the Jews came to a ‘head’ (or reached a crisis) at the time in which Stephen was stoned to death in Acts 7.

- (see Acts 7:37-43 — *Moloch* = the god of the Ammonites
[fire sacrifice & sexual orgies])

- Note the issue of IDOLATRY—and Israel’s idolatry goes right back to (and centers around, primarily), a false god called BAAL! (**see Rom. 11:4**)

- (see additional notes on LORD/BAAL in word studies file)

- And lest you think that idolatry is only an issue that pertains to Israel’s program—think again

- See 1 Cor. 10:1-11 (an Essential Doctrine: Godly Sanctification)
(:14)

- cp., Col. 3:5-7 (:5)

- cp. Rom. 13:9—Godly Love & Charity provides for the capacity/power to NOT be victimized by the SPOE (Strange Woman)

- also—see more in connection with Israel’s *“iniquity”* :

- Isa. 1:1-4;
5:11-23 (:18)

- Jer. 13:1-17

- Jer. 36:27-31

- Now, let’s note from Romans 3, the issue of GENTILE INIQUITY.

- (see notes from Rom. 3—pg. 90-96)

- also note in connection with the Gentiles status of iniquity, that they are partakers of and wrapped up in gross “darkness” and “night” —

Acts 26:16-18; 2 Cor. 6:14-18 (:14-15); Eph. 5:8-11;
Col. 1:12-13; 1 Thes. 5:4-8

- Now my point in all this is just to underscore the fact that, just like the Jews (Israel) - the Gentiles had reached the status of INIQUITY in God’s sight—and therefore, just as Romans 1-3 sets forth, they, too, had become WORTHY of God’s wrath. (meaning, that when God’s wrath gets poured out upon the Gentiles (the world at-large), just like the vain, apostate, religious element of Israel—God’s wrath will be **justly deserved**—it will be **holy, righteous, and just WRATH!**)

- Ok—let’s set that little ‘warm-up’ exercise aside for now and turn our attention to the issue at hand in Romans 13:12a — *“The night is far spent, the day is at hand:”*

- DISPENSATIONAL TIME & TIMING.

- My understanding is that (:12a) is a powerful *saying* with respect to Dispensational Timing that needs to be operating within our mind and is to now take up residence within our mind—and therefore provide us with the capacity to **think properly** about some very particular things that we see going on around us, and that we need to have a particular response to, based upon that Godly Thinking.

- By the effectual working of this *saying* of (:12a) (the Godly Thinking) ... we're going to encounter some particular godly thinking about **Disp. Timing** that we've NOT thought about up to this point—it's designed to produce a CHANGE in our understanding and comprehension of Dispensational Time & Timing that is then designed to produce within us a further CHANGE in our Con. & Beh., ... MORE than what has already taken place so far in our sonship edification.

- And that CHANGE in our godly Con. & Beh. particularly has to do with what Paul calls, "*the works of darkness*" — and that Godly Thinking about Disp. Timing is going to effectually work in order to make us think about the *works of darkness* in a particular way that's going to make it so that **by** our Con. & Beh., we want to 'cast those things off' - and in their place (in a sense), *put on the armour of light!*

- And all of that is driving us toward finally Laboring in a new and particular aspect of our Father's business that we have not been laboring in up until now (because until now, we didn't have the understanding or appreciation of it, and we didn't have the resources available to us in order to do the Labor)!

- GETTING OUR TERMS UNDERSTOOD PROPERLY: DISPENSATIONAL TIME / DISPENSATIONAL TIMING

- DISPENSATIONAL TIME—truth is, both of the previous sayings in (:11— *knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep* — and — *for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed*) have led our thinking into thinking about dispensational **time**—and now this final saying of the Godly Thinking (*The night is far spent, the day is at hand:*) all that much more has us focus upon the TIME of this unique and formerly kept secret (kept hidden as a "mystery") dispensation of grace.

- And basically, when I talk about "Dispensational Time", I'm talking about the time of this dispensation of Gentile grace in which we live.

- (see the Time Line Chart— "Time Past" — "But Now" — "To Come")

- And although this is something we're already very familiar with—this is being brought back to your attention here in order to make a major ADVANCE to your understanding and appreciation for the Dispensational TIME that you find yourself in right now. (something many Christians today are not even aware of!)

- Now, while Dispensational Time may be well understood by us, and while we are, in fact, going to spend the most amount of time dealing with Dispensational Timing—the truth is, Dispensational Time is CRITICALLY IMPORTANT and cannot (and must not) be taken lightly at this point. (or for granted)

- The text and the context addresses it and deals with it—and our sonship education is bringing it up in order for us to make some **advances** in our thinking about it—so rather than just simply brushing it aside or giving it scant mention—I want to underscore the critical importance of the TIME of this disp. of grace in which we live.

- There are times in God's word (or points in the sonship curriculum) that gives you the opportunity to cover (or look back upon) some basic and familiar information - that allows for us as an assembly (and as a body) to kind of catch everyone up (so to speak) on some basic comprehension of God's word.

- And if you don't know what TIME it is—if you don't know what TIME or what program or dispensation you're in—to put it the way God has the apostle Paul put it, if you're not *rightly dividing the word of truth*—then you are going to end up being *ashamed* for making a mess out of God's word as well as your own Christian life—(so many Christians today are doing just that—by trying to keep the 10 commandments; living the Sermon On the Mount; the “beatitudes”, etc.)

- Our old “Dispensational Chart” that we're so familiar with—what that chart actually represents is the issue of Dispensational TIME—we live in the dispensation of the grace of God in connection with the passage of time, from back when God first created, and on until He concludes His plans and purposes for His creation.

- But that's NOT what I mean when I'm talking about Dispensational TIMING.

- That expression, *The night is far spent, the day is at hand*—that takes into consideration that we ARE (right now) living in the disp. of grace—and that that's what is going on right now in God's program and in His intents & purposes and designs and so forth.

- But that expression is NOT referring so much TO this disp. of grace — rather, that expression is referring more precisely to the TIMING of this disp. of grace.

- And really, it's referring to something that we're expected to understand & appreciate about the timing of this disp. of grace with respect to, WHEN it was brought in; and WHAT IS going to take place when it concludes—

... moreover, it expects you to have an understanding and appreciation for some specific things that were going on BEFORE the disp. of grace was brought in and how those things end up receiving their COMPLETION once this disp. of grace ends.

- So when we're talking about Dispensational TIMING—we're going to be particularly interested in God's own TIMING as to just when He interrupted and suspended His program with Israel—(more than simply Acts 9 and the raising up of the apostle Paul as a brand new apostle to us Gentiles) - but more specifically, what was going on in this world and with the evolution of man's ungodliness and the Satanic Policy of Evil when God brought in this disp. of grace — (not just that God's program with Israel was in effect) - but what God's viewpoint was in connection with this world; and what He was fully ready and prepared to do in connection with the world at the point when He suspended His program w/ Israel and brought this disp. of grace in.

- And then (secondly) we're talking about the **point** when God **concludes** this disp. of grace—and what God will be ready and prepared to do and enact and resume doing and act upon, that He did NOT act upon and did NOT do because He instead brought the disp. of grace in.

- In other words, this disp. of grace in which we live came in at a very **specific point in time** (that's the issue of TIMING we're after) in the overall outworking of what God was doing in regard to His plan and purpose for His creation as a whole (the Earth AND the Heavenly Pl.)

- Actually, there's many reasons why God brought in the disp. of grace when He did (and Israel's failure isn't one of them—that's the erroneous doctrine that many Christians operate upon—[that we are 'assumers' of Israel's program; or we are 'spiritual' Israel]) — for example, there are reasons why God didn't bring it in in David's day; or Isaiah's day; or in Daniel's day; or when the earthly ministry of the Lord Jesus Christ was taking place; or on the day of Christ's resurrection from the dead; or on the day of Pentecost!

- And I know we can say, Well, God had Israel's program in effect and there were a bunch of things that had to take place in it—which is all perfectly true) —

... but in view of what it says in Rom. 13:12a, when it says, *The night is far spent, the day is at hand:* — that actually is designed to cause us to think about something that we were confronted with, back in Romans 9, 10, and 11 when we received our initial, fundamental, foundational, dispensational orientation & establishment to what God is doing in His overall plan & purpose—and to the present disp. of God's grace in which we live today.

- And back in Romans 9, 10, and 11—we were given some information with respect to the **BACKDROP** to this disp. of grace—we were given some information with respect to the fact that when God suspended His program w/ Israel and brought this disp. of grace into effect, He not only did it at a particular time as far as Israel's program is concerned; but He also did it at a particular time **as far as the evolution of the world's ungodliness was concerned!**

- Therefore, this disp. of grace has a very particular BACKDROP to it—a very particular BACKGROUND as well.

- And when this disp. of grace ENDS—that backdrop and that background is such that God is going to pick up in dealing with the WORLD right where He left off dealing with it (just like He's going to pick right up dealing with Israel right where He left off dealing with them)!

- And one of the things you were taught in regard to looking at God's "Time Past" dealings—were NOT ONLY things pertaining to Israel; but also things as they pertain to the WORLD At-Large!

- And I say that to you (and underscore that issue) because when we talk/think about things dispensationally, (the “Time Past” “But Now” “To Come” breakdown of the outworking of God’s plan & purpose; and the ‘right division’ of God’s word in accordance with it) we have a tendency to naturally focus upon the fact that in God’s “Time Past” program, it’s His program with ISRAEL that’s in effect (which is perfectly true) — and then when we talk about what’s “To Come” when this disp. of grace is over, that it’s ISRAEL’S program that gets resumed and fulfilled (which, again, is perfectly true) ...

... but we do need to recognize that God’s program with Israel **HAS THE WORLD IN VIEW AS WELL!**

- The nation of Israel is God’s means of establishing His residence on this earth, and providing for the reconciliation of the **WORLD** unto Himself (and all its principalities and powers) from the usurped dominion of the Adversary.

- And as you think about the things that took place in “Time Past” — and in the things that are recorded in Genesis up to the time in Acts 9 when He suspended His program with Israel—as God records all that in that portion of His word that deals with the outworking of His program with Israel—scattered throughout all that information, God is also repeatedly making references to the fact that the things He’s doing with Israel have an effect upon the things that are in connection with the world at-large!

- And what I’m after in all that is—for you to start thinking some more about what we were taught back in Romans 9, 10, & 11 — granted, most of it pertained to making you aware of the fact that God has not fulfilled His program with Israel; nor has He just tossed it away, never to go back to it and resume it; but rather, that His present program has Israel’s program in abeyance, and once this present disp. ends, He will go back and resume/fulfill Israel’s program ...

... but along with all that information is some other information that God has the apostle Paul point out—and bring in some things that pertain to **the world at-large!**

... and especially so when it comes to the **time** in which God suspended His program w/ Isr.

- Again—the critical thing I’m after here is to get it into your mind that at the very moment that God suspended His program with Israel, a particular event had come to its climax (so to speak) - and that event is a TIMING issue—that is, the TIMING of God bringing in this disp. of grace coincided with an event that came to a head—in other words, God’s bringing in this disp. of grace coincided with a **CRISIS point** that had been reached in the history of the people of the earth.

- And since the people of the earth are divided up into 2 general categories (the Jews [or Israel]; and the Gentiles [or the World At-Large]) — therefore there were 2 **CRISES** that came together and were reached at that time!

- 1) Pertained to Israel
- 2) Pertained to the World At-Large

- And when Romans 12a says, *The night is far spent* (and even, *the day is at hand*—but especially that first phrase, *The night is far spent*) ... it’s especially and more precisely referring to the Crisis that had been reached with **The World At-Large!** (the World’s Crisis!)

- A crisis that we, Gentiles in this disp. of grace are to have a particular understanding of—and should have a very particular **response** to—when, at this particular point in our Sonship Education, we’ve had a measure of the conformity to the image of God’s Son, which is of such a nature that it causes us now to be able to look at something with respect to “this world” just exactly as the Lord Jesus Christ looks at it.

... something that took place right at the very moment God interrupted/suspended His program with Israel & brought the disp. of grace in—and in view of it—and in view of when this disp. of grace ends—God is going to pick up and deal with that Crisis ...

... and in view of all that—we’re to understand & appreciate that during this disp. of grace, we ought to manifest our understanding of that Crisis with the World At-Large—and ought to manifest our Lord’s understanding of it as He sits at the Father’s right hand—and by our manifestation of it, ought to make **an impact** upon a particular **Character** who was responsible for getting the World At-Large to that Crisis point ... and who’s endeavoring (during this

disp. of grace) to ‘keep the home fires burning’ (so to speak) in connection with that Crisis point—and we, with our intelligent understanding and appreciation for what it’s all about, ought to have the particular **response** that the rest of (:12) says, when it says, *let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light*—and by so doing, engage in a particular kind of activity that confronts the Adversary keeping those ‘home fires burning’!

- Oftentimes what is actually going on with the World At-Large is NOT understood and appreciated like it ought to be—and because of that, it makes that issue of *casting off the works of darkness, and putting on the armour of light* misunderstood and little appreciated as it ought to be.

- And that, then, makes the godly Conduct & Behavior and the Godly Labor of (:13 & :14) to be likewise NOT properly understood and appreciated like they ought to be!

- For example—if you have read these verses and simply think that they are a simple exhortation for you to put your ‘Position in Christ’ into practice (as described back in Romans 6, 7, and the first part of chapter 8) - then you’ve totally missed the boat here!

- This is actually an **ADVANCEMENT** in your sanctified position “in Christ” - this is NOT an encapsulation of Romans 6, 7, and 8!

- This is NOT simply coming along and telling you to stop ‘walking after the flesh’ and start ‘walking after the Spirit’! (you should have been doing that all the time from Romans 6 up until this point!) ... and the expectation is that you’ve been doing that!

- And the issue of you ‘*casting off the works of darkness, and putting on the armour of light*’ is NOT the issue of you just not fulfilling the ‘lust of sin in your flesh’!

- This is a very specialized advancement upon both your sanctified position “in Christ” as well as an advancement upon your perception into the activities of the Adversary and how you (as a properly intelligized “son”) are to do battle with the Adversary and his Policy of Evil. (for training purposes, among other things)

- We are now in a position (due to the success of the effectual working of the Sonship Curriculum we've acquired so far—and its effectual working within your heart) - we're now in a position to be equipped & to able to take on a new Operation of our Father's business—and in connection with that, to recognize something further about the World At-Large and perceive what's going on in it—and to recognize something particular that is going on in it, that goes right back to the **background** to this disp. of grace (*the night*) — and that 1 particular Character (Satan, himself) is actively engaged in keeping some particular things alive/vital/vibrant, and keeping them ongoing throughout the entirety of this disp. of grace!

- And by us understanding and appreciating what the Adversary keeps ongoing throughout this disp. of grace—and with us remembering **who** we **USED** to be—and with us knowing who we are right now “in Christ” with respect to Dispensational TIMING—and what we're going to be participating in when this disp. of grace ends ... when that *day which is at hand* takes place— we, therefore (in view of all that) should be doing something in connection with our overall sanctified position “in Christ” that ends up with us putting a new aspect of it into practice!

- And that's what the issue of *casting off the works of darkness, and putting on the armour of light* is going to be all about!

- That new aspect (or Operation) of our Father's business that we get the honor to participate in is the issue of **our Father's Operations against the Adversary.**

- And this aspect of our *instruction of godly judgment* as it pertains to the issue of Dispensational TIMING is designed to give us the background to this privileged Operation; it's designed to tell us what the 1st Order of our Father's Business is when it comes to contending with the Adversary in this disp. of grace; and it's designed to equip us and give us the intelligence we need to participate in this Operation in the details of our lives; and to directly deal with & confront the Satanic Policy of Evil.

- (and that's a marvelous & glorious thing!)

- This saying (*The night is far spent, the day is at hand:*) is a saying that expresses the Dispensational TIMING of this disp. of grace **as far as the World At-Large is concerned!** and as far as the activities of the Adversary *in* this World At-Large is concerned!

- And we were taught some things back in Romans 9, 10 & 11 whereby we were to understand that at the moment that God brought this disp. of grace in (by suspending His prog. w/ Isr.) - both Israel AND the World At-Large came to a **crisis point** in their existence!

- And, again, what we're after here is to gain the kind of perspective and viewpoint as "sons" that matches up with the same perspective & viewpoint (and godly thinking) of our Heavenly Father in connection to what was going on in the world at-large when He began this disp. of grace, and what will be going on in the world at-large when He will end it.

- And when the significance of the TIMING of this disp. of grace is properly grasped—(although you may not be able to have it all 'click' in your mind at the moment) - in the end, this Godly Thinking is going to allow for you to have the capacity to make a whole bunch of godly judgments in all the details of your life!

- So let's begin looking at the details of the expression, *The night is far spent, the day is at hand* — and especially the issue of *The night* — and our major concern is going to be THE CRISIS OF **THE WORLD AT LARGE**.

- Truth is—both "the world" and "Israel" both join forces at the particular point in which God suspended His program w/Isr. and brought in this disp. of grace.

- But for now I want you to separate the two in your thinking—and focus your attention upon "the world at large" and what's been going on with it throughout the time of "Time Past" as the outworking of God's "Time Past" portion of His program was going on.

- We need to focus upon what the Adversary was doing in the world at large as the 'Prince of Darkness' that he was—and in connection with that, the darkness that he had brought upon the world, and the activities that were taking place in connection with that—and what he was doing to maintain it; and to augment it; and to make it 'deeper' and 'blacker' (so to speak).

- And the first thing we need to realize is that in connection with all of the Adversary's doings with the world—that when this disp. was brought into effect and God suspended His prog. w/Isr. — at that

“CRISIS POINT”: that’s what’s involved in our disp. TIMING expression, “*The night is far spent, the day is at hand:*” (that’s what things had come to in a climatic/crisis type point when God brought in this disp. of grace).

- Therefore, (if you haven’t gotten it already) - my understanding is that when Romans 13:12 says, *The night is far spent* — that is the condition of (for our purposes here) the world at large having reached its Crisis Point. (along with Israel, of course)

- In other words, at the very point in which God suspends His prog. w/Isr. and brings in this disp. of grace—the TIMING of that event coincided with when the world at large had reached the point in which Satan had produced his “*night*” in it—so much so that it (*the night*) was in a “*far spent*” condition!

- And being in a “far spent” condition is critical for God to righteously and justly pour out His wrath upon it when His “Day of Wrath” takes place!

- So what we’re going to see in God’s word (and gain an appreciation for) is that when the Adversary was able to bring his “night” to a “far spent” condition with Israel and the World At Large (as far as his implementing of his Plan & Policy of Evil is concerned)—that’s the very moment that God brought in this disp. of grace in which we live.

- And the importance of us understanding & appreciation *the night being far spent* (especially in connection with the world at large) - is that it has a direct bearing upon the things of that Satanic PoE as they transpire and move on throughout this disp. of grace—and with that understanding (or thinking) - that will have a bearing upon our godly Conduct & Behavior in the details of our lives that REFLECTS our understanding of that—and along with that, REFLECTS our understanding that when this disp. of grace ends—that CRISIS POINT that was reached when this disp. of grace began (as far as the world is concerned) will be **in effect again**.

- Truth is—when we have the godly Thinking regarding the TIMING issue of this disp. of grace—and when we, (on the basis of that), respond in our Conduct & Behavior **consistent** with that godly Thinking—we actually **manifest** to the Adversary & his cohorts a tremendous and intelligent understanding and appreciation for how God is presently dealing with them.

- And we manifest a real appreciation for God's genius for how He is dealing with them—not just 'taking them in their own craftiness' by endeavoring to keep the "mystery" a mystery—but intelligently dealing with everything they've implemented (even on this Earth) regarding the "darkness" of this world; and the course for this world that the Adversary has charted; and the works that he has put into effect, and has fueled and fostered and propagated in order to keep his Plan & Policy of Evil vibrant and ongoing and developmental as far as he's concerned.

- And our intelligent understanding of what "*the night*" is all about—and our godly Con. & Beh. because of it will end up provoking the Adversary's PoE against us, to endeavor to 'dim the light' and 'put out the light' that we begin to manifest and 'shine' in this dark world, when having '*cast off the works of darkness*', we '*put on the armour of light*'!

- Now—since God has interrupted & suspended his program with Israel (and therefore the issue surrounding the Satanic PoE against Israel is not in view right now) - what concerns us in this disp. of grace is that PoE as it affects THE WORLD AT LARGE—which is going to be our focus of attention right now.

- And the world had reached a Crisis Point in the *night* that Satan had produced (which had that *night* in a state of being *far spent*) coincidental to the moment God brought in this disp. of grace.

- And we should already have in our frame of reference some understanding of this issue from when we were in Romans 9, 10, 11. (our dispensational orientation & establishment)

- And what we're after is some things that the apostle Paul said in respect to the backdrop/background to this disp. of grace—and where things had gotten to in both the outworking of God's prog. w/ Isr., AND with the Adversary's PoE with this world (that is, the flow of the course for this world that he has charted, and the 'darkness' he has produced that came to the Crisis Point in the book of Acts.

- **Romans 9**—the doctrine here deals with the fact that the outworking of God's prog. w/ Isr. will work out exactly like He said it would in "Time Past".

Final Misunderstanding.

- (:19) — *Thou wilt say then unto me*, ... well, if the issue is then that God's not *unrighteous* in His dealings with Israel—Paul says, I know what you're going to say me—I've dismissed the issue of the fact that His *word has taken none effect* (and you can't think that) - and I've dismissed the fact that He's *unrighteous* (and you can't think that either) ... but I know that you're still thinking about something along those lines, and I know what you're going to say to me ...

- So Paul says, *Thou wilt say then unto me*, ... in light of what I just did to dismiss that charge of *unrighteousness with God*, you've got this one other issue of incorrect thinking, and here's what's going through your mind ...

- *Why doth he yet find fault? For who hath resisted his will?*

- And to "*find fault*" here means to find a reason for not going ahead and doing something—and it's as if (especially in a Jew's mind), as if he says, Why does God still (yet) have a reason for not going ahead and fulfilling His program with Israel?

- Now in order to properly get a good grasp upon just what it is that is being objected to here—you have to understand that question within the **context** in which it sits.

- And here is exactly where the value of thinking along the lines of God's own sense & sequence will help you out—because you have to understand and appreciate that the dispensation of grace (and the setting aside of Israel's program) - by the time Paul writes this letter to the Romans—had been going on for about 20 years!

- And 20 years is a pretty good length of time!

- And if you're tracking along with how the sequence of all this information was given—it would be a very natural thing to think (especially if you were a Jew who was a member of the remnant/kingdom church of Israel), to come along and say, Alright, Paul, so God's turned to the Gentiles, showing mercy and grace to them (He's changed their status in His sight and a new program is now in effect) - but hasn't He had enough time to do that yet???

- Hasn't God had enough time to accomplish everything He wanted to accomplish? - *Why is he still finding fault?* — Why does He still have a reason for not going ahead and finishing our program?

- And, by the way, how much more should that question be applied today—and be meaningful today—when this dispensation of grace has been in effect for 100 TIMES 20 years!!!

- So how much more appropriate is it to come along now and say, Why is He still finding fault?

- And then the follow-up question: *For who hath resisted his will?*

- And that should ‘ring a bell’ - because wasn’t it when Peter was informed about God changing the status of the Gentiles in His sight over in Acts 10-11, (which legally demanded that a new program was now in effect) - that Peter said, “*what was I, that I could withstand God?*” (Acts 11:17) — and therefore, the issue is, Ok, God has done all this, who has resisted His will in doing it—it’s all a ‘done deal’ (so to speak), so once again, why doesn’t He just go ahead and resume His program with Israel and get them out of that *accursed from Christ* situation they’re in, and fulfill all those things that *pertain* to them?

- *For who hath resisted his will?* — no one has resisted God in bringing in this new program that He had in mind to accomplish (in turning to the Gentiles and instead of having His day of wrath, showing His mercy and graciousness to the Gentiles) - so *Why doeth he yet find fault?* — why doesn’t He put an **end** to that and go back to His former program with Israel and fulfill it?

- So really, what you’ve got in the context of this final Misunderstanding is this lingering issue that came out of the charge of *unrighteousness with God*—and especially in the thinking of a Jew—a member of the remnant of Israel who was still living at the time the book of Romans was written—the issue is one of having the right to **murmur** and **complain** about what God is doing!!!

- And so Paul begins to confront that kind of erroneous thinking in (:20).

- And from (:20-21) we are given a series of 3 questions that are designed to “set up” our thinking (so to speak) - or, by the nature of the questions—(and the portion of God’s word that it takes us to)—these questions are designed to put our thinking in the position God wants it in so that what follows it will do its effectual work.

- And you should be aware that this isn't just for the thinking of those Jews that were alive at the time Romans was written—but this has a great deal of importance for our sonship establishment—because (long before the issue is ever addressed in detail) - our Father is generating in our minds (our “s” *spirit*) the very thinking and manner in which our thinking approaches such things as the duration of this dispensation of grace in which we live—to match the thinking and the manner in which our Father thinks about this dispensation of grace Himself. (especially its *duration*)

- And what I mean by that is—that when most folks view this dispensation of grace (if they ever view it at all) - or should I say, when most Christian folks view the coming Rapture (if they view it at all) — most of them (including all the prophecy writers), they're mostly looking at certain historical events to take place as a ‘marker’ or ‘signal’ that the end of the dispensation of grace (or, as they say, the “church age”) is near and then can say that “*we are in the ‘rapture generation.’*”

- And, of course, that makes for great fame and fortune because a lot of merchandise can be made from fortune-telling and date-setting (or near-date-setting).

- And these folks are always on the lookout for some ‘sign’ in history—such as the ups and downs of Israel—or the building of the temple (the laying of the cornerstone) - or the breeding of the sacrificial animals for the temple worship—or the shifting of nations like China, Russia, Iran, Iraq, the USA, the European ‘common-market’ - and a whole bunch of other things they look for to indicate when the rapture is going to take place—(i.e., when God will end this dispensation).

- But part of our sonship establishment is to get the basic, and fundamental thinking of our Father as to how He views ending this dispensation of grace—and fundamentally, He is **not** thinking in terms of any of those things at all—but He is thinking in terms of **showing forth the fullness of His mercy and graciousness.**

- And we are to understand and appreciate that the answer to the question of when will God end this present dispensation

of grace has much more to do with His own character and essence than any historical ‘sign’ or ‘signal’ that is commonly looked for.

- And this may not sound like a big deal now—but really, it is—because this is going to save you a lot of time, money, and anxiety by not focusing upon the non-essentials that common Christians deal with who don’t think like sons—but instead thinking about it all like a **son** is supposed to be thinking about it—which is how your Father thinks about it!

- Now in (:20), by the effectual working of the 1st question—the apostle Paul sets forth the issue that: You really have no right to complain!

- 20 Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God?

- When you “*reply against*” someone—you’re really **complaining** to them about what they’re doing—and Paul says, Who are you, to do that?

- And the first thing we need to realize is—we don’t have any right to complain about however long God continues to administer this dispensation of Gentile grace—and however long He continues to suspend His program with Israel.

- And neither we Gentiles, or any Israelite—has any right to complain about that or question it!

- And that begins to straighten out our thinking right off the bat!

- So now the 2nd question in (:20) — **Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus?**

- The issue is, we have no right to question God’s actions because Paul here is likening us (as Gentiles and Israelites) as being *formed* by God into a particular item—and he’s going to develop that in (:21).

- (:21) **Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour?**

- Now, when Paul asks this question in (:21) - he's not asking it in the sense of a question that is supposed to be answered based upon pure **logic**—(although you would arrive at the same answer) - but much like the 5 probing questions in chapter 8, you're not supposed to answer this based upon simple logic!

- In fact, this particular question is one that is mainly directed at those **Israelites** who are members of the remnant of Israel.

- Paul has something far more in mind than simply a logical question and answer!

- And the truth of the matter is—Paul is asking something here that would naturally 'click' in that Israelite's mind—he's actually saying something that is designed to 'trigger' something in their thinking that takes them back into God's word!

- Because God has already explained to them something sitting back in 2 of the prophets—(Jeremiah and Hosea) — and that is the fact that He treats them as **clay to a Potter!**

- And God has already—in His dealings with them—once before, **shaped** them from a '*vessel unto honour*' into a '*vessel unto dishonour*'! — and they're already experienced with that in their history.

- Jeremiah 18:1-10

- Hosea 8:8

- And so when Paul says, *Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour?* — he's saying something that Israel ought to come along and say, Yeah, I know from Jer. 18 and Hos. 8 that He's got the power and the right to do that! And, therefore, I don't have any right to complain about His actions—or how long He leaves us in that vessel unto dishonour state!

- And that's the very condition Israel's in as ones who are *accursed from Christ*— in this dispensation of grace, the parallel from Jer. & Hos. is that as they are *accursed from Christ*, they are being treated by God as a *vessel unto dishonour!*

- And the Gentiles are being treated as a vessel unto honour!

- Now once the first 3 questions puts our thinking in the position our Father wants it in—in order to fully debunk and dismiss this erroneous thinking that there is *unrighteousness* with God in *yet finding fault* and not ending His dispensation of grace to get back to fulfilling His program with Israel—and so that we don't have that bizarre idea of complaining about what God's doing any more— Paul now presents us with a lengthy question that will now take your now godly-positioned thinking, and lead you to some passages in God's word that will fully prove to you that the thinking of (:19) is, indeed, wrong, erroneous, and a misunderstanding of what God has done.

- And though this is a rhetorical-type question—Paul sets forth in (:22-24) the fact, that as long as God wants to be *longsuffering* with the *vessels of wrath* that were fit for destruction—which was exactly what the situation was with Israel just before this dispensation of grace was brought in — for as ever long as God wants to show forth His *longsuffering*, and show that *mercy* unto us Gentiles that He is showing—for however long He wants to do that, Paul says, He can do it!

- And that sets the stage for us today—who are at a point of time that is 100 times longer than the 20 years that were passed when Paul wrote this—that little expression “*much longsuffering*” also applies to us!

- (:22-24)

- (:22) *What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, — that's the very situation that existed just prior to this dispensation of grace being brought in—Israel was under the 5th CoP; the 5th Installment of the 5th CoP was ready to begin with the stoning of Stephen and when the Lord Jesus Christ stood up—and it was scheduled for Him to make His power known in its fullness.*

- *What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, **endured with much longsuffering** — instead of showing it; He endured it—He put up with it and held off His wrath — He **endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction**: (that's Israel, the *vessels of wrath* who are now *accursed from Christ* ... but it's also talking about us **GENTILES**, TOO!).*

- (:23) *And that he might make known the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared unto glory,*
 (:24) *Even us, whom he hath called, not of the Jews only, but also of the Gentiles?*

- What I'm specifically after is sitting there in (:22) ... *the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction* ...

- "**fitted**" = the word "fit" has a whole bunch of definitions: suitable; to put in order; to furnish with things that are proper or necessary; to equip, supply; to be well adapted and qualified for a particular purpose; to satisfy the requirements of; to adapt to the object in view; ...

... and there are many Synonyms for "fit" = to suit; adapt; accommodate; adjust; equip; prepare; qualify; competent; (even expedient); perfect ... but of all the words that the King James Translators could have used to translate the Greek word καταρτίζω, they chose the most excellent word "fitted" because the word "fitted" has a shade of meaning that is very critical to the CONTEXT here in Rom. 9:22.

- And this shade of meaning is designed to 'trigger' some things in your mind that cause your thinking to look back in an 'overview' type way at the whole history of the ungodly heathen Gentile nations over the span of how God dealt with them throughout the outworking of His "Time Past" dealings with the Gentiles.

- And the shade of meaning I'm after here is—for example, one of the most common ways in which we use the word "fit" or "fitted" is in connection with clothing or garments.

- And when something (like a garment or a dress or a suit) is "fit" or "fitted" (such as going in to a tailor or a dressmaker; we often say that we are going in for a "fitting" - [for weddings or the prom or whatever]) ... and so you go in and try some clothes/dress on and when you find the right color and the right cloth or style or whatever—most often, it starts off not 'fitting' properly—so then once you settle on a particular suit/tux/dress, then the tailor/dressmaker makes alterations to it, in order to **make** it fit.

- And once something has been **MADE** to fit, you can then say that it is perfectly "fitted" for whatever intent it has (viz., a prom, a wedding, a funeral, or whatever).

- And that's the discriminating difference between the word "fitted" and a word such as 'prepared'!

- Something that is “*fitted*” is **MADE** THAT WAY—it is made to ‘fit’ its proper purpose!

- In other words, (in our context of Rom. 9:22), these Gentiles—these “*vessels of wrath*” have been MADE to perfectly ‘fit’ their proper JUDGMENT from God—which is “*destruction*”!

- And who ‘MADE’ them to be “*fitted*” for God’s *destruction*? ... well, if you understand their ungodly, sordid, wretched history, **THEY MADE THEMSELVES “FITTED TO DESTRUCTION”!**

- If you say that the Gentiles (and even Israel) were ‘prepared’ to/for destruction—then you are implying that God ever created them for that purpose! (As if, in eternity past, God ever planned & purposed the Gentiles for destruction.) And that’s not true; and that’s not a true understanding of God’s own character and essence!

- Truth is—(where the Gentiles are concerned), they went to the ‘tailor’ (the Adversary and his PoE) and got themselves “*fitted*” with the course of this world and the darkness of this world—and when God finally does judge them and destroy them, it WON’T be because an unloving, unrighteous, unjust God is acting as a cruel monster! ... no ... on the contrary—by using that little word “*fitted*”, you know that the ones on the receiving end of the “*destruction*” have been made to be perfectly “*fitted*” for it **by their own hand!**

- “*Destruction*” is what they have rightly & justly “*fitted*” themselves for by means of their cooperation and participation in the Satanic Policy of Evil (the Baal system).

- (read, once again, Romans 9:22-24)

- As Paul focuses upon the fact that God IS going to resume & fulfill His prog. w/ Isr. once He’s finished dealing with us Gentiles (now as His *vessels of mercy*) now that He’s suspended His prog. w/ Isr. — (and here Paul sets forth that issue in its basic/fundamental form, and then he’ll amplify upon that in greater detail later on in ch. 11) - notice that here in ch. 9, Paul brings up that expression in (:22) ***the vessels of wrath FITTED TO DESTRUCTION*** .

- Paul sets forth that God has every legal right to do the very thing he says here—God has every right / and is not one bit unrighteous (even though He is at a point where He is *willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known*) - but throughout the duration of this disp. of grace, God is *enduring with **MUCH** longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction* — and one of the hallmarks of this present disp. of grace is that *on the vessels of **mercy*** (Jew & Gentile alike that have believed on the Lord Jesus Christ in this disp. of grace and make up the ‘body of Christ’), God is presently *making known the riches of his glory!*

- And God has every right to do that—He’s not unrighteous at all in doing that—and the only way He would be unrighteous in doing that is if He never stopped what He’s doing right now and never does have His day of wrath, and never does fulfill His prog. w/ Isr.

- But the issue is: He’s NOT going to fail to have His day of wrath; and He’s NOT going to fail to fulfill His prog. w/ Isr.!

- And that whole issue gets picked up upon and amplified upon in greater detail over in ch. 11.

- But here in ch. 9—as this gets set forth in its most basic & fundamental way—you are first confronted with the basic issue that the backdrop to the TIMING of God bringing in this disp. of grace is described in that expression that God was *willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known*.

- And that expression takes your thinking into a kind of overview of what God has been doing all along in His “Time Past” program with Israel—but also with the general world at large—and with the whole course of this world as it progressed, and as the iniquity of man increased, and as the Adversary’s activities on this earth developed and grew.

- And God repeatedly talked about the issue of His day of wrath coming—and the fact that He was going to judge the **world** for its iniquity.

- And the truth is—as God’s “Time Past” program continued on and He prophesied about and talked about His coming day of wrath—you eventually come to the time when that all reaches its **climactic stage!**

- And during the 4th Inst./5th Cop (i.e., the Lord's earthly ministry as recorded in the gospel accounts — and the 1 yr. of forbearance & mercy as recorded in the opening chapters of the book of Acts) - you have the Kingdom of Heaven being described as “at hand” - and the WRATH of the Lord's Day was “at hand” in which He would **judge** the world for its iniquity, and Avenge His cause with Israel—and deal with the Adversary and all of the ungodly men in the world.

... which would take place in that 5th & final install.

- And so God had been speaking all along about His being *willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known.*

- And He had been warning Israel (and the world at large) more and more as the time approached that His day of wrath was going to take place.

- (see Matt. 3:1-12—John the Baptist—note the terminology John uses to describe the closeness of it being executed!)

- and you're to understand that it wasn't only the climatic stage of Israel's program that had arrived—but also that it was, at the exact same time, the climactic stage of the **world at large** that had arrived!

- And John sets it forth in such a way that those who were listening to him would make some 'connections' with what God has already said to them—so that now it was to become THE BIG THING as a 'looming issue' right in front of them!

... and hopefully, they would respond positively to his message and be prepared for the coming of Jesus of Nazareth as their Christ/Messiah.

- Now I know that you are already familiar with all this—but my point here is get you to appreciate this as the background to what Paul is speaking about in Romans 9 when, especially, the world at large is being looked at in connection with that climactic stage—and therefore you intelligently understand what the *vessels of wrath* are being spoken about as being *fitted to destruction*.

- and how that right now during this disp. of grace, God really IS

being *longsuffering*, and *enduring* with *much longsuffering* the *vessels of wrath fitted to destruction*—(and He’s been REAL “longsuffering” [for over 2000 years]!)

- And what I want you to get your mind around here is that just as those *vessels of wrath* were *fitted to destruction* back in about 34 AD, ... THEY ARE STILL IN THAT “FITTED TO DESTRUCTION” STATE RIGHT NOW... TODAY!

- Every nation on this earth (including the USA); and every PERSON on this earth who has NOT believed in Christ as their only & all-sufficient Saviour—(every person who is NOT a member of the new creature of the church, the body of Christ) ... is “*fitted to destruction*” and having the wrath of God poured out upon them!

- And if you’re not aware of it—that is **NOT** how the people of the world view themselves!!

- And this is what you have to firmly understand & appreciate about the crisis state and the Crisis Point that sits as a backdrop for the **TIMING** of when God brought this disp. of grace into being!

- And this understanding of the state in which the people of the earth was in (i.e., “*vessels of wrath fitted to destruction*”) ... and appreciating that they STILL ARE in that state at this very present time (awaiting their ‘destruction’ by God’s ‘wrath’) ... that gives you a far better appreciation for the fullness of our expression in Romans 13:12, “*The night is far spent, the day is at hand:*”

- And when God suspended His Day of Wrath being poured out upon vain, religious, apostate Israel—He also suspended His outpouring of His wrath, and His judgment upon the world at large for its unrighteousness, and its ungodliness, and its iniquity!

- In other words, the whole world was ‘ripe’ and ‘ready’ for God’s judgment & wrath as those *vessels of wrath fitted to destruction*... but God has put that judgment & wrath on ‘Hold’.

- But the issue for us is to understand & appreciate that the whole world was a giant ‘vessel of wrath’ that was ‘fit to be destroyed’!

- And more than that ('much more'), the world at large at this very moment is STILL *in* that very condition and Crisis Point! (fit for the Lord to have His "day" and judge it and destroy it! ... and to bring in His world of righteousness and godliness!)
- The world had come to a 'fever pitch' (so to speak) in its ungodliness and its disgustingness to God when the Lord Jesus Christ 'stood up' in Acts 7 and was ready to begin to 'make His enemies His footstool' — (just as it was set forth back in **Psalm 2 [read]**).
- Psalm 2 describes not only rebellious, apostate Israel; but also the Gentiles who had joined together with them—reaching that Crisis Point.
- And the issue for us at this present time is to have generated within us the kind of Sonship Thinking we need to have in this disp. of grace in which we live, and in this particular point in our Sonship Education to gain the Godly Viewpoint with respect to the state of the world at large!
 - ... and to have God's Attitude toward the world at large with respect to the works that go on in it; and the course that's been charted for it; and the course that it continues to follow!
- And the CRITICAL thing is to think about this world as a properly educated "son" — that, although God has been "longsuffering" and holding back His day of wrath during this disp. of grace: **HIS WRATH STILL EXISTS!**
- In fact, that's the very first thing the 'Gospel of Christ' says when it's preached to anybody — *For the **wrath of God** is revealed from heaven against ALL ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness; (Rom. 1:18).*
- Folks, "longsuffering" is **NOT** the issue of a **cancellation** of wrath!
- The issue of God 'enduring with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction' during this disp. of grace is NOT the issue of Him canceling His wrath and saying, "It's not going to come to pass"!

... it's NOT the issue of Him putting it in a 'vault' (so to speak) - or putting it 'on ice' — it's not the issue of Him 'cooling it down' - or any of those kind of things!

- "**longsuffering**" is the issue of: You 'suffer' for a LONG TIME with the things that are provoking you to WRATH! (and you're just **holding back** the EXECUTION of your wrath!)

- My point here is to get you to have '**sonship viewpoint**' - the very Viewpoint of your Heavenly Father when He looks at this world at large—and to have generated within you the Father's **attitude** towards the world at large—so that your godly, sonship Thinking/Attitude matches up with His! (and that godly Thinking will end up providing you the power and the capacity to make a whole bunch of godly *judgments!* ... concerning how you conduct & behave & react & respond to this world; and its course; and its 'spirit'! [*1Cor. 2:12 Now we have received, **not** the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God.*])

- And one of the most basic and fundamental things you're going to have to come to understand and appreciate is that **God's thinking and God's attitude toward this world at large has NOT changed or diminished one bit since Acts 7!**

- (And the truth of the matter is—the world's thinking and attitude toward God has NOT changed or diminished one bit, either!)

- Rev. 9:20-21 (the 6th Trumpet judgment)

- Rev. 16 (the Vial judgments) - (4th & 5th Vials—:8-11) -
 - (notice the men of the world aren't chalking this up to 'climate change' or 'global warming' or anything scientific! ... notice they aren't 'Atheists' either ... they know exactly who is doing this: the Most High God, "**the God of Heaven**"!)

- (7th Vial—:17-21)

- Rev. 18 (the fall of Babylon) - (:1-19) - (notice that the world knows that the 'God of Heaven' is producing all this—and in the face of such miracles, signs, and wonders, it doesn't make 'believers' out of them! .. far from it, in fact, it does just the opposite!)

- (note God's viewpoint of the unbeliever—2Cor. 4:4)

- It's amazing how people are easily lulled into thinking that they are "better" **now** than they were **then** (back in "bible times" when ignorant fools made up God and religion because they were too stupid to figure out what was going on around them, scientifically) —that they are more "evolved" (more "enlightened") and by creating a god in their own image, they have convinced themselves that god will bless their endeavors (sinful as they may be) because of their good intentions; or that their god grades their sin (if they ever use that word) or wrongdoing (or mistakes, or happy accidents) on a 'curve' ... and they have created a god that has "softened" over the years and has become tolerant of every thing man can imagine to do ... because, after all, **where is His judgment???** ... it's like the stove was red hot, but now it's cooled down to where you can touch it! ... that God 'smiles' lovingly, and is accepting of any and every religion on earth (as long as you believe in something/someone) ... and 'Who are you to be so bigoted and judgmental to say different?'

- Truth is—there is a huge misunderstanding of the character and essence of God in the minds of the men/woman in the world at large!

- The idea is—if God was once behind the door (so to speak) with His sword in His hand, ready to pour out His fury on the world—well, after all this time, He must not really be there; or if He is, He's not angry any more—and He's kind of like the abominable snowman in "Rudolph the Red-Nosed Reindeer" — no "teeth" and can be easily led around to put the star on top of the Christmas tree!

- And, sadly, even a great deal of present-day "Christianity" has created a god with movable norms and standards of righteousness; and a god who is so loving that he has all but lost 'that whole "wrath" / "judgment" thing' ... **but that is NOT what God's word says—and that is NOT what Romans 9:22 taught you!**

22 What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction:

- A properly educated "son" knows something about TIME and the TIMING of this dispensation of grace ...
... and a properly educated "son" knows with godly intelligence that *The night is far spent, the day is at hand:!!!*
..... (*Be not highminded, but fear: [Rom. 11:20]*)

- If you are properly taught (and have paid attention to what God tells you) - God's word makes it clear that when this disp. of grace comes to an end—and God resumes His prog. w/ Isr. — not only are Israel and the world at large in the very same Crisis Point they were in when God put this dispensation into effect (in Acts 7 and Acts 9) — but God's WRATH is still in the very state it was in back in Acts 7!

- And there won't be any loss to the fervency and the zeal of His wrath! ... there won't be any diminishing or abating of the intensity of it!

- It will be as strong at the end of this disp. as it was at the beginning—(in fact, the truth of the matter is—it will be stronger—because of what has gone on, and what does go on, and will continue to go on as far as the course of this world is concerned during this disp. of grace)!!

- But the 'gist' of what comprises the effectual working of the Godly Thinking you need to have right now—in connection with that *saying*, "*The night is far spent, the day is at hand.*" is to first of all understand and appreciate that "the night" is referring to that **Crisis Point** in which (especially) the world at large (and the activities of this world; and the course of this world that Satan had charted for it—had reached that Crisis point) as described as those *vessels of wrath fitted to destruction* — and that God's wrath was at a 'fever pitch' or 'tipping point' in which it could be poured out on the world—and be poured out in all godly righteousness and justice! ... and without diminishing one bit over the span of this disp. of grace, it will be just as (if not more so) at that 'fever pitch' or 'tipping point' to be righteously and justly poured out on the world when this disp. of grace comes to an end (because this world will still be at that Crisis Point when this disp. of grace ends).

- The iniquity and the vileness of man had come to a point, therefore, where God more or less said, **You're nothing but fitted to destruction!**

- And the truth of the matter is—if it wasn't for this disp. of God's grace being part of His Plan & Purpose—if it wasn't for "the mystery of Christ" being in the plan & purpose of God—God would have had His 'day of wrath' immediately following the end of what's recorded at the end of Acts 7 — (when the extension of forbearance & mercy to Israel had

come to an end—and the Son of Man was seen to be standing at the right hand of the Father, ready to (as Isaiah records [3:14]), *enter into judgment with the ancients of his people, **and ready to enter into judgment with the iniquity of this world!***

- Any questions so far?

- Now let's take this general understanding and appreciation of things—and let's look at it in a bit more detail—and let's look at some things that are sitting back in Israel's program that are talking about what was going on in "Time Past" as far as **the world** is concerned—and as far as the Adversary's activities in the world is concerned; and the course for this world that he had charted.

- And what we're going to be particularly after here is to note the '**darkness**' of this world that had been established—and how that 'darkness' had just been getting darker and darker and blacker and blacker as time was going on—and when it finally reached that Crisis Point, the darkness of this world was a 'dark' as it had ever been!

- And therefore, the activities of the Adversary; and the promotion of his *works of darkness* had come to a zenith (or a 'high water mark', so to speak).

- And this is important/critical, **because it's those kind of things that made the vessels of wrath to be fitted to destruction!**

- 2 Peter ch. 2—Peter is writing to the members of the Remnant of Isr. in connection with their 5th & final Installment in their program — but let's note some things Peter says about the world at large—and something that the members of the remnant of Israel needed to understand & appreciate had been going on in the world throughout their whole "Time Past" program.

- And things that will take place in the final install. of Israel's program (especially during the Day of the Lord's Wrath) are going to bring judgment upon the **world at large** because of what had been going on in it.

- And again, (just to be clear), the Day of the Lord's Wrath is not only going to purge out the rebellious element of apostate

Israel from amongst the nation—(and not only Avenge God’s cause with Israel upon the nations that have opposed Israel in Satan’s PoE against Israel) — but aspects of the Lord’s Day of Wrath are also going to be directed specifically against the world at large—and His wrath is going to be dealing with those *vessels of wrath fitted to destruction!*

- And God’s wrath is going to be dealing with the world at large **because it had BECOME something that made it so that the only ‘worthy’ thing that could be done to it would be to DESTROY IT!**

- 2 Peter 2:1-3 (read)

- (:3) - notice that when Peter says, *whose judgment* (in connection with all these false prophets, false teachers, and all those that will follow them)—Peter says, *whose judgment now of a long time lingereth not, and their damnation slumbereth not.*

- And what’s in view is (of course) the Day of the Lord’s Wrath—but in God’s program with Isr., for a LONG TIME God has been talking about His coming wrath upon the ones who are ‘fitted’ and deserving of it.

- And the severity of it (the *damnation* aspect of it) - is something that for a LONG TIME God has been talking about it (and talking about it) - and although it hasn’t come to pass yet—the issue is, He hasn’t fallen asleep on the matter; He hasn’t diminished His wrath (or lost any zeal or conviction for carrying it out)!

- The issue is that it IS going to come to pass—He specified a particular time for it to come to pass—and the issue for the members of the remnant to understand is, that when the Opening Stage/Events of the 5th Install. gets underway, **those things of God’s wrath are going to be right on the ‘doorstep’ - and NOTHING IS GOING TO STOP THEM NOW!!!**

- (:4-6) - and what I’m after here is that Peter substantiates the reality of what he said in (:3) - and as he does so, he cites some things that went on in past history! (long past) - especially some things that took place EARLY ON, both in human history, and in Israel’s history!

- But I'm particularly after what Peter says in (:4-5) concerning what took place in **NOAH'S DAY**. (not so much the details of it, or the mechanics of what the angels did and what happened to them)

- Rather, notice what it says in (:5) **in connection with God RESPONDING** to what took place in Noah's day—and God judging that, "*bringing in the flood*".

- (:5) *And [God] spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly;*

- Now I know we have covered some of this before (back in Romans 13:1-7 in the 3rd & final Component of our *instruction of Justice*, dealing with godly Justice in connection with established authority in government—and the issue of the Power and the Powers and so forth).

- Notice that we have on our chart the flood that took place in Noah's day—as recorded in Genesis chapters 6-9.

- And in those chapters you have the details of God's flood judgment on the world—and the results of that—and some of the changes God made to His creation and to man himself—and then the things that get started again with Noah, his wife, his 3 sons and their wives.

- But what I'm after here (and what I want to review with you) is that you have to remember that—from the time that sin entered the world (as recorded in Genesis 3-5), **THE WORLD OF THE UNGODLY DEVELOPED!** — that's what Peter is referring to with that very expression in 2Pet. 2:5, "*bringing in the flood upon **the world of the ungodly***".

- Now we have noted before that God has Peter use at least 3 major descriptions (or phrases or titles, if you will) for the world as it existed in its iniquity **before** the flood:

- 1) "*the old world*" (2Pet. 2:5)
- 2) "*the world of the ungodly*" (2Pet. 2:5)
- 3) "*the world that then was*" (2Pet. 3:6)

- But the expression I'm after right now is that "*world of the ungodly*".

- And that "*world of the ungodly*" **RAPIDLY** developed!

- It's called "*the old world*" in (:5) - [which isn't Great Britain; and the 'new world' isn't America in God's mind] - but if you remember, the 'Old World Order' was what existed from Gen. 3-5—and then post flood, God began a 'New World Order'. (w/adjustments to it)

- And now—instead of focusing upon the Controlling Power of government and the fracturing of that Power into Powers (pl.) - like we focused upon back in Romans 13:1-7 — what we're going to focus upon, and what we're going to be interested in is the fact that over a very **short** period of time, (from Genesis 3-5), the satanic activities of the Adversary and his PoE had produced *the world of the ungodly*.

- This whole world had become an UNGODLY world—(not just in principle) - but rather, that's what it **BECAME!**

- And by describing it that way ("*the WORLD of the ungodly*") - [rather than something like, 'ungodly men' or man's ungodliness, or whatever] - by describing it that way— it causes you to think not only in terms of men or actual human beings [people], but even the physical environment men lived in!

- And when you're dealing with this type of ungodliness—that is, ungodliness that is so acute and so **personally** offensive to the +R/+J of God (to His holiness) so as to be caused to judge it by a global flood that not only destroyed the living things on the earth (man and animals) - but it also destroyed all of the physical aspects of man's life on the earth as well! (no traces of his existence left)

- And grasping that one issue begins to start some thinking going in you—that there is some 'inner' ungodliness in the heart of man (or some 'invisible' ungodliness, if you will) — and there is some 'outer' or 'visible' ungodliness that the hands of those ungodly men have produced to create a physical environment of their 'inner' or spiritual ungodliness! (to stimulate them [and their neighborhood, town, city, etc.], and to condition them, and remind them of the ungodliness that they worship and serve)!

- In other words, God didn't just come along and destroy only the ungodly PEOPLE on the earth—but He destroyed them, their culture, and even their geographic places!

- By the way, this kind of thinking allows for you to be able to realize that not only are there ‘inner’ strongholds that the Adversary can produce and exploit—but there are ‘outer’, geographic strongholds he can produce and exploit!

- But my point is that the exact terminology of 2Pet. 2:5, when it says, “*bringing in the flood upon **the world of the ungodly***” - the people AND all their physical ‘stuff’ and all the animals and even their geography (their lands, their towns, villages, communities, cities, inventions, etc.) were all ‘fitted to destruction’ at that time, and God did destroy them all!

- But even more to the point—is that you recognize the fact that, by the time you reach Gen. 6 and the description of the flood—**the world BECAME** the “*world of the ungodly*” - and it became that, NOT simply because men were sinners and were ungodly by nature—but it BECAME that because the Adversary, and his implementation of his Plan of Evil on the earth, and the implementation of his Policies of Evil (to support his Plan of Evil) had produced that! ... **deliberately, purposefully** produced that!

- In other words, *the world of the ungodly* was deliberately produced by the Adversary and his plan/policy of evil!

- And the ‘capstone’ to that whole issue—designed to ‘seal’ the world in its ‘fate’ as “*the world of the ungodly*” were the actions described by Peter of those *angels that sinned*—those ‘angels that left their first estate—and they produced an activity that was a climactic Crisis Point in connection with the world being *the world of the ungodly*.

- That event brought man’s ungodliness to a ‘fever pitch’ or a climactic Crisis Point where the Justice of God COULD NOT let it go on any longer!

- And the truth is—the men of that Old World became, therefore, ‘vessels of wrath fitted to destruction’ - and God destroyed them by the flood!

- And then a “New World Order” got brought into effect following the flood-judgment—(and not just in a ‘spiritual’ sense, and not just in an intangible, sociological, political-type sense ... although that took place as well) — but a New World Order was brought in that was also such in a PHYSICAL sense!

- **2 Peter 3**—here, Peter starts dealing with the reality of the Day of the Lord coming and the things that will take place in connection with it ... again, writing to the members of the remnant of Israel AFTER this present disp. has ended ...

3 *Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days* [that’s not talking about any ‘last days’ for us—this is talking about Israel’s “last days” and connects up with what Peter himself had preached about in Acts 2 on the Day of Pentecost when he quoted the prophet Joel in regards to Israel’s “last days”] ***scoffers*** [a person who mocks, jeers, derides, ridicules, who treats the whole idea of the Lord’s day of wrath as worthless, having no weight/credit/truth to it], ***walking after their own lusts,***

4 *And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep* [i.e., since Abraham/Isaac/Jacob/David/the Prophets, et al. (as if they really cared anything about them at all)], ***all things continue as they were from the beginning of creation.*** [big mistake; big stupid mistake!]

5 *For this they willing are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water:*

6 *Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished* [the flood]:

7 *But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men.*

- After the flood—you’ve got a ‘New World Order’ and a new PHYSICAL world as well (not completely different in every aspect, but **greatly** different than that “old world” — just as described back in Genesis 9 [and other places].

- even the heavens changed at that time.

- And just as we have noted before—God did some things after the flood that would make it so that the “world of the ungodly” could not produce itself at the same rapid pace it had before the flood!

- But the point here is—that the “old world” (before the flood) became the “world of the ungodly” from the time sin entered the world back in Gen. 3, until the events described beginning in Gen. 6 took place.

- And in view of that being “*the world of the ungodly*” - and in view

of the nature of that ungodliness; and the degree of that ungodliness; and the intensity of that ungodliness; **and the WORKS that characterized it** ... God, therefore, JUDGED it!

- And the men who made up the ‘citizenry’ of *the world of the ungodly* (with the exception of 8) - the rest were *vessels of wrath, fitted to destruction!* (and they got destroyed)!

- Notice once again (:6-7 [read]) — now go back to ch. 2, where, after referring in (:5) to the destruction of “the world of the ungodly” by the Flood—(:6) says that later on—in what took place after God began His program with Israel in Genesis 12ff, you eventually come to a point in Gen. 18 & 19 when God deals with Sodom and Gomorrah and the cities round about them in the plain—and it says,

*2 Peter 2:6 6 And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, making them **an ensample** unto those that after should live ungodly;*

- Notice that the “ungodliness” concept comes up again—and the New World Order that had been brought in, (in a new physical earth and physical heavens), **DIDN’T change the nature of man to the point that man could not be ungodly or become ungodly, or even become ungodly to the extent of that Crisis Point again!**

- But what God did was—that He made some changes that made it so that “the world of the ungodly” could not develop so rapidly.

- But the truth of the matter is—from the point of Genesis 10 on—(from the time that the 8 get off the ark; and from the time of Nimrod and the Tower of Babel on) ... **the “world of the ungodly” WAS going to develop all over again!**

... it’s just that it was not going to develop so quickly!

- Or to put it another way—the Adversary was going to have to do an awful lot more work in order to get the world to become “the world of the ungodly” once again!

- But my point is that ANOTHER “world of the ungodly” was going to develop!

- And at a point at the beginning of that time—(at the incident of the destruction of Sodom & Gomorrah) - God gave an **ENSAMPLE** to ones that “should after live ungodly” that they’re NOT going to get away with it—and that He’s going to JUDGE them (out in the Lord’s Day of Wrath).

- “Ensample vs. Example”

“**Example**” = a pattern or form used as a sample which ought to be followed or avoided.

“**Ensample**” = a sample, pattern, model, precedent, or example that is and ought to be followed ... but if it is NOT followed, it is done so AT YOUR OWN PERIL!

- And that’s why Peter says in 2 Peter 3:7 *But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men.*

- That “world of the ungodly” was going to develop again, (just as it did in the “old world” or “the world that then was”) and its citizenry (as before) is going to be *fitted to destruction!*

- And the Day of the Lord’s Wrath IS “*the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men*” in which the ungodliness of men had come to a climactic, Crisis Point in which the Justice of God can no longer not act, but must (if it is to remain righteous and uncompromised) judge the world of the ungodly!

JUDE - This is why, in Jude, Jude amplifies upon the very things that are set forth in 2 Peter ch. 2 and the beginning ch. 3 — notice that as Jude gives further details to what will be going on in the Lord’s Day of Wrath, especially in connection with the world at large—notice that Jude picks up on that very same terminology Peter used.

- And there are some words that were spoken by God in judgment of the Old World of the Ungodly—(spoken by Enoch, the 7th from Adam, and a prophet).

- And while we know from Hebrews 11:5 that Enoch “*had his testimony*” - we would know that God, through Enoch, had spoken to that ‘world of the ungodly’ as a prophet — but just by the little bit of information sitting in Genesis 5 regarding Noah, Lamech, Methuselah, Enoch, and so forth ... and what all the significance of what their names was about ...

- THE SIGNIFICANCE OF THE MEANING OF THE NAMES OF THE DESCENDANTS OF ADAM TO NOAH.

10. **Noah** (נֹחַ) [noach] = rest, comfort, relief, SALVATION
9. **Lamech** (לֶמֶךְ) [lemek] = little to nothing known about the origin of the word, however, it seems to indicate a young man of strength and power, hence, POWERFUL
8. **Methuselah** (מֶתוּשֶׁלַח) [methushelach] = from (מַת) [math] = an adult man; and (שֶׁלַח) [shelach] = a weapon, a dart, a sword; and (שָׁלַח) [shalach] = to send for—hence, A MAN OF THE SWORD SENT FOR
7. **Enoch** (חֲנוֹךְ) [chanok] = from (חָנַךְ) = to initiate, to discipline, to train up, to teach—hence, DEDICATED TO TEACH
6. **Jared** (יָרֵד) [yared] = a descendent—A SON
5. **Mahalaleel** (מַהֲלֵלֵל) = IN THE PRAISE OF GOD
4. **Cainan** (קַיִן) [qeynan] = from (קָן) [qen] = nest, fixed, room, chamber—hence, DWELLING
3. **Enos** (אֵנוֹשׁ) [enosh] = a weak, vulnerable MORTAL MAN
2. **Seth** (שֵׁת) [sheth] = from (שִׁיַּת) [shiyth] = to put, set, substitute, appoint—hence, APPOINTED A SUBSTITUTE FOR
1. **Adam** (אָדָם) [adam] = A MAN, THE CROWN OF CREATION

- Now if you put the meaning of the names of the 10 descendants from Adam to Noah together in their order, it actually forms a “message” - and would read as follows:

A MAN, THE CROWN OF CREATION
 APPOINTED A SUBSTITUTE FOR
 MORTAL MAN
 DWELLING
 IN THE PRAISE OF GOD
 A SON
 DEDICATED TO TEACH
 A MAN OF THE SWORD SENT FOR
 POWERFUL
 SALVATION!

- Now all I'm after here is to point out the fact that a **message** was being given back at the time of the Old World of the Ungodly—and it was not only Noah who was a “preacher of righteousness” - but even before Noah, God was making it clear to that world **what it was** (through the meaning of the names of the descendants of Adam) —

... and more than that, Enoch himself was used by God as a prophet — (but it's not until Jude that we know what Enoch was saying as God's prophet to the Old World of the Ungodly)—and the message that God was giving spelled out the fact that the judgment of the Flood was deserved—that is, they were 'vessels of wrath fitted to destruction' and God was right and just to destroy them by His wrath ... but also, it was spelled out to that Old World of the Ungodly (and to the New World Order that would follow), that this judgment of the flood was 'Part A' (if you will) of the Lord's wrath against the 'world of the ungodly' —

... and the 'world of the ungodly' was going to be allowed to develop again (with some modifications to it in connection with the ease by which it could develop being curtailed) - but it was going to develop again!

- So Jude records the prophecy of Enoch—a man that lived in the Old World of the Ungodly *before* the flood, but his prophesy had in view '**Part B**' - God's judgment of the New World Order — and looked out to the end of it (to the time of the Lord's Day of Wrath against the **re-developed** 'world of the ungodly')!

- And this prophesy of Enoch that Jude refers to has in view the individuals in the world at large that the members of the Remnant of Israel would be encountering outside the land of Israel—who were these supremely, extremely ungodly men—and who were the epitome (so to speak) of the 'vessels of wrath, fitted to destruction' — notice that repeated term/concept that Jude says that Enoch had prophesied about (and the same term/concept Peter described) will be their **UNGODLINESS!**

- (read Jude 14-15)

- Now Jude gives the details of their ungodliness—and it's not simply the issue of that fact that being sinners by nature, they are ungodly—(which is true) - but the context and what Jude sets forth is the issue that they have REVELED in their ungodliness—this ungodliness is in a category above and beyond their being ungodly by nature—because everything they do is to promote and develop and extend and advance ungodliness (and the ungodly course that Satan has charted for this world).

- In other words—they're the Adversary's 'movers & shakers' when it comes to the 'world of the ungodly'!

- My point is simply to show that if you take what Peter talks about in 2 Peter ch. 2 & 3—and then this prophesy of Enoch that Jude sets forth—(that views ‘Part B’ of God’s judgment and wrath) - you have to conclude that there was a ‘*world of the ungodly*’ that existed **before** the flood (which God destroyed), and that ‘world of the ungodly’ **will develop again** and finally be fully destroyed by God’s judgment and wrath out in the Lord’s day of wrath.

- And when you look at and think about the outworking and development of God’s program with Israel (from Genesis 12ff) - up to that Crisis Point in Acts 7 — you should also realize that on a ‘parallel track’ (so to speak), those Gentiles (who were ‘far off’ and ‘without God in the world’) were also involved with the Adversary’s program!

- The issue us—while God’s program isn’t with the Gentiles, (it’s with Israel) - the Adversary has a program with the Gentiles to try to GET to Israel!

- And **as** the Adversary’s program with the Gentiles (the world at large) develops and progresses on—what he’s after is producing “the world of the ungodly” again—and the truth of the matter is, that what he’s after is to swallow up Israel out in the 5th install.

- Satan wants a ‘world of the ungodly’ that’s in effect—that’s not only disgusting and vile in God’s sight—and provokes Him to wrath—but he wants that ‘world of the ungodly’ to be able to swallow up Israel—and consume them, and devour them—and make it as Psalm 83 says, *“Come, and let us cut them off from being a nation; that the name of Israel may be no more in remembrance.”*

- And folks, this is really a minimum you need to have in order to properly and intelligently understand and appreciate that expression in Romans 13:12, *“the night is far spent, the day is at hand.”*

- That expression is designed for you to look at the world in a particular way—the way in which God Himself, (and the Lord Jesus Christ who sits at the Father’s right hand) looks at it—and in view of our having that same viewpoint, realize that our Father has got an aspect of His business with respect to keeping **Dispensational Timing** ever before the eyes of

the Adversary and his cohorts—and we can now participate in that aspect of our Father business along with Him and His Son, the Lord Jesus Christ.

- And we've covered enough information right now for you to have a basic and fundamental understanding and appreciation for the fact that when Romans 9:22 talks about those *vessels of wrath fitted to destruction* - that intelligent understanding forms the foundation for our **Dispensational Timing Saying** in Romans 13:12 and being able to recognize therefore that when this disp. of grace was brought in, **THE NIGHT was 'cut off' at a very particular point (a Crisis Point)** - and now when we describe that "night" we can only describe it as "far spent" - and the "day is at hand" — and therefore when God's prog. w/ Israel resumes, the remaining part of "the night" is going to transpire, and then the "day" is going to come when God's wrath will be poured out on this earth.

- And all that is designed for us to have developed in us a godly ATTITUDE that comes from that godly thinking about Dispensational Timing—and once we've got that godly thinking & attitude—then our desire will be to Conduct & Behave ourselves in accordance with that—and by means of our godly Labor, we are going to intelligently engage the Adversary and his cohorts in the battle that our Father and His Son have been waging for the souls of men for thousands of years!

- The bottom line is—we have the high privilege of being the 'bearers of God's light' in the 'world of the ungodly' - which, since Satan was the original 'light-bearer' just drives him nuts!

- And by engaging in this battle with our Father—we then, as His adopted sons/daughter are allowed to be the beneficiaries of that engagement—whereby we can learn some things we could learn no other way—and we can appreciate some things about the POWER of the curriculum for our sonship education we could appreciate no other way—and we can gain some skills and some training that we could gain no other way!

- And in the end, be successful in our conformity to the image of Christ ... being "more than conquerors" by having the Adversary's 'tables turned' (so to speak) to our advantage!

- What we're after in all our studies over the past several Bible classes is to acquire the **Godly Thinking** of our *instruction of judgment* in connection with **Dispensational Timing**—and that's going to be accomplished by the effectual working of our Sonship Saying in Romans 13:12a, *The night is far spent, the day is at hand:*

- And before we move on to the Godly Living portion in the remainder of (:12, and :13) - I want to make sure that we also have developed within our hearts, the Godly ATTITUDE that comes from the godly thinking of that saying.

- And this is a tough thing to get accomplished and to become a permanent and sensitive matter of our heart due to how affected we naturally are by the course of this world that we have lived in for so long, and have to remain in for as long as we do live.

- The truth is—the Satanic course of this world is far more powerful than we often recognize—it's powerful, but oftentimes **very subtle** (that is, it often moves in very small steps—it's patient—and it will spend enormous energy to condition you before making its move, so to speak).

- And that is seen all the way back in the beginning of Genesis when Satan, (in the form of the serpent) tempted the woman — *Gen. 3:1 Now the serpent was more **subtil** than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made.*

- In Proverbs (7:10), that strange woman is described as “*a woman with the attire of an harlot, and **subtile** of heart.*”

- And this threat of being taken in by the Satanic course of this world is underscored by the apostle Paul when he tells the Corinthians of his fear of them being victimized by the Satanic PoE as it exists in the course of this world —

2 Corinthians 11

2 For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy: for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ.

*3 But I fear, lets by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve **through his subtilty**, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ.*

- And then Paul goes on to describe/list some of the ways in which those saints could be “corrupted” by the “beguiling” tactics of the Adversary—and in the middle of that list is this: “... or if ye receive another spirit, which ye have not received,” — that is, through the effectual working of the Curriculum for your Sonship Education, you have received “*the spirit which is of God*” — but it’s quite possible that you can receive (or have produced within you) “*another spirit*” (and even many other spirits of this world) - in other words, it’s quite possible that you could end up with an STD (a ‘**spiritually transmitted disease!**)

- The temptation is going to be to become ‘softened’ to the things of this world, to the people of this world, and to the course of this world—to compromise with it; to bend to it; to become fashioned by it—to dampen our desire to see men saved from it—and **time** spent in it without being firmly ‘established’ in godly edification and in the godly ATTITUDE that comes from ‘godly edifying which is in faith’ will eventually generate within us “another spirit” or another mind that ‘minds’ the things of this world and the things of our flesh! — and by going after our ‘mind’ (or spirit), that will then lead to another kind of Conduct & Behavior, and another kind of Labor that complies with the Adversary and his program/course for this world!

- In other words, instead of you becoming “godly”, you’ll end up becoming “satan-ly”!

- And acquiring a Godly ATTITUDE is a critically important thing for a son/daughter —

- ATTITUDE = (That’s a real simplistic word) - but it means (and what it all amounts to) is really the **end result** of information that has the capacity to shape your thinking in a way that is going to shape your living!

- And the reason that’s important is because when the attitude is what it needs to be—the curriculum **will not meet resistance** as it ‘reads’ you when it *renews your mind*, and when it ‘reads’ the way in which you live as a result of it! (The Curriculum is always ‘planting’ various seeds in your mind that are designed to bring forth ‘fruit’ unto holiness!)

- And one of the things that should loom large in your Attitude toward this world (and the course Satan has charted for it) - and that is supposed to be produced by that saying, *The night is far spent, the day is at hand*: - is that the ungodliness of the world at large had not only reached its Crisis Point in Acts 7—and that the wrath of God was at the point where it was ready to be righteously and justly poured out upon the world at large—but **more than all that, God’s wrath hasn’t cooled off or mellowed or reduced in its intensity one bit—NOR HAS THE WORLD AT LARGE BECOME ANY LESS UNGODLY (so as to have garnered favor in God’s sight and no longer be at that Crisis Point any more)!**

- Therefore, since the beginning of this disp. of grace, the world at large always has been at that Crisis Point; it IS at that Crisis Point right now (today); and it will be at that Crisis Point when God concludes this disp. of grace!

- Even though one of the ‘hallmarks’ of this disp. of grace is that God is holding back His wrath and being ‘longsuffering’ - the reality is that the wrath of God (as Paul sets forth in the 1st Part of the gospel of Christ in Romans), while it’s not being expressed right now (or executed right now), the truth is, **IT’S STILL THERE; still a reality; and still as strong as it was when God suspended His program w/ Isr.!**

18 For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness. (Rom. 1:18)

- But also remember that in the 2nd Part of the gospel of Christ, there’s an expression given there in connection with men **REJECTING** the truth of God-Consciousness and Wrath-Consciousness and going about to establish their own righteousness instead—and thinking that by doing so, they can escape the wrath of God that’s coming—

*5 But after thy hardness and impenitent heart **treasurest up unto thyself wrath** against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God; (Rom. 2:5)*

- Therefore, there’s actually an **INCREASING** ATTITUDE in connection with God’s wrath—and a ‘building up’ of it (so to speak) so that when this disp. of grace ends, and God resumes His prog. w/

Isr., and the things take place in the opening of God's resumption of His prog. w/ Isr.—the wrath of God is going to just **BURST** on this world! (just as it was ready to BURST at the Crisis Point back in Acts 7) ... and it's going to BURST with even GREATER force and intensity!

- And I'm saying all this to you (to build upon what we've come to understand and appreciate about the 'world of the ungodly' developing back in the "Old World") - and then the re-development of the "world of the ungodly" up to the Crisis Point—is that we make sure that we have the very same ATTITUDE God's Himself has toward the world at large and toward its ungodliness progressing and worsening and increasing in its vileness and offensiveness **EVEN DURING THIS DISP. OF GRACE!**

- It's the ATTITUDE concept that we now need to have developed within us—because it's particularly that ATTITUDE towards what's going on in this world, and towards the ungodliness of it, and towards the particular "*works of darkness*" that's the 'core' element of it all (and are the things that propel it, and that keep it in existence) and that cause it to become more and more disgusting & vile in God's sight—it's that Attitude that exists in God the Father (and in the Lord Jesus Christ) that our sonship Attitude is now supposed to correspond with—**and that corresponding Attitude is what will cause us to "cast off the works of darkness and put on the armour of light"** - and to, with zeal and excitement and determination and with intrepidity (courage) take on the Adversary in this respect!

- Now, with that all set up in your thinking—let's look at some passages in God's word that especially focus upon God's Attitude concerning the ungodliness of the world at large—(an ungodliness that isn't just sinful in general, but an ungodliness that is a result of the 'works of darkness' and that would bring God's wrath to that Crisis Point in which His Justice could no longer bear it).

- And this is important because we now need to have that same Attitude of disgust and revulsion, and repulsion in connection with the ungodliness of this world.

- Isaiah 13—We could look at numerous passages in the Prophets that focus upon the Lord's Day of Wrath—but this passage puts in a fairly brief

manner, God's Attitude towards the sinfulness and the wickedness and the ungodliness of man when He has His day of wrath.

- And since this describes God's Attitude towards the world of the ungodly when He has His day of wrath—that means therefore, that in essence, it's also describing God's Attitude at that Crisis Point in Acts 7 just prior to His bringing in this disp. of grace!

- And more important for our concerns as "sons" and as members of the new creature of the church the body of Christ today is—that this passage also describes God's Attitude towards the 'world of the ungodly' as it STILL EXISTS throughout this disp. of grace!

- (Even though, as Paul says in 2 Cor. 5:19 that right now God is not 'imputing their trespasses unto them'- He, in fact, still sees the trespasses—He still responds to them—and there's still His disgust for them—and there's still the **OUTRAGE** of His Righteousness and His Holiness—and there's still His Justice demanding those things be judged!)

- But the issue is, that at present, He's **holding back** that judgment and that wrath! — and people are being given the opportunity to be 'reconciled' back to Him *before* His day of wrath takes place—and in being reconciled, be delivered from His wrath to come!

- But when someone does NOT respond positively and properly to "the gospel of Christ" - from its beginning of the light of God-Consciousness and on ... if someone does NOT respond positively to that—the wrath of God is still (just like the 1st Part of the Gospel says), AGAINST their unrighteousness, and AGAINST their ungodliness—and they, in their foolishness and their stupidity are actually, by their negative response to the "gospel of Christ", in the moment-by-moment of their daily life as they live in this dispensation of grace — they are personally 'treasuring up unto themselves wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God'!

- Again, my point is that you **don't** get the idea that just because God

is being ‘longsuffering’ today, that He’s **not paying attention to anything** that’s going on in the world today that provokes Him to wrath! — the provocation still takes place; the wrath is still there, but the issue is, He’s SUFFERING WITH IT for as long as He’s keeping this disp. of grace in effect!

- And the issue for us at this particular point in our Sonship Education is the generation & development within us of that Attitude towards the ungodliness of this world that He is still suffering with, and is still ‘smoldering’ (so to speak) in His mind —

— and that He still has the same response to it in connection with every act of ungodliness & wickedness & unrighteousness that He sees going on in this world.

- Which makes it so that when this dis. of grace ends—God does **not** have to go back (so to speak) and pick up some record of what He was like back at that Crisis Point in order to regenerate within Himself, the proper Attitude of His wrath!

- No—the issue is, He’s just going to take the ‘**shackles**’ off of His wrath (so to speak)! — He’s going to take the **restraints** off that He’s put on Himself during this dis. of grace.

- And when He has His day of wrath—it will **burst out** with the same, even greater **intensity/vehemence** than it had before!

- But the whole reason for that is because His Attitude towards the ungodliness of this world (in all its various forms), and particularly towards some things that are identified as “*the works of darkness*” - which, of course, is what comes up in Romans 13, and which we have to understand so that we can “*cast off the works of darkness, and put on the armour of light*” in their stead.

- But the issue is—there’s some particular things that go on in the ungodliness of this world at large that are the CORE of it all—the NUCLEUS of it all (so to speak) ... the things that keep the course of this world ON COURSE as far as the Adversary is concerned ... and keeps this world going down a path of greater and greater evolving ungodliness that’s worsening and worsening, and becoming more Satan-like as it becomes more and more ungodly!

- And those CORE “works of darkness” is what we learn about, when we learn about God’s **Attitude** towards the ungodliness of this world.

- By looking at passages that describe the very Attitude He possessed at the moment the Lord Jesus Christ stood up at the Father’s right hand, and He was set to utter out of His mouth to His Son: MAKE YOUR ENEMIES YOUR FOOTSTOOL! ... we will then be able to appreciate “the works of darkness” for what they are—and to appreciate them in the context of Dispensational Timing—and in the context of the development of “The World of the Ungodly” Again!

- So we need to look at some passages where God focuses upon His **Attitude**, and uses terminology and words and phrases **that convey what’s in His mind!** (especially the **disgust**, and the **repulsion** that there is in His thinking toward “the world of the ungodly” and toward the particular “works of darkness” that fuel it.

- Isaiah 13—(actually, there are a lot of things God says to Isaiah that gives us a good understanding for what the “*works of darkness*” are all about—which is understandable when you realize that Isaiah was a 5th CoP prophet, and God sets forth some very basic & fundamental aspects of the “*works of darkness*” as they progress on throughout Israel’s 5th CoP (especially when he describes the things going on out in the 5th Inst. [the Lord’s Day of Wrath]).

- In fact, the only way the members of Israel will be able to understand the nature of God’s wrath (the fierceness of it; and the vengeful nature of it; and the intensity of it) is by what is set forth here in Isaiah, and in the other prophets (Jeremiah, Ezekiel, and even in the book of the Revelation).

- These prophets give Israel a frame of reference for the **destructiveness** of God’s wrath—and why words like “*perdition*” and “*perished*” that Peter uses, is so fitting for what God is doing in His day of wrath.

- The only way the members of the Remnant of Israel will have that kind of understanding is to have passages that describe God’s **ATTITUDE** toward what it is He’s **judging!**

(that the things He’s judging are such an OUTRAGE to God)

- Here in Isaiah 13, we have the Day of the Lord in view—and you get some terminology that’s used to describe both the effects it’s going to have upon the people of this world at large, and the people that make up the apostate element of Israel in particular—and the reason for those devastating effects is because all that’s being done by the world at large and by apostate Israel has so OUTRAGED God that He can’t hold His wrath back any longer!

- (read Isa. 13:6-8) - here you have described the effects that the Lord’s day of wrath is going to have on the people that are on the receiving end of it—which is the issue of “*Howl ye*” - they’re going to be ‘howling’ in pain!

- And the Day of the Lord is going to “*come as a **destruction from the Almighty***” - there’s reasons for His destroying (just as there was back at the Flood) - and these people are going to be on the receiving end of MASSIVE DESTRUCTION!

- (:7 & 8) go on to describe in some graphic detail, the impact the LDoW is going to have upon men—and what’s going to be going on in their minds.

- But notice at (:9), the Lord begins to ‘shift gears’ - and now He begins to focus His attention upon His REASONS behind all this wrath/judgment. (not that this is the 1st passage on this, or that the people of Israel had no knowledge about any of this, or why ... no ... the issue here isn’t to give an understanding of why the Day of the Lord was coming—rather, so they could understand BETTER why the *kind* of **destruction** that’s coming is going to be as intense as it will be; why the kind of **devastation** that’s coming, is going to come as it does—in other word’s, why it’s the **fitting** and **deserved** thing it is to the world of the ungodly!)

- And to get that understanding, you have to see this wrath from God’s viewpoint—from how His +R/+J have been, (not merely offended), but **OUTRAGED**—and therefore what His ATTITUDE is towards the re-developed world of the ungodly!

- (And remember, it’s one thing for the ‘world of the ungodly’ to develop the 1st time to the point where God had to judge/destroy it by the flood—but it’s another, even **greater outrage** for it to develop again when God has sitting in history and Ensample/Warning to man about developing it again: SODOM & GOMORRAH!)

- (read :9) - The focus of His attention is first of all the land of Israel and the ungodliness of it (the apostate, rebellious element that has joined up with the world of the ungodly).

- But notice in (:9), *the day of the LORD cometh, **cruel both with wrath and FIERCE ANGER***—that terminology indicates that something has MIGHTILY PROVOKED the LORD—something has made Him MAD! (fighting mad!) (mad enough to DESTROY it)!

- In fact, it indicates that He has been OUTRAGED by something!

- (read :10-13) - (:12) indicates that God is going to so destroy the men of Babylon so much that a single man to defend the city will be more rare & valuable than fine gold! (A great slaughter is going to take place!) — (Ophir was a country with which Solomon traded and was known for their gold production)

- But what I'm after is especially the terminology sitting in (:11) - and notice again, it says, *"And I will punish the world for their evil, and the wicked for their iniquity; and I will cause the arrogance of the proud to cease, and will lay low the haughtiness of the terrible.*

- Now we'll return to this passage later on when we deal with "the works of darkness" - especially one that gets brought up here and how abominable it is to God (and how Satan-like it is to Him)!

- But for now I want to zero in on some terminology that expresses how God's perfect +R/+J, and His perfect Holiness **responds** to the general ungodliness of man, that reaches its zenith (or Crisis Point) when "the world of the ungodly" reaches its 'high water mark' and makes it so that God has His "day" and brings the destruction and the devastation that's described here.

- Notice in (:11) He says, *And I will punish the world **for their evil***—and notice that He's now moved from the "land" of Israel in (:9) to the "world" at large in (:11).

- "*Evil*" is a word you're familiar with—especially as it pertains to the Adversary & his overall Plan as God's Adversary and all of the

Policies of Evil he puts into effect to support his Plan of Evil (and to promote it and respond to all of the things God is doing as He deals with the Adversary's Plan).

- *Evil* by nature, is **anything that is contrary to God's will!**
... and that therefore, sets itself up AGAINST God and operates AGAINST Him—and that functions, therefore, in OPPOSITION to Him.

- And the significance of that expression in this passage is that, **that is what the WORLD AT LARGE has become!**

- Truth is—as the world at large re-developed into “*the world of the ungodly*”, it became **the world of *EVIL***—it became the world that is in complicity with the Adversary, and is zealously complying/participating/cooperating with the Adversary!

- The world had (more or less) signed on with him—in some cases wittingly, in other cases unwittingly) - but the issue is, they **bought** his Plan/Policy of Evil, and **preferred** them, and **found pleasure** in them ... hook, line, & sinker! (and that's the state the world at large is still in, today!)

- So the world at large is EVIL in its cooperation with the Satanic PoE, and the course the Adversary has charted for it—and more than that, **it is actively involved in promoting it to the repudiation of anything God is doing—in fact, it actually PERFERS “the course of this world” the Adversary has charted!**

- And as it does that, it brings itself closer and closer to ‘Satan-li-ness’ (Satan-like-ness)!

- **The ‘capstone’ of the evolution of man’s ungodliness is when it becomes ‘Satan-like’!**

- And the issue is—that in Isaiah, as God sees the 5th CoP being brought upon the people of Israel, and then looks out to the time in which His day of wrath will culminate the whole thing—He’s providing for His members of the Rem. of Isr. with the ability to look back into ‘world history’ (so to speak), and to realize that as “the world of the ungodly” developed again, it’s been doing the very thing that it did back in the Old World!

- And **as** it developed in the Old World—it eventually came to the point where it ‘opened its arms’ (so to speak) to the Adversary, and **welcomed** him & his cohorts in to it.

- And it began a ‘**fraternity**’ (= a body of people associated for a common purpose or interest) - it began a fraternization with the Adversary, in utter repudiation of God!

- In fact—Job describes the ‘world of the ungodly’ in just this way!

- **see Job 21:1-20 (:14-15)**

- And then Eliphaz (one of Job’s so-called friends—who gave poor counsel to Job, but sometimes states the truth) - he goes on to describe that utter repudiation of God when he refers to what the men of the ‘Old World’ said back in their day —

- **see Job 22:15-17**

- So when the men of the ‘Old World’ heard Enoch’s testimony; and then heard Noah preach to them for years and years—they not only dismissed the issue of the judgment that was coming... but they expressed their HATRED for God (for the true and living God)!

- And in their wanting to have nothing to do with Him—in so doing, they opened their arms to the Adversary—and they began a LOVE-RELATIONSHIP with him!

- And they, therefore, **embraced EVIL**—to the point where the evil of man became just as it was described in Gen. 6:5 ... *“every imagination of the thoughts of [man’s] heart was only evil continually.”*

- And now in the ‘New World Order’ - as “the world of the ungodly” developed again—it follows that same pattern—and it bears all of the same characteristics of the ungodliness of the ‘Old World’ - and in Isaiah 13, God looks over the span of man’s existence in the ‘New World Order’, and He sees all of that taking place again—He sees the world of the ungodly becoming wholly EVIL.

- And all these issues and concepts are what you need to have (frame of reference-wise) in order to have generated within you this godly ATTITUDE that we’re after!

- (especially in connection with the CURRENT course of this world that you see going on around you every day!)

- And when you realize that the “world of the ungodly” that developed again (after the flood) - and came to a ‘head’ at that Crisis Point **really was** (and really **still is**) ‘*a world of EVIL*’ - and that man’s participation in it, and cooperation with it, and promoting of it, got greater and greater; and worsened more and more ... in fact, to the point that God’s own Nation (Israel) was drawn to it more and more (to the point that when the Lord Jesus Christ was assigned to the Cross, the people of Israel, along with the Gentile kings of the earth all came together against God and against His Christ (as per Psa. 2) - then you’ll realize the truth in describing that re-developed ‘world of the ungodly’ as the EVIL that it was, and that is still IS!

- And what you have to keep in mind is that all that world of Evil reached it’s Crisis Point where God was right & just to act in judgment & wrath there in Acts 7—and more than that, the nature of this world didn’t change when God interrupted His prog. w/ Isre. and became ‘longsuffering’ towards the ‘vessels of wrath fitted to destruction’!

- God’s ATTITUDE towards this world (from the beginning of this disp. of grace; at present; and at the time it ends—is one of recognizing that it **is** ‘the world of the ungodly’ and with its Evil being at that Crisis Point of following the course of this world to such a degree that it has **embraced** the course of this world **whole-heartedly!**

- (see Rev. 14:14-20; 19:17-21)

- (look again at Isa. 13:11) - *And I will punish the world for their evil, and the world for their iniquity;*

- Within the whole ‘world of the ungodly’ at-large—within the whole scope of the “*evil*” that the world has ‘signed on to’, and is complying with, and is preferring, and is participating in the development of ... in the midst of all that, God kind of singles something out here—He says, “***and the wicked for THEIR INIQUITY;***

- You have 'The World of the Ungodly At-Large' and their **EVIL**- and everything within it is ungodliness in God's eyes—and everything within it is complying with, and going along with, and promoting the Plan of Evil at-large as the course of this world evolves & worsens and works towards the complete Satan-li-ness of the world in opposition to God.

- But then, it's kind of like, as God speaks about that—He then comes along and says, In the midst of all that, is something that is kind of like the 'Life-Blood' of it all—and that's what God refers to when He says, "*and the wicked for their iniquity;*"

- In the midst of all that 'world of the ungodly at-large' and their EVIL are ones that God calls "**wicked**" - and what they've got themselves involved with is "**INIQUITY**" (what they do is pure "*iniquity*" in God's sight).

- God takes that "*evil*" term (that is bad enough on its own), and all of the revulsion/repulsion that that generates within Him—and yet He can see in the midst of that '*world and their evil*' is this 'cauldron' (so to speak) of **extreme vileness** that's the 'life' of all the "*evil*" ...

... and there are certain ones of evil, ungodly men who give themselves over & become participants in that iniquity, and are kind of the 'movers & shakers' of it—and become the Adversary's 'chief men' (so to speak) in connection with maintaining the course of this world.

- And that 'core element' of "*the wicked and their iniquity*" are at the core of all the world's vileness & disgustingness & abominable type things/activities that are specifically designed (as far as the Adversary & the course of this world he's charted are concerned), are specifically designed to express ultimate contrariness & rebelliousness against God! (and are designed to provoke Him! and irritate Him! and to be offensive to His +R & holiness—and to be an OUTRAGE therefore to His Justice!)

- And the individuals of men who are within the overall 'world of the ungodly' and the *world of evil* that are engaged in the **iniquity** (and are at the 'core' of it all) are described as "**wicked**"!

- “*wicked*” = (comes from the word *wretched*, in which you are cast away and abandoned in a state of vileness, contempt, & hatred) = **addicted** to willful wrong-doing; putting evil into practice—one of the strongest words to express the highest degree of evil quality.

- Interestingly enough—would you be surprised to find that the very 1st time the word *wicked* is used in the Bible is in Genesis 13:13, *But the men of Sodom were wicked and sinners before the LORD exceedingly.*

- In fact, these individuals will be the ones who actually ‘sign on’ with the Adversary’s specific Policy of Evil that will take place out in the 5th Instal./5th CoP—when the Adversary himself as “*that Wicked*” (that Wicked one) implements it!

- By the way—you should have an increased appreciation for just why God uses the terminology He does in that passage of 2 Thessalonians that we studied a while back when we were getting a better frame of reference for the end of this disp. of grace ...

7 For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way.

*8 And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming:
(2 Thessalonians 2:7-8)*

- But my point is, those “*wicked*” ones will be the ones who ‘sign on’ to Satan’s specific PoE at that time—and they’ll be the ones who go out into the world to “sell” it to the rest of the world!

- The very word that God uses to describe the ‘man of sin’ for his **offensiveness** to God (*that Wicked* [one]) — (described in Nahum 1:11, *There is one come out of thee, that imagineth evil against the LORD, a wicked counselor. [a counselor of Belial!]) — *wicked* is the very word God uses to describe the men in general, who, in the midst of ‘the world of the ungodly’ and their Evil, are the ones who are at the core of it all, and ‘stoking the fire’ and reveling in all that vileness and iniquity!*

- Then, in connection with this, God says (in Isa. 13:11), *And I will punish the world for their evil, and the wicked for their **iniquity**; ...*

- And just as a reminder again—that word **iniquity** is the word that God uses to describe the PERSONAL OFFENSIVENESS of sin and evil and unrighteousness and ungodliness.

- It's the word that describes that what is being done is so vile to Him; so offensive to Him; so disgusting to Him that He **ABHORS** it!

- It provokes His Justice and His righteous anger and His righteous wrath to destroy it; to get rid of it; to remove it; to abolish it because of just how offensive it is!

- And my point is—these are the kind of words we need to gain a better appreciation for—because these are the words that describe God's ATTITUDE towards the ungodliness of man—and not just in general or at any particular time (which would be perfectly true) - but especially in connection with the development of “the world of the ungodly” again, and the Dispensational Timing of this disp. of grace when that Crisis Point was reached and the “vessels of wrath were fitted to destruction”, but now God is enduring them in His longsuffering! (but they're still in that ‘fitted to destruction’ state!)

- And the world at-large and their Evil; and the wicked and their Iniquity had worsened and worsened to the point that it was so vile/offensive/disgusting/outrageous in God's sight that His wrath was all set to DESTROY it all ...

... but if it hadn't been for a **greater issue**: the revelation of the “mystery of Christ” with its deliverance of *the creature* from the bondage of corruption as well—so that the whole Plan of Evil, and its implementation **throughout all of creation** can be destroyed ... and therefore, ungodliness can now not only be destroyed on the Earth, but in the Heavenly Places as well—and if it were not for that, God wouldn't have suspended His prog. w/ Isr., brought in this disp. of grace, and for a long time now endure with *much longsuffering* those *vessels of wrath fitted to destruction*.

- But the point is—that God's ATTITUDE towards the ‘world of the ungodly’ **hasn't altered one bit!**

- (God isn't becoming more 'mellow' and 'open-minded' and 'tolerant' in connection with man's ungodliness!)

- And the issue is—that the 2nd Component of our *instruction of Judgment* in Romans 13—and the Godly Thinking concerning the Dispensational Timing of this disp. of grace in (:11-12a) is designed to generate within us the 'un-mellowed', 'un-altered', 'un-diminished' and un-abated ATTITUDE towards the ungodliness of this world!

- And in particular—toward some CORE issues in that ungodliness that the Lord describes as **pure INIQUITY** in His sight!

- And by getting God's Attitude generated within us—we are then to have generated a desire for a proper godly response by which we will then *cast off the works of darkness, and put on the armour of light*.

- And that expression, *the night is far spent, the day is at hand*, comes along and grabs your attention to the backdrop to this disp. of grace and says, LOOK at what was going on at that Crisis Point at the beginning of it—LOOK at God's attitude toward the re-developed 'world of the ungodly' throughout the duration of this disp. of grace, and LOOK at what will be taking place when it ends!

- LOOK at it from GOD'S perspective in connection with Him JUDGING the NIGHT! and having His DAY! (bringing the "night" to its end! — and bringing the "darkness" of this world to its end! and establishing His kingdom of 'light' and 'truth' and righteousness and godliness!)

- **And make sure** that you have God's **attitude** towards the course of this world that goes on around you while the *longsuffering* of God in this disp. of grace **remains in effect!**

- And begin to **reflect** that attitude in the details of your life by your Conduct & Behavior—and take a particular course of action, yourself, therefore, in the midst of the course of this world with respect to those "works of darkness" that lie at the very CORE of it all!

- And do so with the purpose of engaging the Adversary's PoE, and provoking it to come against you—but at the exact same time with an intelligent understanding that you will be *more than a conqueror through him that loved you!*

- The truth is—as God talks about His “Day” coming, what’s been going on all along until His “Day” takes place is something He calls, “*THE NIGHT*”!

- Because the ‘prince of this world’ with his ‘rulers of the darkness of the world’ have done some things throughout the development of the progression of events from the time that the New World Order was set up that have brought a “Night” effect upon the world—and have produced “darkness” in understanding, and ‘darkness’ in connection with the ‘light’ of Truth.

- And the “works of darkness” that had come to a Crisis Point in Acts 7, are being kept alive and well (in their dark state) by the Adversary in the course of this world while it continues on all throughout this disp. of grace.

- And that’s the particular thing we have the privilege of responding to by casing those works of darkness off, and putting on the armour of light—making an impact to the provoking of the Satanic PoE, and to the honor & glory of God, and thereby, gaining all of the benefit that has for us as God’s properly educated and properly responding “sons”!

- Now, while it may seem that we’re kind of ‘skirting’ the issue of what these “works of darkness” are all about—you’re right—and we will deal with them in great detail coming up—but at the present, we’re still focusing upon the general ‘backdrop/background’ to the Timing of this disp. of grace, and the Attitude God has (and you need to have) regarding the world of the ungodly and their Evil, and the Core of that world: the Wicked and their Iniquity.

- And what should be emerging now in your understanding and in getting a better appreciation of—is the **magnificence** of living in this present disp. of God’s grace—that while the world at-large still are in a state of being those *vessels of wrath fitted to destruction*, God is being longsuffering in shewing forth His wrath, but is now (with you and I, and all the other members of the church, the body of Christ down through its existence and as long as it does exist on this earth) God is ‘*making known the riches of his glory*’ unto us—which takes place through the Curriculum for our Son. Edu.

- And what should be taking place in our Sonship Education right now is gaining the ‘full strength’ of godly ABHORRENCE for the world of the ungodly—(and especially for the Core Elements [*“the works of darkness”*]) of it that go to making up the Wicked and their Iniquity!

- So that, when we come to view them as God Himself does, we will have the full strength of godly disdain & hatred for those things—so that we will have NOTHING to do with them; and are repulsed by them; and are repelled by them; and find them so disgusting that we want to ‘cast them off’!

- In short—the goal here is to generate within you the same kind of godly abhorrence/disdain/hatred that God Himself has—for the *works of darkness* ... and for the Wicked and their Iniquity!

- And this shouldn’t be a ‘shocking’ thing to you at all ... because the truth is, we have already been confronted with the issue of having generated within us (by the effectual working of God’s word), some measure of godly disdain & ABHORRENCE!

- Remember back in our 2 Component of our instruction of godly Wisdom—(Romans 12:9-10) - [and the 2nd Major Feature of Godly Love = Kindness] - as part of the issue of the *renewing of your mind*, and as part of the issue of *conforming you to the image of God’s Son*.

- And you were confronted with the basic issues of *good* and *evil* — (*evil* = anything harmful or troublesome or painful that befalls another member of the body in the local assembly; *good* = anything that tends to the happiness, prosperity, wellbeing, health, advantage, benefit, or profit of another member of the body in the local assembly).

9 *Let love be without dissimulation. **ABHOR** that which is evil; cleave to that which is good.*

10 *Be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love; in honour preferring one another;*

- Remember that the Godly Thinking component generated within you a measure of godly **abhorrence** for *“that which is evil”*- and God began a process within us there of producing some godly abhorrence for some things. (viz., basic *evil*)

- “**Abhor**” (the action of your thinking toward *that which is evil*) —
What does it mean to *abhor* something?

= to shrink back in dread; to regard with horror and extreme repugnance or disgust; to hate utterly; to loathe; abominate; to view something as so horrible that it makes you bristle, shiver, shake or recoil—**it’s a term of hating, loathing or disgust to the highest degree possible!**

- It’s a term of **thinking** that actually causes or triggers a soulish response or reaction!

- And because of that—what’s being described here is a ‘sentiment’ of aversion possessed by God Himself—and one that you as His son are going to possess yourself (by the effectual working of this verse).

- *Abhor*—from the Latin Prefix *ab* = to turn away from + *hor* (Lat., *horreo*) = to stiffen with horror.

- Charles Smith: “*Abhor* expresses a strong **involuntary recoil**—he who abhors something would **escape** from and **avoid** it.” (Synonyms Discriminated)

- Therefore, since *abhorrence* is a **thinking** about something so that an emotional sentiment or feeling is produced by that thinking—it comes as no surprise to find that *abhorrence* is described in God’s word as taking place in the *soul*:

- Lev. 26:15 (Israel-1st CoP); :30 (God Himself-5th CoP)

- And hopefully, since this Component of Godly Wisdom (loving-kindness) is supposed to still be an ongoing aspect of your sonship life in this local assembly—this generation of godly Abhorrence has been an ongoing issue with you for some time now!

- In fact, this godly Abhorrence should have extended out from the local assembly to your friends, family, and with all men in general because of some things your Sonship Education taught you in your instruction of Justice—for example in Romans 12:17—*Recompense to no man evil for evil.*)

- But now in Ch. 13, we have a particular aspect of *evil* with respect to the Satanic Plan/Policy of Evil as it operates in this world at-large that we need to have some godly abhorrence for.

- And there are some things that go on in the course of this world that the Adversary has charted—and in the world of the ungodly that has re-developed (and still goes on throughout the time of this disp. of grace) - especially in regards to the Wicked and their Iniquity that's so vile, and so disgusting, and so abhorrent to God ... and now has to be that same way within us as His intelligized sons! (that same Attitude)

- Psalm 5—(sits in Book I = the Redeemer & His Redemption—the 1st Mandate of the Davidic Covenant)

- Really, everything in the book of Psalms concerns the members of the Remnant of Isr., and what they'll be dealing with in the Climactic Stage of God's program w/ Israel.

- And the 5 Mandates of the Dav. Cov. all have to do with God putting His Jehovah-ness & grace into effect—to do for them what they cannot do for themselves.

- And the Remnant of Isr. will be having to deal with the course of this world that has reached its Crisis Point and become the 'world of the ungodly' all over again—and they'll have to contend with both the zenith of the ungodliness that exists in Israel itself (the vain, religious system that has allowed itself to become victimized by the Satanic PoE) **AND** the zenith of the ungodliness and wickedness and iniquity of the world at-large as the nations of the world (especially the 10 confederate nations) come together with apostate Israel to destroy them off the face of the earth!

- And I'm pointing this out just to say that you should now be able to take some information that you've already been familiar with by now (the 5 M of the DC, and how the book of Psalms matches up with them) - and ADD to that a **layer** of better clarity & understanding by recognizing that all these Psalms deal with the Rem. of Isr. at the very time in which the Lord's Day of Wrath is coming upon them—and so you should have greater clarity as to just how to handle the information you read in the Psalms!

- In other words—you can now ADD to your understanding the issue of the ‘world of the ungodly developing again’ to that Crisis Point—and that there are some Core Elements to it that have to do with the Wicked and their Iniquity that have reached its Crisis Point as well!

- (and that’s significant to the things you read in the Psalms).

- And the truth is—building upon the education that the members of the Rem. of Isr. get out of the book of Psalms — they will take up their Sonship Education Curriculum of Hebrews-Revelation and part of their education is to have generated within them godly Attitude of Abhorrence/disdain/disgust/hatred for the course of this world, and for the Core Issues of the Wicked and their Iniquity.

- And really—therefore, the godly Attitude of the Rem. of Isr. actually **PARALLELS** the godly Attitude of us, the members of the church, the body of Christ in this disp. of grace!

- And I say all that—to say that we can really gain a great deal of **benefit** by what we read in these Psalms (as long as we keep everything [doctrinally] in its proper place, properly handling the word of truth.

- Psalm 5:1-8 (read)

- Notice in (:8) that the members of the Rem. of Isr. are going to be dealing with their **enemies**—they have an enemy—in fact, they have a particular kind of enemy ...

... because in a sense, by means of their Sonship Education, they will have put themselves in a position where they, too, provoke the Adversary! — and they, too, become the focal point of the Adversary and a particular Policy of Evil against them!

- And they’ve got some *enemies*—and those enemies start off being members of their own Nation (apostate, rebellious Israel) - and that’s the 1st Category of enemies they’ll have to deal with — but there’s far more to the wickedness and iniquity that exists in apostate/rebellious Israel—there’s actually a co-habitation of it with the Wicked & their Iniquity!

- So when you're talking about "the world of the ungodly" developing again—in view of this New Nation of God's own creation (the Nation Israel) now in existence in the world—the Remnant of Isr. will understand (and you need to understand) that as Israel's history progressed on—and as the "world of the ungodly" developed again, (and worsened) — as Israel (in "Time Past") responded negatively to God and to His word and came under the 5 Courses of Punishment — there was a **parallel track** of ungodliness going on with the world at-large—and there was constant contact being made with it by Israel — and therefore there was this 'fraternizing' going on that I talked about—and there was an attraction and a 'kinship' (so to speak) that developed between Israel and the world at-large (kind of like a marriage—they were 'wedded' to "the world of the ungodly")! [ala Hosea]

- And eventually they **do** come together as **one**—and they **work** together (just as we have noted before in Psalm 2 ... *"the kings of the earth [the world of the ungodly] and the rulers [Israel's vain, religious system that is now totally 'wedded' to the world of the ungodly] take counsel together, against the LORD, and against his anointed [Christ] ...*

- And they CAME together and crucified the Lord Jesus Christ;
 - and they STAYED together in their rebelliousness & contrariness to God in the extension of Mercy & Forbearance;
 - and they REMAIN together out in the Lord's Day of Wrath!

- My point is—that just as you have "the world of the ungodly" which is made up of 'the world at-large and their Evil' + the Core Element of 'the Wicked and their Iniquity' — **that exact same thing parallels the nation Israel**—(the 'world at-large and their Evil' + 'the Wicked and their Iniquity' were all working and running full-throttle in Israel, just as it was in the world at-large)!

- Which is why God calls Israel a "*sinful nation*" that has to be DESTROYED in the Day of His Wrath! (just as "the world of the ungodly has to be destroyed in the day of His wrath—and for the exact same reasons!")

- (see Isaiah 1:2-20)

- In fact—back in 1 Samuel 8, when Israel demanded a king in order to be *like all the nations* (which was a breaking of the Law, sitting back in Deu. 17) ... they actually set themselves on a path that would end up with them becoming EXACTLY LIKE all the other nations in all the same ways they were ungodly—and Israel would end up being the Adversary’s “lawful captive” - and he would then be able to develop within them the exact same ‘world of the ungodly’ with the exact same Core Element sitting in its midst—with the exact same ‘works of darkness’ going on—and with them becoming Wicked and full of Iniquity which God **hates** and **abhors!**

- (back to Psalm 5:8) — although the particular *enemies* that the members of the Rem. of Isr. have to deal with first and foremost come from their own nation—and the wickedness described in (:9) are of the people of Israel themselves (which we noted when Paul quotes from this (:9) passage in Romans 3:13) - we know that the wickedness, etc., God describes here in Psa. 5, and His Attitude towards it is the exact same Attitude He has towards the Wicked and their Iniquity within the world of the ungodly at-large (**because that’s where it all came from!**)

- So we can gain some insight into God’s Attitude towards the re-developed ‘world of the ungodly’ as it not only existed in the nations of the world, but as it existed in the Nation Israel as well—and part of the Sonship Education of the members of the Rem. of Isr. will be to have generated within them (from the effectual working of God’s word [Heb-Rev]), a Godly hatred & abhorrence for “the works of darkness” that operate in the ‘world of the ungodly.’

- (note :4—David says, [and the Rem. will say]) ... *For thou art not a God that hath pleasure in wickedness: neither shall evil dwell with thee.*

- And while, granted, this is a true statement about God’s attitude towards wickedness at any time—the truth is, the Rem. of Isr. will know that this has some specific application to the time in which they will be living out in the Climactic Stage of their program!

- They will recognize the ‘world of the ungodly’ has developed again, and that it has come to a Crisis Point—and with the rest of the Mandates of the Dav. Cov. coming into effect—the Rem. will know

that this is not just a general statement, but rather is God's Attitude towards the '*world of the ungodly*' and the "wickedness" and iniquity that's reached that Crisis Point in both Israel and in the world at large!

- (and they are recognizing that God has no '*pleasure*' in that *wickedness* – in fact, He's going to come to the point where He will no longer 'suffer' it!)

- By the way—notice here in (:4) you have the same 2 terms that we saw Isaiah use in Isaiah ch. 13 ... *For thou art not a God that hath pleasure in wickedness* (Isa. 13:11 ... *I will punish ... the wicked for their iniquity*) — *neither shall evil dwell with thee* (Isa. 13:11 ... *I will punish the world for their evil* ...)

- Psalm 5:5-6 5 *The foolish shall not stand in thy sight: thou hatest all workers of iniquity.*
- 6 *Thou shalt destroy them that speak leasing ...*

- "*leasing*" (used only here and in Psalm 4:2) - the word is considered 'archaic' - and so in all of the modern Eng. Trns., they translate it 'lies' or 'falsehood' for the most part — *leasing* = a lie or a falsehood—but since the word *leasing* is NOT the exact same thing as the word 'lie' or 'falsehood', then there must be some reason why the KJ Translators choose the word *leasing* over 'lie' and 'falsehood' (which they had available, and used in several cases).

- *leasing*, while it certainly does mean a lie/falsehood, it was a word in older English that was reserved for a particular kind of lie/falsehood—it was used for one who utters untrue and slanderous statements such as are likely to prejudice the relations between the king and his subjects—therefore, it meant **verbal sedition!** ("sedition" = violent political strife; conduct or language inciting rebellion against constituted authority; **rioting** & disorder; a concerted movement to overthrow an established government; a revolt, rebellion, mutiny.)

(cont.) 6 ... *the LORD will **abhor** the bloody and deceitful man.*

- Notice that this passage is **full** of the kind of expression that focus upon the Attitude of God toward the Iniquity in Israel—(which they picked up from, and which developed in them from ‘the world of the ungodly’ at large)!

- Especially at the time of the arrival of the Climactic Stage in Israel’s program (i.e., 4th Install./5th CoP), as it reaches the Crisis Point in Acts 7—and then when He executes His wrath upon both Israel and the world at large in the 5th Install. — both, being in that state of *fitted to destruction*!

- And the goal (as far as God’s Attitude and Actions towards the iniquity of the Jews and the iniquity of the Gentiles in the Climactic Stage of Israel’s program) - the goal is for God to DWELL here on this earth—(which began with God the Son dwelling here in the 4th Install., but was rejected and murdered—and will end with both God the Father and God the Son dwelling on this earth when His kingdom gets established)! [God the Holy Ghost, too]

- And when the Kingdom gets established, and God does dwell on the earth—it will be just as (:4) says, *neither shall evil dwell with thee!* (He won’t allow evil to dwell with Him while He’s here ... because He **HATES IT!**)

- The point is—the Remnant of Israel will pick up this Psalm and will recognize and acknowledge the Lord’s Attitude towards things going on in both apostate Israel, and in the world at-large.

- (and by default (so to speak), that’s God’s Attitude **right now** toward this present world at large in this disp. of grace)!

- This world has no idea how appreciative it should be for God’s ‘longsuffering’ and for His greater purpose of the ‘revelation of the mystery of Christ’ and His creation of the One New Man of the church, the body of Christ!

- And again—just to underscore all the more God’s Attitude toward the “evil” and the “wicked” and the “iniquity” in both Israel and in the world at large—remember once again, God’s Attitude reflected in the terminology that was used by John the Baptist as he signaled the end of the famine of the hearing of God’s word, and the beginning of the Climactic Stage in Israel’s program ...

- **Matthew 3**—John describes the arrival of the Climactic Stage and the Wrath that's coming ...

- (:7-12) (:7—Israel is in view here—but the point is, the readiness is there for God to have His day of Wrath!)

- And when the 5th CoP arrives, He's NOT going to say to Himself, Now, why was I doing that? I really don't feel like loping down all these trees!

- No—rather, He's going to be the greatest, most powerful 'Lumberjack' of all time! Because when the Day of the Lord comes, it will be *cruel both with wrath and fierce anger!!!*

- The idea is that He's going to fell those trees with great anger and hatred and abhorrence for those evil and wicked 'trees'!

- He's going to have an ATTITUDE!

- And all those terms in that 5th Psalm bring that Attitude out and spotlight it!

- And before we leave the 5th Psalm—just notice (:6) again ...

- Psalm 5:6—(read) - and notice that (:6) is put in the **Future** — because from the perspective of the Remnant of Israel, some of them are going to be living in the 4th Install., and looking in the future to the 5th Install. as it's described here in (:6). — and that's in keeping with the perspective of Psalm 5 (the Redeemer Mandate of the Dav. Cov.).

- The '*workers of iniquity*' (:5) were already working in the 4th Install. — but the 'capstone' of them all out there in the 5th Install. in connection with Israel will involve the issue of some *bloody and deceitful* men that are coming—and there's **one bloody and deceitful MAN** of them all who's coming! (and the Lord will **abhor** them/him!)

- So that gives you some idea of the Lord's Attitude toward *the night* when it reached its Crisis Point in the Adversary's 'darkness' - and the Lord's Attitude was, still is, and will be one of **Climactic Abhorrence, Hatred, and Disdain!**

- And the issue for us, in thinking about Dispensational Timing and *the night being far spent, and the day is at hand* is the effectual

generation within us of that same Godly Abhorrence, Hatred, and Disdain for the ‘course of this world’; for the evolution of man’s ungodliness; and for those particular “works of darkness” that are the ‘life-blood’ of the whole thing! (and that are particularly being maintained & constantly fueled & constantly promoted by the Adversary THROUGHOUT this disp. of grace ... and then to respond positively & properly to that Godly Thinking! (in C&B; and in Labor)

- **Psalm 10**—(cycles back to this issue of God’s Attitude—especially toward Jewish Iniquity) — (another Psalm that Paul cites from in Romans 3) - but again, while the context is dealing with Jewish Iniquity, the issue is, again, they became “wicked” and filled with “iniquity” in God’s sight by means of their cooperation with ‘the world of the ungodly’ at large!

- (read :1-4) - Notice the “wicked” and their ‘persecution of the poor’ (which includes the Remnant of Israel at that time) becomes the focal point of this Psalm.

- And the Time Frame here is the persecution of the Remnant during the time that the **Redeemer** Mandate of the Dav. Cov. was (and will be) in effect—which deals with the time during the 4th Instal./5th CoP (during the Lord’s earthly ministry; and during the Year of F/M — ***and*** during the opening part of the 5th Install., just before the Deliverer & Avenger Mandates kick in).

- And when this disp. of grace ends, the Redeemer Mandate will still be in effect for God’s prog. w/ Israel—and at the beginning of the 5th Install., the Remnant will be suffering persecution (of a mild/troublesome sort, but persecution none the less).

- And that’s why (:1) says, *Why standest thou afar off, O LORD? why hidest thou thyself in times of trouble?*

- And it will seem that way to the Remnant—but part of their Sonship Education will teach them the Wisdom & Genius of God in doing that—and they will have something very similar to what we have in our Sonship Education when it come to the activities of the PoE against us, just as God has designed it in His wisdom that we become *more than*

conquerors through him that loved us when we face the PoE — well, so too do the members of the Remnant of Israel have something along those lines to benefit from—and they need to understand & appreciate that. (rewards in that Kingdom)

- And as you continue on in the Psalms that follow the 10th Psalm, you find that the members of the Rem. of Isr. begin to understand the Wisdom in what God is doing! (and WHY He's not functioning as their Deliverer & Avenger right away!)

- But you need to keep everything that's being said here within the context of the Climactic Stage in God's prog. w/ Isr.—with the “world of the ungodly” being fully developed, and the Nation of the Ungodly (of apostate Israel) likewise being fully developed.

- And notice (:2) that as these members of the Rem. of Isr. get themselves troubled by the “*wicked in his pride*” and *persecuting* them as “*the poor*” - and their *devices* being designed to take advantage of them and trip them up and ‘fleece’ them (so to speak) then you have ...

- (:3) *For the wicked boasteth of his heart's desire, and blesseth the covetous, **whom the LORD abhorreth.***

- And there's the acknowledgement, and the continuous recognition on the part of the members of the Rem. concerning God's Attitude towards the “wicked” and their “iniquity”!

- And that plays into their perplexity—is like, Well, if that's Your attitude—and You abhor them and You hate what's going on and you detest what's going on ... then WHY don't you Deliver, WHY don't you AVENGE just yet????

- But the truth of the matter is, just what we saw back in Psa. 5 needs to come in to play! — there was still some furtherance (especially within Israel itself in the ungodliness of the Nation) — there still needed to come on to the scene, that ***bloody and deceitful man*** whom God will abhor!

- But the issue at hand is that the members of the Rem. recognize that God has godly hatred, abhorrence, disdain for the stage of the ungodliness that had come—and recognize God's Attitude in connection with the readiness for His Day of Wrath & the legal right to bring it & *willingness to shew it & make His power known!*

- Psalm 11

- Continuing on with some passages that focus upon God's Attitude of hatred/abhorrence/disdain for "the world of the ungodly" as it exists in the World At-Large, and (especially in the context of these Psalms), the wickedness and iniquity that developed in Israel as it willingly came under the Satanic PoE and fully signed on with it and cooperated with it and even promoted it!

- And our purpose here, once again, is to have God's same hatred/abhorrence/disdain for "the world of the ungodly" and all its "works of darkness" and all of its iniquity, effectually generated within us as His "sons" (that matches up with His and the Lord Jesus Christ's Attitude).

- And this is a NEEDFUL thing primarily due to the fact that today, when people hear the preaching and Bible teaching concerning being conformed to God's Son—it's very **unpopular** (and **politically incorrect**) to be taught to HATE something! and Abhor something—and have Disdain and Contempt for something! (**but that IS a part of our godly edification!**)

- This 11th Psalm is another of the **Redeemer** Psalms that focuses a lot upon the Lord's Attitude leading up to His Day of Wrath—when that Crisis Point with Israel, *and* with the World at-Large had arrived.

- (read :1-7)

- (read :1-2) - Here again, you've got these "*wicked*" ones who are affecting and afflicting the members of the Rem. of Isr.—and here you have David (as well as what the members of the Rem. will do): i.e., affirming the fact that they have put their *trust* in the *LORD* (Jehovah), and will denounce what the "*wicked*" are saying to them when the *wicked* are coming along and saying to their "*soul*", *Flee as a bird to your mountain* —

... which is part of their **ridicule** of them for the provisions the LORD has made for the Rem.—and the truth is, they'll say this to them BEFORE the time the Lord has told them to flee! (but the time **isn't** right for them to flee, yet!) - but the "*wicked*" (especially of apostate Israel) and their ungodliness (epitomized in this passage) with their complete rejection of

the truth regarding what God has said to the members of the Rem. concerning the provisions He was making for their deliverance in the time of the Lord's Day of Wrath—and these members of Apostate Isr. are coming along and saying, God's wrath won't come upon us ... it's going to come upon YOU! ... You're the apostate element, not us!

- By the way—in view of (:1), do you see that there's far more to John the Baptist's statement to the VRS of Isr.?? (*O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to **flee** from the wrath to come?*)!!!

- This is a good example of the kind of “trouble” that the Rem. is going to receive at the outset of God resuming His prog. with Isr. — (the mockery and the ridicule) - notice

- (read :2) - The *wicked* (especially the VR Leaders of Apostate Isr.) are going to try to inflict a wound in their ‘inner man’ (in their *heart*) - and to therefore produce great sorrow & discouragement among other things.

- And as the “wicked” respond to their proper godly abhorrence/hatred/disdain for what the wicked are doing—one of the clever ways in which the wicked react to that is to try to break down their RESOLVE and to get the Rem. to willingly reduce the impact they're making!

- (read :3) - That's the recognition on the part of the Rem. that the ‘*foundations*’ upon which they are standing—and their godly abhorrence/hatred/disdain that matches both God the Father and God the Son **IS** the *foundations* upon which they stand)—that is, they recognize exactly what's going on and what that clever, ‘*privily*’ (= darkness, secret, crafty) activity of the Adversary & his cohorts are up to.

- And the Remnant's ‘salvation’ from being victimized by those ‘*privily*’ activities of the Adversary & his cohorts is to have the effectual working (in their ‘inner man’) of the Godly Attitude of God the Father and God the Son - and to remember that the Lord Jesus Christ is making preparation to become their Deliverer & Avenger very shortly.

- And this 11th Psalm begins to answer the questions that were asked by the Rem. back in the 10th Psalm (in :1 [read])

- And here the members of the Rem. begin to perceive the wisdom of God in not immediately becoming the D & A—and that begins to be expressed in (:4).

- (the Psalmist/Members of the Rem. will say ... read :4)

- This was the situation right at the Crisis Point of Acts 7—and that's going to be the same thing when God ends this disp. of grace and resumes His prog. w/ Isr.

The LORD is in his holy temple, the LORD'S throne is in heaven:

- And even though He's not functioning as the D & A in the opening 'stage' to the final Install. of their prog. — the truth is, **He's NOT ignoring what's going on!** (as the rest of the verse says) ...

... his eyes behold, his eyelids try, the children of men.

- He's not only looking at what's going on, He's **critically** looking at what's going on! (And His Attitude is still one of abhorrence/hatred/disdain/contempt for what is going on in the world of the ungodly!)

- And when God's prog. w/ Isr. resumes with the Lord *in his holy temple and His throne in heaven*—with the Lord Jesus Christ standing once again at the Father's right hand—the Lord has the same Attitude He had when He suspended the prog. w/ Isr. — and now at the very beginning of the final Install., the Lord is now looking down from His throne in heaven **and He's analyzing some things!** (and the things He's perceiving and the things He's analyzing aren't dealt with here in this Psalm—but this is the beginning of the remnant's realization that at the very beginning of the final Install., the Lord is doing something very SMART!)

- The reason why He's not the D & A just yet is NOT because He's reluctant to—or that He's changed His mind—rather, it's another aspect of His wisdom—and eventually, as they go on in God's word, they'll be taught what that all amounts to!

- But the issue here is that when the Rem. perceives the “*wicked*” and their tactics—their ‘salvation’ from being victimized by them will be the fundamental issue of their Godly Thinking about what’s taking place!

- And the first aspect of their Godly Thinking will be about what’s taking place with the Lord in His holy temple, and His throne in heaven—and with the Lord making this analysis, (if you will), as He looks down from there ...

- And the next aspect of their Godly Thinking will be to recognize that God’s Attitude towards the “*wicked*” **hasn’t changed one bit!** (as we’ll see in :5)

- But, notice—the end of (:4) - “*his eyes behold, his eyelids try, the children of men*. — as the progressive edification of the Members of the Rem. takes place through the Psalms—prior to this Psalm (back in Psalm 10, as we saw), you had the *wicked* and their iniquity dealt with as the ‘core’ of all that ungodliness within the nation of Israel itself--

... but notice that as you go on into Psalm 11, here, the Members of the Remnant’s understanding/viewpoint expands—and they begin to deal with the fact that the Day of the Lord is not only going to deal w/ Isr. and destroy the apostate element out of that nation—but it’s also going to deal with the World At-Large!

- And therefore, they’re taught that they’re not only going to have coming against them some *wicked* ones within their own nation, but with some *wicked* ones within the world at large! (they’re up against some *wicked* ones **on 2 fronts!**)

- And here in Psalm 11 is where that expansion in their understanding begins to take place!

- The Rem. will recognize that at the first—the Lord Jesus Christ (the Messiah) is in the 3rd heaven, standing up at the Father’s right hand (just as He was in Acts 7) - and He’s going to be looking down and seeing not only what’s going on in His own nation—but “*his eyelids try, the children of men*” — and later on in the Psalms (14, 33, 53) the Lord is seen ‘looking down’ upon the earth to “see” and to evaluate & analyze what’s all going on with all men on the face of the earth!

- And in that final evaluation, the Lord will conclude the **whole world** (apostate Israel and its ungodliness; as well as

the World At-Large and its ungodliness) are ‘ripe’ and ready for His righteous judgment and wrath! (which is one of the reasons for that ‘lag’ time/stage just prior to the 70th week of Daniel kicking in)

- (read :5)

- Note that the first part of (:5) is the aspect of the Lord’s wisdom that the members of the Rem. of Isr. need to appreciate: **they’re being “tried”** during that opening stage.

- God, in His wisdom, in the opening stage of the final Install. with the provisions He’s made for them, is allowing them to be TRIED. — because they, too, have a ‘more-than-conqueror’ type provision to benefit from themselves!

- And there’s wisdom on God’s part in allowing them to be afflicted by the Adversary’s PoE—and as the Psalms go on that all gets developed.

- But the point is, as that opening stage of God’s prog. w/ Isr. gets underway—the remnant is going to be operating upon the godly thinking of God’s Attitude towards “the children of men” as the “world of the ungodly” that they are. (And especially towards the “wicked” ones—not only within the world at-large, but also within apostate Israel itself!)

- In other words, the LAST thing that the members of the Rem. of Isr. will attempt to do (or be suckered into) is to immediately bring “*peace on earth, good will toward men*”!

- That “peace” doesn’t take place until a world WAR takes place! ... and the Remnant knows that!!!

- Then the end of (:5) says, *but the wicked and him that loveth violence* (hearkens back to the “violence” that filled the earth back in Noah’s day—as well as the “rioting” issue in Rom. 13:13 [one of the “works of darkness”]) *his soul hateth*. (there’s that godly Attitude, once again)

- Psalm 14

- Here, this issue of the LORD “looking” down on the earth — looking at the world at-large and the ‘children of men’ as a whole all gets amplified upon. (this is very similar to the 53rd Psalm that Paul quotes from in Rom. 3 when he deals with Gentile Iniquity)

- (read :1-7)

- This again, is a Psalm that views the Red. Mand. of the Dav. Cov. — but while it has that in view, it also looks out to the time in which the Lord will function as the D & A—which is what is being talked about in (:7) - *Oh that the salvation of Israel were come out of Zion! when the LORD bringeth back the captivity of his people, Jacob shall rejoice, and Israel shall be glad.*

- The 1st Part of (:7) is the Deliverer & his Deliverance;
- The Middle Part is the Avenger & his Avenging;
- And when they both take place, *Jacob shall rejoice, and Israel shall be glad.*

- This Psalm makes it so that the Rem. of Isr. will know that they're going to be affected by the **WORLD** (the Gentiles/Nations) [the world of the ungodly]!

- And there's 2 major reasons why the members of the Rem./Isr. are going to be affected by the world at-large:

1) Because some of those members of the Rem./Isr. are going to BE out in the world at-large;

2) Because, as the prog. w/Isr. moves along, even the members of the Rem./Isr. that are IN the Nation Israel, will eventually come to a point at which an event takes place by the Assyrian (a Gentile) that's going to cause it so that even the members of the Rem./Isr. that are **within** the land have to FLEE the land (and go out into the Gentile Nations)—and certain ones will go to their 'hiding places' (prepared places for them) - but others of them will end up being taken into captivity OUT into the nations of the world!

(see Matt. 24:15-21)

- Therefore, in the education of the Rem., for the balance of the Climactic Stage of their Program, there's a big NEED for them to be given some information that deals especially with the members of the Rem. who are going to be affected by the world at-large—and this particular Psalm does that! as it builds upon what was set forth back in Psalm 11.

- (read :1) - The members of the Rem. are going to recognize this—just as the LORD Himself does—i.e., they will have the same Attitude and the same Estimation of “the world of the ungodly” as God Himself!
- (read :2-3) - This gives some further detail of what was set forth back in Psalm 11 in connection with the LORD ‘*looking down*’ from His throne in His holy temple in heaven and making this assessment/evaluation of things going on with (especially in this Psalm) the world at-large.
- And with this Psalm giving further detail, we now get 2 new concepts brought into the picture regarding the Iniquity of the world at-large—which, by the way—since this Psalm is nearly quoted verbatim over in Psalm 53—and since the apostle Paul used the 53rd Psalm to prove Gentile Iniquity in Romans 3—therefore, when we think about the Dispensational Timing of this disp. of grace in which we live, therefore this is the assessment WE are supposed to be making when we view this present “world of the ungodly” and its “works of darkness”!

- Those 2 new concepts are:

1) **abominable** (:1) (used for the 1st time in Psalms) = “*ab*” (to turn away from) + “*omin*” (something ominous, [or dark, threatening, evil]) = hence, to turn away from something evil = something so ill and so evil that it engenders disgust, hatred—something offensive, loathsome, detestable, (inhuman, beastly)! = abhorrence in the highest degree! = a combination of hatred & contempt! = to turn away from so as not to be endured any more!

2) **filthy** (:3) (used for the 1st time in Psalms) = uncleanness of the most vile nature; rottenness; to be morally corrupt—expressing violent disgust!

- It’s important to add these terms/concepts to that Godly Attitude in order to give it the even greater ‘kick’ that it needs to have—these are terms/concepts that indicate the **extremely offensive** nature of the ‘works of darkness’ that sit at the core of the ‘world of the ungodly’! (this is where the real **repulsiveness** of these works of iniquity comes into the picture on God’s part—(and should be generating in **you!**))

- These are all the kinds of terms and expressions of the Attitude of God for the **highly offensive** nature that's all wrapped up in that term: **INIQUITY!**

- (things that are so offensive & repugnant to God's holiness that His Justice has to take action against them and to judge them and ultimately DESTROY them!)

- And that's why, in (:4) God gives them that proper & fitting 'title':

*4 Have all the **workers of iniquity** no knowledge? who eat up my people as they eat bread, and call not upon the LORD.*

(“workers of iniquity”)

- Again—the goal here—in connection with the Godly Thinking that we're dealing with based upon the Dispensational Timing of this disp. of grace, with the *night being far spent, and the day being at hand*—is to produce within us the same kind of Attitude that God has towards ungodliness that has developed to such a degree (with its *wickedness* and *abominableness* and *filth*) that God looks at (and to **those** who practice such things) would have God look at **them** and say, Those are WORKERS OF INIQUITY, and this is a WORLD OF INIQUITY: **AND I HATE IT; AND I'M GOING TO DESTROY IT!**

- And we need to have that attitude generated within us as the Godly Thinking that it is—so that we can then have the proper godly response to that kind of iniquity that's indicative of a properly educated “son” of God! (i.e., *casting off the works of darkness, and putting on the armour of light: and walking honestly as in the day!*)

... which is IMPOSSIBLE to do apart from the effectual working of the Godly Thinking!!!

- Let's look at another passage that focuses upon God's Attitude when the Crisis Point had been reached when *the vessels of wrath were fitted to destruction* ... at the time when “*the night*” had reached its point where God says, No more!

- Isaiah 65—(once again, even though the focus is upon the ungodliness and the **core** of that ungodliness within the Nation of Israel itself—what I'm after are the expressions that God sets before the Nation of Israel [for the Remnant's benefit] concerning His response to it—concerning His Attitude of hatred/abhorrence/disdain for it!)

- And in this passage, God uses some very expressive language that alerts you to the extreme **irritant** that this *iniquity* is to Him ... to the point where He can't let it go on any longer! (which is what His Day of Wrath is all about)

- By the way—understanding & appreciating this issue of the Dispensational Timing of this disp. of grace—(that is, that God had become so provoked by *the world of the ungodly & the workers of iniquity*—to the tune of His outrage and hatred being brought to the point at which His wrath was to be poured out ... but rather than doing that, and for a far greater purpose, He instead brought in this disp. of grace to form the One New Man, the New Creature of the church, the body of Christ for the purpose of liberating the creature from its bondage of corruption, and thereby being able to destroy the fullness of the Adversary, his cohorts, and his Plan & Policies of Evil) ... knowing that, and the seething rage & hatred God had for it all ... and the **demand** that it put on His Justice to act (judge it and destroy it) ... but instead (and for a far greater purpose) God is presently *enduring with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction* that should make you understand & appreciate in a far, far better way what we came to understand in Romans 8:17

*17 And if children, then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ; if so be that we **SUFFER with him**, that we may be also glorified together.*

... that issue of God "suffering" today?? (that should be clearer than ever before!)

- (read Isa. 65:1-7)

- (:1-2) - This was what was taking place, not only in the beginning of the Climactic Stage of God's prog. w/ Isr.—but especially during the extension of the 1-year of Mercy & Forbearance in Acts 1-7.

- (which is why a portion of this passage is quoted by the apostle Paul in Romans 10:20 as part of our basic Dispensational Establishment—which gave us the ability to precisely recognize when it was that God suspended His P/w/I, and brought this Disp/Grace into effect— which tells you that God **didn't** change programs with the New Testament/John the Baptist/the Cross/the Day of Pentecost ... but rather, when the year of M/F was over with!)

- So the context here is that this opportunity was extended to the nation Israel **after** the death/burial/ressur. of the LJC when an **appeal** was made to the nation to “behold” - but they wouldn’t “behold” Him! (during the extension of For./Merc.)
 - and therefore, this is the state of affairs leading up to that Crisis Point in Acts 7!

- And (:2) describes Israel’s cooperation with the PoE and with the ‘world of the ungodly’ - and in fact encapsulates their **Ungodliness**: (all 3 aspects of ungodliness are mentioned: 1) their ‘rebellion’ [ungodly Labor]; 2) their ‘walking in a way that was not good’ [ungodly C & B]; 3) their ‘walking after their own thoughts’ [ungodly Thinking]).

- Now in (:3) God goes on to describe those members of apostate Israel—and as He does, He describes the **offensiveness** and the **abominable** nature of their wickedness (and in this case, their **religious iniquity**)! [which is important to the Satanic PoE and the ‘course of this world’ that he has charted—because from religious iniquity comes the cultures of the world of the ungodly!]

- (read :3-5a)

- (:3—*A people (apostate Israel) that **provoketh me to anger continually to my face;***)

- This isn’t just the ‘run-of-the-mill’ disobedience or muffing up once in a while!

- Rather, as God ‘looks down’ on them and what they’re engaged in; and sees it—and it’s something so vile and so disgusting and so outrageous that it ‘*provokes*’ Him to ‘*anger*’ - it **incites** God to not only express verbally His outrage, but (as we will see) God tells them that there’s a time coming (and it’s now on their doorstep) where He’s going to Judge them and **destroy** them (along with their iniquity)!

- And what you have described in the remainder of (:3) and all of (:4) is Religious Iniquity—and it’s specifically the religious iniquity of the Heathen, Gentile World of the Ungodly At-Large—the course of this world that Satan has charted ... which didn’t just come to a “STOP” when God suspended His prog. w/ Isr., but those ‘Core’ “*works of darkness*” are still kept ‘hot’ and ongoing throughout this disp./grace!

- This whole 'list' are evil/wicked religious practices of the Heathen, Pagan, Gentile Nations (who are fully in cooperation with the Satanic Plan/Policy of Evil and have progressively worsened and worsened as "*the world of the ungodly*" developed again! (by the way—this is what the Nation Israel was like when John the Baptist & the Lord Jesus Christ shows up!)

- ... ***that sacrificeth in gardens***—this is Pagan, Canaanite, and Babylon—**this is Baal worship!** and there's a LOT packed into this little expression—these Pagan "gardens" are Satan's attempt to re-establish the Garden of Eden! (utopia)—the Pagan Gentiles worshipped in these "***groves***" that God commanded Israel to destroy—(what are they still doing here?) — and this "*sacrifice*" that went on in them was everything from sex orgies to sacrificing children! (these are religious places of worship of the Canaanite gods of Baal!) [forbidden in the Law of Moses]

- ... ***and burneth incense upon altars of brick***—(a Pagan Canaanite Gentile perversion of the 'holy place' of God's Temple [the golden altar of incense] - and done on an altar made of brick [fashioned by the hands of men] - and these altars not only had the blood of unclean animals on them, but also the blood of men!) [forbidden in the Law]

- (:4) ***Which remain among the graves***—[again, forbidden in the Law] - they did this for the purposes of necromancy (the communicating with the spirits of the dead)

- ... ***and lodge in the monuments***—this is the idea of going to a monument where some significant event happened, or going to a statue of some dead person and hanging around there because it's supposed to be 'sacred' or 'hallowed' - and was done for the purposes of divination (fortune telling) and to obtain dreams, visions, & revelations—again, totally Baal-ish! gee, do we do this today????

- (by the way—many of these things of what we think of as 'ancient times' were practiced in the NIGHT—which is why we have picked up on all the 'hauntings' and such as taking place at night ... and may literally be called *the works of darkness!*)

[also forbidden in the Law]

- ... *which eat swine's flesh*—[forbidden in the Law] - for one thing, among the Heathen, Canaanite, Gentile, Baal-worshippers, it was a principle request in their sacrifices and feasts—and as such, for a Jew, was a form of renouncing Jehovah, and embracing Baal!

- ... *and broth of abominable things is in their vessels*— (notice: there's that word "abominable" again!) — this is the 'juices' made from meats offered to idols (Baal) - maybe animal, maybe human! ... and was done for Pagan purification rites; magical arts (dark arts), and incantations (spells/charms).

- And then, there's their Pride & Arrogance that is a natural result of this Pagan Baal-worship (or "works of darkness")

- (:5) *Which say, Stand by thyself, come not near to me; for I am holier than thou.* ... (corrupted doctrine of natural righteousness/natural holiness)

- and notice particularly the end of (:5) ... *These are a smoke in my nose, a fire that burneth all the day.*

- A smoke in the nose is an **irritant!** (sulfur stick)
(boot camp gas chamber)

- But more than that—it's something that you will NOT continue to put up with!!! — it's disgusting to you—and **you don't want your LIFE associated with that!**

- Your whole body reacts to it—and the only thing you want to do is to GIT RID OF IT! (and in this case, it's not an issue of God putting it away from Him [but having it still in existence] - rather, He's going to **put that 'fire' and 'smoke' OUT—He's going to DESTROY IT!**

- Truth is—(in keeping with what's been going on in Israel's program), God has already LEFT (and gotten away from it, so to speak) - [which happened in the 3rd Install./5th CoP] - and which is why Zacharias (John the Baptist's father) said in Luke 1 that God has '*visited*' His people—(when the 3rd Install. ends, and the 4th Install. begins: God returns!) - and that was God's first reaction to the 'smoke' in His nose!

- (and actually, He took off again—the Lord Jesus Christ dies on the cross, is resurrected, and then LEAVES to the Father’s right hand—just prior to the Extension of F/M where an opportunity for Repentance was given to Israel).

- But the reaction of God towards the ones who are being spoken about here in Isaiah 65 is that He’s NOT going to take off again—He’s actually going to come back! and put that ‘fire’ OUT! along with all of its offensive, disgusting, vile, ungodly, ‘smoke’!

- (which is why :6 & 7 says) - *Behold, it is written before me: (back in Deut. and in Lev. 26) I will not keep silence, but will recompense, even recompense into their bosom, 7 Your iniquities, and the iniquities of your fathers together, saith the LORD, which have burned incense upon the mountains, and blasphemed me upon the hills: therefore will I measure their former work into their bosom.*

- (by the way, notice that word *recompense*? — this is the fulfillment of Rom. 12:17, 18, & 19!)

- And once again—to ‘cut to the chase’ (so to speak) - notice God’s Attitude—and God specifically utilizes that word *iniquity* to describe the Personal Offense that this wickedness/ungodliness (sin, evil, works of darkness, etc.) is to Him! (the vile, repulsive, repugnant, disgustingness it all is to Him)

- Point is—God has **genuine, real, literal** hatred/abhorrence/disdain for the ungodliness of this “*world of the ungodly*” — and especially for the things He identifies as “*the works of darkness*” that are the Core ‘life-blood’ of it all by which the world of the ungodly continues to be fueled & promoted even throughout this disp. of grace (for as long as it lasts).

- And God’s literal hatred/abhorrence/disdain for the course of this world and for the *night* that is *far spent*, and for *the works of darkness* that lie at the core of it—is NOT just some theory, or some vague expression for a human feeling that God really doesn’t possess (language of accommodation; anthropopathism) ... NO ... IT’S **REAL!**

- And the job at hand is, by the effectual working of God’s word—to generate within **you** that same godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for *the world of the ungodly* & its *night!*

- And the gaining of this godly Attitude of hatred/abhorrence/disdain for these “*works of darkness*” and the world of the ungodly at-large ISN’T just for you to get a smug, pious, ‘holier-than-thou’ attitude! ... rather, it’s for the purpose of you gaining the Father’s (and the Son’s) own attitude for going into BATTLE! (Romans 12:1-2 was your ‘induction’ ceremony; Romans 12:3-13:10 was ‘boot camp’; and now Romans 13:11-14 is your first **battle skirmishes** with the Adversary & his PoE!)

- Now again (not to sound like a broken record) - at this point in your sonship education, you naturally need, and you **critically need** (it’s **vital** that you get) this godly Attitude and viewpoint of God the Father and God the Son towards *the world of the ungodly* that has developed again; and towards this present world at-large; and toward the *wicked and their evil* — and especially towards *the wicked and their iniquity* (those *works of darkness* that act as the fuel and the life-blood for the course of the world of the ungodly)!

- And I can’t stress this enough—because without it, you’re simply not going to be able to make much more progress in your godly edification—many of the things you’ll encounter in the curriculum later on just won’t do their effectual job without this basic & fundamental godly Thinking! (and the godly attitude that comes from it)! ... without it, you’re going to have problems later on (serious problems)!

- It’s vital to engaging the Adversary and his PoE (and the battle that it’s going to be) to have God’s own godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for the world of the ungodly and for their works of darkness. (which is far different than most people’s attitude & viewpoint of the course of this world)!

- Truth is—gaining godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain/contempt for these things is all ‘part & parcel’ of our emulation of our Heavenly Father and conformity to His Son! (which is a foreign concept to most folks) ... that is, that when God suspended His prog. w/ Isr. & brought in this disp. of grace, when He looked at this world, He saw that they were all *vessels of wrath, fitted to destruction*—and that even in this present time, the condition of the world of the ungodly is that they are *vessels of wrath, fitted to destruction*—and when God resumes His prog. w/ Isr., the world of the ungodly will still be *vessels of wrath, fitted to destruction*!

- And even with the Remnant of Israel—part of their sonship education will be to not only recognize God’s attitude of hatred/

abhorrence/disdain/disgust for the world of the ungodly, but part of their sonship education is for *them* to **acquire** that godly attitude, themselves! ... of hatred/abhorrence/disdain/disgust for the world of the ungodly and their works of darkness!

- And therefore, in view of where we are Dispensational Timing-wise in this disp. of grace—it's only NATURAL that God would make part of our Sonship Education: **The acquisition of His godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain/disgust for the world of the ungodly and the works of darkness that are at the Core of it!**

(let's see what happens if you DON'T get this godly Thinking/Attitude) ...
- 1 Corinthians 4—(following on the heels of ch. 3 concerning the “Judgment Seat of Christ”) - (by the way, notice 3:1-3—2 of the 6 “works of darkness” are mentioned here!)

- (read 4:8-17)

- You can't make much progress in your Sonship Education if you try to **skip** over the acquisition of this godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain/disgust for the world of the ungodly and its work/workers of darkness/iniquity — and here, in connection with the strength of the Adversary's opposition when it comes to trying to ‘separate us from the love of Christ’ - he was successful with some of the Corinthian saints.

- And so Paul sets forth the warning and the reproof and the admonition ... and the remedy for it.

- And some of them were saying (:8), We're full, we're rich—and they enjoyed ‘reigning as kings’ without Paul—and they enjoyed the **popularity** of their Christianity at that point when they PULLED BACK from “*casting off the works of darkness and putting on the armour of light*”!

- They preferred NOT participating in **that** aspect of their Father's business and NOT bringing the ridicule and the intimidation tactics and the shame-producing tactics of the Adversary— (and the issue of becoming *the filth of the world and the offscouring of all things* concept upon themselves)—and they preferred NOT to be viewed that way & treated that way by the populace & society there in Corinth.

- And therefore they decided they would just try to **avoid** that aspect of their Sonship Education and go on without it!

- Well, the truth of the matter is - they **COULDN'T** go on without it! (which is why Paul dealt with it like he did) - and that's why he warned them like he did—and that's why he told them that all they would do is (more or less) be **stuck** in the doctrines of the 10,000 "*instructors in Christ*" - and they would NOT be able to go on! (no matter what they thought) - and therefore Timothy was sent to bring them into remembrance of **Paul's ways which be in Christ** (so they could rectify the problem and therefore so they **could** go on)!

- (Let's now look at some passages that point up how the Remnant of Israel, as part of their Sonship Education, will be taught — and by the effectual working of God's word within them, they will acquire godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for the world of the ungodly & their works of darkness/iniquity).

- And just like the members of the R/I, so also with us—if they didn't acquire the godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for some specific things that God abhorred, and wanted to **avoid** it / **ignore** it, then their Sonship Education (as ours) would be brought to a grinding halt! (again, there's a natural NECESSITY for this Thinking/Attitude at this point!)

- **Proverbs 6**—(this deals with the corresponding Exhortation and Fatherly Expectations as a son makes progress through his education—and these exhortations/expectations deal with the son's "instruction of equity" - especially as it pertains to God's program with Israel).

- And by the time a son gets to this point in his education, he's expected to have this godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for the 'works of darkness' that are at the core of the world of the ungodly.

- And for these members of the Rem/Isr—because of what's going on in apostate Israel—and because of the characters that are the 'movers & the shakers' of apostate Israel—(who are their prime enemies) ... part of the Remnant's education is designed to ensure that God's Thinking/Attitude towards these apostate characters is developed within the members of the Rem. (and that the mem./rem. hate and abhor the things those apostate characters do, just like God does!) and therefore, they won't have any regard or respect for those things, just like God does!

- (read :12-15) - Notice that (:15) is looking out at the time of the 5th Install./5th CoP at the time in which the Day of the Lord's Wrath will take place as a 'sudden calamity'.

- And what you have in (:12-14) is a description of a member of the apostate element in Israel (the VR Leaders, especially) ... and they are described this way because the mem/Rem are going to have to be able to **identify** them—because these apostate members of Israel are going to be the agents of the Adversary’s PoE against them—and they’re going to try to seduce and entice the Rem., and to ultimately **destroy** them.

- (The ‘Extermination Policy’ of the Man of Sin against the Rem. — the issue of the *wheat/tares; wolves in sheep’s clothing* as taught in the gospel accounts)

- And these apostate (& dangerous) members of Isr. will not have a big badge on that says, WARNING: APOSTATE MEMBER OF ISRAEL—no, instead they will be very cunning & deceptive and will infiltrate the ranks of the Mem/Rem/Isr.

- And that’s why that word “*naughty*” is used—(or as James puts it [1:21], their “*superfluity of naughtiness*” —

- *naughty* is another one of those English words that has taken a beating over the years—and has been greatly watered down—to the point that it’s nearly only used today in reference to children [playfully] (or of adults in a sexual connotation).

- But the word *naughty* is from the Hebrew word for BELIAL (Baal, the wicked, ungodly, evil pagan god of the Gentiles)! ... it’s a title/name of the Adversary!

- And so *naughty* is actually a very strong/powerful word that depicts the works of the devil in a man—with a strong degree of cunning, crafty, subtle, even covert actions! (which is exactly how the Man of Sin and his cohorts in the apostate, VRS of Israel will operate! ... what accuracy!)

- because—notice in (:12) there are going to be false prophets with a *forward mouth*—that is, what comes out of his mouth is from his ungodly Thinking (it’s distorted, deceitful, half-truth type stuff) - plus, notice in (:13) he communicates secretly through eye gestures, foot gestures, and hand/finger gestures.

- And that apostate, VR Leader in Israel has his infiltration tactics further described in (:14).

- The point is—just to come along and give you some context into what the members of the Rem. are going to be dealing with from the world of the ungodly and the wickedness/iniquity that acts as its ‘life-blood’ and the fuel for it all. (those core *works of darkness*)

- God the Father wants to make sure that the “sons” of the Rem/Isr. have HIS Attitude so that when the Day of the Lord comes, and He destroys the apostate, vain, religious element—that they have the same Attitude He has for WHY He’s going to do that!

- And WHY He’s going to do that is because of what (:16ff) go on to say ...

- (read :16-19) - these are especially the characteristics of apostate Israel as a whole—and especially the ‘movers & the shakers’ within apostate Isr. (and those who are going function as the tares amongst the wheat & the wolves in sheep’s clothing ... the ones [the infiltrators] talked about up in [:12-14]).

- Notice (:16) - **HATE** , **ABOMINATION**

- Now the main thing I’m after here is that the members of the Rem. of Isr., in their Sonship Education get **instructed**, not only in the reality that the LORD *hates* those things that comprise the wickedness and the iniquity that is the Core of what goes on in apostate Isr. —

— but this **isn’t** being said to them just for that reason! — This is being said to them for the purpose of, (by its effectual working within them), to have produced within **them**, the exact same *hatred/abhorrence* that the LORD has for it!

- In other words—the mem./Rem. of Isr. are, (by the effectual working of God’s word) expected to acquire godly hatred/abhorrence for *a proud look, a lying tongue, and hands that shed innocent blood, An heart that deviseth wicked imaginations, feet that be swift in running to mischief, A false witness that speaketh lies, and he that soweth discord among brethren.* — and that’s going to be part of their **salvation** from being victimized by those characters—and God is providing the mem./Rem. with the ability to (and expects them to) acquire His hatred/abhorrence for the ungodliness that they’re particularly confronted with—and the wickedness/iniquity/works of that particular darkness that they’re confronted with.

- And the issue is—the same kind of thing is true with us in this disp. of grace in what Romans 13:12-14 is educating us in!

- Our understanding of Dispensational Timing with respect to where we are living in this disp. of grace in the overall plan and outworking and purpose of God—knowing that *the night is far spent, the day is at hand*—and what that conveys information-wise regarding God's Attitude concerning this world that we live in, and the continuation of its ungodliness throughout this disp. of grace—is designed (as we examine it and understand & appreciate it like we're doing right now) to have generated within us by its effectual working, godly disdain/abhorrence/disgust/contempt to the particular *works of darkness* that we see in this world; that we can run in to in this world; that are the things that brought the world to being *the world of the ungodly* in the first place; and that keep on evolving in its ungodliness throughout this disp. of grace — we're supposed to have God's Attitude towards that, just like He has!

- And His longsuffering right now doesn't change His attitude towards it—it just means that He's continuing moment-by-moment to hold back His wrath—but the wrath is still there—the disgust/abhorrence and the obnoxiousness of it all is still there—the disdain/contempt is still there!

- In fact, *we* have an opportunity (by the privilege of His grace, as the members of the New Creature of the Church, the body of Christ—who are **on** this earth, **living** in this world **during** the disp. of grace **while** the world of the ungodly is still in effect, and **while** it continues to evolve and get worse & worse) ... we have the privilege of actually MANIFESTING God's continued contempt, disgust, hatred and abhorrence for those things!

- And that's really part of what we do when we *cast off the works of darkness, and put on the armour of light!*

- Let's look at another passage that focuses upon the fact that the members of the Rem. of Isr. end up (as part of their Sonship Education) acquiring (by the effectual working of God's word within them) this godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for *the world of the ungodly & the works (& workers) of darkness* that are at the core of this world—and how that it's a NATURAL and NEEDFUL part of their education—(and since *the world of the ungodly* and their *works of darkness* continue on, in & throughout this disp. of grace, it's a **natural** and **needful** thing to acquire for our Sonship Education as well).

- And part of the godly edification for the members of the Rem. of Isr. is to acquire this godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for some particular *works of darkness*—and then, by that godly Thinking, there are then supposed to express it (express their ‘like-mindedness’ to God Himself!)

- Psalm 119 (Book 5)

- The 119th Psalm is broken up into 22 8-vs. sections (22 following the 22 letters in the Hebrew alphabet).

- The whole Psalm is about God’s word—and especially as the Rem. of Isr. will utilize it as the 5 Mandates of the Dav. Cov. all get fully realized and fulfilled when God’s Day of Wrath takes place, ends and when God’s Kingdom gets set up on the Earth.

- During the Climactic Stage of Isr’s prog.— the members of the R/I stand in apostate Israel, and as they stand against the PoE against them—they eventually come to a point where, in view of the things they express/manifest, they begin to express the fact that they likewise (along with God Himself) HATE what’s going on in apostate Israel!

- And it’s just a natural/needful part of their Sonship Edu. to acquire God’s Attitude of hatred/abhorrence/disdain for certain things—and then they’re expected to Conduct & Behave themselves as a result of it—and they have a particular godly Labor together with God their Father in connection with that in the midst of their nation of apostate Israel.

- (read :97-104 [:102-104])

- Note that this is NOT just (what you might call) ‘general’ hatred for ‘falsehood’ vs. what’s ‘truthful’ (although that’s perfectly true) - but there’s **far more involved** with this “*hatred*” here.

- Notice in (:2) - you have the issue of them ‘*not departing from thy judgments: **for thou hast taught me***’ — part of their Sonship Edu. is going to involve *the instruction of some particular judgments* that they’re **taught**—and they’re taught of God—and the focus of what they’re *taught* is designed to make it so that they see something completely different going on in their nation—or something that’s the exact OPPOSITE of what ought to be going on!

- (both, the world at-large AND the VRS of Isr. have become more and more 'satan-ly' - and both of them have joined together in the final install.)

- But by the corrective doctrine that the R of I has been taught (enabling them to be *doers of the law in truth*), [and that is designed to drive that “wedge” between them and apostate Israel]—they begin to perceive just how horrible and just how disgusting and outrageously false is what's being said & taught & practiced in apostate Israel!

- And as they receive their Son. Edu.—and as it provides them with the insight & perception & discretion (not only in connection with sin and iniquity in their own lives), but also in connection with what's going on around them with the wickedness and the iniquity of their own apostate nation joining together with the course of this world— they come to a point at which they are supposed to not only recognize the reality of it—but they're supposed/expected to (and God provides for them to) acquire God's own Attitude of hatred/abhorrence/disdain for it!

- (so that they not only see the **necessity** for the 'cruel wrath' and 'fierce anger' of God in His Day of Wrath as He judges & destroys the wicked & their works of darkness—but also so that they [in connection with their own godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for those things] can participate in an aspect of their Father's business as well, during that time.)

- And therefore in the passages we're looking at, you see the R/I **expressing** their 'like-mindedness' to God in connection with these things.

- Just as God “hates every false way” - so, too, does the Psalmist—and so, too, will the Remnant out in the Lord's day.

- (read :102-104)

- Notice that those “*precepts*” in particular gives the members of the R/I an understanding of what's going on in apostate Isr., and how horrible/wrong/contrary it all is to the Truth!

- And therefore he **hates** every false way!

- (The Psalmist's and the mem. of the R/I *hate every false way*—just like God the Father does and just like God the Son does!)

- Psalm 119:113-120

- (:113) - This isn't just any 'vain thoughts' that might occur in one's mind—but this is the issue of the vain thinking of the philosophy and corrupted doctrine of the VRS of Isr.—and from all that corrupted doctrine & philosophy, the VRS ends up concocting a bunch of 'vain thoughts'! (designed to corrupt & alter the godly thinking of the mem. of the Rem.)

- And the mem. of the R/I are going to have acquired godly **hatred** for those 'vain thoughts' (much like Job had for the ungodly thinking of his 'friends' that contended with him!)

- (:126-128) - Notice that the '*hating every false way*' gets repeated again—which underscores the fact that this is NOT just an occasional thing, but this is especially in connection with the progressive worsening of the VRS leading up to the time in which the LORD is going to "work" (:126) and have His "day".

- (:161-163) - This isn't just any old 'lying' in general! - rather, it's the 'lying' that is one of the core elements to the wickedness and the iniquity that's part of apostate Israel when it comes to the point of them making 'void the law' just prior to the LORD having His day of wrath!

- The apostate, VR element of Israel will end up spewing out bold-faced lie after lie in connection with maintaining their apostasy—and in connection with, (by that apostasy) signing on with the Man of Sin—and in cooperating with the agents the PoE to endeavor to ensnare and entrap and ultimately **destroy** the mem. of the R/I!

- By the way—those are the ones who are particularly in view over in the book of the Revelation when the Lord's judgment is described in connection with the Lake of Fire (at the end of the 1,000 years) —

- (see Rev. 21:8; 27; 22:15)

- Granted, this does not exclude those who are liars and who have never received the forgiveness of their sins (unbelievers in general) - but it's also especially in view of what's going on with the ones who love to make a lie within their own nation!

- And (once again) - the point is that in the members of the Remnant of Israel's Sonship Education (and in view of the fact that the Day of the Lord's Wrath is something they're going to be going through) — and in view of God's response to the extreme abominable ungodliness and wickedness and iniquity within apostate Israel **AND** within the 'world of the ungodly' at-large—they have, as part of their Sonship Education, the acquisition of godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for all that!

- And what will be NATURAL for them, will also be NATURAL for us in this disp. of grace —
— because of the Dispensational Timing of this disp. of grace ... with the backdrop to it being the *vessels of wrath fitted to destruction*—and the result of the conclusion of this disp. of grace being the EXECUTION of God's Wrath (which He is holding back right now) - and those *vessels of wrath, being fitted to destruction* actually getting **destroyed** in the Day of His Wrath!

- Psalm 139

- As a Psalm of David dealing with the Sonship Prayer issue (especially for the mem. of the R/I) out during the time of their existence in the 5th Install./5th CoP—and as they engage the Father in the communion/fellowship of SS Prayer and gain the benefits that come out of that—(just as we learned about the benefits of SS Prayer for us as sons in this disp. of grace over in Romans 8) - notice what the mem. of the Rem. are going to express in regards to their likeminded Attitude of godly hatred to God the Father for some particular ones (and for their activities) in apostate Isr., and also in the world at-large.

- (:17-19) - [:19], notice you have those characters called, "*the wicked*" - and being "*the wicked*" they have their works of 'iniquity' that's come to a zenith in Israel's program—(the apostate element in Israel as fueled by the works of darkness from the world of the ungodly at-large)—and this looks out at that time when the Rem. is threatened to be destroyed by "*the wicked*" and when the Lord therefore fulfills the next 2 Mandates of the Dav. Cov. (D & A) - and as the 119th Ps. said, the Lord will go to "**work**"!

- And as the time closes in for the Lord to do His "*work*" - the Rem of Isr. will not only acknowledge that the attitude of

the LORD is one of godly hatred towards those men and their wickedness/iniquity, but they will acknowledge that they have the exact same attitude of their Father and of the Lord Jesus Christ—so that when He begins to execute that Day of Wrath, they will be able to express what is written in the book of the Revelation (19:11) ... *And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war.*

- And they are going to say that enthusiastically, and with great delight for the actual execution of it!

- And that's what you have expressed in the following verses of the 139th Psalm ...

- (:19-22) - - (here's the Mem. of the R/I with their full acquisition for the godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for what goes on in apostate Israel—and for the fact that the members of apostate Isr. have *made void the law* & have consigned themselves over to the Satanic PoE, and have stood up boldly and have shaken their fist in the face of God, and have declared themselves to be **OPENLY & PUBLICALLY, HIS ENEMIES!!!**)

- Notice that David just said, (back in :20), *For they speak against thee wickedly, and **thine** enemies take **thy** name in vain.* — The recognition that David has (and that the Mem. of the R/I will have) is that the members of **apostate** Israel (leading up to the Lord's Day of Wrath) who have rejected the gospel of the kingdom, and rejected the testimony concerning Jesus of Nazareth being the Christ and have put themselves in the position described in the book of Hebrews where they '*fall away*' and it's *impossible* to '*renew them again unto repentance*' (Hebrews 6:4-6) ...

... and they put themselves in the position, therefore, where they are 'cemented' (so to speak) in their 'enmity' status ... they, therefore, **will publically proclaim themselves to be God's enemies**—and one of the particular acts that they will do, (to do that very thing), is to sign on with the Man of Sin!

- And that's one of the things that will make it so that the mem. of the R/I will know exactly how far those guys have gone in their apostasy, and how they have reached the '**point of no return**' (so to speak).

- But the issue is—that the members of the R/I, as they come along and declare the fact that, (as David said), *Do not I hate them, O LORD, that hate thee? and am not I grieved with those that rise up against thee? I hate them with perfect hatred: I count them mine enemies.*

.... notice, he says, “*I COUNT them mine enemies*” ... and the issue isn’t so much because they’ve been afflicting the Remnant (though that’s perfectly true) - but the issue that’s being expressed here by the ‘son’ in Sonship Prayer is that **BECAUSE THEY’RE YOUR ENEMIES, THEY’RE MY ENEMIES!**

- And they just don’t say that lightly—they will say that because they HATE THEM with a PERFECT HATRED that’s been generated in them by the fact that God Himself hates them with perfect, godly hatred!

- In other words—they will be coming along and saying, I’m ‘like-minded’ with You on this, Father! (just like You taught me to be)!

- The point is—that this acquiring of godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for the world of the ungodly; for the wicked and their iniquity; and for the works of darkness that are the lifeblood of it all—that is a NATURAL & NEEDFUL thing (and even an expected thing) for a Father to teach His son—and that’s why we’re being taught about it in Romans chapter 13.

- And we acquire it by understanding and appreciating the Dispensational Timing of this Dispensation of Grace in connection with that saying, *The night is far spent, the day is at hand.*

- Well—by now you should have a pretty good measure of godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for *the world of the ungodly* in which we now live, and for *the works of darkness* that fuel and foster and promote it, generated within you—but more than that, you should have a proper sonship understanding & appreciation for both the NATURALNESS for your Father teaching that to you as part of your Sonship Education, and for the NEEDFULNESS of it as you are on the verge of engaging in some ‘skirmish’ type battles against the Adversary and his Policy of Evil.

- By now, you should be able to make an assessment of your progress in your Sonship Education—especially in connection with your Godly Thinking in this 2nd Component to your *instruction of Judgment*—especially in connection with the **Dispensational Timing** of this disp. of grace.

- And what I mean by that is—that since every one of the Components of the Sonship Decision-Making Skills (of Wisdom, Justice, Judgment, and Equity) starts off with that 1st Aspect of Godliness (Godly Thinking [because godly edification is what's going on]) — (this being the 11th time you've gained some Godly Thinking) — and because you are no longer being '*conformed to this world*' but being '*transformed by the renewing of your mind*' - which means that each one of the Components of your Sonship Education that deals with the Godly Thinking has to **challenge** some **old, improper thinking** that you have ingrained in you from the course of this world—and the Godly Thinking has to uproot that old thinking; dismiss it; and replace it with God's own Thinking ...

... by now, you should be able to assess/evaluate if your thinking really has changed toward the course of this world; toward *the world of the ungodly* and the *wicked and their iniquity* — especially in connection with the state that the world **WAS** in when God interrupted His prog. w/ Isr.; and the state that the world **IS** in (and will continue to be in for the duration of this disp. of grace); and finally, the state that the world **WILL BE** in when God ends this disp. of grace and resumes His prog. w/ Isr.

- (maybe you see a HUGE difference, maybe not—but all I'm after at this point is that you see SOME difference ... a real CHANGE in Thinking/Attitude is going on within you)

- Well—let's take what we've covered so far in all the background work we've been doing with all the passages from God's word that we've covered so far—and we should be in the position for kind of stepping back from it all and gaining an even greater understanding & appreciation for the **Dispensational Timing** of this Disp. of Grace.

- (we can now get that 'kicker' that I've talked about) ...

- And what I'm after here is to gain a particular PERSPECTIVE or VIEWPOINT of the TIME in which we now live—(and I'm not talking about the fact that [rightly so] we currently live in the Dispensation of the Grace of God) - true and vital as that is.

- You and I have been well taught/schooled by the course of this world to think about the time in which we live in some very particular ways—and we are either consciously aware of it; or if we are unconscious of it, we are still being influenced and conditioned by it.

- Either way, that thinking comes from the Satanic course of this world that the Adversary has charted—it's all a part of the ungodly thinking of the *world of the ungodly* that has developed again!

- For example—the 'Theory of Evolution' (Darwin and his cohorts; science and their cohorts) have taught us to think about the development of the world in geologic terms (or geologic periods).

- Actually, they have classes such as "Eons" "Eras" and "Periods" — all of which (they say) occur in millions and even billions of years.

(Eras) - (with a whole bunch of sub-categories)

- Cenozoic

- Mesozoic (which includes the famous Jurassic period)

- Paleozoic

- Neoproterozoic

- Mesoproterozoic

- Paleoproterozoic

- There are 'Mythological and Astrological time periods — (and even though they are 'mythological', they nevertheless have greatly shaped and influenced the thinking of the people of the world.)

- (Astrological ages)

- Age of Taurus, Aries, Pisces, and on through the signs of the zodiac.

- Age of Aquarius (the advent of the "New Age" movement in the 1960's and 70's—which was also a popular song by the 5th Dimension in 1969)

- (Greek Mythological Time Periods)
 - Golden Age
 - Silver Age
 - Bronze Age
 - Heroic Age
 - Iron Age

- Then there are ‘Historical Periods & Ages — (which focus upon the development of certain geographic areas of the Earth—such as The Americas; Southeast Asia; China; Africa; Europe; Japan; the Middle East; etc.)

- (More recent Historical Ages)
 - The Machine Age (Industrial Age)
 - The Atomic Age (Space Age)
 - The Post-Modern Age
 - The Information Age

- Then there are what might be called ‘Philosophical Ages’ such as the ‘Age of Enlightenment’ — (actually, there have been several ages of enlightenment).

- The most recent Age of Enlightenment (or Age of Reason) [and the one we’re most familiar with] occurred from the 1650’s to the 1780’s and included our own development as a nation—(based upon a bunch of believers [albeit, Bible rejectors/critics/scoffers; as well as outright unbelievers and **German Rationalism**]).

- Francis Bacon; Descartes; John Locke; Spinoza; Voltarie; Hume; Kant; Sir Isaac Newton; — which went hand-in-glove with evolutionists such as James Hutton, Charles Lyell, and Charles Darwin—which brought about the so-called ‘Scientific Revolution’.

- Well, this is just a sample—there’s many more, but you get the drift!

- But the general idea of all of them combined together is that man is ever evolving and **bettering** himself—and if we can just get rid of the Bible; and the God of the Bible; and all those Bible believing Christians, then eventually mankind will solve all the problems of war, poverty, sickness, and even death—and we will create a Nirvana or Utopia of unending ideal conditions of rest, harmony, stability, and joy!

- Now part of our understanding & appreciation for the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace, and for the **Naturalness** for us to have generated/developed within us this godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for *the world of the ungodly*; and for the *works of darkness* that fuel/promote it—(which goes for the Mem. of the Rem. in God’s prog. w/ Isr., **and** for us in this disp. of grace) — part of that includes God’s own perspective and viewpoint; as well as utilizing God’s own terminology in connection with how He views and how He talks about the TIME in which we currently live.

- And we’ve already picked up a lot of God’s viewpoint and terminology along these lines—such as “Time Past”, “But Now”, “To Come” - God’s “hand was with them”; God’s hand is with us; All Israel shall be saved — even “The Dispensation of the Grace of God”—and so forth.

- But now I want to add to that one other expression that God Himself uses to talk about the TIME in which we live—and it’s an expression that is used in BOTH God’s prog. w/ Isr., **and** with us in this disp. of grace.

- (see it in God’s prog. w/ Isr. — Hebrews 9:24-26)

- (:26) the expression I’m after is: **“THE END OF THE WORLD”!**

- Truth is—as far as the chronology of things go to the outworking of God’s plan & purpose for this earth—when the Climactic Stage of God’s prog. w/ Isr. arrived (4th Install. of the 5th CoP) - with the ministry of John the Baptist & the Lord Jesus Christ; and the gospel of the kingdom beginning to be preached; and the Lord’s Day of Wrath was to occur with the Delvr. & Avenger. Mandates of the D/C being the means by which God would destroy the apostate element of Israel **and** the Satanic Plan of Evil on this earth ...

... with all that in view (kind of looking at it as a whole package) - the Rem. of Isr. was to understand that that’s when THE END OF THE WORLD began to become the big issue in the outworking of God’s program. (which is why John the Baptist said the things he did; and why the Lord Jesus Christ taught the things He did—and why, when you read the gospel accounts you get this sense that the **end of the world** was about to take place!) but then, it didn’t take place so what’s up? maybe all that ‘end-of-the-world’ stuff was just a bunch of hooey!?!?

- Here in Hebrews ch. 9—as the propitiatory sacrifice of the Lord Jesus Christ is being described in great detail here—and the establishment of the New Covenant thereby is being described to the Mem. of the R/I — God describes the TIMING of it with that expression, “THE END OF THE WORLD”.

- And notice in this passage you have the expression “*the foundation of the world*” - and He’s talked about the things that happened **since** that time—and finally you have that expression “*the end of the world*”.

- The issue is—that you have “*the foundation of the world*”; then the activities of the Lord; and finally there was a time coming in the outworking of everything where God was going to END the situation that had been in existence since the foundation of the world—which is primarily the issue of the world’s sinful condition and all the fruits of that (it’s wickedness/iniquity/works of darkness/ungodliness) ... which was why the Christ was coming (as it says, “*to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself*”).

- And that terminology tells you that since the foundation of the world, sin has been in existence, and Satan and his Plan & Policy of Evil had brought things to a Climactic, Crisis Point — and when the Climactic Stage arrived, and in view of what was coming up — that was declared by God to be the ‘Beginning of the End’ (so to speak)!

- Truth is—all 5 Mandates of the D/C occur during the END OF THE WORLD (the Cross occurs at the *end of the world*)!

- Now when it comes to this Disp. of Grace that God brought in unexpectedly in Acts 9 (with the raising up of the apostle Paul) - the Disp. of Grace, therefore, by its Dispensational Timing exists in the overall time-frame, therefore, of the end of the world!

- And Paul uses this same expression—but he adds a little ‘twist’ to it (so to speak) ...

- (see 1 Corinthians 10:11) - note that expression (with a twist):

“THE ENDS (PL) OF THE WORLD ARE COME.”

- Notice the word “*end*” is plural (**ends**), not singular!

- And you know why Paul put the plural on that word if you know the way Paul has already set forth issues pertaining to the “*world*” prior to this passage.

- Paul looks at the world not only in connection with the **earthly realm**, but also the **heavenly realm** as well!

- And in view of *the revelation of the mystery*, therefore, **there are 2 “ENDS” to take place in connection with the “world” of the *ungodly***—because *the world of the ungodly* now, (from our perspective as we view things from this disp. of grace), not only includes the world of men on this Earth, but the world of the angelic realm (Satan and his cohorts)!

- And so there are 2 “**ENDS**” to take place!

- So in the 4th Install. (when the Climactic Stage arrived), Israel was at the END OF THE WORLD point (and they will be at that point when God resumes His prog. with them) — and us in this Disp. of Grace, **in respect to Dispensational Timing** — in the interruption that it is in the Climactic Stage of God’s prog. w/ Isr. — **we’re BOTH in the END OF THE WORLD time frame!**

- And having this godly Thinking/Perspective/Viewpoint whereby we BOTH (Israel **and** the church, the body of Christ) live at the time of THE END OF THE WORLD—then we BOTH, therefore, would **naturally** have, as part of our Sonship Education, to acquire and have generated within us God’s Attitude towards things in connection with the fact that we’re living at the time at which His mind is occupied with the issue of ENDING THE WORLD!

- The point is—since **both**, the Rem. of Isr. **AND** us as members of the New Creature of the Church, the Body of Christ are living in the END OF THE WORLD time frame—and since God’s mind is therefore occupied with the issue of ENDING THE WORLD — it’s only **natural** and **necessary** for God to teach and instill in us His own godly Attitude of hatred/abhorrence/disdain for the *world of the ungodly*, and for the *works* (and workers) *of darkness/iniquity* that go on in the *course of this world!*

- It’s just a natural part of our Sonship Education (at this point).

- And the real critical thing here is that *the renewing of your mind* has taken place in connection with how you Think about the world of the ungodly (that has now reached its zenith with *the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction*) — and that your godly Thinking consists of this godly Attitude—so that it now makes up the constituents and thought-patterns of your mind!

- (because without it, the godly Conduct & Behavior and the godly Labor just won't work properly!)

- Now not only should you be able to appreciate the **naturalness** of acquiring this godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for *the world of the ungodly* and its *works of darkness*—but you should also appreciate the fact that this kind of Thinking/Attitude of godly hatred for it should be some godly Thinking/Attitude **that is attaching itself to some things that you've already learned before you ever got to this point in the book of Romans.**

- And it's the same thing for the Mem. of the Rem. of Isr.—and therefore it comes as no surprise to them when they get to the time in which God resumes/fulfills His prog. with them, that God expresses His Attitude of hatred/abhorrence/disdain for what is going on in the world ... and that's just what you *do* find!

- And when God does express His Attitude, they're not supposed to be scratching their head & wondering why He's saying that—rather, they are supposed to have acquired that same Attitude; perfectly agree with it; and express & manifest that same godly Attitude themselves!

- Revelation 2 - Notice something that is particularly said about the Mem. of the Rem. of Isr. that is said to ones that are living **outside** of the Land. — (especially the ones who are going to be living in the 7 churches that are going to be in the Asia Minor area).

- (:1-3) - In this letter to the remnant church of Ephesus, God starts off commending them—but then He turns His attention to reproving them for a particular issue—and then He ends up commending them for one last thing ...

- (:4-6) — The Lord commends them for something in particular that they have responded to just like He wanted them to respond

... and they responded to it because they had acquired this Attitude of godly *hatred* for it.

- And this connects up with all those passages we have already looked at in the Psalms, in Proverbs, in Isaiah—that describe the fact that the Rem. of Isr. will not only acknowledge God’s Attitude of *hatred* for the *iniquity* of apostate Israel (that they acquired from the course of the world of the ungodly), but they as well, will have acquired God’s Attitude of *hatred* for the world of the ungodly at-large, apart from Israel ...

... the R/I not only acknowledges God’s Attitude, but they are expected to **acquire** God’s Attitude themselves (having been properly taught to have it by God Himself)!

- They are going to be required and expected to know what God *hates*—not only in apostate Isr., but also in the world at-large—and to have that same godly hatred for those things themselves (as a natural part of their Sonship Education)!

- (and they will express/manifest that godly *hatred* as we saw in the 139th Psalm—in their sonship prayer)

- Well, now you see this issue actually manifesting itself in the R/I here in Revelation 2.

- (read :4-6) (:6)

- **Nicolaitans** = (why them?) - they are believed to be ones who had forsaken the true doctrine of God’s word and by adopting corrupted doctrine—and lived in **unrestrained indulgence**. They are described by historians as “shameless in uncleanness” - and as those who had given themselves over to “pleasures like goats in a life of shameless self-indulgence.” (Pagan idolatry; sexual perversion)

- They were believed to be closely associated with people who held to the teaching of Balaam (an evil prophet that had influence over the people and determined to bring them into the bondage of heresy & corrupt doctrine) [which attempted to take God’s sound doctrine **and compromise it with the world** & their corrupted pagan doctrine!]

- The point right now is to realize that in connection with the Sonship Education of the Rem. of Isr. — they are acquiring godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for certain things.

- And there are some “*deeds*” (and some “*doctrine*” as we’ll see later on) that go on by this group called “*the Nicolaitans*”.

- And God says He *hates* those things—and when that all comes to pass (just before the Tribulation Period kicks in), those in this Remnant Church at Ephesus who have received their Sonship Education express & manifest that same godly hatred—which, by the way is very **costly** for them to stand for)! (they’ll undergo some intimidation tactics at first)

- And, by the way, this isn’t just something they thought up on their own! ... no ... they were *taught* some things by God’s word that will make it so that when those Nicolaitans came along with their doctrine and their *deeds*—these Mem. of the Rem. will come along and say, That’s abhorrent! (and in connection with the conformity to what their Father thinks, they will say, We HATE that!)

- Revelation 2—in connection with the Remnant Church at Pergamos ... and they’ve got these same Nicolaitans involved in their church, but they’re NOT responding to them with the same godly *hatred* that the members of the Remnant church at Ephesus were.

- (read :12-15) (:15)

- Notice in (:16) they are exhorted to “*Repent*” (change their minds about **hating** the *doctrine of the Nicolaitans*).

- They need to take the reproof/rebuke the Lord gives them to heart—and go back to what they were first *taught* and get all they should have gotten out of it—and one of the things they should have got was the acquisition of *godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain* for that *doctrine* and those *deeds*!

- Truth is—the book of **James** is going to teach the Mem. of the Rem. a great number of things that they are to hate/abhor/disdain before they get to this point in the book of the Revelation! — but the point is (again) that this is a **natural** thing for the Rem. in their Sonship Edu.!

- Now once we have seen the **naturalness** for the Rem. of Isr. to be taught of God to hate/abhor/disdain the world of the ungodly; the wicked and their iniquity; and the core/fuel/lifeblood of it all: the works of darkness—given the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace—and the immediate backdrop/background for it having *the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction*—you should be quite ‘at-ease’ (or comfortable) with the idea that God has included in His Curriculum for us and our Sonship Education (Rom-Phlem) to be taught to hate/abhor/disdain these same things—because they are all **being maintained** by the Adversary and his cohorts throughout the duration of this Disp. of Grace in which we live.

- And that’s especially true and significant in view of that thought-provoking and jam-packed sonship saying: *The night is far spent, the day is at hand* — and in view of that, and because of the effectual working of that, the very next immediate action we are to take, and that we are **desiring** to take, is to *cast off the works of darkness and put on the armour of light!*

- Truth is—that saying (*the night is far spent, the day is at hand*) is supposed to flood our mind/thinking WITH those *works of darkness* and our godly hatred for them! (that is, if everything is running well [the way it’s supposed to])

- Now, to ‘cap off’ this issue of the generation of godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for *the world of the ungodly & the works of darkness* being a NATURAL thing that the Father teaches us as His sons (and therefore naturally included as part of our Sonship Edu.)—I want to go back to something I said last time—and that is that you should recognize the fact that this kind of Thinking/Attitude of godly hatred for these things **is actually attached to some things you’ve already learned before you ever got to this point in Rom. 13:12.**

- This really isn’t anything ‘brand-new’! — truth is, if everything has been properly & effectually working since the time we began the doctrine of our Sanctification (back in Romans 6:1) up to this point—we should already have generated within us some godly disdain/disregard/contempt/disrespect for some particular things!

- This is really just a ‘**furtherance**’ of the issue of us being *conformed to the image of God’s Son*—and the emulation of our Father’s Thinking.

- Let's look back at our Sonship Education (as a kind of 'Unit Test') and see where godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain began to get generated within you as you learned the doctrine of your Sanctification.

Romans

- 6:14-23

- 7:15—(first time *hate* is used in the doc. of our Sanctification—[used 1x before this in 1:30 "*haters of God*")

- 7:16-25

- 8:12-13—(we ought to have no respect and no regard—and even some godly abhorrence, contempt and even hatred for our FLESH! and the **efforts** of our flesh!)
- Your flesh is USELESS when it comes to putting your position "in Christ" into practice!

- 8:28-39—(by 'default' [so to speak], as we become suitably impressed with the curriculum and all it can do—we are to become suitably **Unimpressed** (less & less impressed) w/ what this world is involved in knowledge-wise—real contempt for the wisdom of this world and *the spirit of this world!*)

- 12:1-2—(again, by 'default' as the edu. gets underway, we gain the benefit of exchanging our ungodly Norms & Standards in our conscience with respect to what produces & what constitutes the issue of genuine, godly happiness, satisfaction, & contentment in our lives! — and at the exact same time we recognize the weakness/impotence/inability temporary nature/ masquerading type nature of the things this world operates upon when it comes to pursuing happiness, satisfaction, & contentment—and by 'default' we begin to have some godly contempt, disdain, disrespect with this world's Norms & Standards!) [see next page]

- (and along with that—just as it says in 1 Cor. 7:31 ... *the fashion of this world starts passing away!*)

- 12:9

- So we have seen that in God's prog. w/ Isr.—when it comes to the Education/Edification of the Mem. of the Rem. of Isr. as “sons” — included in their Sonship Edu., is instruction for them to acquire godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for the same things their Heavenly Father (and His Son) hates/abhors/disdains—and that it's just a **natural** part of their sonship edu.

- Likewise, for us as members of the new creature of the church, the body of Christ—and in view of the Dispensational Timing of this dispensation of grace in which we live—as a **natural** part of our Sonship Edu., our Father has included in our curriculum, information that teaches us to hate/abhor/disdain *the world of the ungodly* that has developed again; and for its *wicked and their iniquity*; and for the *works of darkness* that fuel it, promote it, and are maintained for the duration of this disp. of grace. (Just as He & His Son does!)

- And our acquiring of godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for these things actually begins right away—and is further developed and further intensified as we move on in the curriculum for our Sonship Edu. (as we're *conformed to the image of God's Son*).

- And the real important/critical thing here is to recognize that God has some godly hatred for this present World At-Large — but He has even greater hatred/repugnance, and is highly offended by those more specific *works of darkness* that exist as the ‘life-blood’ to the World At-Large!

- To put it this way—in connection with the Dispensational Timing of this disp. of grace—we no longer just view it as simply the time in which God interrupted/suspended His prog. w/ Isr. and is now working with us Gentiles for a new and distinct Plan & Purpose (heavenly places) — but we now recognize that while God's prog. w/ Isr. is suspended, the plan & purpose of the Adversary (Satan) has NOT been suspended at all! And the *works of darkness of the world of the ungodly* that had been brought to a Crisis Point in Acts 7 have to be maintained and fueled (and kept in their ‘ripened’

state of *the night being far spent* in order to serve his purpose when God resumes His prog. w/ Isr., and in order for God to **judge** them in **righteousness** when He has His Day of Wrath!

- And even though you may still have some ‘fuzziness’ in your thinking about all that—and even though you may have some questions about some of the details of all that—what I’m after at this point is: the **general** idea/issue of that should now make sense!

- And your godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain should now be developed to the point at which it is at an appropriate level in order to be able to go on and handle and deal with *the works of darkness* and the ungodliness of the world at-large that we get confronted with.

- Now we’re going to turn our attention toward the Adversary and the Satanic **activities** of producing the *world of the ungodly*.

- We now need to deal with our sonship saying in Rom. 13:12, *The night is far spent, the day is at hand:* - and begin to deal with the **‘Adversary Component’** to it all.

- And the truth is—while that *saying* can be dealt with in a very broad and general way—as we have seen already in connection with the Dispensational Timing of this disp. of grace) as the mere background/backdrop to God’s bringing in this disp. of grace (massive as that is)—we now need to move past the general and begin looking at something a little more specific in connection with the general issue of *the world of the ungodly* developing again and what that implies and generates in our thinking today. (i.e., godly hatred/abhorrence)

- And what I’m after here is—**Satan’s (the Adversary’s) INVOLVEMENT** in, and his **ACTIVITIES** involved in bringing the world to the point where it became *the world of the ungodly* again, in bringing the *vessels of wrath* to the point to being *fitted to destruction*.

- And in understanding Satan’s involvement & activities—we’ll get a better understanding for these particular *works of darkness* that he has been employing all along throughout “Time Past” and that are still employed during this disp. of grace; and that are critical for him when that final step to *the night being far spent* occurs just prior to the Day of the Lord’s Wrath taking place.

- So what we've got to do now to kind of 'cap off' this godly Thinking Aspect of this saying, *the night is far spent, the day is at hand*—is to bring into the picture the Adversary and his roll and his activities and everything he's been doing in connection with *the world of the ungodly*.

- Not that we haven't mentioned him before—because we have already noted (in passing) that the Adversary is involved in all this that is pure “iniquity” in God's sight, and that God's Attitude towards it is hatred/abhorrence/disdain.

- Isaiah 14:12-14

- Ezekiel 28:11-19

- Exodus 34:10-17— (the *Jealousy* of God is a perfect, godly jealousy which is **not** envious of what another possesses, but rather is protective of His Holiness and that which solely belongs to Him as the Creator. In being jealous of that which belongs to Him, God protectively responds to any violations of His will, along with offences to any aspect of His character and essence.)

- Satan and his cohorts are the ones behind the idolatry of the nations! (see 1 Cor. 10:19-20)

- Isaiah 42:1-8 ([1-4] are quoted in **Matthew 12:17-21**)

- (:1) ... note the careful wording ... *God the LORD* (not 'the LORD God') — hence, here, emphasizing the *LORD* issue!

- (:7) ... of the idolatrous Gentiles and their mixture w/ apostate Isr!

- (:8) - *I am the LORD* (Jehovah name: Exo. 3:13-14) - the “LORD” issue — the LORD vs. Baal

- (:8) Note that God does NOT give His *name*, His *glory*, or His *praise* to another! That which solely belongs to Him, He would never share with Satan, His sworn Adversary!)

- (compare w/ Romans 1:21-23)

- Now in view of the above passages—we have briefly reminded ourselves of the **beginning** of the career of this *anointed cherub* (*Lucifer* the “light-bearer” who became *Satan*, the *Adversary*) - and we’ve gotten a little reminder of what the ‘contention’ between him and God is all about.

- And that’s important here—because when it comes to God’s terminology in connection with the Dispensational Timing of this Dispensation of Grace—the expression God uses to describe that Dispensational Timing is: *The night is far spent, the day is at hand*—and that’s the terminology that particularly focuses upon the Dispensational Timing of this Dispensation of Grace **IN VIEW OF THE ADVERSARY’S INVOLVEMENT!**

- And what we’re after here is to really appreciate **God’s own set of terminology** that He uses to describe the reality of the Adversary’s involvement/activities as he goes about to develop the “world of the ungodly” again, and the Adversary’s involvement in bringing about this thing called “*the night*” which is now in its *far spent* state.

- In other words—by appreciating God’s own set of terminology that is unique to the evolution of the “world of the ungodly” - we’ll better understand WHY God uses the words “*the night*” and “*the day*” to describe the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace.

- And while it is valid and necessary to understand and appreciate **man’s** involvement/activities (both Israel and the world at-large) in being brought back to the point where they became those *vessels of wrath, fitted to destruction* as the “world of the ungodly” developed again—the truth is, God’s terminology of our phrase, “*the night is far spent, the day is at hand*” is actually focusing particularly upon the involvement and the activities of the **Adversary** that lie behind it all.

- And that’s germane to us in this Disp. of Grace due to the Adversary having to **maintain** his “*night*” in its “*far spent*” status throughout this Disp. of Grace—and how, therefore, God the Father is dealing with the Adversary today—and how we can **do** some things that make an **impact** upon the Adversary & his PoE, both now, **and even** with respect to what is still yet “To Come”!

- And while that may not seem to ‘click’ right now in your thinking—the truth is, (based upon our Godly Thinking), when we begin to Conduct & Behave ourselves accordingly — we’re going to be doing what (:13) says, we’re going to “*walk honestly AS IN THE DAY*” - (which is as out in the Lord’s Day of Wrath!)

- We’re going to be doing something that expresses our intelligent understanding of the significance of the backdrop of this Disp. of Grace in which we live; *and* of the significance of what is therefore yet “To Come” when this Disp. of Grace ends ...

... and therefore by our godly Conduct & Behavior, we’re going to be manifesting (and putting on display) our intelligent understanding & appreciation of those things—and by so doing, we’re going to actually provoke the Adversary and by doing that, we’re going to gain all the **benefits** that come to us as “sons” (just as described in Rom. 8—being *more than conquerors through him that loved us* as we properly and intelligently deal with the ‘one’ that wants to *separate us from the love of Christ* and bring our Sonship Education to ruin)!

- So we now have to take a good look at the Adversary’s involvement in the re-development of the “world of the ungodly” - and that’s really what that expression, “*The night is far spent, the day is at hand*” makes us think about (or provokes our thinking to bring to our mind).

- To kind of put it in an over-simplified way—that expression of *the night is far spent, the day is at hand*, involves the Adversary on the one hand, and God on the other....

.... or to put it another very simplistic way—from the moment that the Adversary formulated his Plan of Evil and then implemented it in creation—from that moment, all the way through “Time Past” up to Acts 7 and God suspending His prog. w/ Isr.; and then all the way through this Disp. of Grace; and even through the opening portion of the resumption of God’s prog. w/ Isr.—it’s like in connection with ALL that Time: the Adversary has been having his way (so to speak) [because the Earth and the Heavenly Places haven’t been reconciled back to God yet]

.... and when “*the night*” becomes ‘**fully** spent’- then God begins to have His Day from then on — **and His Day goes on forevermore!**

- **DEFINITION OF “THE NIGHT”**: “*The night*” is a description of the historical development of how things have progressed through time as far as the Adversary’s aims, goals, and objectives and activities are concerned with the Earth and the Heavenly Places.

- **DEFINITION OF “THE DAY”**: “*The Day*” is the Day of the Lord when God deals with the Adversary **in finality** (along with all that he has produced by his Plan & Policies of Evil in his “*night*”) and therefore ENDS his reign of ‘darkness’ and the *night* of this world— and therefore brings the LIGHT of truth, and the LIGHT of His Day and all His activities, aims, goals, and objectives to reign and to dominate—and to do so forevermore, both in the Earth and in the Heavenly Places (i.e., in all of creation as a whole).

- Now in dealing with the Adversary and his activities and involvement in “*the night*” - we’ve already taken a very brief look at some passages about him that are very familiar to you (Isa. 14 and Ezek. 28) — and what I’m about to do is at first going to (again) be very familiar to you as well—but it’s necessary to our study to mention these things.

- And what I’m after at this point is to take a look at a few of the particular Titles that Satan has been given—and there’s 3 of these Titles that I want to look at— 2 of them are going to be real familiar to you, but there’s 1 in particular that up until now, we haven’t looked at (and that’s the one that I’m after). [so, for some of you, please be patient and just put up with the first part of this]

- (by the way, I’m not saying that there are only 3 Titles that Satan has [he has many more than that]—but we’re not going to do an exhaustive study of them all at this point—the 3 we’ll look at will suffice—and one of them is very important to our study of “*the night*”).

- First of all, let’s look at what is possibly the 2 most common and fundamental Titles given to the Adversary:

- 1) THE PRICE OF THE POWER OF THE AIR
- 2) THE PRINCE OF THIS WORLD

- Now, in connection with these first 2 Titles of the Adversary—I often say that they indicate something particular about the Adversary in connection with his ‘usurpation’ of the Heavenly realm (“Prince of the Power of the Air”) *and* his ‘usurpation’ of the Earth (“Prince of this World”).

- Just to be clear: that word that I often use (USURP) - while it is used in the Bible (1x in 1 Tim. 2:12 regarding women in the church not ‘usurping authority over the man’) - I just want to clarify what it means = to, by force or by clever craftiness, intrude, take, appropriate and/or seize possession of something belonging to another.

- Now, the reason why I bring these 2 Titles of the Adversary up at this time (and reminding you of these very familiar Titles) is because these 2 Titles not only pertain to the Adversary’s implementation of his Plan of Evil in the 2 realms of creation—but these 2 Titles focus upon his ‘Prince-hood’ (so to speak) — or the ‘**Princely**’ aspect of his activities.

- That is, they focus upon the issue of Satan’s **governmental capacities** and **governmental authority**—and his goal & objective for that governing **power** — and his desire to **reign** upon those thrones he was after in connection with both the Earthly governmental power & authority; and the Heavenly realm and its invisible governmental power & authority in order to implement his Plan of Evil in both realms and become “like the Most High”.

- And my purpose in including these 2 ‘Princely’ Titles of the Adversary is that they both have something in common with this 3rd Title we’ll be looking at in a moment—and the thing they all have in common is that they are all describing **the issue of the implementation of Satan’s Plan of Evil in the realm of ALL of creation!**

- By the titles: “Prince of the Power of the Air” & “Prince of this World” — the focus of attention (the ‘Princely’ aspect) is therefore upon the issue of the governmental authorities that Satan has influence over—and that he works through—and that he’s utilizing in connection with maintaining his ‘grip’ (so to speak) on the 2 realms of creation that he has usurped the dominion of.

- But then—also in connection with the issue of the implementation of Satan’s Plan of Evil (in **both**, God’s program with Israel and His repossession of the Earth; **and** in God’s program/dispensation with the New Creature of the Church, the body of Christ and His repossession of the Heavenly realm) - there is another Title of the Adversary

- Luke 22

- I want to look at an expression that the Lord uses when He makes reference to the Adversary that is not only an expression, but it’s really a Title as well.

- And this Title that the Lord gives to the Adversary is very significant & meaningful—and is the one we need to focus our attention upon when it comes to dealing with our phrase in Romans 13:12a, *“The night is far spent, the day is at hand”* (and the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace).

- Context: The Lord’s betrayal by Judas and His arrest just prior to His trial(s) and crucifixion.

- (read :47-53) (:53)

- In (:53) there are **2 entities** that the Lord acknowledges here in connection with His arrest and the mechanical, political, and legal means by which He is therefore going to end up going to the Cross, and being consigned to the Cross, and being crucified & die.

1) ... *but this is **your hour***, — and here He’s referring to the very ones He’s speaking to in (:52) - *“Then Jesus said unto the **chief priests, and captains of the temple, and the elders, which were come to him,** ... these are basically the religious & political Leaders of the nation Israel—particularly **apostate** Israel (the leaders of Israel’s vain, religious system)!*

- And it’s the *chief priests, the captains of the temple, and the elders* of Israel that Jesus is talking to when He says, *this is **your hour*** — but notice that He doesn’t say that, ‘You’re the only ones who’s *hour* this is!!!

- He says, *“this is **your hour, AND the power of darkness.**”* (and note that He doesn’t say ‘powers’ (Pl.), but He says **“power”** (Sing.) — in other words, there’s a singular individual that the Lord has in mind here! (and it’s this other individual’s **“hour”**, too!)

- And this is the **2nd entity** that the Lord acknowledges here in connection with His betrayal, arrest, and crucifixion ...

2) ... ***the power of darkness***. — and my understanding is that this is referring to Satan, the Adversary himself!

- (by the way—this isn't talking about "power" in the sense of strength, or potency, or muscle, or some kind of physical strength—rather, this is "power" in the sense of authority, or **influence**, or governmental ruling power—**an influential power/authority over the affairs of men.**) — It's the "power" that stands behind (or is at the core of) *the course of this world* and *the world of the ungodly* : none other than Satan himself!

- And as I mentioned before—this is a Title of the Adversary that is used in connection with his implementation of his Plan of Evil in BOTH programs.—

- It's mentioned here in Luke 22:53, in God's prog. w/ Isr.

- And it's mentioned in connection with the Adversary's implementation of his Plan of Evil in this Disp. of Grace:

- see Acts 26—Paul's witness/testimony before King Herod Agrippa II (king of Palestine) on his way to Rome and Caesar. And here it's not really presented as a Title, per se, but it's presented a bit differently, however the connection is supposed to be made between the "*darkness*" being the "*power of Satan*" himself.

- (read :15-18) (:18)

- Colossians 1—(Paul's prayer for the saints there) we are taught that, in connection with our deliverance from the Adversary, and from his original "power" (both political and spiritual) that he had over us before we were justified unto eternal life through faith in the 'gospel of Christ' - and we, ourselves, were 'owned' by, and were 'good citizens' of the reign and the kingdom/government of the Adversary.

- And in connection with that, the Adversary is described by this very same Title ...

- (see Col. 1:9-13) (:13)

- That expression/title “*the power of darkness*” is NOT an expression or title of the Adversary that ONLY pertains to what was going on in God’s prog. w/ Isr.—and therefore ONLY pertained to the activities of the Adversary as he operated through Apostate Israel, and as he opposed the plan & purpose of God as it pertained to the nation Israel on this Earth.

- But that exact same Title of the Adversary is used in direct connection WITH this present Disp. of Grace!

- So since the Adversary is titled as “*the power of darkness*” in both programs—it’s not strange, therefore, in our passage in Romans 13:12 to come along and find that there’s some particular activities and some particular “*works*” and deeds that he generates & maintains (and is the ‘mover and the shaker’ of) that goes on in this world—and that those activities would be described as “*the works of darkness*”.

- And in describing them as “*works of darkness*”, those “*works*” are **directly attached** to the Adversary as “*the power of darkness*”!

- In other words—there’s a direct ‘**link**’ (a direct association) between “*the works of darkness*” and “*the power of darkness*”.

- And that is therefore why—in connection with appreciating the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace and the Adversary’s involvement in it—that we’re going to be talking about **darkness**; and we’re going to be talking about a particular **TIME**, and a particular situation in which, when **darkness REIGNS**, it gets called something:

- And what it’s called is: **“THE NIGHT”!**

- Therefore it’s only natural (and not strange at all) to find that when we’re dealing with the Adversary in connection with him being “*the power of darkness*” - that when it comes to describing the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace FROM the Adversary’s perspective (or as it pertains to the Adversary’s involvement)

... that we're going to look, therefore, in the PAST and see the issue of **"the night"** that had been brought upon this world—and the condition of **"darkness"**, therefore, from the Adversary, as **"the power of darkness"** that had been brought upon this world.

- And that when God talked about His ultimate TIME in which He, Himself, would deal with the Adversary—and would judge him, and judge the implementation of his Plan of Evil—and would begin to dismantle it, and would begin to destroy it and get rid of it—that God would pick the **exact opposite terminology** in connection with that --

and He would talk about the issue of Him having His **"DAY"** that would END **"THE NIGHT"** ! and the **"light"** that would come, that would replace the "darkness" !

- Pont is—I just want you to recognize the connections with the kind of terminology that we find in Romans 13:12a with God's set of terminology that we're going to be looking at.

- And we need to familiarize ourselves with God's set of terminology in all that has led up to *the night being far spent*, and that describes what was going on in *the night* as the background/backdrop for the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace—because the terms and phrases and expressions God uses in His "Time Past" dealings with the nation Israel (and in His "To Come" dealings with them) - those are the exact same terms and phrases and expressions that we find in our Epistles of the Apostle Paul when God describes what is going on with the Adversary and his Plan & Policy of Evil against us.

- And why do those terms match up? Because the Adversary has to MAINTAIN his *night* and the *world of the ungodly*, and especially those *works of darkness* that are at the fuel and core of it all because all those things are going to aid him in his attempt to achieve his goals out in the final installment of God's program with Israel.

- The truth is—Satan can utilize the same 'works' or the same 'tools' (so to speak) to achieve his goals in BOTH programs! (There are some differences when it comes to his ultimate goal in each program—but the exact same core 'works' or 'tools' can be used just as well in either program!)

- And there are a whole set of terms, phrases, and expressions that we are going to look at in a bunch of other passages that are describing the exact same thing—but it’s describing it in view of the Adversary and his involvement—and since he’s **“the power of darkness”**, the **night** is used; **darkness** is used; other similar-type terminology is used ...

... and the particular **“works”** that are the ‘strength’ (so to speak) of the Adversary’s **night** (and the things that went on as time passed that made the night darker and darker and blacker and blacker) - those works, therefore, would be called **“works of darkness”** and so forth.

- And when you realize that the Adversary has this Title: **“the power of darkness”** - then all that starts to not only make sense, but you can deal with it and learn some things in some passages that begin to provide you with some real **insight & perception** in the Adversary’s involvement in it all—and end up zeroing in on the particular godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain that we have looked at previously for all that **wickedness & iniquity** in God’s sight—and that will, in turn enable us to properly zero in on just what those **“works of darkness”** are, and why they are called **“works of darkness”**.

- (In other words—we’ll get the FULLNESS of the understanding & appreciation we’re supposed to have in our phrase, **“the night is far spent, the day is at hand”**.)

- So, once again, **“the power of darkness”** (in both Luke 22:53 and in Colossians 1:13) is the Title of the Adversary that we need to focus our attention upon and deal with in some detail.

- Now, unlike the previous 2 Titles we looked at (*the prince of this world*, and *the prince of the power of the air*) that focus upon Satan’s ‘Princely’ concept—his Title of **“the power of darkness”** focuses upon the POWER of darkness in the sense of him holding a rulership or governmental type position in which he reigns and has dominion over both the Earth and the Heavenly Places.

- But if you look a little closer at that term POWER—it’s not simply looking at his ruling position—because when it’s put together with the issue of DARKNESS—the Title as a whole is focusing upon the very METHODOLOGY that Satan utilizes in his **opposition** to God and His TRUTH!

- And when it comes to our thinking about the Adversary & his involvement in the development & evolution of the *world of the ungodly* throughout “Time Past” - and when it comes to the issue of thinking about God’s Attitude concerning the *world of the ungodly* and the Adversary’s activities within it — what we’ve got to be thinking about (and the kind of information we need to have in order to think properly with respect to the Adversary) — the information we need isn’t so much the goal/objective he has with respect to *this world* and *the air* (or the invisible structure of the Heavenly realm) ...

[those first 2 Titles]

.... but it’s the issue of his activities as that ruling Power that produces what is called: DARKNESS—specifically, his METHODOLOGY that he chose to use, and that he engages in—and that makes up the **means** by which he ends up producing the DARKNESS.

- And what that means is—that all of the significance and all of the meaning of us doing what Romans 13:12ff says — i.e., in order to get the **fullness** of all the meaning & significance of all of those terms & phrases, means that we are going to have to understand some things about the Adversary as THE POWER OF DARKNESS!

- Otherwise, it’s just going to end up as a generalized academic exercise—and we’ll end up putting our own ‘spin’ on what *the night* and *the day* is; and what *the works of darkness* are; and what *the armour of light* is; and what it means to *walk honestly as in the day*.

- In other words—we won’t know what in the world any of that really means!

- First of all—when we’re dealing with the Adversary as “*the power of darkness*” - the *darkness* in view here is NOT talking about the physical darkness of this world that takes place when the sun goes down or the darkness in a room when you turn the lights out.

- Although, the truth is, there IS a perfect parallel between physical darkness and this kind of darkness in this Title of Satan—and God does make that parallel in His word. (I’m not denying the reality of that at all.)

- So, when you think about it—we've actually got several contrasting terms—terms that are 180 deg. **opposite** of each other (when you're talking about God and His activities to achieve His Plan & Purpose; and the Adversary and his activities to achieve his plan & purpose):

ADVERSARY

GOD

- Night
- Darkness

- Day

- And what is the opposite of "Darkness"?

- Light

- And if I were to ask you, What is the Light of God (apart from physical light or God's "shekinah" glory?)

- TRUTH!

- So if I were to ask you, What is the Darkness of the Adversary (apart from physical darkness) ???

- **UN-TRUTH (ERROR)!**

- The most basic thing you need to understand and appreciate is that the *darkness* we're talking about in Satan's Title, "*the power of darkness*" is the DARKNESS OF UN-TRUTH.

- And the LIGHT that we're going to be talking about (and that we'll be dealing with when we *put on the armour of light*) is the light of TRUTH!

- Now that may sound real elementary—but nevertheless, it's the necessary fundamental issue you need to appreciate first and foremost! (it corrals your thinking and keeps it from going off in the toolies!)

- **1 John**—I want to look at a couple of passages (a couple of times) - but first of all to just validate this simple/fundamental issue.

- 1 John was written to the members of the Rem. of Israel in the portion of God's word that deals with the resumption and fulfillment of His program with Israel (Hebrews– Revelation).

- And in 1st, 2nd, & 3rd John—the focus of John’s doctrine (and the doctrinal design & purpose of these 3 Epistles for the Members of the R/I) is to give them some advanced information regarding the activities of the Adversary and his Policy of Evil against them—leading up to the time when the Day of the Lord’s Wrath is going to get underway.

- Actually, John’s Epistles deal with that portion of the *night that is still yet to be spent* and when the *night* is winding down to its conclusion. (just prior to the Day of Wrath getting underway)

- And this is why the Adversary is ‘front-and-center’ (especially in 1st John), but even though he’s not mentioned by name in 2nd & 3rd John, those letters are still about him and his Policy of Evil against the remnant.

- Actually John’s 3 epistles deal with the 3 Phases of the Policy of Evil: 1 John (Phase I)

2 John (Phase II)

3 John (Phase III)

- So in the opening chapters of 1 John—John is going to deal with the Rem. of Isr. about a very fundamental thing with respect to the Adversary’s activities in Israel as “*the power of darkness*” (which was set forth back in Luke’s gospel)

- And as John deals with the Adversary as that “*power of darkness*”, John is going to be constantly talking about the difference between THE LIGHT (of TRUTH), and the **absence** of that (or the **lack** of that), which is THE DARKNESS (of UN-TRUTH).

- And this isn’t just something that happens in God’s “TO COME” portion of His resumption of His plan & program w/ Israel (or something that just ‘pops up’ at that time) — rather, this is the culmination of what has been going on since “TIME PAST” in the outworking of Satan’s Plan of Evil—and something that has been **maintained** by him for the duration of this Disp. of Grace—and will reach its total fulfillment in the opening portion of the 5th Install.

- And then (as per the prophetic calendar)—the Lord will pronounce “*the night*” **OVER!**

- And then the Lord will have His “DAY” - and His “DAY” will ‘dawn’ — and just as the physical night ends and the physical day dawns, the sun comes up over the horizon and it begins to dissipate the night/darkness; and it replaces the darkness with the LIGHT! (and that particular “Day” [not a physical one] will never end!)

- (read 1 John 1:5-10)

- (read 1 John 2:7-11)

- All I’m after right now is just a very basic/fundamental issue or concept—(we’ll deal with this in more detail a little later on).

- Just by reading these few verses—notice that when John is talking about the LIGHT and the DARKNESS, that at the exact same time, he’s talking about either the presence or the absence of TRUTH!

- (see again 1:5-6) — the “*light*” that John is talking about in (:5) when he says, *God is light* (and the *light*, therefore that the Remnant has the opportunity to *walk* in) is directly connected with (and is to be understood to be) what is called by John in (:6) “***the TRUTH!***” (critical to get this connection)

- And therefore, by ‘default’ (so to speak), the *darkness* John is talking about (and the *darkness* that the Remnant could *walk* in [which if they do, and they profess to have *fellowship with God*, then they’re LYING and not *doing the truth*]) — the “*darkness*” therefore, is FALSE INFORMATION; it’s UN-TRUTH; it’s falsehood—it involves “lies” — it is NOT “*the TRUTH!*”!

- In other words—the “*light*” and the “*darkness*” John is talking about there is NOT physical light & physical darkness! (even though there is a parallel)

- Notice it again: **1 John 4** — and even though you don’t have the actual terms “*light*” and “*darkness*” here— what’s being said here is based upon the “*light*” & “*darkness*” terminology that has just been previously set forth—and actually there’s an advancement that is now taking place in connection with it—and basically John comes along and says, Look, folks, we’ve got these 2 Things: (***light & darkness***) or “*the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error.*”

- **(read 1 John 4:1-6)** — these *false prophets* are NOT going to be speaking the things God wants spoken—they'll be speaking **false information**; or **lies (deceit, error)**!

- (by the way, notice there in (:4 & 5) John brings in "*the world*" as well [i.e., not just apostate Israel]) — (the Remnant will be aware of the suspension of God's program w/ Isr. and the Disp. of Grace being brought in—and now God is resuming where He left off there in the Crisis (or Crises) Point in Acts 7!) (They'll understand some things about Dispensational Timing).

- But my point is there in (:6) — "*the spirit of truth*" [that's the LIGHT] — and "*the spirit of error*" [is the DARKNESS].

- And the reason why it's called "*the spirit of truth and the spirit of error*" is because of the proponents of the two that John is dealing with in Ch. 4.

- There's going to be in Israel at that time—2 groups of ambassadors (so to speak) for the LIGHT and for the DARKNESS. (and the Adversary as "*the power of darkness*" is the one behind all that Un-truth/falsehood/error)

- And just as John declares here in (:6) - "*We are of God*" ... and John and his emissaries are the ambassadors of the LIGHT—and in connection with the "*Spirit of God*" working through them ... they set forth "*the spirit of truth!*"

- But there's some *false prophets* working out there—and they are the ambassadors of the DARKNESS—and what operates in their mind, and the information that works in their mind that has them speaking falsehoods and lies is "*the spirit of error!*" ... (set up by, and established by *the power of darkness*, Satan himself!)

- So when it comes to dealing with the Adversary as *the power of darkness* and the producer of the world's *night*—the "darkness" that we're dealing with (that parallels the physical darkness of a physical night) is the "darkness" of UN-TRUTH! (and all of the activities that go into misinformation; and false propaganda; and lies/error — and the LIGHT that we're dealing with is the "light" of TRUTH!

- And while this is very basic/fundamental—it does verify from God’s word that when it comes to *the world of the ungodly* when the *vessels of wrath were fitted to destruction* (as the backdrop to the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace) - we can now recognize that the *ungodliness of the world of the ungodly* isn’t simply the ungodliness of man—rather, the Adversary has a particular ROLL in connection with it all. (that is, IF you make the connections of the NIGHT; the DARKNESS; and UN-TRUTH/ERROR)!

- And it’s critical for us to make these connections—because our expression in Romans 13:12a (*The night is far spent*), is by ‘default’ speaking about the Adversary’s involvement in the his production of the world’s “*night*”!

- And the Adversary’s roll/function in producing the world’s *night* is as: **THE POWER OF DARKNESS** that he is.

- Summary Statement: A title of the Adversary (Satan himself) that is used in both God’s prog. w/ Isr., and in this Disp. of Grace—and especially regarding mankind on this Earth. Satan’s title of The Power of Darkness is especially used to describe and refer to Satan in terms of his methodology for maintaining the darkness or Un-Truth of the world’s night. The Power of Darkness refers to Satan’s position of, administration of, promotion of, and generation of lies, deceit, corruption, misinformation, and propaganda that is **opposed** to the Light and Truth; and the effectual working of the Truth (of God’s Truth as set forth in His word, *the word of truth*).

- And really, it’s the Adversary’s **methodology** for maintaining the *darkness* of Un-Truth of the world’s *night* that we need to focus our attention upon—because by doing so, it will lead us to understanding why the *works of darkness* mentioned by the apostle Paul in Romans 13:13 are *works of darkness* and why they are so vital to the Adversary to maintain them throughout the Disp. of Grace in which we live—and how they will factor in to when the *night* is in its fullness out in the final installment of God’s “TO COME” program with Israel.

- And the world is now in GREAT DARKNESS in connection with not knowing the Truth; and in obscuring the Truth; and obliterating the Truth.

- And without making the kind of connections we need to make with such concepts as The Night; The Darkness; and Un-Truth/Error (on the one hand) - and The Day; the Light; and the Truth (on the other) — without making these connections, you will read those 6 *works of darkness* in Rom. 13:13, and you won't really see how those things go along with, and are specifically directed at Satan's overall purpose of obliterating the Truth! (they just won't seem to have anything to do with attacking/obscuring God's Truth)

- But that's exactly what they do—they end up promoting the Un-Truths that have been put into play by the Adversary.

- Now let's go back to the passages in 1 John that we've already looked at—and let's get a little more detail and a little more appreciation of God's set of Terminology—especially the LIGHT and the DARKNESS.

- God, using the term LIGHT to describe Himself as Truth itself—and having NO Un-Truth to Himself—and being the One who propagates/promotes Truth—and being the One who has put together His word of Truth—and being the One whose ministers (like John & the other apostles in Israel's program) were the emissaries/ambassadors of Truth.

- And again—when you're dealing with 1 John—you're dealing with the time of the Climactic Stage in God's prog. w/ Isr.

- And when the Climactic Stage in God's prog. w/ Isr. had arrived—what had been going on in “Time Past” with the Adversary as *the power of darkness* and as the one who brought the *night* upon this world — is that the *night* had become so dark; and so black; (and especially in Israel itself), Truth had become (in a sense) **non-existent!** (even though they were in possession of God's word!)

- (that's how successful Satan's tactics & Policy of Evil was — especially against the nation Israel, and what he did through apostate Israel and that whole VRS—because what he did was to produce an **absence of Truth** & such a system of misinformation and disinformation that the blackness and darkness of the *night* had reached a climactic point—(it will only get worse when the prog. w/ Isr. resumes)!

- And I say that to you again—just so you can appreciate why it is that God has the apostle John write 1,2, & 3 John and describe the Adversary’s tactics against the Mem. of the Rem. of Isr. (in all 3 phases of the Policy of Evil) — and why, when he does so, John is constantly talking about the issue of LIGHT and DARKNESS (those two mutually exclusive, opposing matters).

- (see 1:5) - John is picking up on some fundamental/basic things he set forth back in the gospel of John—and the reason he does so is because the whole world at-large had come to that Crisis Point of *darkness* and Un-Truth (so dark, so black, so thick, that it’s like the Truth couldn’t even penetrate it).

- And the only thing (or the only One) who could penetrate the thickness and blackness of the darkness of the world’s *night* was the Lord Jesus Christ Himself! (that’s how bad it was ... and still is!) [John 1:1ff]

- And that’s why John says here—*God is light, and in him is no darkness at all.* — God is not only physical light (“shekinah” glory), but God is also the Light of **Truth**—the exact **opposite** of *the power of darkness* (the Adversary and what he’s done in an attempt to **obliterate the Light of the Truth**)!

- The issue is: the Light of the Truth of what God says as contained in His word (which was also being propagated by Israel’s apostles; and was being written by them in the other Remnant Epistles) in contrast to what’s going on in Israel’s VRS and the apostasy of it, and those who are propagating the Adversary’s LIES!

- Just like the Lord pointed out & described in detail in the gospel of John—(especially in ch. 6,7,8,9, & 10) [the middle]

- 5:31-47

- 6:26-35; 41-43

- 7:14-20

- 8:12-59

- 9:39-41

- 10:19-21; 36

- The critical thing (once again) is to be able to make the 'connections' that God expects you to make:

- The LIGHT is the TRUTH of who God is; and what He says; and what He sets forth in His word (sound doctrine) — and the DARKNESS is the issue of the Adversary's UNTRUTH; error; misinformation; disinformation; lies; corruption & contamination & perversion of God's word; human viewpoint; the wisdom of man; the wisdom of this world—and basically the whole business of everything that falls under the issue of UNTRUTH.

(1 Jn. 1:5-6) - "*walking in darkness*" (:6) isn't the issue of walking in physical darkness in the night time—it's the *darkness* that was previously described (especially) in John's gospel—which is the darkness of lies; error; misinformation, etc., that is being propagated by Israel's VRS with their mangling and mishandling of God's word; and all the traditions and the contrary doctrine/false doctrines that are taught by the VRS, in contrast to the LIGHT of what God's word really says!

- And all that was exposed by the Lord's earthly ministry—and **2 opposing systems have been established**: 1) Apostate Israel & its VRS (and its mishandling of God's word); and 2) All that the Lord Jesus Christ has set forth in connection with what is the TRUTH of what is set forth in God's word of truth; and the apostles of Israel who are teaching God's word IN TRUTH, and are handling it properly, and therefore causing its LIGHT to shine in the midst of that DARKNESS.

- So, (on the one hand), you have (:6) that sets forth to the Rem/Isr the "*darkness*" issue (making all the 'connections' with *walking in darkness* being the issue of *lying* and *doing NOT the truth!*) — and though it's not stated here, it is implied that they would be therefore operating under that "*power of darkness*" (Satan himself!)

- But then you have (:7) - which is 'on the other hand' ...

- (:7-10) - This is the message that John, Peter, James, etc., were propagating—and it IS the TRUTH—and if a member of the nation Israel continued to say one of those "*If's*" in (:6, 8, & 10) - then they're walking in that DARKNESS of the UNTRUTH of apostate Israel! and the LIGHT of God's TRUTH as found in His WORD is **not operating in them!**

- And these are the kind of issues we're dealing with—(and the way we need to be thinking), when we're dealing with ***the power of darkness!***

- Notice the developmental progress of the terminology in (:5-10) - John uses the terms: *light/darkness; lie/truth*; — and then he ends up in (:10) with the issue of God's ***word*** ...

... God has John end chapter 1 with the very 'repository' of the LIGHT and the TRUTH that we're dealing with—which is God's WORD! (He gets down to the core issue)

- And that's why, when you get to 2:7, John continues on with that 'core issue' of God's word—and he's having the Membrs of the Rem. recall to mind what they had heard back in John's gospel.

- (read 2:7) - The Remnant is to be operating upon what was set forth in the gospel accounts, & Hebrews—2 Peter, which is *the word which he have heard from the beginning*—in contrast to the lies & corrupt doctrine of the DARKNESS of UNTRUTH.

- (read :8) - This *new commandment* (1,2,3 John) is going to be added to the 'old commandment' - in other words, it's still part of the overall TRUTH, the LIGHT of God's WORD!

- And John's epistles (as well as Jude & the book of the Revelation) is going to function as LIGHT for the Rem.—as TRUTH for them—so that they can continue waking in the ***light/truth/word of God*** and not get deceived by any of the *darkness* out in the world.

- But look at the last part of (:8) - ***because the darkness is past, and the true light now shineth.*** — this makes sense if you properly handle and *rightly divided* God's word—and it makes NO sense if you don't!!!

- Right now at this present time—the "*darkness*" is NOT "*past*"! ... we're still in it!!!

- But John is looking at the Climactic Stage in God's prog. w/ Isr.—and when it arrived, the climactic stage of the *darkness* also arrived!

- (see Isaiah 8:5-9:7)

- And from the time (in Time Past) that the Adversary had been re-developing “*the night*” of the world—and that *night* had gotten darker & blacker & thicker—there was coming a point in Israel’s program (and first & foremost with Israel itself) at which God was going to declare (in connection with the Adversary & his PoE) what had been holding sway over the nation Israel—and how the *darkness* had come to its blackest/darkest point ...

... but in connection with exposing the reality of that—LIGHT was going to shine—the LIGHT of the TRUTH was going to be illuminated in Israel—and it was going to start to get brighter & brighter & brighter!

- And the Adversary was going to know what was going on with his *darkness*—and he was therefore going to do some things to attempt to keep his *darkness* & *night* in place; and dim or put out the LIGHT—and the point is, there was going to be some **intensifying** of the *darkness* by the Adversary.

- And that intensifying of the *darkness* is what John is writing about here and dealing with here—especially in that opening part of the final Install. of Isr’s. program. (when the night will become ‘fully spent’ - and the Adversary tries to put the light out of the Remnant by even greater, more **intensified tactics**)

- And his tactics **have** to be intensified—because the Adversary is not only going to have to contend with the LIGHT as set forth by the life/ministry of the Lord Jesus Christ (as set forth in the gospel accounts); but he’s also going to have to contend with the LIGHT of the TRUTH of God’s word as set forth in Hebrews-Revelation!

- Which in another reason why those “*works of darkness*” have to be **maintained** by him throughout the duration of this Disp. of Grace!

- And for the members of the Remnant of Israel—this expression in (:8—*the darkness is past, and the true light now shineth*), [while it’s not an exact parallel] - it’s ‘**akin**’ (so to speak) with our expression in Rom. 13:12, *The night is far spent, the day is at hand*.

- And for those Mem’s. of the Rem. of Isr.—especially for

the ones who will be living during the opening stage of the final Install., — they really will be at the point where this saying is true for them: *the darkness is past, and the true light now shineth.*

- (2:9) - Here, John begins dealing with **examples** of the effectual working of the LIGHT of TRUTH—as well as the effective working of the DARKNESS of UNTRUTH/ERROR.

- And the issue of *hating his brother*, in contrast to loving his brother all harkens these Memos. of the Rem. **back** to the **corrective doctrine** that the Lord set forth back in the gospel accounts (in His earthly ministry). [He taught them the basics of godly Love & Charity as one of the first things in their Sonship Education].

- And the ‘connection’ between LIGHT/DARKNESS being the issue of the TRUTH of God’s word or the UNTRUTH of the Adversary’s doctrine as taught by Israel’s VR Leaders is supposed to ‘click’ with the Memos of the Rem. — Are they operating upon and walking according to the LIGHT of the **corrective doctrine** that the Lord taught, or are they *saying* that they are *in the light*, but operating upon the DARKNESS of UNTRUTH?!? (i.e., *hating his brother*) ... and if they are, John says, They are *in darkness even until now!*

- And John goes on to get even more detailed in the following verses—getting down to individual points of doctrine that were taught by the Lord in His corrective doctrine (which is kind of like a particular ‘ray’ of LIGHT, so to speak that stands in contrast to a particular point of DARKNESS in that VRS).

- (:10-11) - (:11) “... *that darkness hath blinded his eyes*” - and that’s not his physical “eyes” - it’s talking about the ‘eyes of his understanding’ — there’s no LIGHT to tell you ‘*where to go*’ in Israel’s VR teaching/false doctrine/mangling of God’s word—but there **is** in the Lord’s corrective doctrine!
- (:12-14) - Here, as John deals with the edificational status or states of the Memos. of the Rem. — notice John brings in (name-wise) the very character that we’re dealing with who is behind all that DARKNESS— **“the wicked one”** (Satan, himself)!

- (1 John 4) - This can stand as a kind of summary of all that we've been talking about—(with the kind of terminology John uses here for the Mems. of the Rem. of Isr.)
 - When it comes to the ones functioning as the ambassadors and emissaries of the LIGHT of the TRUTH of God's word; the Adversary is going to counter that with his own *prophets* (*false prophets*) that are going to be the emissaries of the DARKNESS of UNTRUTH/ERROR.
- (read :1-6) - These *false prophets* that are going to be *going out into the world*, are going to be (more or less) the Adversary's 'final line of defense' (so to speak) against the LIGHT that's been deposited with the apostles and the Rem. in Israel at that time.
 - And as John describes the main body of their attack—and their tactics—and as he deals with the issue of how to expose them in connection with their clandestine operations and the seducing way in which they'll endeavor to infiltrate and produce corruption to the sound doctrine (therefore putting out the LIGHT of the Mems of the Rem. of Isr.)

.... when John goes through the details of that, and brings it all down to it's 'conclusion' in (:6) - John says, *We are of God: he that knoweth God heareth us; he that is not of God heareth not us. Hereby know we **the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error.***

 - And it's described as "*spirits*" in connection with what is going on in the minds of these emissaries of LIGHT and the emissaries (*false prophets*) of DARKNESS.
 - And boiling it all down: you've got TRUTH and you've got ERROR—and that's what you're dealing with when you're dealing with LIGHT and DARKNESS in this kind of a context! (and in the context we're dealing with, when we deal with the Adversary in that title of ***The Power of Darkness***) — we're dealing with the LIGHT of the TRUTH that God sets forth in His complete, written word, **in contrast** to the DARKNESS of the ERROR and the UNTRUTH that the Adversary sets forth!

- **Ephesians 6** - (a very familiar passage, and it should be)

- But I just want to verify from God's word that what we're doing here by looking at the world's *night*—and *the Power of Darkness* (Satan himself) that brought it about—and that it reached its darkest, *far spent* state just prior to God bringing in this Disp. of Grace—and then because the world's *night* gets fully spent in the opening stage of God resuming His prog. w/ Isr.—that means, therefore, that the Adversary is having to MAINTAIN the *night*, and the *darkness*, and the **un-truth/error** for the duration of this Disp. of Grace—and because the Rem. of Isr. will have to deal with the *night* in its fullness, we can appreciate some of the details sitting in the epistles written especially to the members of the remnant of Israel (Heb-Rev, esp., 1 John).

- So we need to realize that **the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace has the Disp. of Grace existing in the blackest point of the *darkness* of the *night*!**

- And so when we are taught about the fullness of our contending with the Adversary, and all that his PoE can bring against us—and in describing it in detail—and detailing *the whole armour of God*—Paul naturally brings up the issue of the very ones that the Adversary employs in his overall Plan of Evil, and in his Policies of Evil against us—all in order to **maintain** the blackness of the *darkness* of the *night*, while this Disp. of Grace continues on.

- And in the course of our Sonship Education—we eventually learn that the Adversary has got some particular individuals in the realm of “*his angels*” and in the realm of his “*power*” **whom he ENTRUSTS** with the issue of **maintaining** *the darkness of this world!* (and Eph. ch. 6 makes reference to that)

- And even though this is very familiar to many of you—I want you to realize that there is a **direct connection** with this passage in Eph. 6, and our passage in Romans 13:12 & 13!

- In Rom. 13, we get ‘issued’ some basic armour—(we don't get *the whole armour of God* in Rom. 13).

- But eventually (in your Sonship Education), you're going to be so ‘equipped’/trained so that you can deal with **all** *the wiles of the devil!*

- And just by mentioning the connection of what gets only ‘started’ in Rom. 13—and brought to its fullness in Eph. 6—that should tell you that (edification-wise), from the time you get to Rom. 13:12, and for the rest of your life (until you die, or are raptured) you will ALWAYS / ALWAYS be doing something in connection with the DARKNESS and the LIGHT! (the *darkness* of UNTRUTH, and the *light* of the TRUTH)!

- And the Adversary is always going to be endeavoring to **maintain** his *darkness* & put out our *light* as it works against his *darkness*!

- (read Eph. 6:10-12)

- (:12) - notice: “*we wrestle... against... the rulers of the darkness of this world*” — there are some *rulers* that the Adversary has brought into his employ, and he’s entrusted them with the issue of **maintaining** *the darkness of this world*.

- And any time they see LIGHT, their goal is to put that light OUT! ... their goal is to eliminate the effectual working of the LIGHT! [Black Hole]

- And that’s not done with physical darkness—that’s done with the darkness of UNTRUTH—and for us, the members of the church, the body of Christ, that untruth is designed to deceive, corrupt, and adversely effect our LIGHT as ones who possess the TRUTH of God’s written word and know it!

- That’s the battle! ... it isn’t the devil going after your health; your car; your house; your job; your money!!!

- Acts 26 — This passage is especially important to our understanding of the Adversary and his involvement *in the world of the ungodly*, and in bringing upon the world *the night* as he does so under that Title: ***The Power of Darkness***—and this is the very point in which God had recently interrupted/suspended His prog. w/ Isr., and in which those *vessels of wrath were fitted to destruction* (because they had fully embraced the

night and the *darkness* of UNTRUTH—and had no intention of being illuminated by the LIGHT of TRUTH).

- Which harkens you back to some things the Lord said in the opening stage of His earthly ministry as He taught Israel His corrective doctrine—and when that Crisis Point was quickly being reached in both Israel and in the world at-large—(**John 3**—and this is said in a context that not only included Israel, but also the world at-large—but it was a rebuke, especially to Israel, who was no longer operating as *the light of the world*, but instead had fully embraced the darkness of UNTRUTH—and not only embraced it, but were having a ‘**love affair**’ with it! and had no intention of giving up that ‘harlot’! — [**see :18-21**]

- But this passage in Acts 26 serves to **drive home** the **reality** that Satan, (the Adversary), as ***The Power of Darkness*** **MUST** maintain his *night/darkness* of UNTRUTH in the world at-large for the duration of this Disp. of Grace.

- Here in Acts 26, Paul is recounting his salvation on the road to Damascus in Acts ch. 9 (when God raised him up as a brand new apostle to the Gentiles in this brand new Disp. of Grace) - and he now recounts that before king Agrippa.

- (see Acts 26:13-18)

- Notice that when the Lord commissioned Paul and sent him out to the Gentiles (the world at-large) - that it says in (:18), *to open their eyes*—that’s the ‘eyes of their understanding’ [not their physical eyes] — they weren’t physically blind, they were **spiritually** blind!

- They were FULL of the DARKNESS of UNTRUTH! from the effective working of the Adversary’s PoE (especially against them AS Gentiles).

- And the issue is—God gave Paul a message—a message of **information** that was the TRUTH—and it was going to function as LIGHT—and it was going to *open their eyes*!

- And in connection with ‘opening their eyes’ - that information was designed to **turn them from DARKNESS to LIGHT!!!**

- And that's the *darkness of The Power of Darkness*—and the *light* is the *light* of the Living and True God (and what He says in His word, being the *truth*).

- And folks, that's talking about US—we Gentiles—the world at-large—**right now** IN this Disp. of Grace in which WE live!

- (:18) goes on to say, *and from the power of Satan unto God*—

- ***“the power of Satan” = The Power of Darkness***

- ***the power... of God = The Light of Truth***

- And the significance of this passage as God sends the apostle Paul out to the Gentiles (or the world at-large) is that there is the recognition that, historically, this is taking place WITHIN the bounds of our Disp. of Grace—and at the very Crisis Point in which *the vessels of wrath were fitted to destruction*—and at the point in which the BLACKNESS of the NIGHT had reached its zenith! (that is, where the Justice of God would be Righteous to judge and to pour out God's wrath upon the world of the ungodly [just as it was back at Noah's Flood], and God's Justice would be **compromised** if He doesn't pour out His wrath!!!)

- God recognizes that what exists out there in the world at-large (to this very day) is total DARKNESS—the world at-large can't see a thing out there!

- And the only LIGHT that does exist is in God's word, and in those that make up the members of the church, the body of Christ!

- And sadly, there is very little LIGHT in the very body of Christ today!!! (Acts 26:18 is a RADICAL statement!)

- And the issue is, that all throughout the time in which *the world of the ungodly* developed again—Satan, as *the Power of Darkness*, and his emissaries as those *rulers of the darkness* (Eph. 6:12) have made things darker & darker—and have caused that *darkness* expand and expand over time until ALL the nations were plunged into *darkness*, and were kept in the *darkness* of Untruth!

- And all that now exists in the world is so much Untruth; misinformation; disinformation; corrupted information; deceitful & fraudulent information; and erroneous information all of which is opposed to the TRUTH!

... all of which the Lord Jesus Christ, and the apostle Paul recognized as *“the power of Satan”*!!!

- And Satan, being *The Power of Darkness*—as things progress on and get darker/blacker—the Adversary derives more and more POWER out of that DARKNESS!

- And he becomes stronger & stronger in connection with his opposition to the TRUTH—and he gets greater power in his contending with the TRUTH!

- And I say that so that you can realize that the Adversary has done some particular things, **powerfully**, that actually become the powerful means by which he’s able to do what he was doing with his *night* at the time in which this Disp. of Grace was brought in—that are recognized by him as **areas of strength** to him.

- And what those things are, are the things that are called *“the works of darkness”*.

- And those are the things we **go after** when we *cast off the works of darkness, and put on the armour of light*.

- In a sense, we take the very things that are *“near & dear”* to the Adversary as far as his *night* is concerned.

- And it really is much like a “black hole” in which the gravitational pull is so great that it sucks light into it— (it swallows it up) — and if you think of a **power** like that—and put that into the Adversary’s hands as far as his endeavoring to suck in the LIGHT of God’s TRUTH and make them ineffectual—well, that’s exactly what those *works of darkness* are like!

- They're like Satan's "black holes" that swallow up God's LIGHT.

- And that's why, by our intelligent understanding of the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace and by our Sonship Education that brings us to the point of Romans 13:12, we should have a godly generated zeal to enter in to this new aspect of our Father's business and take the Adversary on and go after his strongholds of his *works of darkness*—and kind of pull that flag down, and put up the flag of the LIGHT.

- And the great 'coup de tat' for the Adversary was to get the **power** of his *darkness/night* to be so great that the Nation Israel (who was to function as *the light of the world* against the *darkness* of this world) would not only succumb to his *darkness* and to diminish their *light*—but he even got them to **WILLINGLY ABANDON THE LIGHT!**

- And the great 'coup de tat' for the Adversary and his PoE against the church, the body of Christ today is to get a member of the church, the body of Christ to **not do anything about those works of darkness** and to **WILLINGLY ABANDON THE LIGHT**—(which is one of the things Satan got the Corinthians to be willing to do)!

- Now at this point in dealing with the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace as we find it in our saying: *The night is far spent, the day is at hand*—we're going to 'shift gears' just a little bit and 'cap off' our understanding and appreciation of what *the night* is talking about by kind of taking everything that we've covered so far and kind of gather it up all together and (hopefully) get the **FULL PERSPECTIVE** of the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace.

- (at least get the **fullness** that is sufficient for our saying in Rom. 13:12a to do its job of getting the full impact of the Godly Thinking)

1. We started by looking at the fact that the saying, *the night is far spent, the day is at hand* is NOT just some other way, or clever way, or poetic way, or figure-of-speech way, etc., of talking about or describing this present Dispensation of Grace in which we live.

- Rather, that expression actually points to the parameters of (or the beginning & ending of) this Disp. of Grace—as it was inserted into God's overall Designed Plan & Purpose for ALL of His creation. (including His contention w/ Adversary)

- The expression *The night* refers to the historical development of how things have progressed through time as far as the Adversary's aims, goals, objectives, and activities are concerned with the Earth and the Heavenly Places.
- And we took some time to look at the time in which Satan's *night* developed when, after the flood of Noah's time, Satan developed *the world of the ungodly* again.
- And we looked especially at the Crisis Point that was reached when *the night* got so dark/black/thick that it achieved a status of being *FAR SPENT*.
- And that Crisis Point was reached in Acts 7 with the stoning of Stephen (just before God brought this Disp. of Grace into effect with the saving & raising up of the apostle Paul as historically recorded in Acts 9). [Christ "stands" to judge!]
- And we also noted that there wasn't just 1 Crisis that had occurred, but 2 — 1) with the Nation Israel; 2) with the World At-Large [which is our concern].
- The expression *the night*, viewing the beginning of this Disp. of Grace, we therefore noted that the expression *the day* refers to the END of this Disp. of Grace.
- "*the day*" refers to the Day of the Lord when He deals with the Adversary **in finality** and ENDS his reign of 'darkness' and the *night* of this world—the Lord will bring the LIGHT of His TRUTH and the LIGHT of His DAY to reign & dominate forevermore in both the Earth and in the Heavenly Places (the whole of creation).
- "*the day*" therefore refers to what will take place in the final Installment of God's program with Israel, immediately following the ending of this present Disp. of Grace in which we live.

2. We next dealt with the very **Attitude** of God the Father and of the Lord Jesus Christ toward the Adversary's *night*: one of godly hatred/disgust/disdain—and the utter personal offense; the **iniquity** that *the world of the ungodly* is to Him—and how we are to have that same godly hatred generated within us by the effectual working of God's word.

- And along with getting God's Attitude towards *the world of the ungodly* that developed again—we also came to understand God's own perspective on the overall Time-frame in which the Disp. of Grace is in.

- And that is that, from the time of the arrival of the Climactic Stage of Israel's program; along with the Disp. of Grace in which we now live; as well as the time in which God resumes and fulfills His prog. w/ Isr.—all that Time is the Time in which God is bringing about the ENDS OF THE WORLD! (His mind is, therefore, occupied with ending the world as we know it, and then finally getting on with His Plan & Purpose for His creation as He originally intended!)

- It was also at this time the we got a better understanding and appreciation for the fact that for the duration of this Disp. of Grace, the Adversary **MUST MAINTAIN** *the night in its far spent* status by means of *the works of darkness*—and why he must do so. (explain)

3. Then we shifted our attention upon the Adversary's involvement and activities in bringing the world to the point where it became *the world of the ungodly* again.

- And we took special notice of 3 of Satan's Titles: 1) The Prince of the Power of the Air; 2) The Prince of this World; 3) The Power of Darkness.

- And along with this, we began looking at God's set of terms/terminology that He uses to describe what was going on, what still is going on, and what will be going on as He sets about to bring The Ends of the World to pass.

- Day/Light/Truth vs. Night/Darkness/Untruth (error)

- And that Satan's Title of The Power of Darkness describes his methodology for maintaining the *darkness* of Untruth of the world's *night*—utilizing lies, deceit, corruption, misinformation/disinformation to oppose the Light of the Truth of God's written word.

- The 'battle' therefore is about the Light of the Truth of God vs. the Darkness of the Untruth & Errors/Lies of the Adversary!

- So now we're going to kind of 'shift gears' one more time—and I have gone over this 'mini-review' of what we've gone over so far because what we're going to do now is to gather up all that information about what that expression "*the night*" is talking about, and now we're going to hopefully get the FULL perspective of the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace.

- In other words—we need to have the **fullness** of God's perspective for the status of this world at-large at the very point in which He brought in this dispensation of grace—with not only the blackness & wickedness of *the world of the ungodly* with the *vessels of wrath fitted to destruction*—but also with the Adversary's involvement in it all — and simply put, we need to better appreciate **the fullness of the detestable background of this Dispensation of Grace.**

(... in order to gain the fullness of the Godly Thinking of *the night is far spent, the day is at hand.*)

- So I want to take that "*night*" concept (and its *darkness* of Untruth) and get a little better or more comprehensive understanding of its progressive development as it opposes God's 'Light' of Truth.

- And what we need to now recognize is that there was a Point in time (in "Time Past") in which the Adversary's activities actually brought the *night* into existence in this world at-large.

- (and this is a massive subject—and we're not going to have an exhaustive study on this, but we are going to just touch upon some things that will give us some basic concepts of this issue).

- Romans 1:18-20 (1st Part of the Gospel: a) God-Consciousness;
b) Wrath-Consciousness [man is ungodly by nature, therefore deserves the **wrath** of God by nature!])

- As God (through the apostle Paul) positions your thinking upon the issue of mankind's (as those *vessels of wrath fitted to destruction*) worthiness of God's wrath—being brought to that Crisis Point (both Israel and the World At-Large).

- And in the process, God teaches you to look back in time, at a point in time in which (because of the activities of the Adversary), He came along and declared that **darkness** (of Untruth) had now come into effect!

- (:20) deals with the Light of the Truth of God-consciousness—and here you're taught how to respond to someone who is holding the Light of the Truth of God-consciousness in "*unrighteousness*" - and in your Ambassadorship, if there's a problem here, then you're taught what to do about it so that you can then move on with them in the presentation of the Gospel of Christ.

- (:21) - Notice that "*darkness*" was going to become the BIG ISSUE with man on this world! ... i.e., the Adversary as The Power of Darkness had effectively made it so that the *darkness* of Untruth was going to become the Big Issue in this world.

- And in (:21), God has you look back in "Time Past" to a time in which God says that men "*knew God*" — and then He goes on to describe man's negative response to that knowledge (and that Light).

- There was a time in "Time Past" when men "*knew God*" - they had "Light" (the Light of the Truth of God Himself—and were conscious of that Light) - and they really knew a great deal about the True and Living God.

- (CAVEAT) - Remember Genesis 3-5.
 - Helps to remember what we covered in Rom. 13:1.
 (see Charts # 73, 74)

- 2 Peter 2:5

4 For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment;

5 And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly;

6 And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly;

- 2 Peter 3:6

5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water:

6 Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished:

7 But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men.

- Now what I'm after here is that—when it comes to our expression in Romans 13:12 (*The night is far spent, the day is at hand*); and what God is having Paul refer to in Romans 1:18ff is NOT anything about that “Old World” that ended with the judgment of Noah’s flood.

- In other words—the point in time (in “Time Past”) that Romans 1 is describing is NOT describing the “Old World” or the original world of the ungodly—rather, it’s really describing The New World Order (or describing things from the point of The New World Order, **on**.)

- Therefore, when Romans 1:21 says, “*Because that, when they knew God, ...*” it’s NOT talking about the ones living during the Old World in Genesis 3-5; nor is it referring to the wicked ones of Genesis 6! ... it’s referring to ones AFTER Genesis 6 (after the flood)!

- That’s not to say that the Adversary wasn’t “The Power of Darkness” in the Old World (he certainly was) - and it’s not to say that there wasn’t a generation of “darkness” in the Old World on his part (there certainly was) ...

... but it was of a bit of a different variety (so to speak) or nature than what we’ve been looking at.

- My point is—that when God brought in The New World Order, just after the flood—there was a period of time from about Genesis chapter 9—(roughly) 17, when, in a sense, God’s LIGHT of TRUTH is the BIG ISSUE! (in a sense, there’s more LIGHT than there is DARKNESS—the darkness of untruth is there, but the Light of Truth is outshining it, so to speak.)

... and it doesn’t last very long—but the issue is, that when God started over with the New World Order (with a clean slate) - God started over with the Light of Truth reigning! **(and it was MORE than simply the light of God-consciousness!)**

- And the Adversary DID respond to that Light: (Gen. 10, 11) the Tower of Babel, Nimrod, and the activities of the Adversary—which were all designed to ‘squelch’ the LIGHT of God’s Truth! (see **NUT, for example**)

- There in Genesis 10ff you have described the activities that the Adversary took that were activities that were specifically designed to ‘squelch’ the Light. (see **Gen. 9, 10, 11**)
- And the fascinating thing you begin to see at that time is the **nature** and the **methodology** of the Adversary to ‘squelch’ the Light really is somewhat different from what was going on in The Old World.
 - **The Satanic methodology in the New World Order for ‘squelching’ the Light is by the production of UNTRUTHS—LIES!** (Not that there weren’t any lies or untruths back in the Old World, there were.)
- But the issue is—that because of the way in which things had **changed** with the New World Order—the production of lies/untruths/misinformation/disinformation/etc., (that are the methodology of producing *darkness*), became the BIG ISSUE—they became the ‘**core**’ of the Adversary’s ‘Master-Plan’ (so to speak).
- And the Light of God’s Truth—both about Himself and what’s going on in the world—all of that begins to be attacked & challenged by Untruths and ‘alternative thinking’.

- (And all of that begins to **dim** that Light.)

- And though it isn’t the most proper way to say it—it’s not technically accurate to say it this way—but for now—in view of the “night” and “day” terminology—you could refer to the time of God’s Light in Genesis 9-17 as a “**Day**” of God (in the sense that the Light of God’s Truth was the Big Issue). [His Light was shining, following a world-wide judgment!]
- And that’s what Paul is talking about when he says, “*when they knew God*” (Rom. 1:21) - and the “*they*” is referring to mankind in general.
- And in those chapters of Gen. 9-17, you do run into certain accounts with Gentiles (there were no Jews until Abram), where they either speak about God (with more intelligence than that He merely exists [God-consciousness]), or give the indication that they really do “*know God*” in more than a God-consciousness sense! (see **Gen. 14:17-24**)

- By the way—you can get an indication as to when the DARKNESS of UNTRUTH began to overtake the LIGHT of God’s TRUTH in the world by carefully considering the information in Gen. 10 (in those “generations” of Shem, Ham, and Japheth). [especially Ham]

- And things DID CHANGE (as the Satanic Policy of Evil began to effectively work) - and Paul gives a historical ‘recap’ of it in Romans 1 concerning the reality of men holding “*the truth in unrighteousness*”.

- Notice (**Romans 1:21**) - after saying that there was a time when the world in general (at-large) *knew God*—then it says, *they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful* —

- both of those expressions first of all indicate a knowing of God beyond the simple matter that He exists —

- and those expressions also point to the fact that the world at-large began to be adversely affected by 2 major things:

1) by their own sinful heart;

2) by some things going on in the world that were of the adversary’s own plan/policy of evil.

- And by the combination of the 2—they conspired together (so to speak) so that the people of this world began to *hold the truth in unrighteousness*—(the LIGHT of the TRUTH of God).

- This negative response on man’s part didn’t ‘come out of the blue’ (so to speak) - it came out of man’s own nature of sin (to which man is entirely guilty in and of himself) - but it also had an accomplice, an aid, an abeter(?) in the adversary’s DARKNESS of UNTRUTH (error/lies/deceit/misinformation)!

- **And what the adversary was after in all that, was the obliteration of the LIGHT of God’s TRUTH and the production of DARKNESS in the man’s heart!!!**

- And by producing that—and making it so that man, at-large, possessed the very thing (and became the very thing) described here—**THAT’S** what historically made it, therefore, the time in which THE NIGHT begins!

- (:21) ... *but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was **darkened**.* — and that is the ‘darkness’ we’re after—the darkness of UNTRUTH—the darkness generated in a man’s heart by The Power of Darkness!
(not just an individual man, but all men/women at-large)

- And some of the things that the adversary generates, promotes, and fosters in order to accompany man’s own sinful nature—and plunge it into vanity, foolishness, and darkness—are those **works of darkness**, themselves!!!

- And it was at this point when “The Night” got itself underway in the New World Order (following the destruction of the Old World).

- And simultaneously with that is the establishment of The World of the Ungodly, again!

- And all that is part & parcel of the adversary’s PLAN—he has a goal in mind—**he’s working towards something!!!**

- (read Rom. 1:22-25)

- And at this point—the World At-Large is now under DARKNESS (UNTRUTH) from this point on.

#28 - This is where we have on our Time Line Chart the issue of the Gentiles becoming “Far Off” & “Without God” in the world.

- So—there was a very short period of time just after the Flood when the LIGHT of God’s TRUTH was shining—but then by the adversary’s activities in connection with his Plan of Evil, and by the sinfulness of man’s own nature responding negatively to the LIGHT of God’s TRUTH—DARKNESS (the darkness of UNTRUTH/Error) fell upon all of mankind and by rejecting the LIGHT/TRUTH, the world of man on this Earth became the world of DARKNESS/ UNTRUTH; the world of the ungodly, again!

... but ... just when “The Night” and its Darkness of Untruth became the predominate thing in the world ... **God ‘struck a match’ in that night/darkness!**

- (Gen. 12—Abram & his seed = to function as the Light of the World!)

- At the point of Genesis 12, the world (and the nations & peoples of the world) was plunged into **darkness**—(not as dark as it would become, but dark enough to squelch the LIGHT of God’s TRUTH to the point to which God had to take action).

- And so God selects Abram, the son of Terah, from Ur of the Chaldees (right from under the nose of the adversary—right in his headquarters/stronghold) . . . and in the darkness of untruth; in the blackness of the foolish and darkened hearts of men—God lit a match (so to speak) with Abram—who’s seed would eventually generate a new nation of God’s own creation: The Nation Israel.

- And when God created the nation Israel—and then brought them into the land of Immanuel—when God brought them in to their land, they were supposed to function there as THE LIGHT OF THE WORLD.

- And the reason why it’s significant for us to see that—is not only because of the reality/truth of it—but to underscore the fact that when Israel functions as the Light of the World **it’s because they had the ORACLES OF GOD committed unto them!** (Rom. 3:2)

- They had the TRUTH of God’s word committed unto them!

- And they were expected to do something with God’s word to affect the Gentiles—and as such, function as the LIGHT in the DARKNESS of this world!

- And functioning as LIGHT/TRUTH, they were have an impact upon the LIE and UNTRUTH of the DARKNESS that the world was plunged into (or as Paul says, *Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves: Who changed the truth of God into a lie, ...* (Romans 1:24, 25)

- (by the way—what you have described there in Romans 1:21-25 is **The Prescription for The Night!** — **1**) man’s own *vain imagination* and sinful heart by nature; **2**) Untruths/misinformation that the adversary has instilled in the Nations) [works hand-in-hand]

- Now we're not going to go on in Romans 1—but I just want you to understand & appreciate that those verses in chapter 1 (:21 all the way down through :32, the end of the chapter) — all of that information is looking back to the New World Order that came into existence right after the Flood—and contained in that information is the description of the beginning of, and the development of what we now know as “*The Night*” — it points you back to the time in which the adversary’s activities & involvement began to develop “*the world of the ungodly*” again! (with the “*works of darkness*” being at the core, and the fuel by which *the night* gets blacker and darker as time goes on!)

- (and really, if you want to understand more about the beginning of “*the night*”, you need to spend some more time with Romans 1:21-32).

- So just when the adversary was producing & generating the Night/Darkness of Untruth/error/lies/misinformation, etc., — God ‘struck a match’ or ‘lit a lantern’ - that is, He began a nation of His own creation (Israel) to become “the light of the world” - and the history of Israel will culminate at the Climactic Stage of their program with the adversary getting it so that the Nation Israel willingly puts their own light out! (and Israel will be plunged into the same blackness of darkness that all the other Gentile nations are in!) - [and they end up actually embracing the darkness & loving the darkness rather than the Light of God’s Truth!]

- And that made it so that the **whole world** was under the rulership of the adversary as “The Power of Darkness”!

- And that’s what made it so that “*The Night*” was able to reach its status of being “*far spent*”, and the *day* being *at hand*.

- And when it comes to the Impact that Israel was designed to make upon the nations of the world—the impact they were to make was an impact of TRUTH—the truth of God’s word; the truth of the true and living God Himself; and a whole bunch of truthful things in connection with God’s plan & purpose.

- And the reason for that is because those nations of the world are sitting in the Darkness of Untruth/error/lies, etc.

- And when Israel gets into the Land, the impact they are to make, and the function they are to have is in 2 particular ways—and by those 2 ways, they are to make an **assault** upon the adversary and his policies of evil (and the darkness of Untruth) against the nations.

- Those 2 particular ways are: Israel was to function as: The **Salt** of the Earth; and The **Light** of the World —

- (Matthew 5) - the arrival of the Climactic Stage in Israel's program had come—the Lord gathers the members of the remnant of Israel on the Mount of Olives (the Sermon on the Mount) - and He begins teaching the gospel of the kingdom and the corrective doctrine for the remnant to function in the midst of apostate, rebellious Israel and have rewards out when the kingdom gets itself established (see 4:17).

- (**now read Mat. 5:13-16**)

- [Note: this **isn't** talking about us in this Disp. of Grace—we are **not** 'the salt of the earth' and we are **not** 'the light of the world'!] {**Israel** is the only one who can fulfill that!} — and they began to fulfill that in the year of F/M (Repentance to Israel); and they will fulfill that out in the Lord's Day of Wrath as they function as the 'salt of the earth' and the 'light of the world' & make the impact upon those nations, and for those nation's benefit to respond positively to the Truth & be delivered from the Lord's Day of Wrath.

- (**Deuteronomy 4**) — Although that terminology of "Salt" and "Light" isn't used in this passage, those 2 issues really have their foundation back here in Deuteronomy chapter 4.

- (Deut. 4 actually describes the 2 issues of "salt" and light", not by name, but by doctrinal description.) It's because of what's described in Deut. 4 that makes these 2 terms the appropriate terms that are used to describe what Israel was designed for in the first place, but ended up losing their 'savour' and putting out their 'light.'

- And the Lord makes them aware that, with rare exception, they have NOT been functioning as "salt" and "light" throughout their history because they have been so adversely affected by the adversary's "night"! — the 'savour' of their 'saltiness' has gone; and their 'light' has been 'put out'!

- The issue here is that the nations are sitting in the darkness of the adversary's Untruth—and they're going to see and hear some things that are going to make an **impact** upon their inner man (that dark & foolish heart) - make an impact upon the eyes of their understanding.

- And Moses is going to talk about **2 Impacts** that the knowledge of the TRUTH that Israel has vested in her (being God's people, & being the repository of the TRUTH) that are going to assault the darkness of Untruth that the nations are wrapped up in.

- (read :5-8)

- (:5) - Notice, God says, you've been TAUGHT some things—you've got True information in the form of *statutes and judgments*—and those 'statutes and judgments' are of a particular nature that would IMPRESS the Gentiles! ... and that would stand in stark contrast to things that exist among the Gentiles, because what operates in their minds is a 'vanity of mind' based upon DARKNESS (Untruths)!

- (:6) - '*Keep and do them*' — not just for their benefit, but *this is your wisdom and your understanding in the sight of the nations*—and if Israel was to understand what's going on, and the way they were to go about making that impact upon the nations—they had to perceive the value & purpose behind these 'statutes and judgments' and the kind of impact they're supposed to make—and to do that, they had to perceive the kind of SALT that they are, and the kind of LIGHT that they are!

- These S/J's are designed to open the eyes of the Gentile's understanding with the Light of God's Truth— and they're designed to be 'savory' & something that tastes good in the 'mouth' of their understanding! (and that gives them an appetite for more Truth! - and that therefore attracts them to want to come in to Israel and live in their Light.)

- (:6-7) - ... *which shall hear all these statutes, and say, Surely this great nation is a wise and understanding people. For what nation is there so great, ...* (this both brings the issue to bear upon the members of the nation Israel—but it also describes the kind of impact that it's to have upon those nations with the Light of the Truth).

- Israel is going to come along with that basic *Light* of the Living & True God—and based upon those ‘statutes and judgments’ that have information contained in them that’s designed to effectually work within a darkened heart of a Gentile—they are designed to make it so that that Gentile will come along and compare what’s going on in Israel with what’s going on in their nation—and say, Man alive! We don’t have a god like that! ... Our god is a fool compared to Israel’s God! ... Our god is an idiot!

- And the nations are to recognize Israel’s “*greatness*” - (not numerically, or land mass-wise, or whatever) - but rather Israel’s “*greatness*” in connection with what they possess as far as both the True and Living God being their God; and the TRUTH about God in general!

- (:8) - That’s that ‘palatability’ issue in connection with the Salt of the earth. The Gentiles should say, Hey, let’s get us some *statutes and judgments* going on in our nation like the ones going on in Israel—talk about fairness & equity!, ... there’s perfection of the legal system!, ... there’s a truly great society! (and that ‘strums the heartstrings’ of the human heart!)

(could it be that ???)

- STATUTES = civil enactments which, in this context, is prescribed by God Himself.

(SALT)

- JUDGMENTS = what is right and wrong based upon the knowledge/truth of the norms and standards of God Himself.

(LIGHT)

- So we’ve seen that, when it comes to the New World Order that God brought in & instituted right after the Flood, that for a brief time the LIGHT of God’s Truth was reigning—but the adversary quickly went to work to plunge the nations into the *darkness* of Untruth—and there in Genesis 10 & 11, THE NIGHT BEGINS as the “*world of the ungodly*” begins to develop again ... but God responded to that by lighting a match—He raised up Abraham and generated a nation of His own creation (miraculously), and designed for them to be the LIGHT of the world (the Light of TRUTH). [to penetrate that *darkness*]

- But the Adversary also responds to that—and he institutes a particular Policy of Evil for the purpose of putting that Light out! (and causing that Salt to lose its savour!)

- And to kind of span the whole time from about the end of the book of Genesis—to the arrival of the Climactic Stage (in the Gospel accounts) — the adversary's PoE was successful . . .

... Israel ended up as the willful, lawful captive of Satan;
 ... Israel ended up willfully putting out their own Light;
 ... Israel no longer was the Salt of the earth—they lost their savour;

... near the time in which the 1st CoP was nearing the end of its course, Israel proved it had learned NOTHING, but instead was being more influenced by Satan's darkness of Untruth than the Light — (see 1 Sam. 8:5-7; 19-20)

- [they wanted a political system that looked like all the other nations—they wanted “a king” ... but that expression has got some meaning that is far deeper than that!]

... so Israel falls into a political attraction/relationship with this world—but it ended up with them embracing the *darkness!*

... and that's because Israel had fallen into a **religious** attraction/relationship with the world of the ungodly among the nations who were plunged into that *darkness!*

— (see 1 Kings 14:1-9 [cast God])

Nehemiah 9:26 [cast God's law])

... and because Israel had so embraced the *darkness* (and took their “Light” and threw the batteries away, and threw the bulb away, and stomped on the Light) - that's why, when Paul indicts them as worthy of God's wrath in Romans 2, he says, (see Rom. 2:17-24 (:24)!

- (:24) is what Isaiah said about them in Isa. 52:5; and what Ezekiel said about them in Ezek. 36:22!

- The idea being: **What difference is there between Israel's God and the gods of the Gentiles??**

- (the answer for them is: NONE!)

- And that's what's at the "core" of the *darkness* of Untruth back then—and it's the "core" of the *darkness* TODAY!!!

... i.e., **There's no difference between our gods and the God of Abraham, Isaac, & Jacob!** (the God of the BIBLE)

- In fact—the Assyrian king, Sennacherib said that very thing in Isaiah's day! — (**Isa. 36:1; 16** [Rabshakeh speaking] -20 ... and that's a very significant thing for Sennacherib to say!)

- So the 5 courses of punishment fall upon the nation Israel and upon the land—Israel becomes Satan's lawful captive (Isa. 49:24) - and when the 5th CoP came (the "Times of the Gentiles"), Israel had now embraced the *darkness* and Satan, as The Power of Darkness, had the right to take lawful possession of Israel, and he took possession of it — and he now is going to administer his *darkness* from his headquarters located now IN the Land of Israel!

- Now my point here is—that as you kind of allow your mind to flip through the pages (so to speak) of the history of Israel; and the history of the world at-large—and as you bring your thinking up to the point of the Climactic Stage of Israel's program—you need to understand and appreciate that at the time that the C/S of Isr's. Prog. arrived; **at the exact same time, the Climactic Stage of the Adversary's Program had arrived! (his plan/purpose; his NIGHT!)**

- Again—it's critical that you recognize that when we talk about the Satanic Plan or Policy or Policies of Evil—that is, his program, his plan & purpose—it's critical that you recognize that the Adversary isn't conducting his contention with God (who is the Most High) **on the fly; or by the seat of his pants (so to speak)!**

- He's got an ultimate objective to reach out in the Lord's Day of Wrath! — he's got something he wants to do in the final aspect of his "*night*"! - and he's working towards that!

- And that's why you've got those 2 Crises taking place simultaneously with each other—(Israel & World At-Large) — and that's not by accident—that's all in accordance to how God is going to respond to the re-developed *world of the ungodly*.

- And the arrival of the Climactic Stage of the Adversary's *NIGHT* is where **our** terminology comes into play—when we have that *saying* that describes the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace: *The night is far spent, ...*

- In order for something to be “*far spent*” - it has to have been in effect for a while— it needs to have been progressing on & developing—and going towards a particular end! (an end that would have it **completely** “*spent*”!)

- “*far spent*” = an objective has been achieved by the spender!

- **Romans 2**—again, as Paul corrects the erroneous understanding/ misunderstanding & various forms of Untruths held by the people of Israel as they were ‘*holding the truth in unrighteousness*’ - Paul tells them that they grasped the concept of being “the light of the world”, but never recognized that their “light” went out!

- Israel saw that the Gentiles were in “*darkness*” - but they never realized that they were in just as much “*darkness*” as they were!

- (see :19-20 [:19])

- They were perfectly correct to recognize that the Gentiles (the world at-large) were in “*darkness*” (of Untruth) - [Deut. 4 told them that]!

- And they were correct to recognize that “light” had been given to them—and they were, indeed, designed to be a “light to them which are in darkness”!

- But the truth is—a long time ago, they had put that “light” **out**—and what they were operating upon in the Climactic Stage (& in the 1 yr. of Forbearance & Mercy; and even when God brought in this Disp. of Grace) **was nothing more than “darkness”!**

- (see **Luke 11:27-35**) - the Lord told them **not** to deceive themselves!

- Now let's look at one passage that I'm going to use to kind of bridge the entire span of the activities/involvement of the adversary as he develops his “*night*” from its beginning after the Flood, to the Climactic Stage.

- (**see Isaiah 25**) - Here, Isaiah is looking at the arrival of the Climactic Stage in Israel's program—and he kind of gives a brief synopsis of how things went over the span of the time of the New World Order—and Isaiah especially has in view here the 5th CoP that Israel was now ripe/ready/worthy of.
 - And as he does this, God has Isaiah say some things about the *darkness* of the *night*—and how it got darker & darker—not only in Israel, but also in the nations of the world at-large!
 - And the idea is that the **Untruth** was getting thicker & thicker, and deeper & deeper!
 - And God looks out to His Day of Wrath when He judges it all!
 - And in the middle of the chapter, God talks about how that, when He returns & sets up His kingdom, the LIGHT of the TRUTH will dawn in His DAY—and the DARKNESS of the UNTRUTH of Satan's NIGHT will be obliterated!
- (**read :1-12**) - (esp., **see :6-7**)
 - *6 And in this mountain (Mt. Zion out when the kingdom is established) shall the LORD of hosts make unto all people (not just Israel—the benefits of the kingdom isn't just for Israel, but for all the world—the whole issue is the re-possession of the world, not just the re-possession of Israel) a feast of fat things, a feast of wines on the lees (dregs), of fat things full of marrow, of wines on the lees well refined.*
 - (In our PC time, this terminology just doesn't strike you as being very festive—but rather, it seems like a dietary nightmare! [what would Michelle Obama think?]) — “*fat things*” just doesn't seem to have anything good or healthy or desirable about it at all! (to those of us whose minds have been shaped by science and politics and the FDA!)
 - And a great many folks in the church today would have a real problem with “wines on the lees well refined” — we don't talk that way today—but this refers to well-aged wines that have aged with the *lees* or dregs and then having the dregs filtered out, with the purest, most valuable wine remaining!

- And the 2 expressions refer to a great, luxurious, opulent feast—with great rejoicing in view—things that are only reserved for Royalty! (This is a Royal Gala that will take place in the kingdom for ALL people!) - (by this time, the apostate element of Israel has been destroyed, and all of the believing element of Israel [Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, David, et. al.] come back and function as the “light of the world”!)

- And then God further describes what will take place in that kingdom in connection with the condition of the *night* and the *darkness* of Untruth that has existed in the world ...

- 7 *And he* (the LORD of hosts) *will destroy in this mountain the face of the covering cast over all people, and the vail that is spread over all nations.*

- Notice the terminology that describes the condition of ALL then nations of the world (apostate Israel, **and** the world at-large).

1) THE COVERING; 2) THE VAIL

- This is talking about something that the adversary had been bringing upon the nations of the world from the time of the beginning of “*the night*” - and it had developed into a **DOUBLE COVERING** by the time of the arrival of the Climactic Stage—(when the adversary’s *night* was *far spent!*)

- (again, that’s the backdrop to the Disp. of Grace!)

- The *covering* and the *vail* go together to make it so that whatever is underneath that *covering/vail* **doesn’t get any light (truth) shining on it!**

- A “covering” is designed to make it so you can’t see anything—(it covers it) - your purpose in covering something is to (in its basic concept) make it so that any natural sight can no longer see what’s being covered over; or the natural sight of what’s being covered over can no longer see what is outside of it!

- And in a sense—that’s what the adversary had done **at the beginning** of “*the night!*”

- (it's like there's 2 Stages of what he was able to do!)

- From the time of the beginning of Satan's *night* (after the Flood) up to the time of the arrival of the 5th CoP in Israel's program—the adversary was able to produce *a covering cast over all people*.

- And the primary goal of that *covering* was to make it that those Gentile nations who where out there were not only in *darkness*—but also to make it so that in connection to the light that Israel had (if, by chance, his PoE against them to put their own *light* out failed) - then that light would have a real hard time penetrating that covering—and the ones on the other side of that covering would have a tendency to not even know that *light* was there!

- But then there came a point in which the adversary was able to do something to even **intensify** that *covering* ! and make it even stronger!

- At the time of the 5th CoP, the adversary was able *spread the veil over all nations!*

- A “**veil**” is often thought of as like a bride's veil (something that is see-through and not opaque) - but that's NOT what we're talking about here — the best way to think about the *veil* in this context is to think about a veil like the veil in the Tabernacle/Temple—that veil was to separate the holy place from the holy of holies—and when you study out the construction of that veil, it wasn't just some sheer fabric! - rather, it was a densely woven, thick fabric, designed to make it so that there is NO CHANCE of anybody seeing what's on the other side of that veil! ... it's designed to keep those on the other side of it in complete **darkness** (knowledge-wise) as to what's going on, on the other side!

- A “*veil*” is a very thick covering, purposely designed to keep “*light*” out (so to speak)!

- And the adversary *spread that veil over all the nations*—(which is the intensification of his **darkness** of Untruth (or **Night**) - so that the *darkness* of the world actually becomes blackness of darkness as far as the Light of the Truth is concerned! (like the darkness of the Plagues of Egypt where the darkness could be **FELT!**)

- And throughout the 1st, 2nd, and especially the **3rd** Install. of the 5th CoP—there came a time when that *vail* became **firmly fixed upon all the nations of the world**— **and they were (and still are) unable to remove it or do anything about it!** (it won't get *destroyed* until God destroys it out in His DAY!)

- And at the time of the Climactic Stage in Isr's Prog. (4th Inst.) ... at the exact same time was the arrival of the Cl. St. in the adversary's plan/program/**NIGHT**.

- And he has 2 Things he has to do at that point:

1) Deal with the presence of the Messiah of Israel who is the **Light** of the world Himself (light of **truth**) in the land of Israel;

2) Take the effects of that *vail* that has been *spread over all the nations*, and bring it to bear in his opposition against the LIGHT of TRUTH in Israel!

- And the thickness of that *vail* made it so that the Gentiles actually joined hands with apostate Israel in the rejection of God and His Christ!

- So in this extremely sketchy/simple overview of the beginning and development of Satan's "*night*" and his activities/involvement in its *darkness* of Untruth (as *the Power of Darkness* that he is) - we should now be at the point of the **Climactic Stage** (in both God's prog. w/ Isr., **and** in the adversary's "*night*").

- And my goal isn't just to get you to have a better understanding and appreciation for the career of the Adversary and his "*night*" in just an 'academic' way—but rather you should have a much better regard for the kind of things the adversary is concerned with—and how that, even though the Cl./Stg. accounts for the cross-work of the Lord Jesus Christ (and His victory/success) - even in view of that, Satan didn't come along and just 'throw in the towel' and concede the contention with God and walk off the stage of human history!

- Although the Cross was a 'set-back' - Satan still has an objective out in the final install. of Israel's prog.! (Satan didn't view the Cross as devastating to his plan/purpose ... or a 'check-mate')

- The ‘target’ that Satan had in view (out in the final install.) is still ON TARGET as far as he’s concerned!

- And that’s vital to understand when God talks about *the darkness* that existed during the Cl./Stg. in the adversary’s “*night*” - and therefore, the significance of God suspending His prog. w/ Isr., and bringing in this Disp. of Grace, **right at the very moment when not only the extension of For/Mercy to His nation Israel had come to a conclusion (as Stephen pronounces at the end of Acts 7) - but right at the very moment that the adversary’s “night” and the effect of that “veil” brought into Israel (as well as the Gentiles), did it’s job (as far as he’s concerned); and put him in the legal position to bring about the ultimate, nth-degree EVENT that he has been after & looking for all along—and that those “works of darkness” have been churning away at, and working to produce, and brought things to a point where, if the Disp. of Grace had NOT been brought in by God ... had NOT been part of His plan/ purpose, and therefore no suspension of Israel’s prog. had taken place, the adversary would have done his final, dastardly deed (so to speak) out in Israel’s final installment.**

- But when God suspended His prog./w/Isr., He suspended it with *the night being FAR spent ... but not completely spent!* ... God, in His genius, suspended His prog./w/Isr. right at the very point, also, when the adversary was ready to pull out of his pocket a legal document, and present it to God the Father, and say, “I’ve earned my right to do what you’ve been trying to prevent me from doing all along!”

- And all that fits in to the godly Thinking that you and I are supposed to possess about the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace—that makes it so that you realize there are some “*works of darkness*” that have been going on since this Disp. of Grace was brought in; are still going on; and will continue to go on until this Disp. of Grace ends—and they **have** to go on, because they are the ‘life-blood’ of the adversary’s “*night*” and because he needs them out in the final install.

- And we get the opportunity to **respond** to those “*works of darkness*” in a particular way, based upon a “son’s” intelligent understanding he gets from his Father—and we end up, by that proper response, “*walking as in the day*” to the adversary’s chagrin/embarrassment/humiliation!

- Now—once again—when it comes to the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace—and you think about where & when (time-wise) God’s prog. w/ Isr. was at; and where & when the adversary’s program for his “*night*” was at - you realize & recognize that BOTH were at their respective **Climactic Stages!**

- The unbelief and apostasy and vain religion of Israel had hit its Crisis Point—with the apostate nation ripe/ready for the wrath of God to be poured out upon it. (in righteous judgment)

- The ungodliness, evil, and wickedness of the world at-large had reached its Crisis Point—with the world at-large equally ripe/ready for the wrath of God to be poured out upon it. (in righteous judgment)

- Therefore the Climactic Stage of God’s prog.w/Isr. had arrived—and at the exact same time, the Climactic Stage of the adversary’s “*night*” had arrived.

- Israel, as well as all the nations of the earth, were now plunged into the *darkness* of untruth/error/lies—the “vail” had intensified the darkness to the point of the night being far spent—and the adversary’s ultimate objective was right on the doorstep (so to speak)!

- **John 1** - We were here several lessons ago—but I want to return here just to have you read it again—but not so much to see the divine pedigree of the Lord as given by John—but to have you perceive some things about the nature of the INTENSITY of that Double-Light-Blocking darkness that the adversary produced by the COVERING cast over all people—and the VAIL that is spread over all nations.

- John points up the thickness and the blackness of that *darkness*—(of that VAIL)! - the idea of it **intensifying** to its thickest/blackest point ever!

- (:1-4)

- (:5) - Think about that! as far as what that must mean as far as the *darkness* in concerned! ... light normally dispels darkness! ... and notice it doesn’t say, “the light tried to shine in the darkness”, or “the light did a pretty poor job of shining in the darkness” ... NO ... there’s

nothing wrong with the “light’s” ability/capacity—it was there and shining in the *darkness*!

... but it’s like the *darkness* was so thick, so black, so dense, that it was able to produce a resistance to the “light’s” penetration! ... the *darkness* was so dense that it did not admit the “light” (black hole)!

- And that’s all due to the success of the adversary’s *night* and *darkness* of **untruth** as it worked in the hearts & minds of the ones being influenced by it!

- And notice carefully the fantastic vocabulary control of God Himself and the KJ translators:

... and the *darkness* **COMPREHENDED** it not.

- We’re not talking about physical eyes seeing physical light ... rather, we’re talking about what is going on in the mind/spirit of an individual (and of the nations of the world) ... the ‘eyes of their understanding’!

- The issue is what is going on in the MIND—and the “I” “light” is the TRUTH of God-consciousness (which, if responded to positively, will allow for, & pave the way for the Gospel to be presented to that heart & mind—and if responded to positively: justification unto eternal life).

- So, in keeping with the context, the issue is **comprehension in the minds of men!** (which is still true to this day)

- (**Eph. 4**) - Notice some terminology God has the apostle Paul use to describe the effective working (and the degree & measure of effective working) that the *darkness* of **untruths** can have with an individual.

- And the reason we have this described in our epistles is because it’s part of the evolution of “*the world of the ungodly*”.

- Notice that the *darkness* can have a greater, increased intensity/capacity for *light* to have an impact like it ought to have (not that it makes it impossible for the *light* to have an impact) ... but the resistance gets greater & greater.

- Point is—the *night* doesn’t stay stagnant from generation to generation ... it gets WORSE!

- (Eph. 4:17-19) - describes the status of negatively responding Gentiles to the *light* of the Truth that God has put out in this Disp. of Grace to deal with the *darkness* that is there.

- And you've got a lot of descriptive terminology regarding what is going on in the minds of the Gentiles.

- (:19) - that expression, "*Who being **past feeling** ...*" i.e., there is a point in a person's negative response, whereby he has put his heart/mind in the position of no longer being 'sensitive' or 'responsive' to the *light* of **truth!**

- When the *light* of truth is responded to negatively over and over again—that not only allows for the *darkness* to stay in residency—but it provides for the *darkness* of untruth to get **darker & darker!** (making it more difficult for the *light* of truth to make any impact)!

- And a person really can come to the point of being "*past feeling*" - having given themselves over to the *darkness* with "**greediness**" ... completely "sold-out" to the *darkness* of untruth!

- (go back to John 1) - My point is: **that VAIL did its job!** (and is **still** doing its job!) - [that is, on a whole: in the world at-large, with Israel in its midst]

- And from the adversary's perspective—with the double-barrier to the *light* (the Covering/Vail) - he has a great deal of success with his plan/purpose/objective of the *night* & the *darkness* of untruth!

- **And that's an integral step to the adversary**—to his *night* moving on and coming to the point where he's going to be able earn his right to 'serve God' (so to speak) with a legal writ—and say, Now I can do what I've been working for all this time!

- And the issue for the adversary has been: to meet every legal requirement to earn the right to do some things out in the final installm. of Israel's program!

- (see John 3:18-21)

- (:19) - in a sense this can be true about all men of all times—but God didn't say this back then ... He said it at the arrival of the Climactic Stage—and it's to be understood in view of that! (in view of the **success** of the adversary's *night & darkness* of untruth when that *vail* did its job!)

... *men LOVED darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil*— (they had some “*deeds*” that were not just sinful, rather they were men who were actually in partnership with the adversary! they were working/laboring hand-in-hand with what he wanted to get done! they were supporters & promoters of Satan's PoE!

- (see John 8:44, again) - that's more than just the fact that they were ‘of their father, the devil’!

- It's quite possible to have:

1) An unjustified man who has the devil as their father—but not really doing much of anything to promote the adversary's PoE, or help him out ... (he's still an unjustified/unsaved guilty sinner—but he's not necessarily out there in the employ of the adversary and doing the adversary's business).

2) But then you have these guys (in :44) - unjustified persons who were actually doing the adversary's bidding (“*and the lusts of your father ye will do*”)

- And this may not sound like it's going to be important to us—but it will be! (to understanding how it is that Satan's PoE actually opposes and resists the *light* God's truth as the living words of the living God live in YOU!)

- (John 3:19) *And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil.*

- These men had some *deeds* that were *evil*—*deeds* that were purposefully sponsored by; put into effect by; fostered & promoted by **the adversary**—*deeds* that the adversary loves, and that are necessary to support his “*night*”!

- Now let's make a connection: (:20) goes on to say, *For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, **lest his deeds should be reproved***.

- The effectual working of our understanding of the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace; along with our saying in Romans 13:12a, *The night is far spent*, ... makes it so that we recognize that there are some DEEDS that are of a particular EVIL in the sense that they are necessary to the adversary's *night & darkness* of untruth! ... and we're going to get told about them, too! (they're those works of darkness)

- By the way—you'll also find that when it comes to the Remnant of Israel out in the Lord's Day of Wrath—they're told about some particular works (or deeds) of the adversary that they are to have a godly hatred/disdain for (which we saw back in Psa. 119 & Rev. 2) ...

... this passage in John is for the education of the members of the Remnant of Israel in connection with the Climactic Stage (not just of their program), but the C/S of the adversary's plan, purpose, & program! (and the thickness of the *darkness* and the *night* that has reached it's *far spent* status) ... and there are some *evil deeds (works of darkness)* that they are going to take a stand against out in the Lord's Day of Wrath (you'll see that in James, especially).

- Remember that the *night* reaching it's *far spent* status **didn't** occur in our Disp. of Grace, but in the C/S of God's prog. w/Isr. in Acts 7!

- My point in dealing with all this in the gospel of John is to point out that—because the C/S of the adversary's *night* had arrived—and because that *night/darkness* is so black & so thick—that Satan was (right at that time of John's gospel) only a few steps away to being able to deliver his legal 'writ' to God—by which he has the legal right to bring everything in connection with his *night* to a head!

- The power of the light-blocking capacity of that *vail* can be seen back there in **John 1:6-13 (read)**.

- the *Light* had a witness/forerunner (:6-8)

- (:10,11) = the *world* as a 'whole'!

- (:12-13) = certain ones did *receive him*.

- That *vail* was so thick/dense that even the Light's own people (with all that was said about Him back in the law and the prophets and the psalms) didn't even know Him when He arrived!

- Now—let's look at one more passage that underscores the *vail* doing its job—i.e., the thickness & blackness of the *night* and the *darkness* of untruth in its Climactic Stage ...

- Let's look at a familiar passage here in John that has the Lord responding to the heart-darkened leaders of apostate Israel who rejected John the Baptist's witness to the Lord as being that Light ...

- John 5:32-35

- I know we've often talked about John as that *burning & shining light*—but now you need to see that in the context of the backdrop of the Cl/Stage of Satan's plan, purpose, and program.

- You need to think about that in view of that **thick/dense *vail*** that was now *spread over the nations* (and Israel) - and its light-blocking capacity.

- And John's ministry was designed to do something extraordinary in the midst of the adversary's *night* (and his *vail*).

- And in the thickness/blackness of the *night*—John's ministry was deliberately designed so that a person (even in the midst of all that) just couldn't miss it; couldn't ignore it; ... even the thickness of the *darkness* of untruth, couldn't make it so that this *burning & shining light* could be ignored!

- Notice in (:35), those vain, religious leaders of apostate Israel actually DID *for a season, rejoice in John's light!*

- But they STOPPED *rejoicing* the moment that what happened back in (3:19) began to take place! ... as soon as those DEEDS began to be described as being EVIL!

- In the 6 months ministry of John (prior to the Lord's earthly ministry beginning) - there came a point in which John began to deal with the DEEDS (*the works of darkness*) in Israel, and began to declare them to be EVIL!

- And I go over all this—(with at least this much detail)—so that you will (and you **MUST**) recognize not only the thickness/blackness of the *darkness* of the *night* of untruth—but that you recognize that this is one of the GOALS of the adversary—and even more than that, you need to recognize that these are all some ‘legal steps’ (to put it that way) for him to accomplish his goals!

- And that means that with the Clm/Stg. of Israel’s program and the Clm/Stg. of Satan’s *night* arriving ... things are going WELL for the adversary! (even **with** the Lord Jesus Christ physically on this earth!)

- From Satan’s perspective, things look GOOD ... things look HIGHLY SUCCESSFUL!

- he’s going to have to deal with that “L-ight” - and he’s got a methodology for doing so—but as far as the overall objective of his *night* is concerned, everything is on schedule!!

- And in Satan’s mind—what everything is finally coming down to is: he recognizes that **he has only a very few final legal matters to take care of; a few final obstacles & hindrances to get around—and by the time of Acts 7, all of the legal requirements that he needed to meet were MET!**

- And he could then boldly go into the courtroom of God, and on the basis of God’s own legal justice (and the ‘rules of engagement’, so to speak, of Satan’s contention with God), **Satan can legally demand to have his FINEST HOUR!** (to borrow an expression from Winston Churchill)

- **And that’s what the adversary views the remaining portion of his *night* as: HIS FINEST HOUR!**

- And that’s the viewpoint/perspective WE need to have! (because that’s the perspective God has; and the Lord Jesus Christ has; and the Holy Ghost has!)

- Now at this point—and with all this background—let’s deal with one last issue that is a **major issue** in order to get the frame of reference we need to have in order to adequately understand & appreciate what God means when He says, *The night is far spent, ...*

- We need to take the issue of both Israel and the Gentiles, being joined together—and both having embraced the adversary’s PoE—and both working together in the thickness of the *darkness* of Satan’s untruths (and the blackness of it all) - and even though we already have gone over all that—we now need to see one other thing in connection with it.

- And what we’re going to be after here—is to see what the adversary has **gained** at that Crisis Point in Acts 7.

- We need to see the whole world (the Gentile nations—the world at-large; and apostate Israel) coming together and doing the adversary’s bidding!

- And what this constitutes is: that union, working together throughout the entire earthly ministry of the Lord Jesus Christ, along with the rejection of Him at the cross, and then that union working together & maintaining itself throughout the extension of forbearance & mercy (as recorded in the opening 7 chapters of the book of Acts) —

— the issue is: the ultimate end of all that is the accomplishment of all of the remaining legal hurdles that the adversary had to succeed with in order to put himself in that position in which he could demand the right to have his **finest hour!**

- Simply put—we’re going to look at **THE BIG LEGAL issue** that allows for Satan to have his finest hour!

- **Psalm 2:1-5**

- **Acts 4**

- Psalm 2 is quoted by Peter, James, and John (and the rest of the apostles to Israel) for the members of the Remnant of Israel’s benefit, during the extension of For./Merc.—and they refer to it because it’s part of their intelligent understanding and appreciation of what’s going on—and in view of that, they recognize that as that extension of For./Merc. continues on as had been going on already (and the negative response of the leadership of Israel maintains their neg. response), then they were eventually going to come to a point when the adversary was going to be in the position for him to have his finest hour—and then God would respond to that with His Day! (they saw nothing about a Disp. of Grace)

- Notice the **incredible accuracy** of Peter, John, and the rest of the Israel's apostle's understanding of what was going on around them (intelligence) — they only quote part of Psalm 2!

- (see Acts 3:1-8 — Peter heals the lame man.)
 Acts 4:1-28 - (:16—notice they were given an honest opportunity to repent in ch.3, but they rejected it!)
 - (:24-28)

- They only quote from Psa. 2: 1 & 2 ... and then STOPPED the quote! Why? because the rest has to do with the Lord's Day of Wrath, and they knew they weren't in it yet!!!

- They knew what had taken place, historically, — and they knew what had NOT taken place yet!

- (:27—notice you've got the issue of the WHOLE WORLD coming together = that Crisis Point was reached! - exactly as Psa. 2 predicted!)

- And the issue is they are both working together (that is, the Gentiles and their governmental leaders, and the people of Israel and their governmental leaders)!

- And they're working together in connection with the adversary's Policy of Evil—doing the adversary's bidding—and doing it enthusiastically (“**sold out**” to it)!

- Notice, once again, (:26—[quote from Psa. 2:2] - *The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against his Christ.* (HIS CHRIST; HIS ANNOINTED)

- Notice that it dose NOT say simply, “against Christ”! ... rather, “*against HIS Christ*” ... and that is supposed to **IMPLY** something!

- It implies that: (in connection with that full ‘selling out’ of the **whole world** *against the Lord, and against his Christ* — and after demonstrating the success of that—and with no repenting on either that part of Israel or the Gentiles as a whole) - **the adversary therefore is going to earn the legal right to bring his own ‘christ’ on the scene!**

- And that means that what goes on in the adversary's 'finest hour' involves the issue of providing for that "antichrist" to come on the scene.

G-O S-L-O-W-L-Y!

- My point here is to get you to see that this issue in Psalm 2 [and :1-2] (fulfilled in Acts 3-7 [during the Climactic Stage of Israel's program] - with those 3 honest opportunities to "repent", given by the 3rd Member of the Godhead, the Holy Ghost & His witness/testimony as to who *Jesus Christ of Nazareth* really is—the 1st of which is recorded there in Acts 3-4) **is the essential element**; THE BIG LEGAL ISSUE in the adversary getting his "night" to its "far spent" status! ... it's the issue of getting the whole world to *gather together against the Lord, and against his Christ*.!!!

- (he meets all of the legal requirements—dotting the I's and crossing of the T's—in the Climactic Stage of his *night to produce his own christ* !)

- That's what all his *darkness* of Untruth has been after!

- The adversary had to 'earn the right' to legally bring his long-awaited "*man of sin*" on the scene (the "antichrist")!

- And in the face of God sending the "L-ight" into the world (God attempted to draw Israel unto Himself and even have the Gentiles responding positively [as recorded in John 1] - which is why **the whole world** is spoken about as well as **Israel**) — in the face of all that, the **climactic act of the adversary** in connection with the world at-large (and Israel with them), **remaining true to the adversary**; and **in opposition to God**—the climactic ACT of that is recorded in Psalm 2:3 ...

Let us (Israel & the Gentiles together) break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us.

- (that is, **We want NOTHING to do with them!** ...
... **WE WANT THE ADVERSARY!**) ...

... and as far as the legal requirements were concerned, that's what the adversary needed: **A complete, legally uttered repudiation of God and His Christ**—which, by default, means **a pledged allegiance to Satan**—and therefore, hitching their destiny to his 'horse' (so to speak) [to that "man of sin"]!!!

- And when the ‘final straw’ of that took place (declared by an Israelite in Acts 7) - all of those legal requirements that the adversary needed were fulfilled!

- And folks, that’s what you need to know (at a minimum) to really understand and appreciate the reaching of that **Crisis Point** that we first talked about so many lessons ago!

- Satan got the legal right to put his ‘finest hour’ into effect—and that is why Psalm 2: and verse 4 goes on and says, (in connection with the whole world taking the course of action that [:3] talks about) ...

4 He that sitteth in the heavens shall laugh: the LORD shall have them in derision (scorn/ridicule/mockery).

5 Then shall he speak unto them in his wrath, and vex them in his sore displeasure. (the Lord’s Day of Wrath)

- And then (:6-7) is said in view of another (or ‘anti) king coming—but the LORD, by His decree is going to identify the real King/Christ: “MY SON”!

- And now—with that legal right being earned by the adversary—just think of his relief!

- To sum up:

When what was prophetically set forth in Psalm 2:1-2 actually took place historically—which was when the Climactic Stage in God’s prog. w/Isr. as well as in Satan’s “*night*” had arrived (in general) - and more specifically, when the Crisis Point was reached with the Gentile nations and with Israel in their midst (which was when *the world of the ungodly* had developed to the point where the whole world [Gentiles/Israel] had rejected and repudiated the totality of the Godhead [the True and Living God: Father/Son/Holy Ghost], which historically took place in Acts 7) - it was at that point in which “*the night*” became “*far spent*” - moreover, it all occurred according to the adversary’s own plan/purpose for his Plan/Policies of Evil, which called for him to earn the legal right to have his ‘finest hour’ in which he gained the legal right to produce his own christ/king.

- And Psalm 2 and :3, especially, expresses the fact that when the whole world (Gentiles/Israel) respond as recorded—then the full repudiation of the Godhead in totality had legally taken place.

- Just to verify that:

- Psalm 2:3 *Let us* (that's Israel and the Gentile nations of the world together) *break their* (God the Father/Son [*his Christ*]/ and the Spirit of God who is testifying at that time [of the 1 year of F/M]) *bands asunder, and cast away their* (Father/Son/Holy Ghost) *cords from us.*

- By the way, you can find where the Lord Jesus Christ taught the members of the Rem/Isr this very thing: (see John 15:24-27) — they are going to end up hating/rejecting the Father and the Son—and then the Son is going to send the Holy Ghost who will work through the apostles and disciples of the Lord (Stephen, being one of them) - and they are going to end up being rejected and killed—which is the exact same thing as hating/rejecting the Holy Ghost.

- And you can see that in Acts 7:51 (read!) [at this point, all 3 Members of the Godhead are rejected!] ... and that produces, (for the adversary), his final legal requirement in order to have his 'finest hour'!!

- Satan now has earned the right to actually establish himself on this earth, as the legal 'possessor of the Earth' - whereby he can be recognized as "*the prince of this world*" (not just in name only, but in an executable-type manner)!

- Satan's final, legal matter was to get the **whole** world to pronounce itself AGAINST THE TRUE AND LIVING GOD—and by default, pronounce itself FOR THE ADVERSARY!

- And with the whole world expressing its desire to go the way of the adversary—then the adversary has earned the right to present to the whole world his christ/ his rulership/ his world order, and establish his king & kingdom-residence on the earth!

- And by the time the events in Acts 7 historically took place, (just to give you some perspective from the adversary's point of view) - having earned the right to have his 'finest hour', when *the night* became *far spent*—(and in view of the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace) - the adversary must have broke into his 'victory dance' (so to speak) — uncontrollable JOY/EUPHORIA! [genius!, on God's part!]

- (When God interrupted the program, Satan must have said, "Wait What????") [Satan must really, really, HATE this disp. of grace!]

- Now—just to do one final thing in connection with *the night* and what this final BIG LEGAL ISSUE means to an intelligent "son" - I just want to look at something very briefly that, hopefully, ties any loose ends up, and kind of rounds out our "time out" in Romans to get more of the background & backdrop to the genius of God's timing for bringing in the Disp. of Grace when He did.

- My understanding is that Satan was allowed to have a kind of "dry run" - (or float a "trial balloon" = which is done to test public reaction) of his 'finest hour.'

- **Ezekiel 28** - This occurs in the 5th CoP—and Satan sees a major victory at the point of the 5th CoP in connection with him finally getting the legal right to have his 'finest hour'!

- Ezekiel was a 5th CoP prophet—and functioned during the 1st Install./5th CoP—and God used him in a special way—which was to look out prophetically at all 5 installments of the 5th CoP and set forth the judgments of God in accordance with them (including the Lord's Day of Wrath) - and set forth the legal right for God to bring His judgments to pass (according to what was set forth back in Lev. 26).

- And especially in talking about when God prophesied and looked out to the final installment—and to the issue of the Day of the Lord's Wrath—**God brings the adversary into the picture!**

- And there was something taking place (historically) during the time of the 1st Install./5th CoP whereby the adversary floated a 'trial balloon' or put a 'dry run' into effect in the 1st Install., for what was going to take place in the 5th Install. (when he has his 'finest hour').

- And the events described here in ch.28 deals with a *city* (Tyrus), and a “*king*” of Tyrus; and a “*prince*” of Tyrus—(with the king of Tyrus being the Adversary, himself working behind the prince of Tyrus (the type of the man of sin/antichrist).

- And when the 5th CoP began—and Israel is sent out of her Land—and the adversary had the right to enter into the Land and possess it (Israel becomes the adversary’s “*lawful captive*”) - Satan is going to ‘test the waters’ (so to speak) and see if his plan to bring together apostate Israel with the ungodly world at-large would succeed - (that is, to put to a test if his final BIG LEGAL ISSUE [Ps. 2:1-3] would succeed or not)!

- When the adversary sees Israel going under the 5th CoP, (under “*the times of the Gentiles*”) - **he sees a major victory at his disposal!**

- The adversary knows (from what’s sitting in Lev. 26, and in Isaiah) that when the 5th CoP begins, there is NO going back, and NO stopping all 5 installments from taking place!

- Which means that he knows that Israel will go so apostate that they will embrace the darkness of the Gentiles fully, and as long as he can keep the *darkness* of the *night of untruth* in effect, he therefore knows that his ‘finest hour’ is a guarantee!

- So the adversary is going to make a ‘dry run’ at all this with Tyrus. And he establishes the human “*prince of Tyrus*” as a ‘model’ or ‘pattern’ for what his real “*man of sin*” is going to be like out in his ‘finest hour.’ And God is going to respond to him just like gets described here!

- (we can’t look at all the details here—but just a few that has a connection with what we’re dealing with in this final BIG LEGAL ISSUE.)

- (**Ezek. 28:1-2**)- this “*prince of Tyrus*” is NOT the “man of sin”, but there is a direct parallel to him and the real “man of sin”.

- by the time of the 5th CoP, the adversary had earned the right to float his ‘trial balloon’ (God didn’t stop this!)

- this wasn’t an attempt to establish the real “man of sin” on the earth at this time—but he had earned the right to this kind of ‘dry run’ rehearsal to how things were going to eventually go.

- (:3) - (one of the reasons why the revelation of the “mystery” took him in his own craftiness!)

- (read :4-10)

- (:7) - What I’m after is that expression, “***and they shall defile thy BRIGHTNESS.***”

- Now there is a figurative way in which the word “*brightness*” could be used in connection with all his *riches* and *the beauty of his wisdom* ... but there’s a particular reason why the word “*brightness*” is used here **that goes beyond all that.**

- Remember that the adversary, working in that position of; and under that title of: *The Power of Darkness*—he has been producing the *darkness* of his *night* all along—he has been producing the *darkness* of this world by those *works of darkness*—right? (getting darker, and blacker, and thicker).

- But in connection with who that “*man of sin*” will be out in Satan’s ‘finest hour’ - and in connection with the incredible Untruth/error/misinformation, and especially the incredible *deceit* that takes place in Satan’s ‘finest hour’ ...

... notice how the apostle Paul describes this *deceit* that will take place in Satan’s ‘finest hour’:

*10 And with all **deceivableness of unrighteousness** in them that perish; because they received not **the love of the truth,** that they might be saved. (2 Thess. 2:10)*

- (Pause) - let’s make some connections—remember back in John’s gospel—when John describes the blackness of the *darkness* of the adversary’s *night* of Untruth—there is a progressive development that is very quickly taking place at that time that will culminate in *the night being far spent* ...

- (see John 1:5) - *the darkness comprehended it not.*

- (see John 3:19) - *men loved darkness rather than light,*

... but there is one more, final step Satan needs for the nation Israel and the world at-large to make where the *darkness* of Untruth is concerned ... (in other words, that’s not the worst of it!) - that will happen in his ‘finest hour’!

- If men don't *perceive* the "light" of God's Truth because of the *darkness*; and that can then be taken to the point where "*men loved darkness rather than light*" (or as Paul said, "*they received not the love of the truth*") ... that's **not** Satan's ultimate goal with the *darkness* of Untruth—why?

... because (to put it in a very simplistic way, in both those cases, **men still recognize the "light" is light, and the "darkness" is darkness!**)

- But to 'seal the deal' (so to speak) - there's **one final step** the adversary **has** to take with his *darkness* of Untruth—and he'll take it with his "*man of sin*" (antichrist) out in the time of his 'finest hour'!

... and when Satan's 'finest hour' arrives—and the things that "*the man of sin*" (antichrist) will be **saying** (his doctrine, dogmas, and wisdom that he sets forth that will be the particular Policy of Evil that operates at that time, and all that he will be doing governmentally in his position; and the influence he'll be having upon the world) — ... the truth of the matter is, it's going to be the deepest, thickest, blackest *darkness* of Untruths that have ever been uttered and spoken and that have ever existed in the history of this earth....

... but the FINAL STEP to the Satan's *darkness* of Untruth is: that when the adversary presents the ultimate darkness-es of Untruth-s from his "*man of sin*" - **man will accept them as the brightest light; and the greatest light of understanding; and the most wonderful enlightenment of the human mind that human beings have ever experienced!**

- Men won't just fail to *perceive* the *light* of Truth; men won't just *love the darkness rather than the light*—but men will actually call the *darkness*, and see the *darkness*, and believe that the *darkness* actually IS the LIGHT!

... (but it's going to be the **exact opposite!**)

- And folks, that's going to matter a great deal when you understand and appreciate what those "*works of darkness*" are all about! because those particular works of darkness in Rom. 13 are going to be fully employed/implemented by the man of sin out in Satan's finest hour in order to bring a final, greatest lie of all to pass!

- Central to those *works of darkness* (and at the very **core** of them) are the very issues of the foul, vial, iniquity of man (offensive to God in the extreme), that actually make it so that men accept what is actual *darkness for light*!

- And what is foul, and vial, and disgusting, and full of iniquity in God's sight —is perceived to be: is the exact opposite to men!

- For now—when you think about that expression, *the night is far spent*—you should realize just what the adversary is on the verge of having take place out in his finest hour—

... setting up a man on this earth with a government that influences the whole world—and it's not just a political system (though it is that) - but it's also a philosophical, theological, academic and 'brain-washing' system as well!

- And the *deceivableness* of all of the *unrighteousness* in connection with all that will have men of this world believing the **BIGGEST LIE IN THE WORLD** to be **THE BIGGEST TRUTH THEY'VE EVER HEARD!**

... have men embracing the blackest, darkest Untruths that have ever existed and that has ever been promoted—and accepting it as the greatest light (the most enlightening, liberating, mind-expanding issue that could ever be confronted, and ever entertained, and ever occupy the human mind!)

- And that's going to take place because there are some *works* that men have been engaged in that have (over time) evolved to be so dark/powerful that they can produce that kind of effect!

- And that's the intelligent understanding of a son/daughter in respect to the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace—that's all wrapped up in that expression, *the night is far spent*!

- And that's what allows that Godly Thinking to effectually work within us—so that we look at those *works of darkness* exactly like God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ do! (and you're going to make an assault on the 'pets' of the adversary)! [my precious]

- (back to Ezekiel 28)

- And amazingly — when God talks about Satan (the Power of Darkness) along with his typed “*man of sin*” (the real *prince* of darkness) the *prince of Tyrus* - in connection with all that, God comes along and talks about his **BRIGHTNESS!**

- (and God says, ‘I’m going to ***defile*** that!’) [= trample down; expose it for the filth & darkness it is and destroy its light & purity in the sight of the men who’ve embraced it!]

- And later on in Ezekiel 28—you read where God comes along and basically says, ‘Ok, *king*, just step aside and I’m going to talk to the one who is behind you!’ [satan himself]

- and in (:11ff), as God describes how He’s going to end his career—notice God talks about his “*brightness*”

- Satan had a physical brightness (as :11-14 describes) - but notice that when God actually talks about his *brightness*, He says it about a guy who thinks he’s exceedingly smart!

- (read :17) - by the way, the Hebrew word used for the word *brightness* here in Eze. 28 is the only 2 times that Hebrew word is used! (*brightness* is used more times than this, but it’s from a different Hebrew word)

- And basically, this ‘test balloon’ Satan sent up here in Ezekiel 26-28 found out that, with only the degree of *darkness* that existed at the beginning of the 5th CoP ended up with men embracing this *king of Tyrus*, and respond as described in these 3 chapters—and when the adversary knew that the 5th CoP would have to run its full course—Satan’s joy must have been overwhelming!

- And instead of what Psalm 2 said, (*Kiss the Son*) ... they’ll all kiss ME!

- Now—with all we’ve covered in connection with the background & backdrop information to the expression in Romans 13:12a, *The night is far spent, the day is at hand*—and the issue of the genius of God in His Dispensational Timing to this Disp. of Grace—let’s now ‘cap it off’ and tie up any loose ends so that the Godly Thinking of that *saying* effectually does its job in your inner man to match your thinking up with your Father’s/Son’s.

- That expression “*The night*” should ‘unpack’ in your thinking **all** that had been going on in the development of the adversary’s *night* in order for him to produce his ‘finest hour’.

- And *the night* is (once again) ***far spent*** (not fully spent).
far spent = when something is *far spent*, it has moved along and it has progressed and come to the point where the FINAL ACT OR ASPECT of whatever is being spoken about IS READY TO GET FULLY ACCOMPLISHED!

- When something is *far spent*, it’s NOT OVER YET!

- And basically—there are 2 issues wrapped up in something being *far spent* —

1) Progress has been made to a certain point—but he END has not yet been reached. (It’s well along—**near** its end).

2) Involves anything that has the slightest planning to it; or has an itinerary to it; that has a particular procedure to it—and when you’re talking about something that has a ‘plan’ or something that had been ‘purposed’ and outlined (so to speak) or that had a ‘schedule’ to it that has a final objective to it—when that’s what’s in view, and you talk about it being *far spent*, you’re **not just** talking about that it’s just well along its way and nearing its end—but **more** than that, **it has come to its Crisis Point** in the sense that **there is only 1 more thing left to get accomplished!**

- And that makes it so that when you talk about something that is “*far spent*” - it means that **the final objective is within reach ... within your very grasp!** (the moment the adversary had been waiting for and working for and legally qualifying himself for was [at the Crisis Point of Acts 7] within his very grasp!)

- Simply put—the 2 issues involved in something being *far spent* are: 1) It’s not over yet; 2) A Crisis Point has been reached and the final aspect is within ones grasp!

- Let’s validate that—the Bible uses the expression “*far spent*” in 4 passages, (Rom. 13:12 being the last)—so it’s used 3x prior to Rom. 13:12.

- Judges 19:11; Mark 6:35; Luke 24:29 and Rom. 13:12

- **Judges 19** [first use of “*far spent*”] (1st Course of Punishment)

- (:1-7) - (in this case/context, you’ve got a 24-hour day in view)

- (:8-10) (:9) - (note “*groweth*” - the day hasn’t come to an end yet!, but it’s getting close)

- (:11) - “*far spent*” - they’ve gone from the morning to the afternoon and to the recognition that the day was “*growing*” toward an end—and now, when they get “*by Jebus*” a Crisis Point had been reached—and that’s when the day is called “*far spent*”.

- In other words—there is only about 1 more hour of daylight left—a Crisis Point is reached—and now action must be taken for lodging because it will be night and the day will be ‘fully spent’ in about an hour or so.

- (:12-15) - What accuracy! At Jebus, the sun was still in the sky; but when they arrive at Gibeah, the sun went down (the day was ‘fully spent’). [Gibeah being about 7 or 8 miles from Jebus]

- **Mark 6** (Climactic Stage of Isr’s. prog.—the context is the feeding of the 5000—again dealing with a 24-hour day)

- (:30-36) (:35) ... skip to ... (:42-47)

- (:35 = “*far spent*” — :47 = “*even was come*”)

- **Luke 24** (The context is day of Christ’s resurrection—another 24-hour day in view—and the Lord meets up with the 2 disciples on their way to Emmaus who didn’t recognize who the Lord was)

- (:21-29) (:29) - a Crisis Point had been reached! (“*they constrained him*” - the evening hasn’t arrived just yet, but it’s so close, you can almost reach out and touch it!)

- Again: 1) The end hasn’t yet been reached; it’s NOT over ... but...
2) A Crisis Point has been reached; the final aspect is now in reach.

- Now—when it comes to the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace—(and God’s genius in timing it to arrive when Satan’s *night* is *far spent*)—and the adversary had legally earned the right to serve his legal writ (so to speak), but at that very Crisis Point—as I’ve said before) - God told the adversary to put it back in his pocket, because **He** had earned the legal right to do something before the adversary’s legal writ could be carried out!

- And just to clarify the issue—and because it is important and it is germane to your intelligent understanding of that *saying*, “*the night is far spent*” — I want to (as the final issue to our godly Thinking) focus your attention on this legal matter that was at God’s disposal for Him to temporarily suspend His program w/ Israel, and bring in this new and ‘kept-secret’ “mystery” disp. of the Grace of God.

- And while the ‘reserve clause’ (Exo. 33) is part of it—really, the biggest legal issue for God being able to LEGALLY interrupt Israel’s prog. & bring in a new disp. of grace is because of something (a mystery aspect) that took place on the Cross!

- And because this legal issue was taken care of on the Cross, it takes precedence/priority over the adversary’s legal writ. (God also had a legal writ that took priority over the adversary’s legal writ!)

- God had earned the right to do something that, historically, had to take place before the adversary’s right to his ‘finest hour’ could take place.

- God accomplished something on the Cross that had never been spoken about before—that gave Him the right to do something with the WORLD before the adversary had the right to his ‘finest hour.’

- And when you get a grip on this issue—(hopefully)—you will then, (with all that we’ve crammed into that little saying, *the night is far spent, the day is at hand*, from now on, look at this disp. of Grace in respect to its Dispensational Timing—and by doing so, look at those *works of darkness* intelligently (as a “son”), and make some godly judgments accordingly.

- **God doesn’t want you to just know that you live in the disp. of grace!** (you’ve known that for a long time—since Rom. 1:1-4) - **but now God wants you to look at the disp. of grace from the perspective of its Dispensational Timing— and by doing that, understand what He is doing**

in connection with His contention with the adversary (especially regarding the adversary's *night being far spent* and having earned the right to present his legal writ to God—but God, in reply, saying, **Hold on ... put it back ... you'll have your time to put it into effect ... but not right now!)**

- And in a sense, God presents His own writ—based upon what His Son did on the Cross in which God has the legal right to do something with this world before the adversary has the legal right to do something with it based upon what he did with his “*night*”.

- And in view of all this—we’ve actually been told about God’s legal right for this back in Romans 9-11—(we only did a ‘survey’ of it)

- (Rom 9—Basic Dispensational Orientation—legal terminology set forth)
[Paul deals w/ erroneous thinking]

- And one of the things you have to appreciate is the enormous matter it is to bring God’s prog. w/ Isr. to a halt (temporary), and bring in a new and distinct disp. of grace—and what I mean is the enormous LEGAL matter it was!!!

- For example—God made a bunch of legal agreements to Israel based upon His NAME (J-ness) - not to mention the legal matters contained in the Law!

- (see **Rom. 9:4!**)

- (Rom. 9:14) - God did nothing unrighteous to Israel when He suspended His program w/ them! (then He cites the ‘reserve clause’ in :15)

- But God did do something (He did accomplish a legal matter) on the basis of the Cross-work of the Lord Jesus Christ that wasn’t made known at the time it was being accomplished (nor spoken about beforehand) and not revealed until God revealed it to the apostle Paul.

- Something was legally accomplished at the Cross that legally enabled God to both suspend His prog. w/ Isr., and suspend the adversary’s *night* from becoming ‘fully spent’ & bring this disp. of grace in without anybody being able to lay a ‘suit’ against Him and cry foul! (or “It can’t be done”)

#28 #29

- Note the separation of Jew & Gentile by the ‘middle wall’

- God changed the legal status of the Gentiles and of Israel: (see Eph. 2:14-15) - “*both one*” “*one new man*” - God couldn’t legally do that under the Law/& Covenants!

- Romans 11:11—(will Israel STAY in that ‘fallen’ state? never to return to their former state of special treatment?)

- (:12) - “*fulness*” = (all that stuff back in 9:4)!

- God will resume & fulfill His prog. w/ Isr. **as if this Disp. of Grace never even happened!!!**

- (:13-15) (:15)

- The legal matter and the legal terminology that I’m after (and that was accomplished in the Cross-work of the LJC) is that phrase: “**the reconciling of the world**”!

- (and then in :16ff, Paul is going to get in to all of the mechanics of it! - And he shows how it’s going to be an EASY thing—no problem at all—for God to put the status of the world (Israel and the Gentiles) back to their former status!)

- At the point when God ‘cast away’ (not ‘throw’ away) His nation Israel (He’ll easily grab them and put them back) - but the issue is that at that point, the status of the WHOLE WORLD CHANGED!

- God *reconciled the world*—(He didn’t SAVE the world) - the world was no longer in a state where Gentiles were ‘far off’ and ‘without God in the world’ with at ‘middle wall of partition’ between them and Israel!

- When God cast away Israel, He ‘broke down’ that ‘middle wall of partition’ (the provision for it being made at the Cross, as described in Ephesians 2) - and God implemented the legal thing He accomplished at the Cross to make it so that Israel’s ‘nigh-ness’ to Him and the Gentile’s ‘far off’ status **no longer had to be legally enforced!**

- Therefore, Israel could legally *fall* to the status of the Gentiles, the Gentiles could no longer be viewed as ‘far off’

And God could pick up the two of them and put them both together in a brand new (legal) status! And that new status can be called, “*the reconciling of the world*”!

- Both, Israel’s status and the Gentile’s status has legally changed in God’s sight!

- And while all the individual persons of the world are, by nature, in an enmity or ‘at-odds’ status with God today—the truth is, that the particular enmity status that had Israel and the Gentiles coming together *against God and against His Christ* (as per Psa. 2) no longer exists today—and God has put off dealing with that issue until He resumes His prog. w/ Israel. (that status **will** be put back when God ends this disp. of grace, just as Romans 11 goes on to describe).

- And my point here is to say that when God *reconciled the world*, that didn’t just affect Israel and the Gentiles—**but that materially affected the adversary as well!**

- It made it so that he had to put his legal writ back in his pocket! It made it so that his *night* could only be in a state of being *far spent*, but could not get to being ‘fully spent’ as long as this disp. of grace is in effect!

- Based upon a price that was paid at the Cross—God now doesn’t have to legally deal with the world in its unified rebellion against Him—but now, unbeknownst to the world (and totally for the good of the world), based upon God’s mercy, goodness, forbearance, longsuffering, grace and ever other aspect of the glory of His J-ness & grace—He did that for the world’s benefit (so that, just as Paul says, *Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth (1 Tim. 2:4)*!

- And so—with the adversary’s *night* being ‘fully spent’ is postponed—what you’ve got going on today is the adversary having to maintain his *night*—and therefore, what you see in all the filth of the ungodliness of men today is the ongoing manifestation of Satan’s *works of darkness*! (ala Bruce Jenner; the Supreme Court; the arts & sciences; etc., etc.)

- The reconciling of the world is MORE than just putting Jew & Gentile on the exact same level! it also put the **world in a different position**—a different legal position in God’s sight in order for God to do something different with the world that he had not been doing before! and also put it in a legal position so that the adversary could not do something with it just yet! The adversary cannot bring his ‘finest hour’ into effect in a “reconciled world”!

- The adversary has no ability to bring his night to be fully spent while the disp. of grace is in effect!

- [Back after Summer Break] —

- This final *saying* to our Godly Thinking in Romans 13:12a — *The night is far spent, the day is at hand* - that is a perfect declaration regarding the DISPENSATIONAL TIMING of this Dispensation of Grace! (For however long this Disp. of Grace lasts!)

- *The night* (and all that that means) IS *far spent*—and that means that: 1) God’s program with Israel had reached its Crisis Point in which all things were ripe/ready for God to bring His righteous judgment upon it; and 2) The Gentile Nations of the World At-Large had reach their Crisis Point in which all things were ripe/ready for God to bring His righteous judgment upon it; and 3) The Plan & Program of the Adversary had reached a Point in which all the legal requirements had been met in order for him to have his ‘finest hour.’

- And those 3 issues:

- the nation Israel reaching its Crisis Point of worthy righteous judgment from God;
- the world at-large reaching its Crisis Point of worthy righteous judgment from God;
- and the adversary having met all the legal requirements for him to have his legal right to present his case for being “like the Most High God, possessor of heaven and earth” ...

— those 3 issues are what is all wrapped up in that expression, *the night is far spent, the day is at hand* — and those 3 issues are **MASSIVE** issues!

- But—in connection with something that the Lord Jesus Christ accomplished on the cross—something that God had kept a ‘secret’

“since the world began”, something about the cross-work of Christ that God never said anything about, but kept it “hid” in Himself and only revealed it when He saved and raised up the apostle Paul as a brand new apostle to whom God revealed “the mystery of Christ” ... and among the information contained in “the mystery of Christ” was a legal matter that made it so that God could not only legally suspend His prog. w/ Isr. and bring in a new and different and distinct dispensation of Gentile grace—but He could do that BEFORE the adversary had the legal right to have his ‘finest hour!’

- In other words, because of this issue accomplished by the Lord on the Cross—it not only made it perfectly legal and just (and right—it wasn’t *unrighteous* at all) for God to interrupt/suspend His prog. w/ Isr., but it also made it so that God’s legal right (or writ) to do so actually took precedence over the adversary’s legal right/writ to his ‘finest hour!’

- And that legal matter that Christ accomplished on the Cross, and that God kept a secret until Paul—is the issue of what is stated in Romans 11:15— “... *the reconciling of the world* ... ”

- God didn’t ‘save’ the whole world—but the whole world changed in God’s sight—Jew and Gentile are now on the exact same level—the ‘middle wall of partition’ is now ‘broken down’!

- And that materially affects all 3 of those issues contained in our saying, “*The night is far spent, the day is at hand*” —

- 1) Israel’s worthy righteous judgment from God is temporarily put on “HOLD” ...
- 2) The world’s worthy righteous judgment from God is temporarily put on “HOLD” ...
- 3) The adversary’s legal right to present his case for being “like the Most High God, possessor of heaven and earth” is temporarily put on “HOLD”!

- All of which means—that, for one thing, the *reconciling of the world* is a temporary condition—(God will put the Jew & Gentile back in the exact state they were in in Acts 7 when He brings this disp. of grace to an end) — and for another thing, since the adversary doesn’t know when that time will come, it DEMANDS that he keep & maintain his “works of darkness” at their ‘fever pitch’ for the duration of this disp. of grace!

- Now Romans 11 isn't the only place where God has the apostle Paul talk about the legal matters and the mechanical means by which He could legally suspend His prog. w/ Isr. & bring in this disp. of grace.

- He talks about it in Ephesians 2 (which we briefly looked at) - and there is another place that He talks about it ...

- 1 Timothy 2 (read :1-7)

- In the context of what God is doing in this present disp. of grace—the issue there in (:1) is the issue of praying for ***all men***—and therefore being consistent with the reality of the fact that we're now dealing with a 'reconciled world' with both Jew & Gentile on the exact same level.

- Notice (:4) describes God's attitude at this time (with the *reconciling of the world* having taken place) in this disp. of grace.

- And because of that—it's only natural that '*kings and all that are in authority*' are to be prayed for in connection with the reality of this 'reconciled world' - and intelligent sonship prayer should be entered in to with the Father in connection with how one should function as a "son" under the "powers that be".

- The point is—the context here is that everything the apostle Paul is talking about here is dealing with the things we need to think about and understand and appreciate and act in accordance with in view of the fact that this is a 'reconciled world' now in this disp. of grace.

- And when Paul goes on to talk about the provision that God made, by which He is able to (as :4 says), be '*willing to have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth*' and therefore be able to deal with ALL men alike—that's because of the fact that ...

5 For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus;

*6 Who gave himself a **ransom for all**, to be testified in **due time** (which was when God revealed the "mystery of Christ" to the apostle Paul).*

- Notice (:6), in connection with "*the man Christ Jesus*", it says that He **gave himself a ransom for all**—(and that refers to a particular aspect of the price that was paid in His cross-work at Calvary).

- Note that word “**ransom**” - in this context, that word is being used especially in view of the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace and the adversary’s right to have utilize this world as he has been working all along to utilize this world—and as he had brought this world to the point where he could legally utilize it (at that Crisis Point) — and demand the issue of world looking to him and getting his fair and legal opportunity for this world to give their acceptance (and their ‘stamp of approval’) for the implementation of his plan of evil on this earth!

- But in view of the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace—and because of it, God having put Satan’s ‘finest hour’ on HOLD (postponed it) - and God having put the righteous judgment of the world on HOLD (postponed it) — that’s why you’re supposed to look at *kings, and all that are in authority* in the manner described here!

- “**ransom**” = God often utilizes that term (not every time, but frequently) to describe (in His program with Israel) His dealings with the adversary.

- Ex., (Jeremiah 31:11) *For the LORD hath redeemed Jacob, and **ransomed** him from the hand of him that was stronger than he.*

- And the ‘ransoming’ issue is the issue of the adversary who had gotten hold of Jacob as his ‘lawful captive’ (Isa. 49:24).

- And when God talks about the issue of what the Lord would accomplish on the Cross in order to provide for Jacob’s deliverance—the Lord Jesus Christ had to provide for 2 things: 1) *redemption* of Jacob from the debt & penalty of their sins; 2) the **ransoming** of Jacob from being the legal possession of the adversary!

- And that’s something that Israel knew (from Jer. 31:11) was going to be accomplished by their Christ/Messiah ... but there was **nothing** said about any ransoming of the Gentiles (the Nations; the world at-large) ... because all that was part of “the mystery” - the “mystery” aspect of the cross-work of the Lord Jesus Christ that would be revealed to the apostle Paul.

- That little word “**ALL**” has “*the mystery*” in view—has this disp. of grace in view!

- Christ giving himself “*a ransom for ALL*” could NEVER be said about a world that had not been *reconciled*—it could NEVER be said with that ‘middle wall of partition’ still being set up with Israel being ‘*night unto God*’ and the Gentiles being ‘*far off & without God in the world*’!

- Christ giving himself “*a ransom for ALL*” could not legally be said unless the status of the Jews & Gentiles had changed in God’s sight—it couldn’t be said unless the Jews and the Gentiles were on the exact same level!

- Point is—that expression “*Who gave himself a ransom for all*” is an expression to indicate that everything was perfectly LEGAL for God to suspend His prog. w/ Isr., and bring in this disp. of grace—(not that a ransom was paid to the adversary at all), but there was a complete SATISFACTION in God’s sight regarding all of the ‘rules of engagement’ in connection with God’s dealings with the adversary.

- Due to the cross-work of Christ, when it came to the point when the adversary was walking into the court house of God (so to speak) and present his legal ‘writ’ to God for his ‘finest hour’ - God had the legal right to stop the adversary; to not hear his case right now—because something else has taken legal precedence over the adversary’s right to present his writ!

- And the point is—that was all done with the complete satisfaction **with the adversary’s contention with God!**

- The adversary wasn’t able to cry, ‘Foul’ — a price had been paid to the satisfaction of God where even though the whole world had been brought to the point where it was ready to be something that the adversary could utilize as never before (out in the time of his ‘finest hour’) - but God came along and said, ‘I’ve accomplished something by my Son (*the reconciling of the world*) that allows me to take that world (that “world of the ungodly”), and for an unspecified period of time, I’ve got the right to do something with it!’

- And folks, that’s a BIG part of what you, as an intelligent “son”, need to understand & appreciate when it comes to the fullness of the issue of the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace (as stated in our saying, *the night is far spent, the day is at hand!*)

SUMMARY:

- 1) The issue of *the night* being the development of the world of the ungodly again (after the Flood of Noah's day).
 - 2) The issue of *the night* being *far spent*, and *the day* being *at hand* being the Crisis Point reached by both Israel and the World At-Large in Acts 7 (at the stoning of Stephen) both being ripe/ready/worthy of the righteous judgment & wrath of God.
 - 3) The issue of *the night* being the darkness of untruth vs. the *light* of the truth of God.
 - 4) The issue of *the night* being *far spent* being the adversary's involvement in *the night* in which he has earned the legal right to utilize the whole world in order to present his case for being 'Like the Most High God, possessor of heaven and earth'.
 - 5) The issue of *the night* being only *far spent* and not fully spent being the legal right of God (in view of a price that was paid by the Lord Jesus Christ on the Cross—but kept a 'secret' by God until the apostle Paul—[i.e., *the reconciling of the world*]) to do something else with the world BEFORE Satan has the legal right to present his case in his 'finest hour.' (Which is the issue of *making in himself of twain* [Jew & Gentile] **one new man**, so making *peace*— for the purpose of reconciling the heavenly realm back to God from the adversary and his cohorts!
 - 6) The issue of *the night* being *far spent*, and *the day* being *at hand* therefore (naturally enough) - and because the adversary's *night* progressing on to being fully spent has been postponed means that the adversary naturally and of necessity has to maintain his *works of darkness* that are at the core (and the life-blood) of his *night* & darkness of untruth for the duration of this dispensation of grace! (It's only natural/needful for the adversary to keep his *works of darkness* vibrant/energized/active/fresh ...) - and that's why, when you read about *the works of darkness* in Romans 13:12, you're not scratching your head and wondering what they are, and why in the world would they be brought up?!?
- And in 'gist' form—that's what it takes to really understand and appreciate that expression, *The night is far spent, the day is at hand.!!!*
- That's what the Dispensational Timing of this Dispensation of Grace is all about! (at least at a minimum)!

- Another thing you should have acquired by now is:

7) A Godly **attitude** of hatred/abhorrence/disdain for the ungodliness (iniquity, darkness, untruth, error, lies) of this world (those who have become “*vessels of wrath fitted to destruction*”). [which is what every one of **you/us** was before you were justified unto eternal life!]

- And that’s really what I’m after—this properly generated (by the effectual working of God’s word/words) godly attitude—which **only** comes from the Godly Thinking—and truth is, a great adjustment should have now taken place in your thinking to match itself up with your Father’s (& His Son & Spirit’s) thinking/attitude!

- With the proper, godly BALANCE of Godly Love & Charity now being fitted together with the great contrast to that—to the antithesis of what is going on with the ungodliness of men in this world—where at the time that GLC is being powerfully developed in you, there is also at the exact same time and ongoing powerful development and increasing revulsion/repulsion/contempt for anything that’s ungodly!

- What has God/Father taught you about Himself—(and His Son, and by default, what your *conformity to the image of His Son*) ???

1. His Godly Love & Charity
2. His Godly Abhorrence & Hatred

- Your Father teaches you that the thing that goes along **perfectly** with My godly love & charity is My godly abhorrence/hatred/disdain for the iniquity of this world!

- That’s BALANCE—the world (and a great deal of Christianity) only seems to get a grasp upon 1 of these things! (which is a distortion/perversion of who God is!) - and because of ‘wrongly’ dividing the word of truth, and improper Bible handling, many Christians can’t ever seem to comprehend how God could be both! (to them, He’s either one or the other!)

- And this should have a direct bearing upon the shaping of our message to the world as ambassadors of Christ! Because that’s exactly what you see in the Cross-work of Christ: 1) The Father’s infinite, matchless **love** and charity for the lost men/women of this world (His **grace** to do something for them that they cannot do for themselves); 2) The Father’s absolute, unbending, uncompromising holiness—whereby His perfect +R having been violated by men demands Justice respond in righteous **wrath!**

- And with that kind of godly balance in view—you should be able to better appreciate what Paul said in conclusion to our Dispensational Orientation in Romans 11!

- (see Romans 11:25-36) [what zeal/enthusiasm!]

- (and see Romans 11:20 ... **Be not highminded, but fear:**)

- But by the time you have received your instruction in basic Godly Wisdom, Justice, and the 1st Component of Judgment—you are now naturally in the position for having godly contempt/hatred/abhorrence/disdain for that which is **NOT** Godly Love & Charity (that which is ungodly) ...

... educationally, we are now ‘fitted’ to now having this issue of the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace given to us—because we’re at the very point in our education where we can appreciate the Father/Son/Holy Spirit’s attitude for the ungodliness of this world as it existed as the backdrop for this D. of Grace—and particularly, the adversary’s involvement in that ungodliness by means of some *works of darkness* that still exist and have to be maintained by the adversary for however long this D. of Grace lasts!

- The issue now is—that in view of all you now know/understand/appreciate (intelligent understanding) about the Disp. Timing of this D. of Grace—(all you now know about *the night* and its *far spent* status and then naturalness & needfulness of the adversary having to maintain his *works of darkness* for his finest hour) ... the issue now is: **WHAT IS YOUR RESPONSE TO ALL THAT?**

- Do you desire (with great zeal) to do something about it? (not to prevent it, or anything along those lines—but ‘Father, can I do something that’s an expression of our godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for these things?’)

- And that’s what the effectual working of that saying, *The night is far spent, the day is at hand* should bring you to express!

- And there are 3 things that you should have the desire to do about it at this point: 3 “**Let us**” issues described by the Godly Conduct & Behavior Issue in the remainder of (:12) and in (:13)!

- That’s the most logical/consistent thing to do in view of the Godly Thinking!

Let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light.

Let us walk honestly, as in the day;

- And the gist of all that is that in view of *the night being far spent, and the day is at hand*—we, with our intelligent understanding of what the adversary is doing, and what those *works of darkness* mean to him—the issue is that we are going to take a BOLD STAND for who we are in the Plan & Purpose of God ...

... not just as members of the new creature of the church, the body of Christ—(the adversary already knows that as well as we do; [in fact, he knows it better than most Christians know it]) —

— but we’re going to take a BOLD STAND for who we are in the Plan & Purpose of God **in this particular point in our sonship education**—and who we are ‘knowledge-wise’ and ‘intelligence-wise’ in our *conformity to the image of God’s Son!*

- And since we just went through an issue in the progress of our ‘Textbook’ that described the Dispensational Timing of this D. of Grace in a way in which we have not dealt with it before—but now we’re in a position to be able to understand & appreciate it—the issue is that just as it says there in (:13) ... *Let us walk honestly ...*

- And when you walk honestly, you walk true to who you are!

- And when you do that in an **educational program, you walk true to what you have learned!** and to what you know is going on! (true to your **intelligence!**)

- And the issue is—we now know something else that is going on in the adversary’s contention with our Heavenly Father & His Son, Christ Jesus!

- And we have the privilege of God’s grace to demonstrate our understanding of what is going on—to enter into an aspect of our Father’s business that has to do with *this* business of His contention with the adversary.

- In a sense—we’re going to begin to stand up & act consistent with Whose Side We’re On in this contention! (obviously we’re on the Lord’s side, not the adversary’s side)

because we no longer belong to him—but I’m not saying it in that simplistic sense) — I’m talking about it in connection with your Education as a “son” - and you’ve learned MORE about this conflict than you knew before!

- And you’re not going to be just a ‘card-carrying’ member of the body of Christ—but you’re going to take a course of action that takes the measure of your Sonship Education; and the measure of its effectualness; and the measure of your training as your Father’s “son” up to this point—and you’re going to take a course of action that reflects ALL of that! (to the chagrin and provocation of the adversary)!

- And you're going to do that with *the armour of light!*

- And this kind of intelligent understanding is not only something the adversary doesn’t want to see manifest & put on display—but **that kind of intelligence leads to something else** (that he doesn't want to see)! [he knows where this is going!]

- And the final measure of all that we’ve studied so far in Romans 13:11-12a is: Do you want to go on? (not ‘I ought to go on’), but do you joyfully desire to? because of the effectual working of that saying, *the night is far spent, the day is at hand!*

- TRANSITION POINT: between the effectual working of the Godly Thinking and the Godly Labor (Conduct & Behavior).

[How would you explain to someone what we’re supposed to be doing after Salvation—how would you answer the question, After salvation, then what?]

[How does your Heavenly Father teach it to you?]

- Since what we’re after here is how to functionally “live unto God” and produce “fruit unto holiness” by means of “walking after the Spirit” “under grace” and no longer “walking after the flesh” “under the law” — and to do so by being “led by the Spirit” having received “the Spirit of adoption” being ever “conformed to the image of God’s Son” — whew! — or what God will call in a ‘nutshell’ later on: “godly edifying which is in faith” (1 Tim. 1:4)

- But notice, while *godly, godliness, edification, edify* hasn’t been used yet in Romans—the word “doctrine” has (Rom. 6:17).

- So we do have an understanding that *doctrine* is supposed to materially affect the way in which you Think, Live, and Labor (or spend your time).

- Our *godly edifying* is supposed to be “*in faith*” or according to the doctrinal curriculum **God** has put together in Rom.-Phil.—and which means, (by default), it could be done ‘out of faith’ - or NOT according to the doctrinal curriculum—which would either be teaching the doctrines of the Bible out of the order in which God put them—or making up your own curriculum, or steps, or levels, or path, or whatever according to your own opinion.

- *Edification/edifying* is the issue of a building process—and much like the actual building of a house or a building (edifice), there is a right/proper way, and a wrong/improper way. (You don’t order the shingles first, for example!)

- Another way to talk about *edification* is to “*grow*” - which Paul will talk about later on in Ephesians.

- So, biblically, what is supposed to be taking place in church, and by proper Bible study—is, you’re supposed to be ‘growing’ (spiritually), or being spiritually ‘built up’ (edified).

- And because the means by which that gets done is by *sound doctrine*—and also because the kind of *edifying* that is supposed to be taking place is called “*godly*” (as opposed to un-godly edification [which can take place]) — the conclusion is that *godly edification* which is accomplished by *sound doctrine* REQUIRES 3 THINGS that have to take place (and which the doctrine that’s taught and that’s in the curriculum MUST account for):

1) Godly Thinking; 2) Godly Living (C&B); 3) Godly Labor
 (this is the essence of godliness [God-like-ness])
 (and we [men/women] are uniquely made by God with this capacity—Gen. 1:26)

- We now need to **transition** that Godly Thinking of Romans 13:11-12a (and especially :12a, *The night is far spent, the day is at hand*) into the corresponding Godly Conduct & Behavior—since it is the natural ‘outlet’ for the GT—(it’s where it naturally wants to go—or wants to be put into practice in the details of your life).

- And really, this is the point in your life as God's "son" where, in the most pointed and real 'rubber-meets-the-road' type manner—this is the point in your godly edification where you have gained the capacity to take the battle to the adversary—and to take something you were told at the very beginning of your sonship education in earnest, and by the effectual working of God's word in your inner man (by grace through faith) - **DO** what you were told about at the beginning:

Romans 12:1-2

I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service.

And be not conformed to this world: *but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.*

- At this point in Rom. 13:12a, your godly ambition, zeal, and enthusiasm should be at an all time high! Because you're on the very threshold of putting on display the issue of 'not being conformed to this world' in a way that you've never been able to before!

- To put on display **just whose side you're on** in God's contention with the adversary!

- Truth is—you just can't read Romans 13:12b-14 without noticing the tone of zeal & ambition & enthusiasm built into the terminology:

... let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light.

Let us walk honestly, as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying.

But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof.

- You can't read those exhortations & verbs in a monotone, half-hearted, ho-hum way!

- And I'm dwelling on this because—not only does a father continually exhort his son—and not only does a father look/listen for a proper measure of ambition & enthusiasm & desire in his son to go on—but at this particular point in your Sonship Education, there is a **natural intimidation factor** built into this Component: **going into BATTLE!** (a new aspect of our Father's business is at hand!)

- But the Godly Thinking (along with the proper measure of desire/zeal/enthusiasm) should 'off-set' any intimidation you encounter at this point.

- In fact—due to the serious nature of what we're dealing with—and because of the great amount of time that has transpired between when we first began our *instruction of judgment*—I think the wise thing to do at this point is to quickly remind ourselves of the Pre-Doc. Exhortation to the *instruction of judgment*.

- Proverbs 4:1-9 - (pgs. 175-190 of Rom. 13)

- (:7-9) - The son now has greater capacity—and looks forward to being PROMOTED—(matches up with “*now it is high time to awake out of sleep*” (Rom. 13:11) = a brand new aspect of our Father's business to enter in to!

- the son gets promoted out of the 'mailroom' (so to speak) - and this new aspect of our Father's business IS a promotion for us!

- Notice also (:10-12) = the energy/capacity is there on the part of the son—and the expectation of the Father is: you're going to GO! & RUN!

- And (:13) - “life” = the capacity for the success of your functional life is all in that “instruction”!!! (“more than conquer”)

- 2 Corinthians 6

- Just want to recognize that as the apostle Paul deals with a particular aspect of “the sufferings of Christ”, and defends himself in connection with it—he has reason to deal with & express his own measure of enthusiasm & ambition in connection with his own Godly Conduct & Behavior in view of his own attainments of the forms of doctrine that he has gone through in the curriculum for his sonship education—and as a teacher of it, he has reason to make reference to a particular and enthusiastic aspect of his Conduct & Behavior, because he knew he was dealing with the Policy of Evil.

- And Paul knew he was doing something by his C&B that was making a direct impact upon something that was going on in this world that the adversary valued & esteemed, himself, and did not desire having it assaulted!

- And if you think that sounds a lot like what we're dealing with in Romans 13:12-14, then GREAT! your mind is working well!

- Paul is actually going to refer to the "*armour of light*" - but he's not going to use that exact same expression—but he's going to break it down a little bit further—and he's going to talk about it in a way that, once you get past Romans chapter 13 and gain the experience of adding some issues to your godly C&B with respect to those "works of darkness" and "casting them off & putting on the armour of light" you will begin to talk about that armour in a more defined manner!

- (see Paul's enthusiasm about it all beginning in :3-7 [read])

- Without looking at any of the details—note (:7, "*the armour of righteousness*") - that's part of "the armour of light"! - and as you continue on, you'll eventually be able to look at the armour of light as having more to it than just light!

- And that issue of "the armour of righteousness" being "on the right hand and on the left" = indicates the n'th degree of it, and Paul's own enthusiasm in connection with it for its designed, effectual working! (because it's "armour of righteousness" that stands up against some Unrighteousness, especially! - and some particular "works of darkness" in a bit more advanced way).

- And Paul enthusiastically fights that battle every day—with his armour of righteousness on the right hand and on the left! (and he doesn't get tired of it—he looks forward to it)

- And that measure of enthusiasm cannot be simply a 'sonship concept' - but it has to be a sonship reality!

- THE GODLY LIVING (CONDUCT & BEHAVIOR)

- The first clause in (:12) ends in a colon—which indicates that, (1) being the second most powerful pause in the English language, you are supposed to pause long enough to get the full, effectual working of what preceded it before going on—and since we spent the better part of a year getting its full, effectual working of *The night is far spent, the day is at hand*: ... we can now go on to the Godly Living.

- (2nd), that colon tells you that, while that first Clause (saying) could stand as a thought all on its own—that thought is intended to be linked with the remaining sentence of (:12).

- And grammatically, that lines up perfectly with godly edification—because what your Father has done here is to, (once again), put your mind/thinking in the very position He wants it in, in order for you to have produced in your “inner man” the godly desire/zeal/enthusiasm—and the ‘natural outlet’ for it to begin to be put into practice in the details of your life (by your godly Conduct & Behavior).

- And it took 2 Clauses (or 2 sayings) to properly ‘set’ your thinking (or lead your thinking) to properly focus upon, and to properly comprehend, and deeply understand and appreciate the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of G. as contained in that saying, *The night is far spent, the day is at hand*: ...

- And not to minimize the first 2 sayings in (:11) - it’s THAT thought and THAT *saying* that is designed to effectually work **SO POWERFULLY** in your “inner man” that nothing short of what is stated in the rest of (:12) will suffice for that Godly Thinking! (and the godly attitude of hatred/abhorrence/disdain for the ‘world of the ungodly’ and those “works of darkness”).

- And just to put it this way—(may not be totally accurate) - but of all the *sayings* we have encountered in our *instruction of judgment*, there are really 2 that stand out as the BIGGEST of all—and that should be so emblazoned and so written upon the ‘fleshy tables of your heart’ that they are permanent and ever present & ever fresh in your mind:

- 1st Component: ***Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.***

- 2nd Component: ***The night is far spent, the day is at hand:***

- Those 2 should be on your mind every day of your life!

- So now we’re ready for taking that Godly Thinking and by its effectual working within us, begin to walk according to it, and consistent with it in our Godly Living (Conduct & Behavior).

- And the Godly Living is found in our passage in Romans 13:12b-13.

12 ... let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light.

13 Let us walk honestly, as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying.

- Following our customary procedure—before we deal with everything that’s contained in these verses in detail—let’s first of all deal with them in a more general way—or in a ‘birds-eye’ view before zooming in on the details.

- First, we’re going to “*cast off the works of darkness*” - which we will come to see is going to be a clear, manifest repudiation of those things.

- And by our so doing, we will attract the attention of the adversary, and provoke a response on his part to us.

- And by putting on this thing called “*the armour of light*” - the “light” being the TRUTH about God—that means that we’re going to take a bold stand (intelligence-wise) FOR God’s word, and FOR God’s Plan & Purpose—and AGAINST the adversary and his plan & purpose and his ‘darkness’ of Untruth.

- And by so doing—it’s going to engage us in a BATTLE—(which is why it’s called armour of light).

- *armour* is for personal defense—therefore, you’re expecting an attack! (we’re going to be dealing with things that are most ‘precious’ to the adversary—highly meaningful & indispensable to him)

- And in general—my understanding is that it’s going to be by *putting on the armour of light* that we *cast off the works of darkness*.

- Putting on the *armour of light* is how *casting off the works of darkness* gets accomplished.

- And by doing so, that will manifest for all to see that we intelligently know what’s going on ‘behind the scenes’ (so to speak) with those *works of darkness*—(by our repudiation of them)!

- Now (to me), since the gist of it is that we're going to put on display (for all to see) that we are *casting off the works of darkness* by our *putting on the armour of light*—and since my understanding is that the particular *works of darkness* that we're going to be *casting off* right now are the 6 things mentioned in (:13) - I think the wisest thing to do at this point is to get some general information about just what those *works of darkness* listed in (:13) are—(get a clearer understanding of *the works of darkness* first).

- And with that clearer understanding, we can then deal with *casting off the works of darkness* and *putting on the armour of light* in detail.

- Because it only stands to reason that if you don't know what *the works of darkness* are, you really won't understand what *the armour of light* is all about.

- To start off—(if I haven't already made mention of this) - it's my understanding that the 6 things Paul brings up in (:13) really are 6 of the *works of darkness*—but that doesn't mean that there are only 6 W/D— in fact, there's more W/D than just 6—but these 6 are where we begin dealing with the W/D.

- Next (though I've probably mentioned this too) - it's important to recognize that the w/d have to do with the adversary's NIGHT!

- And it's important to recognize, therefore, that the w/d that Paul is talking about here **are NOT just sins in general!**

- And the reason why that's important is that when you see all the terminology contained in (:12b-13—and even in :14) — you need to realize/recognize that this is NOT a re-hash of the basic doctrine of your sanctification (back in Rom. 6, 7, and the first half of 8)!

- This is NOT an exhortation to keep on “*walking after the Spirit, and not after the flesh*” or producing “*fruit unto holiness*” by “*living unto God*”!

- Truth is—you should have been doing all that for a long time by now! (It had been going on with the Romans—and the expectation is that every justified member of the body of Christ has been doing all those things—even back before you got to the issue of your adoption as sons!)

... (that is, if you have been responding Positively to it and not responding negatively and living in rebellion to it)

- “*Casting off works of darkness*” and “*putting on the armour of light*” and “*walking honestly*” and “*putting on the Lord Jesus Christ*” are **NOT** a bunch of ways to tell you, Hey, make sure you’re “walking after the Spirit” and “producing fruit unto holiness”!

- Rather—this is an **ADVANCEMENT** to the issue of you putting your sanctified position “in Christ” into practice!

- These issues are confined by the context to the immediate information that’s just been given to you (in the form of those *sayings*)!

- And now you’re going to take some things that you have recognized (in the past) as ‘sinful’ things in general—and now you have been caused to look at them differently than that!

- These w/d (again) are not just sin in general—Paul isn’t coming along and saying, ‘Cast off unrighteous and sinful things’!

- Truth is—**all of the w/d are sinful things; but not all sinful things are w/d!**

- So we’re not just dealing with the issue of ‘sin in your members’.

- The reason why the apostle Paul specifically mentions *rioting and drunkenness, chambering and wantonness, strife and envying* is because those particular things have something to do with; and have an alignment with; and an agreement with; and have some harmony with; and therefore go together with the w/d!

- These particular w/d mentioned here have made the adversary’s *night* to be the *night* that it is! and to have come to the point of that *night* being *far spent!* and have to be maintained for the duration of this Disp. of G.

(and that doesn’t include such sins as lying, cheating, stealing, etc.)

- So what does God have in mind by the w/d?

- To answer that, we're going to look at some passages that we have already looked at when we were doing the background work on the backdrop to the Disp. Timing of this Disp. of G.—and especially the passages that we looked at when we did all the work to gain the godly attitude toward *the world of the ungodly* when it developed to the point where *the vessels of wrath were fitted to destruction*—and passages that we dealt with in gaining an appreciation of the adversary's *night*.

- And in those passages, God would often come along and single out some things that were of particular offensiveness and wickedness and *iniquity* to Him.

- And instead of taking the time to go back and develop everything step-by-step—I want to take the rare opportunity to 'short-cut' some things ...

- 1 John—We were here before when we were dealing with the adversary as the "Power of Darkness" and appreciating some of the things said to the members of the Remnant when they function in the final Instal. — and there was a lot to be gained here about the great contrast between the LIGHT of God's Truth and the DARKNESS of Satan's Untruth.

- And what I'm after is something said in the middle of a passage we already looked at—but at the time didn't say anything about.

- (Chapter 2)

- God has the apostle John recognize (for the benefit of the Remnant) that—in connection with what was going on in the **world**, and the DARKNESS of Untruth that had been produced in the world (with Israel in the midst of it all, and with that same level of DARKNESS existing in it)

.... all of which stood in great contrast to the LIGHT that had now been manifest (not only by the Lord's appearance as the "L"ight of the world—but also by the "l"ight of truth [the corrective doctrine that He taught the members of the Remnant so that they could function as "the light of the world" in the midst of all that "darkness" and make the impact they were supposed to make in the final installment of God's program w/ Israel.]

- And in the middle of talking about all that—God has the apostle John look at what is in the world—and He actually comes along and looks at what’s in the world, and what the adversary had been doing in the world—and He describes it under 3 main categories (or things).

- These 3 main categories comprise all that is in the world under the reign of Satan as “The Power of Darkness”.

- And in view of dealing with the adversary as “The Power of Darkness” (which title he holds in BOTH programs—Luke 22:53; Colossians 1:13) - and in view of the adversary being “The Power of Darkness” is the one who is the producer of “*the night*” — we need to recognize that these 3 categories/things not only describe all that’s going on in the world—**but more than that, these 3 categories of things are integral in connection with “*the night*”!**

- And what we’re going to see is that *the works of darkness* perfectly line up with these 3 categories of things!

- And that means, therefore, that there are 3 main categories of *works of darkness* that we need to acknowledge / recognize the reality of—and in connection with what we’re taught in Romans 13, to intelligently *cast off* those things, and *put on the armour of light* in contrast to them — and to put on display the TRUTH of what they really are!

- These verses deal with the capacity that the Mem/Rem have now to no longer be walking in the darkness of this world (with Israel being **in** that darkness) - but the light now shines and they’re expected to be operating on that light—and they’re exhorted in connection with that—and they’re exhorted in connection with the most fundamental light they had been given (to make sure it’s operational within them & not have their light dimmed by that darkness).

- (:8) - John goes on to give an example of that being put into effect—and then in (:12-14) describes the nature of the doctrine John is communicating depending upon the edificational status of the Mem/Rem.

- And John exhorts them because he says in (:14), they have “*overcome the wicked one*” (that’s the adversary himself—the producer of & maintainer of the darkness of untruth as The Power of Darkness that he is).

- But now—as John shifts gears and starts getting into the particular aspect of their behavior and the way the adversary is working against them and intensifies his PoE against them (attempting to make the measure of light that they possess to be dimmed & put out by him) ...

....

- (:15 read) - At this point in their sonship education, this is the Check Point they are at—to see if the proper measure of Godly Love of the Father is in them or not—and if they value & esteem the world or if they value & esteem the things their Father values & esteems. (because there are going to be a whole bunch of ways in which they are supposed to be making godly sonship decisions/judgments based upon that ‘divine guidance system’ of Godly Love).

- And there’s a point in the Rem’s sonship education where they are also going to have to contend with the adversary. (and have a “light” and “darkness” issue to operate upon).

- So the situation for the Rem/Isr actually parallels our own situation: where the adversary (*the wicked one*) desires to ‘put out’ and ‘extinguish’ the “light” that the Mem/Rem/Isr are already manifesting.

- And for the Mem/Rem/Isr—they are going to have to deal with manifesting the light of truth to their own nation first—but then they come to a point where they are to be what the Lord taught them to be: “*the light of the world*” - and this is the point where they begin to do that. (and the adversary will seek to put that light out, too!)

- (enough context for now)

- (read :15-17) - (:17 will take place in the Lord’s Day of Wrath)

- (:16) is what I’m especially after —

- Note those 3 things: *the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life* —

- And there is a sense that you can rightly say that ALL sinful things could be listed under these 3 categories—(and there is a sense in which that is perfectly true—generically.)

- But John is NOT speaking generically here! (even though he says, “*all that is in the world ...*”) - why? - because he has a particular thing in view in connection with what the adversary is doing at this particular time!

- Also—what John says here, doctrinally, (as well as in 2nd & 3rd John), is sandwiched between 2nd Peter and Jude!

- In both 2nd Peter and in Jude—there is a great amount of information that is given to the Mem/Rem/Isr concerning the particular activities of the adversary as he’s preparing to have his ‘finest hour’ — as he brings the world (with Isr in the midst of it) and molds/shapes/forms it in connection with the fact that he’s earned the right to do some things with it.

- And the particular things that 2nd Peter and Jude (flanking 1, 2, 3 John) deal with—is the issue of the Mem/Rem/Isr looking at the world with at particular view to what the adversary is doing with it!!! (in the beginning of the final install. of Israel’s program)

- And in especially 2nd Peter ch. 2-3, and in Jude—they recognize that the adversary is NOT simply dealing with sinful things in general—or with **all** sins that could ever be taking place in the world

... but the adversary’s got some particular things going on in the world—and some particular categories of some things that he ‘zeroes’ in on—and that he’s utilizing from what had been developed previously when he had brought the world to the point of being *vessels of wrath fitted to destruction*—and he’s taking those **most** iniquitous-type things, and they become the very ‘fuel’ or ‘life-blood’ by which he provides for the existence of his ‘finest hour’ and for his ‘man of sin’ to be ‘well received’ (at least at first).

- And as we will see—when the Rem/Isr goes through 2nd Peter 2 & 3—they are told in advance that there are going to be 3 things that the adversary focused his attention upon in the past when it came to producing *the world of the ungodly* in the first place—and that those 3 things are in a re-hot status—and that they are going to be brought to bear against the Mem/Rem/Isr (especially when they’re out in the world)!

- And therefore, they need to take special guard against those particular things adversely affecting them!

- (by the way—Jude focuses upon those very things as well!)

- Point is—when John picks up this issue in a more advanced way than Peter did—and with the view to the Rem/Isr being on guard against it—that’s why John says what he does in (:16).

- *For all that is in the world* = all that the adversary is doing in the world—and that’s going to be taking place in that 5th & final Install. (especially in the first part of it when he’s having his ‘finest hour’)! [that’s the “*all*” John has in view]

- And in connection with the context of the adversary as that wicked one who is bringing his ‘finest hour’ aspect of his NIGHT into play
.....

... all that’s going on in connection with that, falls into the 3 categories of what’s described here as:

1) the lust of the flesh; 2) the lust of the eyes; 3) the pride of life

- and John makes the Mem/Rem/Isr understand that—NONE of that is of the Father!, all of that is of *the world*!

- (all of that is going to be **judged!!!**)

- And John instructs the Mem/Rem/Isr that they are to in no way participate in those things (**see also 2nd John 9-11**).

- And that’s why John goes on to say—(:18 [read]) - i.e., the adversary’s ‘finest hour’ is here!

- (end context)

- Point is—all of the adversary’s activities in the world that are the ‘life-blood’ of his NIGHT (and that Peter will teach as being put into 3 categories) ... those 3 categories (that have to be maintained even in this d. of g.) - when it come to those *works of darkness*—truth is, **those works of darkness fall into these 3 categories in 1 John. 2:16!**

- And in a ‘first-things-first’ manner—we need to recognize that when you’re talking about “*the works of darkness*” — in a very general way, you can put them into these 3 categories—fundamentally, or generally, or basically.

- And that means that when it comes to the overt repudiation of “*the works of darkness*” by *casting them off* and *putting on the armour of light*—basically, that’s what you’re *casting off*: 1) “the lust of the flesh”; 2) “the lust of the eyes”; 3) “the pride of life”!

- Now that IS very general—even though each one has a distinctiveness to it in contrast to the others—and because it is pretty general, we’re going to need to define things more specifically (and we will do just that).

- And we will get **very specific** when we get on into Rom. 13:13 and deal with the specific 6 sins mentioned there.

- But since this is a pretty big subject—and since it is, by nature, dealing with some “*works*” (Pl.) - and since these things have had a progressive development in the world of men since *the world of the ungodly* developed again in the New World Order — it’s going to be very beneficial to us to get an understanding & appreciation of the development of “*the works of darkness*” under the adversary’s Plan of Evil as “The Power of Darkness” that he is.

- So the most basic/fundamental expression is:
“*the works of darkness*”

- The next most basic way of viewing those “works of darkness” is: “the lust of the flesh”; “the lust of the eyes”; “the pride of life” — a little more defined, but still very basic.

- And then—by looking at some passages we’ve already looked at—we’ll see these 3 categories described in a bit more detail—by some other terminology that will allow us to understand these “*works of darkness*” in even greater detail. (especially in connection with the “iniquity” issue)

- And even though we’ll still be dealing with things in general, it will allow for us to properly understand what we need to understand in Rom. 13:12b.

- And that's because the *casting off* of the *works of darkness* **demand**s that we (at the very least) recognize that this isn't just talking about a **single** 'work' of darkness—but *works of darkness* (**Pl.**) - meaning, therefore, that there are more than one kind of 'work' that the *darkness of Untruth* is involved in—in fact, there are at least 3 categories of them.

- And by the godly attitude of godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for Satan's *night* and *darkness* of untruth (that we've already acquired)...

... and along with that, just the basic/fundamental understanding and appreciation for *the works of darkness* being in 3 basic categories—(and at least one other level of detail/definition beyond that [coming up]) ...

... that will be sufficient enough that, by the effectual working of these 2 things (i.e., the godly attitude of hatred/abhorrence/disdain for the *darkness* of untruth AND some basic information about the general categories & makeup of *the works of darkness*) ...

... they will work together so that our **desired response** to those *works of darkness* is exactly what (:12) says: *let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light.*

- By doing that—it will make it so that your *casting those things off* will NOT merely be a “stand” you take—but it will be an INTELLIGENT STAND you take!

- And later on in (:13) we'll look at the details of some specific *works of darkness* that we will deliberately *cast off*—

— (by the way, when Paul says, *not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying*—that's NOT a rebuke or a reproof coming along and saying, 'That's exactly what you're doing, please stop doing it!' — no —)

... actually, it's pointing up the fact that it's going to be in these **specific** areas of *the works of darkness* that the adversary is going to **attempt to weaken your resolve** to *cast those things off*—and the way the adversary is going to go about weakening your resolve in connection with those things, is to, (in connection with those 3 areas): ENTICE YOU to not be so 'bold' in your repudiation (and to compromise your repudiation)!

- And as we will see—that’s exactly what the adversary does in his first response in connection with the first aspect of his Policy of Evil—(always has been, always will be, ... and is right now!)

- So when we think about “*the works of darkness*” - we can basically describe them as 1) “the lust of the flesh”; 2) “the lust of the eyes”; 3) “the pride of life” — in general, that’s what we’re going to be dealing with.

- However, **not all sins** that fall under these 3 categories can be called “*works of darkness*” - but there are a number of sins that are—and they’re going to be focused upon by John for the Mem/Rem/Isr as the ones who will be living during the time in which the adversary has his ‘finest hour.’

- And we will come to an even more detailed and more specific definition & description of these *works of darkness* when we see some things about these 3 categories that God describes as especially singled out for the **iniquity** that they are in God’s sight! (especially revolting/offensive/abhorrent)

- Now this passage in 1 John 2:16 isn’t the first time these 3 categories of sins (or as John says, “*all that is in the world*” [= all that the adversary is doing in the world— with the men of this world]) - this isn’t the first time these 3 categories have come up in God’s word.

- Before you get to 1 John, you would have dealt with 2 Peter—where Peter takes all that the adversary is doing in the world back to the New World Order—and Peter even harkens back to the Old World (the World that then was) - and even back then, the same tactics that were employed back in the Old World (until it became *the world of the ungodly*, and God destroyed it by the Flood) - are the same basic tactics employed by the adversary when the New World Order was established by God—but because of the adjustments God made to it, the development of *the world of the ungodly* could not take place as rapidly as it had before.

- Truth is—these 3 categories of “*all that is in the world*” were the methodology of the adversary from the very beginning when he first began to deal with man!

- And the adversary had a very clear plan in mind in doing so!

- **Genesis 3** - The way in which the adversary first dealt with man wasn't just to get man to sin & rebel against God in any ol' way—or by some random temptations!
 - No. The adversary showed some real genius of his own in what he said and did to man in the Garden of Eden—because what he was doing was to not only get man to sin and become 'at-odds' with God—but he had to do more than that; and he did more than that ... by what he did, **he actually provided for the implementation of his Plan of Evil on this earth!**
 - He set in motion what was necessary for him to become the 'possessor of the earth' - and to legally provide for his ultimate end of his Plan of Evil: which is to "*be like the Most High, possessor of heaven and earth*"!
 - And when God describes what took place between the adversary and man—God makes sure to describe the subtlety of the serpent as he dealt with the woman in 3 particular ways—which match up with the 3 categories of sins mentioned in 1John 2:16.
- **(read :1-6) (:6)** - "*And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food*" = THE LUST OF THE FLESH
 - "*and that it was pleasant to the eyes*" = THE LUST OF THE EYES
 - "*and a tree to be desired to make one wise*" = THE PRIDE OF LIFE
- Point is—there was some real planning & purposing on the adversary's part in connection with the methodology he used for the implementation of his Plan of Evil!
- Satan appealed to some things in man that, (as he looked down through time), it would allow for him to MAINTAIN and SUSTAIN his Plan of Evil over a real long period of time!
- Satan was a 'quick study' of the psychological makeup of man—and he did some things to make it so that when he had man in his legal grip (as his own possession) - he laid the groundwork that would make it so that, once implemented, man would then pursue the course that HE wanted man to pursue!

- And Satan took into consideration the short-term and the long-term of having man fully cooperate with him & his Plan of Evil for the purpose of being able to bring the full implementation of his Plan of Evil to fruition on the earth.

- And Satan also took into consideration that his course of action with man, and the course he wanted man to pursue, would have to be so well thought out that it could stave off any response to it on God's part!

- And the adversary saw that there would have to be a particular psychology going on in men's minds to achieve his ends—and so he carefully crafted the temptation of the woman to meet his aims, goals, and objectives!

- And while not an omniscient being—Satan (due to his incredible *wisdom*—even though that wisdom was *corrupted by reason his brightness*—that wisdom still functioned, but it functioned for HIM in opposition to God) - and because of that corrupted wisdom, **Satan had tremendous insight & perception in connection with the psychology of man!**

- My point in all this is that—those fundamental issues that are described by John as “*the lust of the flesh*” (and the woman seeing that *the tree was good for food*); “*the lust of the eyes*” (and the woman seeing that the tree was *pleasant to the eyes*); and “*the pride of life*” (which was manifested by the woman in her recognition that it was *a tree desired to make one wise*) ...

... there's a recognition on the adversary's part that those 3 things (LOF; LOE; POL) could set in motion the means of producing a completely OPPOSITE system or course for man to follow ...

... for **his** benefit; for **his** use; and that would provide for **him** to be able to have the implementation of **his** Plan of Evil on this earth in its fullness ...

... with him (not just in name), but in actuality, reigning on this earth as “The Prince of the World” - and having, therefore, men serving him and acquiring all that's involved in those 3 Thrones that he so desires to sit upon (and needs to sit upon) in order to be “like the Most High” when he formulated his Plan of Evil.

[Creation / Accountability / Worship]

- And in saying all that—we need to recognize that those 3 things (LOF; LOE; POL) really become the BASIS upon which Satan functions as “The Power of Darkness” (of untruth) ...

... when, in connection with God’s response to his implementation of his Plan of Evil and his usurped domination of this earth—it became apparent that God was not going to just roll over and play dead!

- (or just give up and go start another creation)

- And since God didn't respond in that manner—the adversary, therefore, had to put together a number of increasing **Policies** of Evil in order to sustain and maintain and keep on track, his main Plan of Evil.

- And in all that (lof; loe; pol) — he functions as “The Power of Darkness” - and his main tactic (and only hope) is the issue of **the darkness of untruth replacing the truth; and operating in the position of truth!**

- And those 3 things form the foundation for **all** his *works of darkness!* And all his *works of darkness* (in connection with him being that “Power of Darkness”) are going to be in one of those 3 (and all of those 3) categories.

Time Line:

- Old World (all 3 are involved)
 - starts as a speck & grows & grows blacker and darker from Gen. 3 to ch. 6
 - **and those 3 things fuel it all & cause it to intensify**

- New World Order
 - starts as a speck again—grows blacker & darker
 - the world of the ungodly develops again!
 - **and those 3 things fuel it all & cause it to intensify**

- **Those 3 things were in effect in the OW and the NWO!**

- And the issue is—those same 3 things are in effect & being kept in that red-hot status and being maintained **throughout this D. of G.**

- And when Satan's 'finest hour' comes—they reach their fullness !

- and those same 3 things will cause Satan's 'finest hour' to come to pass on this earth!

- And then the Lord will function in the D & A mandates of the Dav. Cov. and have His Day of Wrath & righteous judgment.

- And though I'm not as clear on the subject as I should be—I would not be surprised to find that when the Lord executes His righteous judgment (as recorded in the book of the Revelation) - there's a lot of reasons why you have His judgments being executed in 3 main ways —

(seals/trumpets/vials)
(LOF/LOE/POL)????

- The 'agreement' that was reached between Satan and the human race in Gen. 3 (even though there's only 2 people) - gets repeated out in Satan's 'finest hour'!

- Now when it comes to moving on from the very general issues of what makes up *the works of darkness*—and getting another level of detail that's a little more specific and defined—(and to kind of speed up the process) - let's begin looking at some passages that we've already looked at when we were gaining an appreciation for the history of the adversary's *night*; and for that godly attitude of godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for *the works of darkness* that are at the core of the adversary's *night*—but this time, we'll pick up on some terminology that God uses that will add a level of definition to our general 3 categories of the LOF/LOE/POL.

- We're going to look at some passages where God looks forward to His Day of Wrath—but when He does, it's in view of the LOF/LOE/POL.

- And in view of what God says about them—we'll find that we can get a more identifiable/definable understanding of these 3 categories of *the works of darkness*.

- For our purposes—we'll stick with the development of *the world of the ungodly* again, in the New World Order—(since when Paul

... presents the issue of “Wrath-Consciousness” in Romans 1—he goes back to the beginning of the NWO) — and since there is a major issue in the development of Satan’s *night* and the *darkness* of untruth at the point of the 5th Course of Punishment—we’ll look at some things that are said by Isaiah, especially, regarding what was going on in the world (with Israel now in the midst of it).

- Because it’s there that God goes into great detail—and in a very descriptive manner, looks out to the time of His Day of Wrath (prophetically) — and although the *world of the ungodly* and the *darkness* of the adversary’s *night* had not reached its “*far spent*” status yet—the truth is, the adversary was well on his way toward his ‘finest hour’ ...

... the adversary knew that when the 5th CoP got underway, there was no going back—the world of the ungodly at-large, AND Israel in the midst of it had crossed ‘the line of no return’ (so to speak) where the Wrath of God is concerned ...

... also, remember that it was at the point of Israel going under the 5th CoP that Satan took the opportunity to make a ‘dry run’ or float a ‘trial balloon’ to test the public’s reaction to his ‘finest hour’ — (Ezek. 28, the king of Tyre).

- And it’s in these 5th CoP prophets where God looks out at His Day—where He’s going to ‘settle the score’ with the adversary (who now has taken Israel as his “*lawful captive*”) and so it’s only natural that in these 5th Course prophets, God gives some greater detail about these *works of darkness* that fall into these 3 categories (LOF/LOE/POL).

- Isaiah

- (the first 5 chapters) - we looked at some of these passages when we were dealing with the development of *the world of the ungodly* again—and the blackening of Satan’s *night*—and the godly attitude of godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for the *iniquity* of it all (for the evolution of man’s ungodliness and some particular kinds of wickedness that made it so that those *vessels of wrath were fitted to destruction*).

- And of these opening 5 chapters—we’re going to look at 3 of them in particular—Ch. 2; Ch. 3; and Ch. 5.

- Remember that Isaiah looks out at the 5th CoP and all 5 installments—And he will get some information from God (in a vision) and set forth the basic/fundamental issues—then he will cycle back (looping parallelism) and God will give him more details than before—kind of like a bunch of overlays.

- And the first body of information laid down is contained in the first 5 chapters. (see 1:1 cp. 6:1—another ‘vision’ component gets underway).

- And in each component or ‘layer of the overlays’ - the whole scope of the 5th CoP is dealt with—and in the first 5 chapters, you have the first and most basic/fundamental ‘underlay’ (so to speak) or body of information about the 5th CoP.

- Now why that’s important to us—is that when we look at the upcoming passages, we’re going to get the most generic/general of all of the information that’s contained in Isaiah—and we’re going to look at some passages that zero in on the 5th & final installment—and it will therefore give us the basic understanding that God Himself has (as the ‘first things first’) and the basic terminology God uses to describe what’s going on with those *works of darkness* — and that will give us the fundamentals of what’s going on ‘behind the scenes’ of the Lord’s Day of Wrath.

- We’ll see those passages where the Lord’s attitude is being described—and just what it is that is provoking Him and His fierce anger. And we’ll focus upon the iniquity of it, and the disgustingness of what’s taking place in man that makes it so God’s justice can’t hold back the wrath any longer!

- And by doing it this way—God makes it so that you already have the backdrop in your mind for why the details that you get later on (like in Ch.63) are what they are—and you’re not left scratching your head saying, Wow, why in the world is God doing this?

- And what we’re going to see—is that in the portions of these 3 chapters that we’ll look at—(ch.2; 3; 5) - when the Lord focus upon the 5th Installment—and focuses upon the issue of the **reasons** for His cruel wrath and the kind of judgments He brings upon men ...

... and the reasons for the fierceness of it all —

- In Ch. 2—He will come along and say it's because of:
THE PRIDE OF LIFE.

- In Ch. 3—He's going to come along and say it's because of:
THE LUST OF THE EYES.

- In Ch. 5—He'll say it's because of:
THE LUST OF THE FLESH.

- (He goes through the 3 basic/general categories of
the works of darkness — but He goes through them
backwards!)

- Of course, God is going to deal with the fact that man has been in cooperation with the adversary—and he's been a willing participant in Satan's *works of darkness*—but in connection with participating in the adversary's *works of darkness*, man has been involved in some particular categories of iniquitous works—and it's those categories that God is going to zero in on in His Day of Wrath!

- And therefore, when God zeroes in on the things that comprise the LOF, He's going to define/describe that in a more detailed way — (same with LOE and the POL).

- (Ch.2) - Remember that Israel is likewise going to be on the receiving end of the Lord's wrath (as well as the Gentiles) - and a lot of what's being said in these 3 chapters is not simply talking about the world at-large but with Israel in the midst of it—remember that the adversary has been able to get Israel to put out her 'light' and embrace what is going on in the Gentile nations—and so Israel is in total *darkness* themselves (*loving the darkness* rather than the *light*) - and the opening verses of this chapter indict Israel for being in total complicity with that *darkness*!

- (2:6-9) - “*forgive them not*” - i.e., they are going to be recipients of God's judgment/wrath in His Day—that apostate, vain, religious element is going to get the same thing that the Gentiles get.

- Then (:10) moves on with the Day of the Lord's Wrath in connection with that.

- (:10-22) - as I read it—notice that there is one concept or one issue that is constantly underscored/repeated—and in connection with God describing His Day, it's the BIG ISSUE ... (read :10-22)
- That BIG ISSUE comes out greatly in (:11) in contrast to *the glory of God's majesty* — ***The lofty looks of man shall be humbled, and the haughtiness of men shall be bowed down, and the LORD alone shall be exalted in that day.***
 - You've got "*the lofty looks of man*" and "*the haughtiness of men*" ...
- (look at it in :12) - you've got "*every one that is proud and lofty*" and "*every one that is lifted up*" — and then the following verses go on to describe that in detail as *the day LORD of hosts* is brought upon them and it says that *he* (man) *shall be brought low* — (i.e., from his high/lofty position and thinking in connection with himself).
- (:13-16) - '*oaks of Bashan*' deals with Israel's VRS and their high thinking in connection with their governmental officials & religious leaders.
 - (:15—sky scrapers?)
- (:17) - (a near repeat of :11-12)
- (:18ff) - Then you have the focus upon the idols and idol worship in stark contrast to the *glory of the LORD* and His own *majesty*.
- (:22) - That's an expression or a rhetorical question you would ask to make a particular impact—at the end of something that has been dealing with men who are thinking a lot more of themselves than they ever should!
- And you're left with the realization that these who are being described here have as their main characteristic: ***loftiness; haughtiness; lifting themselves up***; etc.
- Therefore in view of all that—it's rather easy to realize that what God is zeroing in on here is: MAN'S GREAT PRIDE!
 - Great pride, especially in connection with man's own thinking with respect to his own **evolution!**

- Here you've got God Himself telling you what is in His mind—and what matters to Him—and what is a stinking offense in His nostrils — and it's a BIG DEAL to Him ...

12 For the day of the LORD of hosts shall be upon every one that is PROUD and LOFTY, and upon every one that is LIFTED UP ...

- And when you put all these kind of terms together—and you're going to come along with an expression that we can put on one line (and that further defines/describes one of these 3 categories of *the works of darkness*):

THE GREAT PRIDE OF MAN in connection with his own self-worth; his own evolutionary thinking about himself getting better and better; and more & more sophisticated; and more and more enlightened; and more & more capable; etc., etc., etc.
(**pride & arrogance**)

- What God is focusing upon (regarding the details of His Day) - is that He's going to deal, especially, with the particular *works of darkness* that, in connection with the implementation of the adversary's Plan of Evil on this earth—are the *works of darkness* that **propel man on** so that the course that the adversary has charted, moves along very progressively—and developmentally—and that just keeps on going (greases the tracks) ...

... in other words, in a sense, **it's the engine to the whole thing**—and it keeps the adversary's Plan of Evil going down the track and in the direction he wants it to go!

- And that basic concept of The Pride Of Life ends up becoming the issue of:

GREAT PRIDEFUL THINKING of man ...

... about himself—in connection with his life in this world / his existence on this earth / his roll in it.

- (really, you could just use one term: **haughtiness!**)
[also: *lofty looks*]

... *haughtiness* is an expression of great pride in connection with the kind of thinking that goes into it.

... *lofty looks* is used in how you deal with others—and with your expectations for the future—what your destiny might be. (and it, too, involves great prideful thinking!)

- Here—(in contrast to *the fear of the LORD* and *the glory of his majesty*) - there is an EXALTING of man's personal self as well as his collective self **AGAINST GOD!**

- Now I know that this sounds very elementary/simplistic— but you have to make some connections with this ... and what I mean by that is ...

... you have to realize that one of the very elementary (but vitally important) things that the adversary has to have developed in man (as part of the development of *the world of the ungodly*, and the development/blackening/thickening of his *night* is for one of the core, 'life-blood' *works of darkness* to have produced in man (in order to accomplish what he needs out in his 'finest hour') ... **he needs some great prideful thinking** (that comes out of that basic Pride of Life concept) ...

... that makes it so that man thinks of himself in such a way that man isn't merely promoting himself—**but promoting himself against the Godhead** (as per Psa. 2) — and more than that, will not only desire to **not** have anything to do with the Almighty God—but there's the desire to take what belongs to the Almighty God and put it resident in a man—a man of Satan's own choosing—and by so doing, **all men** can hope to have that same thing themselves ... that is, to become GOD themselves!

(which was promised to them back in the Garden of Eden ... and which will be promised to them again in Satan's 'finest hour'!)

- Paul talks about where that all began back in Romans 1:21 *Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened.*

That all began back in Gen. 10-11—and the end result of all that *vanity of their imaginations* will take place out in Satan's 'finest hour'!

- But the root of the whole thing was: *when they knew God, they glorified him not as God* — and they took that glory of God (that God said He would **not** give to another), and they applied it to others... **and they will end up applying it to themselves** (to the complete satisfaction of the adversary)!

- And under the basic title of “*The works of darkness*” - the plan & purpose of the adversary is to work that POL issue and the great prideful thinking (**haughtiness**) issue in man to its Climax Point where, (just as the Lord said in John 5:43 *I am come in my Father’s name, and ye receive me not; if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive.*

- And when they do—they will ascribe to him the glory of God (and attributes of deity) that they didn’t ascribe to the real Christ (Jesus of Nazareth)!

- [and my understanding is that they will do that for the ultimate issue of the deification of themselves! as their great prideful thinking puts them in that ultimate Satanic frame of mind!] {out in Satan’s ‘finest hour’}

- [remember that the ultimate end of the ungodliness of man is satanliness: “I will be like the Most High”!]

- Well—that’s what’s going on in the indictment of Isaiah ch. 2.

- “*haughtiness*” or **great prideful thinking** is a further amplification of the Pride of Life—which is a further amplification of *the works of darkness*.

- Let’s look at the next category of *the works of darkness*:
THE LUST OF THE EYES.

- **Isaiah 3**—(Israel is particularly in view here—but viewed as being in the midst of the heathen/Gentile nations and their ungodliness/darkness)

- (:9-15 read) - Now the Lord is going to go on and deal with those called “*the daughters of Zion*” which are focused upon as the epitome in Israel of what these verses describe.

- Note (:9 [read again]) ... there’s a reason why the Lord makes a parallel here between **Sodom** and **them**!

- (and it's not just what God has dealt with them about in connection with Sodom already in chapter 1—but God has a particular sin in mind—one that Sodom *did not hide* either! - and one that Sodom is more well-known for than anything else!)

- (:16-17 read) - (on down from here the Lord goes on to deal with the expressions of their ungodliness—and their appearance and the way in which they purposely dress and express their *haughtiness*).

- But note particularly in (:16) - the issue of their “*wanton eyes*” in which they want to attract those who will fulfill their *wantonness*!

- Here, the Lord mentions the *haughtiness* that He's already mentioned (so you've got their great prideful thinking going) - but He now bring in another issue in connection with Him having His Day of Wrath.

- Notice also what the Lord says there at the end of (:17) that He will *discover their secret parts*—and the reason why He will do that is because that's the very thing they will want to utilize the most (and have been utilizing the most) - and this is the reason why they dress like they do and do what they do: BECAUSE ITS ALL FOR THE SATISFACTION OF THEIR “*SECRET PARTS*”!

- And that's what *wantonness* is all about!

- And that's what the further development of The Lust of The Eyes is all about: *wantonness*—especially **SEXUAL *wantonness***!

- And the truth is—this sexual *wantonness* also works out to the advantage of the adversary and his plan/purpose in his ‘finest hour’!

- Because there's some great **liberty** that man clamors for & takes great pride/pleasure in, and conducts himself much like these *daughters of Zion* do—and it's a liberty of their own DESIRES—and the issue of unrestrained fulfillment of those things.

- And words/concepts like perverseness, immoral, indecent lose all their meaning—in a sense, **they're legislated away!**

- **Isaiah 5**

- Again, God is looking out to the time of His Day of Wrath — and at Israel sitting in the midst of the heathen, Gentile nations (having become just like them), and therefore worthy of God's righteous judgment/wrath.

- Israel is indicted for being in that same degree of the darkness of untruth as the world at-large!

- And this is the 3rd time in this cycle of Isaiah that God focuses upon something particular in connection with His just and righteous wrath being poured out in His Day.

- And in this chapter, the particular focus is now upon THE LUST OF THE FLESH.

- And just as you did in Ch.2, and Ch.3—as you read down through Chapter 5, you can pick up on the kind of terminology God uses to describe the vile, personally offensive, and disgusting aspects that further identify and further describe The Lust of the Flesh.

- (read :8-10) - deals with the issue of Israel's VRS despising and oppressing the poor — God made provision in the law for the poor to be taken care of — but when they *“join house to house, that lay field to field, till there be no place, that they may be placed alone in the midst of the earth,”* they're doing that in connection with the despising and oppression of the poor and the exaltation of themselves in the way in which they live.

- (read :11-12) - this is the woe against them in their ungodly living with respect to the fact that they are living in **pleasure for themselves** and not living to engage themselves in any of the operations of God or the work of the LORD - the way in which they live, therefore, is simply for **the pursuit of their own pleasure**, rather than living in any way that would be designed to be engage in; and have them operate in connection with, (as the LORD says there), *the work of the LORD*, or the *operation of his hands*.

- (read :13-19) - (:18-19) - that's simply the issue of them living in the vanity of their own religious system — and when he makes reference there in verse 18 to *“them that draw iniquity with cords of vanity, and sin as it were with a cart rope.”* He's talking about the things they bring into the temple - and they

make the appearance that they're bringing great gifts and donations and acts of service and so forth there, but what they're really bringing in is *iniquity* — things that are an **offense** to God, that are an **abomination** to Him—and they draw it with the cords of vanity ! — what goes on in that temple and the gifts that are brought in are all done for a *shew*—but none of it is done in truth—and that's simply a declaration (there in verse 18) concerning the fact that they live in vanity of their religion and their not worshipping God in His ways but they are worshipping Him in their own ways !

- (read :20) - refers to what we looked at before in connection with the way in which the *darkness* of the adversary's *night* works—where what God says is THE absolute *darkness* of Untruth is now accepted by the world at-large (w/ Isr. in its midst) as the LIGHT of Truth! and enlightenment! That's the effective working of the adversary as “The Power of Darkness” along with the evolution of the ungodliness of man!
- (read :21) - verse 21 takes (:20) one step further— and it deals with their ungodly labor and opposition to what God is doing by teaching for doctrines their own commandments of their own traditions that make void the commandments of God!
- (read :22-24) - (note :24—*and despised the word of the Holy One of Israel*—that's the “light” of Truth that they got rid of!) - and that *fire* is what John the Baptist talked about that will take place in the Lord's D/o/Wrath — they oppose God by ruling the people unrighteously; and by corrupting judgment and equity; and in connection with the issue *strong drink* and the **perversion of the judgment** of the ruler on the basis of that—and how the righteous suffer and the wicked prosper in connection with that— and the leaders of Israel's vain religious system were to rule the people in justice, equity and care for the poor and the fatherless and the widows in their cause.

- Now when you step back and look at all those “woes” there in Ch.5 — and you were to give it an overall descriptive name as a kind of ‘common denominator’ or a common ‘thread’ that runs through all of the things mentioned there—what would you come up with?
... (what is the overall nature of these “woes”?)

- Remember that this passage in Isaiah 5 is an indictment of the nation Israel at the time of them becoming worthy of the 5th CoP — (in which they have become so much like the ungodly Gentile nations—and have become Satan’s “*lawful captives*” — to the point that the only just thing for God to do, is to give them over to that 5th CoP, during which they will no longer be ‘one nation under God’ - but rather will be ‘one nation among many, under Satan and the Gentiles’!) [i.e., “The Times of the Gentiles”]

- But this is kind of a culmination of things in its own right. (not to say that the BIG culmination of things won’t be out in the Climactic Stage of their program) ... but it is a kind of ‘crossing the point of no return.’

- And if you think about how God deals with Israel (and with all men in general) — does God just spring this upon them, out of the blue??? no. He often gives them a ‘preview of coming attractions’ - right?

- So where is there, sitting in God’s word, a point in which the nation Israel graphically showed themselves to fully embrace the ungodliness and the darkness of the Gentiles under the Satanic Policy of Evil?

- **Exodus 32:1-10** (:7 “*corrupted themselves*”)

cp.,

Isaiah 1:1-4 (:4 “*corrupters*”)

- Now when you think about ones who have *corrupted themselves* in this manner (especially in all the detailed description of Isaiah 5) - we have an English word that very aptly gathers up all those issues into one single word: **DEBAUCHERY!**

GREAT DEBAUCHERY!

- “**Debauchery**” = vicious indulgence in sensual pleasures; being seduced (or led away) from duty, integrity, or virtue; corruption.

- Skeat, Etymological Dictionary = from the French, = to mar, corrupt, spoyle, seduce, mislead, make lewd, **draw away from goodness—to entice away from a workshop; to bring ruin to a building operation!** — Hence, from the general idea of one being seduced/enticed away from ones shop/work, it came to focus upon the issue of excessive indulgences of ones lusts!

- And a more common definition is: excesses in ones own pleasures; gluttony; drunkenness; obscene, indecent behavior; even inordinate & perverted sexual behavior; the overall extreme indulgence of lust.

- In fact—more often than not, *debauchery* is closely connected with that issue of drunkenness and the results of losing ones inhibitions. (*drunkenness*, being mentioned repeatedly in Isaiah 5 as one major form of excess or debauchery)

- Simply put—debauchery is the excessive fulfilling of a passion and desire of the FLESH—the Lust of the Flesh! (an excessive feeding of the flesh)

(maybe we should say: Great **Debaucheries**)

- When it comes to the particular Lust of the Flesh that drives and supports/maintains the *darkness* of untruth of the *works of darkness* for the purposes of the advancement of the adversary's *night* and in his policies as The Power of Darkness—various debaucheries are what we're going to be dealing with. (various excesses of the flesh)

- By the way—my purpose in putting the word “Great” at the beginning of each one is because I'm not saying that the sins of debaucheries, wantonness, and pride only show up in these *works of darkness*—no—but by saying “Great” I'm trying to indicate the evolution of man's ungodliness over the period of the *night* and the increasing and darkening and blackening of all of that *darkness* of untruth that supports all these things; and drives all these things ...

... and therefore although these things have always existed as sins that fallen man participates in—these particular sins have been the ‘pet sins’ that the adversary knows are of a particular offense & iniquity to God—and more than that, they are ones that are the core/life-blood of the adversary's plan/purpose/policies of Evil!

... and “Great” has in view (not just the sins in general) - but when they reached that ‘excessive’ point (or the exceeding nature of them) - and therefore the exceeding vileness of them when those *vessels of wrath became fitted to destruction* (when *the night* became *far spent* at that Crisis Point).

- Before moving on—just remind yourself that those 6 sins mentioned by Paul in Romans 13:13 are grouped into 3 sets of 2—and those 3 sets line up with the LOF/LOE/POL ... but now you can add to that understanding the issue of:

- *rioting and drunkenness* being further understood as the **corruption and Great Debaucheries** that they are to the world-at-large w/ Israel in its midst (under the general heading of *the works of darkness*).

- *chambering and wantonness* being further understood as the of the **Great Sexual Wantonness (unrestrained, ungodly lust)** that the world/Isr is involved in as *the works of darkness*.

- *strife and envying* being further understood as the **Great Prideful Thinking** that the world/Isr is involved in as *the works of darkness*.

- Now let's look at a passage in God's word where these 3 major categories are dealt with—and where we can get even more details and more features & characteristics of them—and get some examples of the deeds & works that take place within each of those 3 categories.

—(and why you have **2 concepts** in each of the 3 groups there in Rom. 13:13, and not just one each—and to do that, we're going to need some more information/details)

- And since we're dealing with these things in their "Great" state (or in their advanced, excessive state) - naturally enough, we'll be dealing with a portion of God's word that was written especially to the Mem/Rem/Isr when they live out in the time of God resuming His prog. w/Isr and when Satan is able to utilize these things to his full advantage in order to bring his 'man of sin' on the earth and have his 'finest hour.'

- In other words—since our Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace has us thinking about what took place BEFORE the D/of/G was brought in, and then AFTER it gets concluded—we really need to get on the other side of this D/of/G and look at those *works of darkness* when they get to their 'fully spent' or extreme (Great) state.

- (i.e., *the night is far spent, the day is at hand*)

- And the Remnant will see the epitome of those *works of darkness*—and they'll recognize them as being the adversary's 'pets' or favorites.

- 2 Peter

- (we were hear before) - the focus is now upon that opening portion of the final install. of the 5th CoP in Israel's program when the adversary is going to have his 'finest hour' - and Peter warns the Rem/Isr about how Satan is going to go about putting their 'light' out!

- And one of the major ways in which the adversary is going to endeavor to put out their 'light' is by some very powerful *darkness* of untruth put forth by some *false prophets*.

- And to 'set the stage' (so to speak) for the Rem having to live under the *night* in its full and most powerful state—Peter makes the connection with what is going on at that time with what had begun back when the Old World was destroyed by the flood, and the New World Order got underway.

... (with the development of *the world of the ungodly* again)

... (and now we have the culmination or climax of the re-development of *the world of the ungodly*—ending in God's final judgment of it all by having His Day of Wrath)

- By the way—**note 1:1-4** (notice that *corruption* issue in :4)

- And in connection with this context—in especially :2 & :3, Peter deals with some details of Satan's *night/darkness* of untruth, and the kind of *works of darkness* that the Rem/Isr are up against.

- And what they're up against (and what Peter will further describe and identify) is the epitome of that Great Debauchery that's going on—and the epitome of that Great Wantonness — and the epitome of that Great Proudful Thinking that's going on—and in doing so, we'll get some more specific information/terminology concerning each of these categories.

- (read :1-9) - (we may come back here) - in the re-development of the “*world of the ungodly*” back in Gen. 18-19, there was a very limited operation of the adversary in connection with ‘testing the waters’ regarding testing his capacity to produce “*the world of the ungodly*” at-large.
 - and he took a small portion of humanity that had been consigned over to him; and that was willing to operate in connection with him ...
 - and within that small community, he actually took all 3 of those categories of *darkness* and kind of saturated that community with them ...
 - and in a mini or testing type way—a society of Great Ungodliness was produced—and God had it serve as an “*example*” and an “*ensample*”!
- Now as we read through the rest of the chapter—(much like we did with Isaiah 2, 3, & 5) - take note of the kind of terminology that is used that matches up with either the Great Proudful Thinking; or with the Great Sexual Wantonness; or with the Great Debauchery.
 - **However**—at this point in God’s word, you’re not going to find things in that ‘clear-cut’ clearly designated 3-Category type manner. (like we found back in Isaiah)
 - But now, they are going to be all mixed together—because at this point, the issue is that’s exactly what’s taking place at this stage in God’s prog. w/Isr.
 - The adversary has designed for these 3 categories to all come together as 1 at the time in which they all culminate to bring about his ‘finest hour’.
 - They’re all designed to one day all work together and to all be manifested together in all men in general.
- So God is going to have Peter deal with all 3 categories, but in a more collective way in everything that he says.

- So see if you can pick up on the terms and phrases that line up with one of these 3 categories—(as more detailed examples of those things).

- (read :10-22)

- Did you catch some terms?

- When it comes to these individual issues/examples—remember that since *the night* was in its *far spent* status when this D/o/G was brought in—and since there will only be one further ‘step’ to it becoming ‘fully spent’ - the difference in what’s listed here and how things stand at the present, really isn’t all that great of a difference!

- About the only difference will be the extent to which they become permeated in mankind—and the degree to which they become so dense & concentrated—and therefore all that much more further ‘blinding’ to the ‘eyes of the understanding’ of men at-large!

- And today, we are simply witness to the ongoing evolution of man’s ungodliness in connection with, and in preparation for these things written by Peter.

- So let’s list some of them—and by further identifying/describing these 3 categories—we’ll gain some intelligence for the time in which we will ‘*cast them off*’ intelligently; and with intelligence, reprove them!

- **PRIDE OF LIFE**
GREAT PRIDEFUL THINKING

- (:10 read last sentence)

PRESUMPTUOUS

(supposing the truth or reality of something without proof)

- **SELFWILLED**

(not amiable; not yielding to the will or wishes of others)

- “*not afraid to speak evil of dignities* (those in a position of honor, rank, or degree)

ARROGANCE (in general—as a term that encompasses the gist of that issue)

- (and there's more, but let that suffice right now)

LUST OF THE EYES
GREAT SEXUAL WANTONNESS

- (:10—*But chiefly them that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness, ...*)

LUST OF UNCLEANNESS

(gross sexual sin—practices of sodomy—sexual sin that is contrary to nature [so to speak] - defiling & dishonoring human nature)

- (:14—*Having eyes full of adultery*—note the words like “full” indicating the extreme (great) nature of it)

FULL OF ADULTERY

(the issue isn't simply 'adultery' - but *having eyes FULL of adultery, and that cannot CEASE from sin*)

- (:18—*through much wantonness*)

MUCH WANTONNESS

(unrestrained, ungodly lust) - [again, “MUCH”]

LUST OF THE FLESH
GREAT DEBAUCHERY

- (:14—*an heart they have exercised with covetous practices*—when you 'exercise' your body, the point is to make your muscles or heart/organs STRONGER ... and to give them greater capability—make it so you have greater stamina—so the issue is that you want your heart to get stronger & stronger in those '*covetous practices*' - again, this is NOT just sin in general! This is the final evolution of man's ungodliness that makes it so he will 'pledge allegiance' to the adversary & his man of sin—this is the issue of making that final transition to the n'th degree of ungodliness; and to total 'satanliness'!

EXERCISED WITH COVETOUS PRACTICES

- (it's not just 'occasionally' thinking or doing these things—but it's the very character of who they are!) ... [and that goes for ALL the things mentioned here in ALL these categories!]

- (note: *practices*—just as a lawyer practices law or a doctor practices medicine—that’s his profession—that’s what he’s doing about every waking hour of every day)
[and there’s much more to *covetousness* than just ‘money’!]

- (:13—*And shall receive the reward of unrighteousness, as they that count it pleasure to riot in the day time*)

RIOT IN THE DAY TIME

(that’s a PLEASURE to them! and as they pursue their ‘pleasures’, that’s one of the things they do!

- (note also that you’ve got the general “*lusts of the flesh*” in :18)

- (:10—*despise government*)

DESPISING GOVERNMENT

(which is one of the reasons why they *riot in the day time*—and there is a ‘debauchery’ concept in connection with that—and some courses they take in connection with those that are in positions of authority—ex., the government/authority in the class room! - and that carries on to the actions toward the police and local/state/federal government)

- Now let’s step back and recognize that we have now further identified and further defined the particular kinds of things that are characteristic of *the world of the ungodly* and fall under (not just sin in general) but fall under *the works of darkness*!

- They were the ‘hallmark’ features of the adversary’s *night* when it came to its *far spent* status—they are being maintained today—and they will come to their fullness of strength when the *night* gets fully spent in Satan’s ‘finest hour’!

- And this should give you a better understanding of just what it is, in particular, that we are going to be *casting off*—and what it is that we’re going to intelligently be doing when we *put on the armour of light* in contrast to them (and in repudiation of them)!

- We'll be dealing with:
 - Works that fall under the category of THE PRIDE OF LIFE.
 - and Great Proudful Thinking (of man, about man himself)
 - Presumptuous (supposing the truth or reality of something without proof)
 - Self-willed (consumed w/ his own desires)
 - Arrogance (of man, and his evolution into greatness)
 - Works that fall under the category of LUST OF THE EYES.
 - and Great Sexual Wantonness
 - and all kinds of Uncleanness in his behavior (gross sexual sin that is "*against nature*")
 - and Full of Adultery (sexual promiscuity)
 - and Much Wantonness (extreme unrestrained ungodly lust—behavior that goes to support all the unrestrained sexual perverseness)
 - Works that fall under the category of LUST OF THE FLESH.
 - and Great Debaucheries
 - Covetous Practices (an inordinate, longing desire for what belongs to another)
 - Rioting (acting in mob-type manner in rebellion and in contrariness to authorities and to established rules and to things that are ordinances for orderly conduct)
 - Despising Government (a negative response to government and being governed on all levels of life)
- So you should see that—that really is more information & more insight, & more perception regarding these *works of darkness* than merely being 3 general categories of the LOF/LOE/POL.
- Now—let's look at another passage that we have looked at before ...but now let's get some more information and more terminology that will increase our lists—and add some more issues that will help us out to understand & appreciate what these *works of darkness* are.
- **Isaiah 2**
 - In connection w/ the Pride of Life (and the Great Proudful Thinking)
 - (read :10-12)
 - (:13-16—then that's applied to governments & officials & nations & provisions that they make w/ the *high mountain/high hill* concept & the *high tower/fenced wall* issue, *pleasant pictures* (pictures of desire))

- (read :17)

- Let's pull out a couple more of those terms:

- LOFTY LOOKS/LOFTY/LOFTINESS OF MAN = a species of pride/arrogance that indicates a spirit/mind that exalts ones self in dignity, rank, character, or quality over others—the expectation of ones future & destiny to be greater than others—from 'loft' [an upper room or penthouse suite], hence a sense of personal superiority.

- (already on the board) HAUGHTINESS = (a more offensive form of *loftiness*) = a species of pride that indicates a spirit/mind that not only has a high opinion of oneself—**but mingled with great contempt for others!**

- In this kind of a context, it is an EXALTING of man's personal self (as well as his collective self) **AGAINST GOD!**

- It's a step beyond mere self-promotion—it's man promoting himself **AGAINST** the Godhead—it's the desire to NOT have anything to do with the Almighty God—and the desire to take what rightfully belongs to God and put it resident in a man (Satan's man), and by so doing, all men can hope to have the same thing themselves: to become **GOD** themselves!

- LIFTED UP = the exaltation of man and his accomplishments and the works of his own hands, w/o God!

(joke)

God was once approached by a scientist who said, "Listen God, we've decided we don't need you anymore. These days we can clone people, transplant organs and do all sorts of things that used to be considered miraculous."

God replied, "Don't need me huh? How about we put your theory to the test. Why don't we have a competition to see who can make a human being, say, a male human being."

The scientist agrees, so God declares they should do it like he did in the good old days when he created Adam.

"Fine" says the scientist as he bends down to scoop up a handful of dirt."

"Whoa!" says God, shaking his head in disapproval. "Not so fast. You get your own dirt."

- All those terms have something in common: they're all involved with PRIDE—(pride is the **base** of them all) - they're all various forms & sentiments of PRIDE.

- And we've now got at least 6 expressions to utilize when it comes to being able to identify the particular *works of darkness* that are under the category of The Pride of Life—and the Great Proudful Thinking in connection with the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace and the evolution of man's ungodliness, and the adversary's *night* being *far spent*.

(we've got at least 6 expressions that we can deal with when it comes to those particular *works of darkness*).

- Isaiah 3

- there's really not a lot of actual terms or expressions that are used here in connection with the Great Sexual Wantonness issue and the Lust of the Eyes—but if you think about what is recorded in especially :16ff in connection with those *daughters of Zion*, plus the previous reference to Sodom in :9 — the concept is there for the terms we already have on the board: the “uncleanness”, the “adultery”, and the “wantonness” (which is mentioned in :16 “*wanton eyes*”).

- But we do encounter some terms later on—especially in our epistles that give us a further identification of these *works of darkness*.

- CONCUPISCENCE = from “Cupid,” the Roman god of love/sex—hence, inordinate sexual appetite and desire. (Rom. 7:8; Col. 3:5; 1Thes. 4:5)

- and we're going to encounter a term in 2Cor; and in Gal.; and in Eph — LASCIVIOUSNESS = from the Fr., It., Sp., & Latin “loose” - hence, strongly inclined to lust and lewd behavior—not chaste; pertaining to unlawful sexual behavior—immorality.

- Those are a couple of more terms we can utilize in connection with that Great Sexual Wantonness and the Lust of the Eyes.

- Isaiah 5

- The Lust of the Flesh/Great Debaucheries (great excess—going beyond & functioning in an indulgent, abusive-type

manner in connection with things for the pure pleasure of the FLESH—and for the satisfying and gratification of the flesh.

- (read :11-12)

- DRUNKENNESS

- and notice that this isn't just occasionally drinking alcohol—no—they “*rise up early in the morning*” to follow strong drink—and they continue until night, till wine INFLAME them!

- They don't ‘rise up early in the morning’ to go to work! or practice godliness! or make the best use of their time and ‘redeem’ it!

- The idea is that drunkenness is what they **want**—to be drunk all the time—and they want all the inhibitions that go along with it!

- And then—(even though it's not a new concept or anything):

- (read :18) - EXCESSES (to the n'th degree) - the issue is that these guys aren't just ‘dabbling’ in *iniquity*—rather, they are involved in it to the **extreme**—it's debauchery to the most excessive degree!

- And there's all sorts of ‘excesses’ - (of entertainment; power; time/leisure)

- Now that should give us greater identification of those overall *works of darkness*—and that puts us in a much better position with it comes to us taking our godly Thinking with respect to the Dispensational Timing of this D/o/G that's all wrapped up in that saying, *the night is far spent, the day is at hand*—and **transition** that godly Thinking into the godly Conduct & Behavior (based upon the godly hatred & disdain we have for those things) ...

... truth is, everything we've done to get the godly Thinking and the godly attitude of hatred/disdain for the evil in connection with these things—all those very descriptive and identifiable terms in our list is really designed so that when you consider any or all of these things, **it should make your skin crawl** in revulsion — and therefore you should WANT to ‘*cast off the works of darkness*’ & *put on the armour of light!*

- And you should have some great enthusiasm to make an impact upon the adversary and his *night*—and begin to gain the benefits of engaging in this battle.

- And every time you encounter any one of these (or combination of them) - you're not simply looking at them as 'bad sins' - and more importantly, you're not 'jaded' to them or dulled in your senses to them, or unmoved by them.

- rather, they make you 'sick' (so to speak) - you recoil in godly abhorrence towards them—because you now see them as to how they fit in to giving life to, and fueling the adversary's *night*—and leading to his 'finest hour'!

- so powerful is your understanding of the Dispensational Timing of this D/o/G (*the night is far spent, the day is at hand*) - that it becomes almost incomprehensible for a "son" of the Heavenly Father to tolerate any of these things in any detail of your life—therefore, the only wise thing to do is to *cast them off and put on the armour of light* —

(not that you're out to 'change the world' [we're not that stupid! and that's NOT the issue] ... rather we do that to make an impact upon the adversary; to provoke him; so that we become the beneficiary of a new aspect of our Father's business that this is all about and that all this pertains to!)

- In connection with getting a better and more detailed & identifiable understanding and appreciation for what (in general) is called *the works of darkness*—we have been focusing upon 2 main passages—One in Isaiah 2, 3, and 5 that deals with the condition of Israel and the world at-large when God looks out at the time in which the world (and Isr. in its midst) become those *vessels of wrath, fitted to destruction*—and in connection with the evolution of man's ungodliness and with the adversary's *night* becoming *far spent* ...

... and then the other passage in 2 Peter 2 that deals with the condition of Israel and the world at-large when the adversary's *night* is fully spent—and when God actually has His Day of Wrath—which puts us on the other side of this Disp. of Grace—and deals with the other part of our saying, ... *the day is at hand*. — (2Peter 2 picking up on *the works of darkness* that have been maintained by the adversary all throughout this Disp. of Grace.) - hence, staying in the context of the Dispensational Timing of this D/o/G.

- And a Father's expectation of his son is that when He gives you a saying like, *the night is far spent, the day is at hand*—that since there is a lot crammed in to that saying, the expectation is that you, as a “son” will go back and investigate that matter and find out the details about it—which is just what we have done in compiling our list.

- And we should have enough of a list of things that accomplishes our investigation of getting more details about what the *works of darkness* are so that we can intelligently know what we're doing when we begin to *cast them off* and *putting on the armour of light* in contrast to them.

- (we will get even more details and definition when we actually deal with the 6 *works of darkness* that Paul cites in Rom. 13:13—but we'll deal with that when we come to those terms in our study of :13).

- But there are a couple of more general issues that we need to get a grip on in order to kind of round out our basic understanding and appreciation for what *the works of darkness* are all about.

- One thing: we need to **not** ‘compartmentalize’ these 3 basic categories of LOF & the Great Debaucheries/LOE & the Great Sexual Wantonness/ POL & the Great Proudful Thinking.

- Even though they always have ‘worked together’ (so to speak) - one of the things that the adversary has designed for them to do (when it comes to getting the world of the ungodly developed again; and when it comes to how he intends to utilize them for his advantage in the time of ‘his finest hour’) he has designed for them to work together in a VERY POWERFUL and GREAT way!

- And at this point—we need to kind of step back from the ‘list’ of these things—and get an appreciation for just how it is that the adversary is going to utilize them—and utilize them all together in a more powerful way than in general—and what he hopes to gain by doing so with all mankind on the earth.

- 2 Peter 2

- When the adversary has his ‘finest hour’ all 3 of these categories come together in a BIG way (and in a completely functional way—and work ‘en masse’ in order for him to have his ‘finest hour.’

- Truth is—the adversary actually went through a ‘dry run’ of all that—way back in “Time Past” - and actually put on display the fact that he IS able to produce ungodliness to the degree that he did in the Old World—and is, therefore, able to produce ungodliness in all 3 categories in a full-orbed functionality so that he would succeed with his ‘finest hour’ when the opportunity presented itself for him to do that.

- And what I’m talking about is—what took place at **SODOM AND GOMORRAH** and the ‘cities of the plains’ that surrounded them.

- Most people know the name “Sodom & Gomorrah” - they know the word ‘sodomy’ [not used in the Bible], and “sodomite” [which is used in the Bible] - (= copulation of one male with another male; or even copulation with an animal).

- But that’s about all most people know—and when most people think about Sodom and Gomorrah, they usually only think about the gross, ungodly sexual practices that went on there.

... but there’s a lot more that went on there than that!

- And we will look at some things here in 2 Peter 2 about that—but we’ll also look at another passage where, at the time in which the adversary was making great ‘inroads’ in Israel—and was actually bringing them to the point where they were embracing his *darkness*, (at the arrival of the 5th CoP) - and God comes along and tells Israel that what they’re doing **is putting themselves in the very same position in which, what took place in Sodom & Gomorrah can take place in them!**

- **2 Peter 2**—context: the Mem/Rem/Isr are made aware and reminded of how things had gone on in the past that took place in a preparatory manner for the Lord’s Day of Wrath, and in preparation for the adversary bringing his *night* to it’s zenith and him having his ‘finest hour’.

- The opening verses point out the issue of the *false prophets/teachers* that will be operating among the Rem/Isr with their doctrines of *darkness* of Untruth endeavoring to put out the Remnant’s light as they stand against those *works of darkness*.

- God then has Peter focus upon the judgment that has been prophesied about in connection with those men and that His Day of Wrath **isn't** something that has been 'slumbering' - (at this time, the "long time" of God's judgment will include the entire duration of this D/o/G).

- (read :3) - God hasn't been 'asleep at the switch' (so to speak)!

- Then (:4ff) sets forth that in Time Past — at particular points in the outworking of His prog. w/ Isr., God actually took particular steps in preparation for the time He would deal with the adversary in his 'finest hour' and would then have "His Day."

- (read :4-5)

- Notice in the information God gives about Part B (so to speak) of His judgment of the adversary's *night* and *world of the ungodly* that was sure to come—notice that in particular, one of the things that God did was to set forth an *example/ensample* of His coming judgment in His actions toward the cities of Sodom & Gomorrah.

- This takes place very shortly after God judged the Old World and brought in the New World Order.

(read :6-9) - (this is the conclusion of what Peter has set forth in :4) - the Mem/Rem need full assurance about what was stated in :4—(they are the "godly" of :9—they will be *delivered* out of the *temptations* of the *darkness* of Untruth those false prophets/teachers are utilizing in attempt to put out their light)

- (once again, see :6) - I'm particularly after this issue.

- Think your way through Genesis 9-19 ...

- 9—God establishes the New World Order
- 10-11—(first mention of Sodom = "burning" in ch.10;19)
- 12—(Abram)
- 13—(gesture of possession)
- 14—(Chedorlaomer/Melchizedek [King of +R, King of Salem {Peace}] vs. King of Sodom)
- 15—(Abram gets justified)
- 16—(operation Hagar/Ishmael)
- 17—(Abram becomes Abraham)
- 18-19—(destruction of Sodom & Gomorrah)

- What you have going on in Gen. 18-19 with Sodom & Gomorrah is actually the issue of Satan making a 'dry run' (so to speak), or an 'experiment' (if you will) ...

... much like he did with the king of Tyrus in Ezek. 28 at the time of the 5th CoP in connection with testing to see if he could actually produce his 'finest hour' - and test to see if he could put a man on the scene that was going to function much like his 'man of sin' was going to function ...

... well, this is a 'dry run' or 'test balloon' in connection with Sodom and Gomorrah—but here, it's not a testing in connection with his 'man of sin' - but this is a '**dry run' to see if he's still got the power to bring the world to the point of being *the world of the ungodly all over again*** (after God set up the NWO).

- And because of what God did when He brought in the NWO, (those changes that made it so that both man and Satan could not function in the rapid pace they had functioned in before—God made it so that the complicity of the two could not develop *the world of the ungodly* as rapidly as had been done).

- So it's only natural that the adversary had to test things to see if it was **possible** for him to produce that *world of the ungodly* again—even though it might take him a lot longer to do it. (Q: Could he do it, or not?)

- So what the adversary did—was to take a portion or segment of the population that had been consigned over to him (those 5 cities, but especially Sodom & Gomorrah) - and to establish the 'hot-bed' of all his attempts to generate *the world of the ungodly* again.

- (not that he completely ignored all the other nations & families of the earth—but he especially focused his actions upon these cities—and particularly upon 2 of them: S/G)

- And the truth is—Satan succeeded! - he produced, in a 'mini' environment, *the world of the ungodly* in the cities of Sodom & Gomorrah!

- And God judged that—just as He did in the Old World. (in fact, God HAD to judge S/G, and Satan knew it!)

- Why? Because you have an equaling of *the world of the ungodly* in S/G, equal to *the world of the ungodly* in the Old World—and if the Justice of God had to judge the OW, then it has to judge these 2 cities!

..... (my understanding—may need some adjustments)

- Satan knew God judged the OW ... Satan could say, Yeah, BUT, there were still 8 people on God's side putting on display the "light" of the Truth of God —

- Satan knew God would judge S/G (in fact, wanted Him to; provoked Him to) yeah, BUT, there was a little bunch of people still on God's side putting on display the "light" of the Truth of God (Abraham and his family) —

- And Satan knows that God will judge again out in His Day of Wrath ... or will He????

... what if the adversary can get the *night* so dark & so black/thick (the *darkness* of Untruth) that every single person on earth stands with him (on his side), and against God? (what about the Rem? ... kill them off)

... with 100% of the world's population on the side of the adversary, God will either cancel His judgment; or, He will have to concede the contest with Satan because he can't bring in His promised kingdom on the earth!

... the Abrahamic Covenant is to be fulfilled by people (members of the Remnant of Israel) LIVING on the earth—as well as other people living in other nations on the earth.

... perhaps it's unfair (in the rules of engagement with the adversary) for God to exterminate the world's population, and then establish His kingdom with only the resurrected saints. ???

- Anyway—the point is, that Satan has proven by the S/G incident that *the world of the ungodly* **can** occur again—and more than that, it can occur again to the exact same degree it did in the OW.

- And *the world of the ungodly* can be not only produced in a ‘mini’ environment (on a small scale, in an experimental type way) - but it can be produced en masse, just like it had been back in the OW!

- Now to make the connections with what we’re after—we need to see that the same *works of darkness* with the same 3 categories of the LOF/LOE/POL had been brought to the same degree of the Great Debaucheries/Great Sexual Wantonness/Great Proudful Thinking in Sod/Gor, as it had in the OW. (and God judged it accordingly)

- And now—as history rolled on—and as time went on—as the adversary continued on with his *night* of Untruth to develop *the world of the ungodly* again—and when the adversary’s *night* came to the point of being *far spent*—and when God unexpectedly suspended His prog./Isr. — and when those *works of darkness* have been successfully maintained by the adversary throughout this D/o/G — then the Mem/Rem/Isr who are living at the time Peter describes are going to find those exact same things in existence again!

- And all the detailed description of what all those 3 categories consist of—all of that that will be in existence in the Remnant’s day was all in existence in S/G as well!

- And all the more—when you appreciate the vileness and filthiness and disgustingness of those things (in our list) - all the more should a mental wretching take place in your spirit! (all the more, should you desire to *cast off the works of darkness, and put on the armour of light*)

- (read :7-8) - note the terminology that further describes the ungodliness that was going on in those cities of S/G.

- (:7) “*the wicked*” - description of those *vessels of wrath, fitted to destruction*—also connects with the one that will one day reign over these *wicked* as *the Wicked* one (as per 2 Thes. 2:8) - describes the vileness/disgustingness in God’s sight.

- (:7) “*filthy conversation*” - “filth” is one of our strongest words to describe something being utterly vile/disgusting.

- (:8) “*unlawful deeds*” - the *works of darkness* are all “unlawful deeds” (granted, there is a sense in which anything sinful can be called “unlawful” to the Law of Moses) - but there’s also a way in which you can utilize the word “unlawful” that’s NOT referring to the Law of Moses (not that it’s excluded that by any means) ...

... but there is a way in which you can use the word “unlawful” that is deliberately and purposefully **against an authority that would dictate otherwise!** (and say otherwise)

- And each one of those 3 categories of the *works of darkness* (especially with those Great Deb/Great Sexual Wantonness/ Great Proudful Thinking are purposely and purposefully **AGAINST THE AUTHORITY OF GOD!**

- (and that’s why those things are so necessary in connection with the adversary producing his *night* and keeping them ‘red hot’ during this D/o/G in readiness for the operations of his ‘finest hour’)

- Satan needed to have these particular “works” in existence in their Great/Exceeding state because he needed what deliberately and purposefully went right after the ‘heart’ of the matter in connection with man’s accountability/responsibility to God—that went right after the authority in connection with that...

... and that put man in a state of utter rebelliousness and contrariness to God’s authority!

- And the more you understand what these *works of darkness* (and all the list of them) are to the adversary value-wise—as things that put man in an utter state of rebellion and contrariness against God, the more you realize why *casting* those particular things *off*, **you DO provoke the adversary!** (you DO show that you’re no ‘dummy’ on the fact of this earth!)

- So you have some more terminology that builds upon your godly hatred for these w/o/drck.—they’re filthy/unlawful to God—purposefully dedicated against Him!

.... and work against Him—and put man in a position of utter rebellion & contrariness to Him ...

... and the particular *example/ensample* God gives of that to all mankind of the reality of that is the account of Sodom and Gomorrah! - and what God did with them—and what the adversary was allowed to do with a particular people on a particular spot on this earth to produce in ‘mini’ form, *the world of the ungodly* all over again.

- **Ezekiel 16**
- **(context)**

- 5th CoP prophet—God sets forth His conclusion for His justification of bringing the 5th CoP upon His people—for bringing the 1st Install. of it where God’s people end up going out of the land & becoming the adversary’s ‘*lawful captive*’; and the adversary being allowed to come into the land ...

— (see Isa. 8:8 ... *he* [the king of Assyria] *shall fill the breadth of thy land, O Immanuel.*) —

... as God sets forth the details for His justification for all that—He does so in a unique way —

... as Israel embraces the adversary & his PoE—God gives Israel a ‘bill of divorcement’ —

— (Isa.50:1 *Thus saith the LORD, Where is the bill of your mother’s divorcement, whom I have put away? or which of my creditors is it to whom I have sold you? Behold, **for your iniquities have ye sold yourselves**, and for your transgressions is your mother put away.*

... and God let’s her go for her ‘lover’!

... and in connection with Israel having done that, God says in Ezekiel 16:1

- (read :1-3a) - God’s going to focus upon Israel’s ***abominations*** (**Plural**) - [not just 1 abomination]

- And she’s had a history of “*abominations*” right from her *nativity* ...

- (read :3b-4) - the “*abominations*” have become so great by the end of the

4th CoP, that God now dedicates the city Jerusalem to destruction at the beginning of the 5th CoP.

- And the *abominations* and the wickedness in Jerusalem had come to the point (as they became worthy of the 5th CoP) - that there is a direct parallel between the nature of the *abominations* in that VRS in Jerusalem at this time—and something that the adversary had done in the past: Sodom & Gomorrah!

- And that ‘dry run’ / ‘mini’ testing that Satan put together back in Sodom & Gomorrah not only satisfied his question as to whether or not he could develop *the world of the ungodly* again en masse (in the world at-large) - but it also allowed for him to realize that he would also have to produce that *world of the ungodly* in a ‘mini’ form, in Israel herself ... and he could do that, too!

- (and he had to do that in order to get Israel consigned over to him [as he did the Gentiles] - and to gain lawful access to that land) ... and he did it!

- Ezek. 16 goes on with an indictment of Israel’s *abominations*—and in doing so, God looks at both the Northern Kingdom (Samaria, and the capital city, Samaria) and the Southern Kingdom (Judah, and the capital city, Jerusalem) - and after they reached the 2nd CoP and the dividing of Israel’s power into the 2 kingdoms—then as they continued on under the 3rd, 4th, and finally 5th CoP—Samaria (NK) goes out into captivity in the 1st Install—followed by Jerusalem/Judah (SK) ...

... and then at a point in the chapter, God looks back into the past in connection with what He’s doing with Israel—and points out the parallel to what He had done in the past—**and God ends up calling them “SODOM”!**

- And what we’re going to see is—that when God does that, He refers to the issue of WHY He destroyed it—and in doing so, God lists the indictment of things they were doing that merited God destroying them (because of the Great wickedness/ungodliness/iniquity they had embraced & participated in) - and He then comes along and tells Israel that **the same exact thing is taking place in them!**

(that sets the context)

- (read :28-33)

- (read :35-43)

- Notice that there is a particular “*lewdness*” that’s “*above all* [Jerusalem’s] *abominations*” — (and the particular course of action that the Lord God is taking in connection with the 1st Install./5 CoP **IS TO STOP THAT!**)

- (and one of the methods of doing that is to send them out of the land! - and to destroy the city and the perpetrators of it!)

- (read :44-48) - (“*mother was an Hittite, and your father an Amorite*” = Abraham & Sarah were their proper father & mother— the Hittites & Amorites were descended from Ham/Canaan—and among the Canaanites, they were the worst & most wicked!)

- At this point, there’s a ‘shift’ that takes place in the manner in which the Lord is indicting them—because Jerusalem had been complicit with the adversary & his PoE **far more** than even what Sodom had done! (and even more than Samaria had done) -

- And one reason why Israel (SK) did **worse** than Sodom was because they were warned about it in advance and they knew about the adversary and his tactics and what he was after—(therefore, they couldn’t plead ‘ignorance’ - they couldn’t say they were forced—rather, **they freely went for it!** [as per :33]

***SEE MATTHEW 10:15; 11:20-24**

(great illustration of the reality of : the evolution of man’s ungodliness / *the world of the ungodly* developing again / Satan’s *night* getting darker until it’s *far spent*)

- So now the Lord is going to set before Israel/Jerusalem the parallels between them and Sodom.

- (:49) Behold, this was the iniquity of thy sister Sodom, - (notice that *iniquity* issue) - that points to what was so vile, disgusting, and offensive to God going on in Jerusalem that made His justice bring the judgment of the 5th CoP. (Sodom & those cities that sided with her were made *fit to destruction!*)

- (read rest of :49-50) ...

- Notice that you have a kind of listing here too—and notice that not one thing in the list of (:49) is in the category of the Great Sexual Wantonness that Sodom is most commonly known for.

- BUT! as we know from Genesis and 2 Peter, those Great Sexual sins and the “sexual uncleanness” was certainly going on in Sodom.

- And my point is that the ‘Sodom Example/Ensample’ that serves to not only point out the kind of sins that comprise *the works of darkness* — but also points out how the adversary utilizes them to achieve his goals/objectives with mankind on the earth — my point is, that the ‘Sodom Ensample’ doesn’t just focus upon ONE THING (the sexual sins of the LOE), rather it focuses upon ALL THREE of the general categories of *the works of darkness*!

... and that’s the significance of Ezekiel 16!

- Granted, the Great Sexual Wantonness was the most outstanding one of the three; and the most easily perceived & most visible (it’s the one put on the ‘sign post’ “Welcome to Sodom: Sex Pervert Capital of the World”)

- But truth is, Sodom had all 3 operating in such a **Great** state so as to bring it to **UTTER INIQUITY!**

- (look at the list again in :49-50)

- *pride* = POLife
- *fullness of bread* = LOFlesh
- *haughty* = POLife
- *committed abomination* = LOEyes

- All 3 are represented—and not just in a latent sense; or in a mild sense—or one being far greater than another—rather, all 3 in their GREAT/EXCESSIVE state! **All 3 to that point of INIQUITY!**

- And when these things reached that point of iniquity—that’s what triggered God’s righteous judgment: *therefore I took them away as I saw good. (:50)*

- Therefore—in view of each one of the things we have listed, and in view of what they are in their “Great” & Exceeding state—and in view of what they are value-wise to the adversary in the immediate backdrop to the Dispensational Timing of this D/o/G—and in view of the adversary keeping them in their ‘red-hot’ status—and in view of these things coming to their fullness in Satan’s ‘finest hour’ to the point where they work collectively together and for the ultimate goal of putting the “man of sin” on his throne and putting him in the position for the acceptance/approval of all mankind on the earth ...

... the issue for us is to have that same Thinking that God the Father does, and the Lord Jesus Christ does—and by that godly Thinking: when we view those *works of darkness*, then ALL of those things are **INIQUITY** TO US AS WELL!

- (that’s what they’re supposed to be!)

- And not just in ‘name’ only—but that should be our **mental sentiment** in connection with them!

- (they should ALL be **equally disgusting** to us!)

- And because of that—our godly thinking should be reflected by our godly Conduct/Behavior by *casting off the works of darkness, and putting on the armour of light, and walking honestly as in the day!*

- Now—we need to do one more thing in order to fully get settled in our heart **why** it’s so necessary that we (as members of the church, the body of Christ in this D/o/G) should be concerned with *casting off the works of darkness* if they primarily have to do with what happens when God resumes His prog.w/Isr.

- false assumption: the *works of darkness* only have to do with God’s prog.w/Isr. out in the Day of Wrath.

- Q: If *the works of darkness* are being maintained by the adversary today, in preparation for his ‘finest hour’ out in the Day of Wrath, then why should we be all that concerned? What’s the big deal, the ‘man of sin’ is going to come on the scene anyway?

- Q: What does all this have to do with a member of the New Creature of the church, the body of Christ? (A: **MUCH!**)

- And of all that we've covered so far in dealing with the *works of darkness*—this is probably the most important issue of all—because if you don't see the reason why you should cast *off the works of darkness* (more than just because they're sin and inconsistent with who you are “in Christ”) - then the truth is, YOU WON'T!

- (and you'll end up being victimized by them!)

- For one thing—as we've already seen back in 2 Peter 2—and the ‘dry run’ of Sodom & Gomorrah (of the adversary to see if he still had the power to bring the world to the point of “the world of the ungodly” as it was in the Old World) - we saw that *the works of darkness* (in their 3 categories) were designed by Satan to purposely **work against the authority of God Himself**.

... they are purposefully dedicated against Him!

... they are intentionally and deliberately designed to be used by the adversary to put man in a position of utter rebellion & contrariness to Him!

- (and that's true in BOTH programs!)

- For another thing—as we have noted again and again (broken record) - our provoking the adversary by *casting off the works of darkness* and taking him on (so to speak) and having his PoE be directed at us (attempting to ‘*separate us from the love of Christ*’) — we get the benefits of being “*more than conquerors through him that loved us*”.

- But we can (and we must) understand much better/deeper/more precisely **why** we (members of the church, the body of Christ) should be *casting off the works of darkness*— or, why should this concern us? (after all, the ‘man of sin’ doesn't show up until we're long gone!)

- **(and the understanding of this issue has to be very POWERFUL! ... not just ‘Oh, I kind of get it ...’)**

- And what we're about to look at (as the final matter before going on) is also part of the INIQUITY issue to it all as far as God is concerned.

(And maybe it would be good at this point to remind ourselves that we need to see this from God's point of view—much like we did in Romans 8 when we dealt with those 5 probing questions).

- These *works of darkness* and their Great Debaucheries/Great Sexual Wantonness/Great Proudful Thinking—and all the rest of the detailed listing of the forms and expressions of them haven't just occurred by chance! (they were all purposed)

- Remember that even in the basic/fundamental categories of *the works of darkness* in those 3 major categories of the LOF/LOE/POL that we got over in 1 John 2 **connect back** to what happened in Genesis 3 when sin originally entered the world ...

... and I said that the adversary wasn't just 'rolling the dice' at that time and just happened to luck out (where by what he did, it ended up producing the kind of frame of mind & psychological disposition, and therefore the sin of rebelliousness against the command concerning the eating of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil.

- Rather, what Satan did was to design it so that that would be the case! and to figure out that that would be the very best way to do things.

S-L-O-W-L-Y

- And those 3 essential categories (LOF/LOE/POL) are therefore **essential** in connection with originally putting man in a rebellious, contrary state and estate with God.

(and they're essential to maintaining that—and to making it worse and worse—and **bringing man to the point where the state & estate of man would become one of entering into a relationship with the adversary** [a relationship that was originally designed to be man's relationship with God Himself]!

- AND THIS GOES FOR US IN THIS DISP. OF GRACE AS WELL AS IT DOES FOR GOD'S PROG.W/ISR.!!!

- And lest you think otherwise:

- 1 Corinthians 3:3 (strife); 5:1; 6:13-20; 10:8
- 2 Corinthians 12:20-21
- Galatians 5:19ff
- Colossians 3:5-6
- 1 Timothy 6:3-6

- Those 3 categories of the *works of darkness* (LOF/LOE/POL), **not just in general**, but in their **Great/Excessive** state of **Great Debau./Great Sexual Wantonness / Great Prideful Thinking**—are designed by the adversary to do 2 major things:

1) They are essential to the adversary in order to put man in a state of utter rebelliousness and contrariness to God Himself and to His authority—and thereby, **SEVER MAN’S RELATIONSHIP WITH GOD!**

- Man’s desire, therefore, is to NOT become ‘godly’ [God-like] as God originally designed him to be—and therefore to NOT have anything whatsoever to do with the Almighty God!

2) At the exact same time they are essential to the adversary in order to set the stage **for the acceptance by man of a SUBSTITUTE RELATIONSHIP**, not with God Himself, but with the adversary himself!

- These *works of darkness* are designed by the adversary so that man will willingly enter in to a relationship with him—and not just any old relationship, but **the relationship that was originally designed to be man’s relationship with God!** (for “godliness” - but now, “satan-li-ness”)

- And what you see in the development of what’s happened (and will happen) to the Rem/Isr and what’s happening with the world at-large and Israel’s VRS from 2 Peter to 1,2,3 John & Jude is the issue of what’s going on in the world leading up to the adversary having his ‘finest hour’ - and what will, therefore, **produce** the **acceptance** on man’s part at-large when it comes to going ‘all in’ for the adversary with his man of sin—and the **substitute reality** that produces — (i.e., not merely ‘loving the darkness rather than the light’ - but the darkness IS the light).

- And the *works of darkness* in those “GREAT” and excessive states of the LOF/LOE/POL all work together to produce a complete and utter rebelliousness & contrariness on man’s part to the original relationship God designed to have with man—**so that that relationship demands to be DESTROYED!**

- The truth is—the works of darkness are designed by Satan to strike right at the very ‘HEART’ of the fundamentals of the relationship that God designed to establish with man!

- In fact—God uses a particular **expression** when He describes man’s state/estate at the point in which he does destroy his relationship with God and substitute it for a relationship with the adversary (with a view to becoming a “god” himself) [i.e., when the evolution of man’s ungodliness reaches its ultimate degree of ungodliness] ...

- **2 Peter 2**—(and this should all the more get you to appreciate the great VALUE of *the works of darkness* (in all their forms & expressions in our list) to the adversary!)

- again—the context is Peter talking to the Mem/Rem/Isr and the adversary as *The Power of Darkness* having brought the world to the point where he can now have his ‘finest hour’ - and here, Peter deals with the issue of God judging it all in His coming Day of Wrath.

- (read :10-12) - The individuals (man at-large) that Peter describes here have given themselves over to the adversary’s *works of darkness* and to the full involvement in them—and will be, therefore, the ones who will embrace his “man of sin”, and produce the operational mechanics for the adversary to reign as “the prince of this world” ...

... and as they are described in various ways here—notice the expression in (:12) ... ***But these, as natural BRUTE BEASTS, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of things that they understand not; and shall utterly perish in their own corruption;***

- There’s a “*corruption*” that has been taking place all along—and this is a description of the evolution of man’s ungodliness coming to that final stage just before God has His Day of Wrath and begins to judge it.

- And that ‘final stage’ to the evolution of the “*corruption*” of man’s ungodliness has now evolved to become “satan-li-ness” - and goes for everything that the adversary has worked for & produced, ‘hook, line, & sinker’! (willingly)

- And when God describes man at this point of *corruption*—He uses an expression to indicate that man’s own nature isn’t even man-like any longer ...

... **NATURAL BRUTE BEASTS** ...

(man’s nature isn’t human any more!
he’s now a BRUTAL ANIMAL [or better] BEAST!)

- “**BRUTE BEASTS**” is an extremely powerful & meaningful expression!

- “*brute*” = without reason or understanding—used to describe the ‘lower animals’ - notice how God uses a term to describe the very OPPOSITE of the way in which man views himself in contrast to God, God’s word, and anyone stupid enough to believe it ... (the intellectually weak)

... man views himself as ‘enlightened’, ‘scientific’, ‘full of reason’, ‘advanced’, ‘sophisticated’, too smart to follow such myths & fables as the Bible (written by people too stupid to know what scientific advances have taught us ...[weak-minded])

- But *brute* = ANIMAL BEHAVIOR! - truth is, these people will believe themselves to be (by man’s standards) the most intelligent, enlightened, reasonable, advanced, scientific people in history! ... yet, God says that they’re nothing more than the lowest, dumbest, most inhuman animal on earth!

- Charles Smith, Synonyms Discriminated:

“*Brute* is the animal regarded in reference to the absence of that intelligence which man possesses. *Beast* refers to that savage nature of which man is or ought to be devoid. Both *brute* and *beast* (when applied to men) have a shade of meaning that *animal* does not—while *animal* describes the instincts & propensities of man’s lower nature & neglecting of moral restraints—*brute* describes one whose nature is deadened to feeling (especially cruelty)—*beast* describes one who grovels in sensuality.”

- Crabb’s Synonymes:

“Describing man as *brutal* is to describe him in such a way as to almost partake of another nature ...

... Men cannot be exposed to a greater degradation than to be divested of their particular characteristics, and classified under the general name of *animal*, unless we except that which assigns to them the epithet of *brute* or *beast* ...

- Truth is—the expression “*natural brute beasts*” is one of the most degrading and humiliating expressions God can use to describe man in his fully evolved ungodliness! (it’s a POWERFUL expression & commonly underestimated) — **yet man delights in describing himself as a beast**

- see it come up in Jude (:7-10)

- see Ezekiel 21:25-32 (:31)

- God didn’t create man this way—this is the very OPPOSITE of Genesis 1:26! man was supposed to be DISTINCT from the beasts of the earth that He created (in connection w/ godliness, especially).

- (there was nothing “BRUTE” about man as he was originally created)

... but as man evolved in his ungodliness (following sin entering the world, and the corruptive effect of sin beginning to take place in him) - as time has gone on, and as *the world of the ungodly* has developed again (after the flood) - that corruption of sin and ungodliness has made an effect upon man’s own nature to the point that man is now almost **nothing** like what God designed and purposed!

- (not just that man is a “sinner” - but that man is now so far removed from just that issue—rather, the evolution of man’s ungodliness has become so ungodly [to the extreme]; and so far distant from what was originally there/provided for—that it’s like man is NOT a man any more!)

- And as far as man’s corruption is concerned and his complicity with Satan’s PoE—the issue is that man has become *as natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed!*

- And my point is that you see the value that *the works of darkness* are to the adversary—and that you appreciate the fact that the category of the LOF (and its sub-category of the Great Debaucheries)

... and the category of the LOE (and its sub-category of the Great Sexual Wantonness); and the category of the POL (and its sub-category of the Great Proudful Thinking) - are all designed by the adversary to directly “Go After” the fundamentals of God’s original designed/purposed relationship with man.

- Those *works of darkness* are designed by Satan to produce **corruption**, **rebellion**, and **contrariness** in man’s original & designed relationship with God—so much so that both man and God Himself come to an agreement (so to speak) that that relationship MUST BE DESTROYED!

- And man is therefore put in the position of accepting a **substitute relationship with the adversary**—desiring, no longer to be “godly”, but “satan-ly”!

- **CRITICAL POINT:** the *works of darkness* are designed by the adversary to produce such corruption, rebellion, and contrariness in man—not to merely set man in opposition to God—but even more than that, **they work in man to reject the salvation God has provided for man!**

- And this is important for us (and goes to answer that question of, What do *the works of darkness* have to do with us, the members of the church, the body of Christ in this Disp/of Grace if they’re only being maintained by the adversary for his future use out in his ‘finest hour?’) —

- Well, to answer that—we have our saying in Romans 13:12 in connection to the Dispensational Timing of this D/o/G: *The night is far spent, the day is at hand ...* which lets you know that even though God has suspended His prog/w/Isr, the Gentile “dog” nations and the world at-large are still under (and are still being maintained under) the adversary’s *works of darkness* to the point that in that *far spent* status, they (the world at-large) are just one step away (evolution-wise) to where man’s ungodliness crosses the line into complete ‘satan-li-ness’ in which he is no more a man (as far as God’s design & purpose), but is a *natural brute beast, made to be taken and destroyed.*

- (which is the very position the adversary put himself in ...

... when he originally rebelled & sinned and concocted his Plan of Evil, and then went about implementing his Plan of Evil—because in response to that, God made it evident to him and to those in the angelic realm that sided with him—that that’s exactly what they were ... they were now ‘made to be taken and destroyed’—which is why God created the Lake of Fire!) [*Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels: (Matt. 25:41)*]

- And by creating the lake of fire—God was declaring the devil and his angles to be in a state of **UN-naturalness** in connection with what He had designed because of their corruption, rebelliousness, and contrariness!

- So when you’re dealing with man in the world at-large—and men in their “lost”, unbelieving condition—you’re not merely encountering out there in the world at-large the occasional unbeliever—but you’re encountering a world-wide population that is heavily under the influence of *the works of darkness*!

- And don’t think that they don’t have any effect upon the believers (the members of the church, the body of Christ)! Because they DO!

- Which means, they have an effect upon believers sanctification-wise! (1Cor. 10:8; Gal. 5:19-21)

- Again—the adversary’s *works of darkness* were composed by him; and concocted by him to achieve the putting of man in the position of *natural brute beasts* and thereby **destroying/severing** man’s designed relationship with God—and putting man in the position of willingly being acceptable to and agreeable to and desirous of a substitute relationship with the adversary—**and for a substitute form of godliness to take place.**

- ... really, for a **substitute father-to-son relationship!** ... for a **substitute sonship relationship** to be established between man and Satan!

- And if all that doesn’t produce in you a godly attitude of hatred/abhorrence/disdain—then nothing will!!!

- By the way—your godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for ...

... these *works of darkness* is not simply designed to be at the level it's at right now—but rather, we're going to be taught some more things later on that makes that godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain grow and grow greater and greater!

- And that's why the work we've done in coming to understand & appreciate these *works of darkness* isn't just an academic exercise! ... it's not just an exercise in English Synonyms!

- It's an exercise in producing (by the effectual working of the information God give us in connection with those things) HIS godly hatred/abhorrence/disgust, and HIS **response** to those things because of the iniquity & wickedness of them all!

- And as God's "sons/daughters" that's supposed to be our Thinking, our attitude, and our Conduct & Behavior Response as well!

- By the way—you should now have a better understanding and appreciation for the kind of IMPACT for the TRUTH (the Light of God's Truth) you have on the adversary both in the details of your daily life—and when we gather together as one body "in Christ" as a local church—and when we gather together to partake of the **Lord's** Table!

- And therefore, we should, with **great enthusiasm & desire** want to *cast off* those *works of darkness* and make an **impact** for the Truth with *the armour of light* for God's honor & glory in the face of those things as we live in this Disp/o/Grace as they're kept in their 'red-hot' status for the adversary's use yet to come, when his final aspect of his *night* will be granted unto him.

- Now let's shift gears just a little bit—but still dealing with this final issue to our intelligent understanding of what *the works of darkness* are—and still going to answer the question of, 'Why should we (members of the church, the body of Christ living in this D/o/G) be concerned with *casting off the works of darkness* if they primarily have to do with what happens when God resumes His prog. /w Israel?' (false assumption)

... and kind of put the final 'cap' on the issue of our intelligent understanding of what the adversary is doing (behind the scenes; or what his designed purpose is) for & with these *works of darkness*.

- Let's look at these 3 categories of *the works of darkness*—and let's take 1 of them: THE PRIDE OF LIFE with its

Great Prideful Thinking—and with all the

- Presumptuousness;
- Self-will
- Arrogance
- Haughtiness
- Loftiness
- Lifted Up concept
- (and all the other ones that pertain to that)

- This particular category of *the works of darkness*—and all of those terms and expressions—they all have something in common—in common as a goal, or as an objective, or as a designed aim for the adversary's overall Plan of Evil to be “like the most High”.

- Granted—they all have in common the issue of PRIDE—and Pride is what is behind each one of those 6 examples of The Great Prideful Thinking—and that IS the big issue—but it's not simply Pride in general (i.e., regarding yourself in high esteem while holding others in contempt) — rather, it's Pride that is going after something—it's Pride with a particular purpose!

- So what is everything in that category of THE PRIDE OF LIFE going after? what's its particular aim/goal/objective?

- The divine institution of the church? - yes—but there's more to it than that—that IS the target, but that's not the 'bulls-eye'

- Actually, you've got to go one step beyond that issue—and it's rather easy to grasp ...

... what all this *work of darkness* does in this category of THE PRIDE OF LIFE is—that it strikes at the very heart of the very **means** which God established by which He determined to have His relationship with man as the godly creature that God designed man to be.

- That category of THE PRIDE OF LIFE with its Great Prideful Thinking and all those forms/expressions of it—**strikes right at the issue of the effectual working of God's word in man!**

- And THE PRIDE OF LIFE with its Great Proudful Thinking and all its evolved status—with all its characteristics & features—summed up is actually **Pride-based rebellion AGAINST the effectual working of God’s word in a man.**

- A man who is therefore *presumptuous* (in the context of 2 Peter 2), and who is *self-willed* (in that same context), a man who is *arrogant*, *haughty*, *lofty*, and *lifted up* (in this same context) - men with that characteristic & feature, are, on the basis of their Great Proudful Thinking in those manners—**are expressing to the uttermost, their absolute rejection of the effectual working of God’s word in them.**

- And they’re also expressing their absolute HATRED for God’s word—and the fact that they want NOTHING whatsoever to do with it!

- And that they scorn IT! and abhor IT! and loathe IT!

- And that what they prefer to operate upon—and what they have determined that they are going to operate upon: IS THE UNTRUTHS OF THE DARKNESS OF THE WORKS OF DARKNESS OF THE ADVERSARY AS THE POWER OF DARKNESS!

- For example—remember when we were dealing with that “*light*” & “*darkness*” concept—and we looked at that issue in connection with the Mem/Rem/Isr back in John and in 1 John who will be living through that time when the adversary is putting his ‘finest hour’ into effect—and the Mem/Rem will be dealing with the emissaries of the adversary within their own nation—and John describes these vain, religious leaders and these *false prophets* as ones who ‘comprehended NOT the light of God’s truth’ ... and ones who loved darkness rather than light ...

... and then they made that **final step** of their demented reality where they actually looked at the “light” of God’s Truth as the utter darkness of untruth itself; and looked at the “darkness” of untruth as the greatest light of truth that ever took hold of their mind (as was told about in Isaiah) ... and what they’ve completely gone for is THE DARKNESS OF UNTRUTH!

... and the **aim** of the PRIDE OF LIFE category of *the works of darkness* (especially as it reaches its excessive, climactic, ‘Great’ stage—and as it will function in its ultimate when the adversary has his ‘finest hour’) - the issue is that in their “Great Proudful Thinking” (with all those features to it) - they are repudiating & rejecting **to the uttermost** any “light” (truth) from God! (any *light* from His word!)

... they're embracing that darkness with a 'bear hug' that will NOT LET GO!

- And that same kind of thing is true with the other 2 categories of *the works of darkness*.

- **THE LUST OF THE EYES** doesn't go after & attack the effectual working of God's word in a man (which is the **most fundamental** issue in connection with God's relationship with man) ...

- but it goes right after and attacks the very sanctity of the kind of personal, individual type relationships that God established a man to have with other men (I use that in the generic sense: i.e., men & women & children) ...

... especially attacking the sanctity of:

- God's institution of marriage;
- God's institution of the family;
- and God's institution of a man's and a woman's use of their own bodies—
(and the sanctity in connection with those things)
[and what's 'natural' and what's not 'natural']

- **THE LUST OF THE FLESH** goes after and attacks the sanctity of the institutions that God established for a civilized society in connection with His relationship with man as a whole—and for man's inter-relationship with one another as a whole.

... and with those Great Debaucheries, they especially go right after & attack the sanctity of:

- God's institution of government; and of civil society; and of civility—and other such things that deals with 'law and order' and those "*powers that be*" — and they attack God's design in connection with those things—and aspects that God has instituted within them as "*ordinances*" and so forth.

- And not only do these 3 categories of *the works of darkness* go after & attack these things—and Part "A" of their aim is to DESTROY the kind of relationships God designed & instituted ... and Part "B" of

their aim/goal is to go about providing for and working for the establishing of **SUBSTITUTES** in connection with all those relationships—

- a substitute to man's relationship with God through the effectual working of His word in a man that will work out for, (and be suitable to) the adversary's use with him as "The Prince of this World" —

... substitutes that the adversary has designed for the kind of inter-personal relationships **he** wants men to be engaged in when it comes to marriage and the 'family-unit' and the use of men/women's bodies.

... substitutes the adversary has charted for the kind of civilization and the kind of society **he** wants man to have on the whole.

- Now—when it comes back to our question of, 'Why should we be concerned with *casting off the works of darkness* in this Disp/o/Grace, if they primarily have to do with when God resumes His prog. w/Isr?' (they DON'T primarily just have to do with that!)

- Truth is—if you're still struggling with that question—then I can't help you! — and if you're still struggling with the issue of godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for these *works of darkness*, I can't help you either—and if this doesn't generate within you (by it's effectual working) a desire to want to *cast off the works of darkness*, I don't know what will!

- Think about it: If Satan desires to be "*like the most High*" ... to be 'like God' ... to be "godly" ... if Satan desires 'God-like-ness' (godliness) this much; and to this extent—**then what kind of POWER/CAPACITY/ABILITY is there in this issue of "godliness"?**

- or to put it another way—if Satan goes to this much trouble to counterfeit/imitate/and generally 'rip off' godly Sonship Edification ... then just what can a properly educated "son" of God the Father do/accomplish?

- So the 'eyes of your understanding' should now be opening up to

this issue of *the works of darkness*—whereby you’re not simply seeing the evolution of man’s ungodliness (from the point right after the Flood when God instituted His New World Order—and coming to the point where *the night is far spent*—and then the adversary having to maintain those *works of darkness* in their ‘red-hot’ status for the duration of this Disp./o/Grace so that he can immediately utilize them for his ‘finest hour’) ...

... but we’re now also seeing the outworking of what the adversary has planned and purposed to do in connection with his intelligent concoction & composition of those *works of darkness*—knowing exactly how they would work in connection with opposing & working against the relationship that God had originally designed to establish with man—so that, **as** man would evolve in his ungodliness, he would therefore be able to ACCEPT FROM THE ADVERSARY a completely different relationship ...

... to the total exclusion of God and His Truth—and to the total acceptance of a substitute of the darkness of untruth!

- (which is what the adversary proposed all the way back when he first said, “*I will be like the most High*” and first formulated his Plan of Evil!)

- What the adversary is after with those *works of darkness* is to produce a SUBSTITUTE REALITY with a SUBSTITUTE RELATIONSHIP that man would have—but not with God; but with him!

- And to get that accomplished—the adversary has to do exactly what was set forth back there in Psalm 2 —

2 The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the LORD, and against his anointed, saying,

3 Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us.

... from Satan’s perspective—when it comes to producing that **substitute reality**—he has to **break** down the bonds and the **bands** that provide for the original relationship that God had established & designed for man to have with Him!

- And so Satan had to come up with some *works* that go about attacking the very ‘PILLARS’ of that relationship—and will make it, therefore, so that man will REBELL against the PILLARS of that relationship (as God originally designed them) ...

... and then, therefore, make it so that man will accept a SUBSTITUTE for those PILLARS which will provide for the establishment of a relationship that Satan desires to have with man!

- So under that category of THE PRIDE OF LIFE, with the Great Proudful Thinking; and with those features of *presumptuous, self-will, arrogance, haughtiness, loftiness, being lifted up*—the effectual working of God’s own word (and the **authority** of it) is rebelled against to the nth degree when the adversary has his ‘finest hour’ (but also bringing it to the verge of that as the backdrop to this Disp./o/Grace) - man therefore operates with NO *light* in him; completely embraces the *darkness* of untruth, and therefore that *darkness* is actually a **Pillar of Untruth** that provides for the effective working of the adversary with man. (**Satan attacks the very curriculum of Sonship Education/edification**).

- It’s the adversary’s *darkness*—and all his lies that will be operating—and the same goes for the other 2 categories.

- Under the category of THE LUST OF THE EYES, with all that Great Sexual Wantonness, and all its features—attacks the sanctity of the inter-personal relationships & institutions for the relationships that God has established between men, women, & children on this earth and all of the entities designed for the human race to increase and multiply (**which has great sonship training significance**)—and you attack that, therefore, and you provide for the establishment of **another Pillar** in connection with those things.

- And under the category of THE LUST OF THE FLESH, and all the Great Debaucheries, and all its features—you do the same thing on a community basis, when you’re dealing with communities & societies of men at-large—establishing **another Pillar** in connection with societal and community and even national norms & standards [a “new normal”] (**which has great sonship training significance as well**).

- Taking just that one category (THE PRIDE OF LIFE) - let’s verify/document that this Great Proudful Thinking goes right after & attacks the effectual

working of God's word in a man (and the most fundamental issue in connection with God's relationship with man) which has as its goal/aim/objective, **destroying** that relationship 'Pillar' and then providing a **substitute** 'Pillar' of Untruth for man to have a relationship with the adversary like the one God designed to have with man. (viz., Father-to-son; sonship; godliness!)

- (By the way—you can do this with the other 2 categories of *the works of darkness* [LOF/LOE] - and the effectiveness of those *works of darkness* are similar in that (in the LOE category, they work to destroy the 'Pillars' God has established for the personal relationships between men/women/husbands/wives/children/family [and then go about to produce a substitute to that, that will serve the adversary's goals of 'satan-li-ness']—and then in the LOF category, they work to destroy the relationships men have with all mankind as a whole in their community/society/civility [and then go about to produce a substitute to that, that will serve the adversary's goals for the 'satan-li-ness' of man to occur, and to establish the 'Pillars' of society & civilization of **his** own choosing, for the time in which he is going to get the opportunity to reign over the whole world as "the Prince of this world"].)

- But for now we'll focus upon the one category of THE PRIDE OF LIFE—and let it serve as an example of how the other 2 categories work as well.

- We're going to look at some examples of how it is that when God talks about men in general, (and about Israel in particular) - rebelling against His word; and refusing to give heed to what He has to say; rejecting His word, and desiring NOT to operate upon it—and preferring the *darkness* of Untruth & error & lies rather than what God has to say ...

... I want you to see how often God comes along & says that the whole source of that is GREAT PRIDEFUL THINKING (PRIDE)! (not surprising at all)

- PRIDE is both, the Grace-Rejecting policy of the FLESH of man's natural sinful being—and the Light-Rejecting policy! (see Rom. 13:14?)

- In other words—the whole reason why Grace is ever rejected by anyone (any man/woman); and the whole reason why the Light of God's Truth is ever rejected by anyone is because of a man's **PRIDE!**

- (and, of course, that's the reason why, when the adversary composed & concocted his *works of darkness*, he knew exactly what that PRIDE would do, because PRIDE is exactly what he is, personified!)

... and in being so—he was the original, great **light**-rejecter and the great **grace**-rejecter!!!

- Psalm 10
 - (Context): these are also passages that point out the Lord's godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for these *works of darkness*, (and goes to produce that same godly attitude in the Mem/Rem/Isr) — but now we're going to focus upon this issue of PRIDE —
 - this is in the 1st Book—the Redeemer mandate of the Dav. Cov. is focused upon—therefore they function prophetically looking out to the time of the 5th CoP, and the arrival of the 4th Install. (Redeemer) of the 5th CoP—even though they were written in large during the Interlude between the 1st & 2nd CoP.
 - The Context, therefore, is dealing with Israel at a point in which they were not just kind of dabbling with the *darkness*, but rather, they were embracing that *darkness* and making a manifest repudiation/rejection of the 'light' of God's word.
 - And in both the world at-large and in Israel itself, there is an ever increasing, evolutionary, development and maturing and advancement of man's PRIDE that is producing this ever increasing, advancing rejection of God's word!
- (read :1)
 - deals w/ the question the Rem will have at the beginning of God resuming their program—i.e., Why doesn't God judge right away? - that portion at the beginning of the 5th Install. is going to be like God is asleep & not doing anything, even though He's already announced His "Day" ...
- (read :2-6)
 - (:3—everything that's behind the wicked's boasting is the *darkness* of Untruth—*blessing* (speaking well) of the *covetous*, whom the LORD *abhorreth!* - he doesn't even have the same mental sentiment God has concerning those practices!)
 - (:4 [read]) - this stands in stark contrast to the Mem/Rem!

- It's the PRIDE that makes it so that there's a **rejection** of God and His Truth! (not just in general, or as a basic reality, but the context is dealing with that Pride when the final install. of God's prog. is in effect—and when the adversary is having his 'finest hour' and the evolved state of man's ungodliness has been brought to the point of complete acceptance of the adversary as "*the prince of this world*"!)

- It's the PRIDE that makes it so that men *will not seek after God: God is not in all his thoughts.*

- The PRIDE says, 'I'll operate on all the *works of darkness* of Untruth'—which is the ultimate and complete state of rebelliousness against the effectual working of God's word in a man!

- Isaiah 28

- (Context): 5th CoP—looks out to the 4th Install. and the time in which the Lord was teaching & dealing with all of the corrupt doctrine coming out of the VRL of Isr.—because they were the ones who had 'cast the law behind their backs & despised the **word** of the Holy One of Israel' [5:24].

- Here in this particular 'cycle' of Isaiah—when the indictment is given again against apostate Isr. ... you have the 'sentence' portion of the indictment in (read :14-15)

- this, historically, is when apostate Isr. rejected what John the Baptist was declaring to them in connection with the fact that the Wrath was coming.

- Notice that before God declares the 'sentence' portion of the indictment—He first deals with the issue of the effectual working of His word in Israel ... and the fact that it wasn't effectually working at all because it was denied the right to effectually work—and the ones that had it deposited to them to teach it and see to it that it effectually worked had already 'cast it behind them' and 'denied' it! (and they were only using it to see to their own needs/benefit/profit & make it say what they wanted it to say.)

- And when the Lord does show up—He sets about to make the law 'honorable' again and correct all this corrupt doctrine (as :9-13) sets forth.

- But He doesn't accomplish that with the 'scornful men that rule His people in Jerusalem' - He accomplishes it with the 'no-account' people who believe that gospel of the kingdom and become the Mem/Rem/Isr.

- (read :9-13) - the 'gist' is—that the effectual working of His word has NOT been allowed to take place in Israel—and the ones entrusted with doing it had rejected it (and only use it to their own advantage)

... and they had not been teaching it in connection with 'child-hood' doctrine—[which is what the *precept, precept, line upon line, line upon line* concept is all about] ...

... so the Lord Himself comes and provides for that very thing to be done during his earthly ministry with those 'no-account' children ...

- (note :12) - "... **yet they would not hear**" — they rejected His word to them; and the proper use of His word to them—**WHY?**

A: (see :1-4) - PRIDE/GREAT PRIDEFUL THINKING!

- *Woe to the crown of pride ... The crown of pride (:1, :3)*

- In these opening verses, as the indictment is laid against apostate Israel—the fundamental wickedness & vileness & iniquity behind the indictment—and the reason, therefore, for the rejection of God's word is cited: *the crown of PRIDE; the crown of PRIDE!!!!*

- The adversary knew exactly what he was doing in connection with that 3rd category of *the works of darkness* ...

... and it's also the reason why—following the original institution of those 3 things back in Genesis 3, just about every other time that those *works of darkness* are described following that: #1 & #3 gets REVERSED! (and the PRIDE issue is mentioned first!)

- **Jeremiah 13** - (sign/gesture)

(:1-10)

- (Context): 5th CoP Prophet—living during the 1st Install.
 - There is a very particular sign that God gives to the people of Israel as a whole as they are being taken out of the land—and like in Isaiah, God is indicting the nation for their worthiness to be taken out of their land and go under the 5th CoP—and especially the 1st Install.

- (read :1-9) - This sign or gesture that God has Jeremiah perform is an object-type lesson to the nation—and when it comes to the significance of it (and the application of it) in (:7) notice ...

*... and, behold, the girdle was **marred**, it was profitable for nothing.*

- (again :8-9) - the Lord makes the application to the nation— (note that both the Northern & Southern Kingdoms are in view: *After this manner will I mar the pride of Judah, and the **great** pride of Jerusalem.* — Judah = North. King.; Jerusalem = South. King.)

- The NK went out of the land first—which was due to their “*pride*” (which was bad enough, and conspired enough with the *works of darkness* to come under the judgment of God and the 5th CoP) ...

... but the SK (Jerusalem, the capitol city) was afflicted with the exact same prideful disease (but to an even greater extent: **great pride**) that had likewise come to the point of radical surgery being necessary just as it was with the NK—and so the SK goes out under the 5th CoP.

- So this great pride (as a *work of darkness*) runs rampant throughout the entire kingdom—and resident in the Capital of the nation (Jerusalem) is the very SOURCE of it all! (the center/caldron of it all—the GREAT PRIDE)!

- And what we’re going to see is that with that “*great pride*”, there is an association that God makes between **them** and the **adversary**!

- (:10) - *This **EVIL** people, which refuse to hear my words, which walk in the imagination of their heart, and walk after other gods, to serve them, and to worship them, shall even be as this girdle, which is good for nothing.* (modern expression)

- Under this particular context—(going back to what was set forth in Isaiah where Israel had now become the adversary's *lawful captive*, and he legally takes possession, therefore, of them) - that possession wasn't simply the taking of their territory (true as that is) - but the very people themselves had become an **EVIL PEOPLE!**

- Their **PRIDE** has brought them to the point where they are Thinking & Acting just like the adversary acts in connection with some certain things—but especially in connection with what God SAYS!

- And they are embracing the *darkness* of Untruth of *the works of darkness* of The Power of Darkness!

- In other words—the context tells you that this isn't just any ol' pride! or occasional pride!

- And their relationship with God is so strained and so marginal at this point—that their relationship is stronger with the adversary! ... hence, *they walk after other gods, to serve them, and to worship them ...*

- In other words— those 3 **thrones** that Satan originally desired to have in order to be *like the most High*—he has (in a sense) established them there in Israel itself—and Israel is cooperating, and is treating him as if he sits upon those 3 thrones that only God has the right to occupy & govern the relationship with man.

- This GREAT PRIDE therefore isn't something that 'just happens' in the evolution of man's ungodliness—rather, it's produced by **design** of the adversary and his *works of darkness*—in full participation with the implementation of his Plan of Evil on this earth.

- Truth is—the grievous nature of Israel's ungodliness at this point is that—(being worthy of, and now actually experiencing the 1st Inst./5th CoP [being taken out of their land into captivity]) — is that **their degree of ungodliness was GREATER in Israel than it was in the Gentile nations!**

(remember Ezekiel 16!)

- (that should do for the context)

- What I want to do now is to focus upon that ‘source’ or ‘root’ of it all that put Israel in the 5th CoP and the 1st Install of it (and made them an object of God’s fury & wrath).

- (While there’s just a bunch of great details in this passage) - Notice again that God is having Jeremiah perform this gesture/sign to Israel as they are now going under the 5th CoP/1st Install and will therefore go into captivity (Assyria & Babylon) - and here in ch.13 God is continually telling Israel WHY He is bringing this judgment upon them. (He makes these connections w/ *the works of darkness*)

- (:1) - (lots of fascinating details)

- (:2-4) - Why Euphrates? God has Jeremiah go to the very geographical location of their captivity under Gentile dominion!

- (:5-7) - (:7— “*profitable for nothing*” - that’s the object lesson—and then the LORD gives the application and meaning of it all in the following ...)

- (:8-9) - Israel is going to go “*after this manner*” OUT of the land under the Gentiles/Chaldean/Assyrian/Babylonians—and they’re going to suffer some consequences out there—(some ‘*marring*’ of *the pride of Judah, and the great pride of Jerusalem* is going to take place)!

- And in connection with them being in a *profitable for nothing* status, a judgment is going to have to take place and a destruction of that—whereby a Remnant will be left by which God can do something with!

- And by the time of the 70 years of the 1st Install.: that gets accomplished! —and under the 2nd Install., that Remnant is allowed to return to the land.

- But the focus here is upon what developed within them—which is their PRIDE and GREAT PRIDE—but God is going to make it clear as He indicts them, that there is something going on ‘behind the scenes’ (so to speak) - something taking place in them that when it comes to the Great Pride is the ‘basis’ of it or the ‘root’ of it all—and it’s what is producing all the iniquity in God’s sight on the basis of that Great Pride ... (see :10)

- (:10) - “*evil people*” = they are fully cooperating with the adversary—and therefore in a state of rebelliousness & contrariness to God just as the adversary is—and they’ve put themselves in a position of being God’s own adversary!
- (:11) - notice this isn’t the same thing as ‘putting on the Lord Jesus Christ’ — because the linen girdle isn’t God, it’s ISRAEL!
 - the linen girdle = the garment closest to the skin/body— (“I’ll stick to you closer than your under ware!”) depicts the closeness of the relationship

- Notice in (:10 & :11) that TWICE God sets forth the **climactic issue** (the ‘root’ or ‘basis’) of the indictment as God deals with their Great Pride (especially in Jerusalem with the Religious Leaders residing there [which was to be the capital of their spiritual life as well as their nation] - and out of it is supposed to come ‘the word of the Lord’) ... TWICE God sets forth the **BIG ISSUE**:

10 This evil people, WHICH REFUSE TO HEAR MY WORDS, ...
11 ... but they WOULD NOT HEAR.

- The BIG ISSUE that’s producing all this Great Pride (with all it’s iniquity & features) is the issue of THEIR **REFUSAL TO HEAR GOD’S WORDS!!!**

- (That’s what Great Pride goes after! as per the design of the adversary!) - Remember: Pride is the Light-rejecting; Truth-rejecting; word of God rejecting policy of the flesh of man’s natural sinful being!

- Israel/Jerusalem has chosen to operate upon; preferred to operate upon; & declared the fact that they’re going to operate upon the Darkness of Untruth of the Adversary as The Power Of Darkness RATHER than what God says!

- The BIG ISSUE is that by ‘*casting away the law of the LORD of hosts, and despising the word of the Holy One of Israel*’ the vain, apostate element of Israel deliberately and purposely chose the *darkness* of Untruth and to operate on that *darkness!*

- and that’s exactly what the Great Prideful Thinking goes right after as it operates in the hearts and minds of men!!!

- (by the way—**that’s the ONLY alternative!**

If you’re not going to operate upon “light”, you HAVE to operate upon “darkness”!!!) ... in God’s sight, there is NO ‘grayness’!!!

- (note :10 again) - “... *which walk in the imagination of their heart*” - that’s NOT the “truth” - that’s waking in ‘vain imaginations’ - that’s the *darkness* of Untruth in their Conduct & Behavior!

- And the thing that each and every one of the underlying features & characteristics of that PRIDE OF LIFE have in common—is that they all work to reject, rebel against, and repudiate the effectual working of God’s word in a man!

- (they all work to **redefine** the *darkness* as being the *truth!*)

- Actually, this information in (:10) is indicative of what will take place in the 1st Inst/5th CoP—(... *and walk after other gods, to serve them, and to worship them,*) - in which a “**marring**” will take place with Israel—but when the 5th Inst/5th CoP arrives and the adversary is having his ‘finest hour’ - the *gods* (Pl.) will switch to a god (Sing.) - and they will ‘walk after HIM, and serve & worship HIM’ ...

... and the *darkness* will be so dark, that even though men will think they are being enlightened with *light* to a degree never before reached in human history ... the reality will be that due to their Great Proudful Thinking and fully embracing the darkness, the truth is, they will operate upon the greatest *darkness* that has ever been generated in a human mind: **THEY WILL PUT THE ADVERSARY ON THE THRONE!**

- The PRIDE OF LIFE in its Great Proudful Thinking is designed by the adversary to cut down the greatest & most fundamental ‘Pillar’ God ever designed to have with mankind: the effectual working of God’s word! - and then to erect another ‘Pillar’ in it’s place: a Pillar of Darkness of Untruth that gets accepted for the Truth!

- come on down to where the indictment continues ... (read :15-17)

back to - (:15) *Hear ye, and give ear; **be not proud**: for the LORD hath spoken.* — in other words, if they're going to be Proud; then they're NOT going to "hear", they're NOT going to "give ear", they're NOT going to listen, therefore, to what the LORD has to say!

- and in the 1st Inst/5th CoP, there still was a tiny place in their ear where God could make this appeal to them ... but the time will come when even that tiny opening will shut!

- and on the basis of PRIDE—mankind will be left **deaf** to hearing God at all—and man's hearing will become true 'selective-hearing' to the ultimate! ... he'll hear everything BUT what God has to say!

- And that's why Jeremiah says in (:17), *But if he will not hear it, my soul shall weep in secret places **for your pride*** — in other words, PRIDE is the whole reason why you won't hear God's words! (whether it's a little matter of God's word or a big matter—whether you're dealing with an iota of it, or a whole encompassing matter of it) - if it's not going to be listened to, (either in whole, or in part), the whole reason why, is PRIDE!

- Hosea 7

- The 'looping parallelism' that takes place in the prophets now has Hosea going back to one of the original indictments that took place back in Isaiah.

- Note the terminology & phraseology—it's the same as God used to declare His abhorrence & justification for pouring out His wrath at the arrival of the 5th CoP when it all comes to a head out in the 5th Installment. (remember that there are purposed parallels between the 1st & 5th Installments).
[keep an eye out for words that describe the *darkness*]

- (:1-6) - A marvelous Illustration/Analogy: an oven has been fired up at the time of the 1st Install.—and a product has been put in that oven for the baking of it—and the end result is going to be their complete complicity with the adversary out in the 5th & final Install. (everything is on track for that to happen—but between the 1st & 5th instal, God is going to provide great mercy & grace to Israel!) - which will be manifest in the 2nd Instal ... then there's like a 'cooling off' period in the 3rd Instal ... then the greatest provision of all in the 4th!

- that fully *leavened* lump is going to come out in that 5th Installment—and by the total corruption/leavening of it all, the nation Israel is going to commit the most heinous sin of all, based upon her most wicked act of all (that eclipses the rejecting of the Christ) ... which will be the accepting of another “*anti*” Christ (the adversary himself in the person of the ‘man of sin’)!

- (:7-9)

- (now, what we’re particularly after—the PUNCH to it all— **:10**)

- (notice: *And the pride of Israel testifieth to his face*) = The testimony is now given—and it stands right in their own FACE!

- It’s undeniable and indisputable PROOF concerning the reality of what they are—and it’s staring them right in the face ...

- And yet, in their PRIDE, in that Great Prideful Thinking, **THEY REFUSE TO BE HONEST, EVEN WITH THEIR OWN SELVES!**

- Outside of being dishonest with God—the greatest act of dishonesty that a person is capable of committing is refusing to be honest with themselves! (no honesty of heart at all)!

- Complete & total self-opposers!

- Now—you can do this same ‘exercise’ as we have done with the POL with the other 2 categories of the *works of darkness* as well.

- LOE—attacking the sanctity of marriage/family

- LOF—attacking the sanctity of civility/society

- In closing out our initial study of what *the works of darkness* are so that when it comes to *casting them off*, we intelligently know what we’re doing as properly educated sons/daughters—once again, the category of the POL (with all of its Great Prideful Thinking and all of its features/characteristics) really does purposefully & deliberately (by design of the adversary) attack & go after one of the 3 ‘Pillars’ of the relationship God designed to have with man—in connection with His design & purpose for man on this earth.

- And as it comes to that point of Great Proudful Thinking, with those characteristics that were there just one ‘notch’ shy of their ‘fullness’ when the *night* became *far spent* (as the backdrop situation to this disp. of grace), and is now being maintained in that *far spent* status throughout this disp. of grace—and then comes to its ‘fullness’ when this disp. of grace is over with—the issue is, that that is still working just a vehemently, just as fervently, as it had just before God suspended His prog./w/Isr. (and suspended the *night* in its *far spent* status) - it still works to that degree in connection with man’s rebelliousness against the light of God’s word and against its effectual working within a man—it still does that (and will continue to do that) throughout the entirety of this disp. of grace in which we live—its continuing to do so RIGHT NOW at this very point in the disp. of grace in which we live

- And the issue is that we, therefore, ought to look at those particular *works of darkness* that are the specifics under that category of the Great Proudful Thinking—(we ought to look, therefore, at man’s *presumptuousness, his self-will, his arrogance, haughtiness, his lofty looks, his being lifted up*) - and the godly disdain/abhorrence/hatred we have for those things ought to reach its point of utter-ness (as far as we’re concerned), knowing that all that was produced and all that has been evolving in man by the intelligent design of the adversary in order to DESTROY the effectual working of God’s word, and to REPLACE it with the effective working of his *darkness*.

- And that will be the ‘trigger’ (so to speak) that will make it so that it turns man into that *natural brute beast*—it turns man into full cooperation with the adversary—and into the ‘roaring’ of God’s judgments in His “day” against that as He breaths out His vehement hatred against those things and consumes it in the fire of His jealousy!

- And that goes for the LOF/LOE as well!

- All 3 of those categories of *the works of darkness* (the LOF/LOE/POL) - especially when they came to their climactic point there at the immediate backdrop to this disp. of grace (and on the verge of their ‘fullness’) - all those particular *works of darkness* that are in those particular categories are, by design of the adversary, (as indicated way back in Genesis chapter 3 when he originally implemented his Plan of Evil on this earth, and did so through the LOF/LOE/POL) - the issue is that they are all, by satan-ly design, purposely go about attacking the very fundamental ‘Pillars’ to the relationship that God has designed to establish between Himself and man.

- And when they come to their “Great” point, man, therefore, in the evolution of his ungodliness possessing those things is therefore just one ‘notch’ away of being in the position of those *natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed* because they have COMPLETELY repudiated (in their rebelliousness and their contrariness to God), the very foundations upon which God’s most fundamental relationship with man exists.

- And mankind, therefore, by so doing, embrace in their entirety and in their total acceptance of their will, the adversary and a relationship with him instead.

- And in view of these 3 categories, the adversary attacks that very foundation of God’s relationship with man both individually, and with one another, and collectively (community-wise, & society-wise) in this world in connection with his rulership over the world and his establishment of his own kingdom on this earth.

- And we’ve actually seen the very first thing as Satan’s methodology for his implementation of his Plan of Evil, and operationally, how he will go about having his ‘finest hour’.

- And when you understand & appreciate that just like God the Father does; and just like the Lord Jesus Christ does—in other words, when God the Holy Spirit, through the effectual working of what we’re dealing with in Romans 13 produces that understanding and appreciation with you—that ought to ‘cap off’ (at this particular point in your Sonship Education) the full measure of godly hatred/disdain/abhorrence & disgust & rejection for those things so that you ought to have (equal to what your Father has; and the Lord Jesus Christ has) so that you, therefore, will enthusiastically, and with zeal—and with fervor for participation in this particular new aspect of your Father’s business of contending with the adversary & taking a stand against him, and showing your ‘true colors’ with respect to who you are & whose side you’re on in God’s contention with the adversary (and your intelligent comprehension of what’s been going on) ...

... it will therefore effectually work within you to cause you to enthusiastically *cast off those works of darkness, and put on the armour of light*—and to know what you’re doing and why you’re doing it with that ambition, zeal, & enthusiasm—because you really can’t *cast something off* unless you’ve got some fervency behind it—because the whole concept involves that kind of emotion and that kind of fervency of thinking and intensity of mind & thought!

- Romans 13

- Note the Godly Thinking of (:11-12a) ...

- Q: What has fundamentally changed in your thinking that would now make it so that you really desire to *cast off the works of darkness, and put on the armour of light*?

- Q: What, in your thinking, has changed so that you have great zeal & enthusiasm to enter into this new aspect of your Father's business that has you taking on the adversary—and the adversary therefore earning the right to attempt to '*separate you from the love of Christ*'?

- This is NOT saying, (primarily), that you should be scared into doing this because you might run out of time!

- (you were actually taught to "*fear*" that this disp/of/grace can end at any time back in Romans 9-11)!

- The construction of the 3 sayings is such that, after the 1st saying, there should be a natural raising of the question WHY? ... and that's why the 2nd saying begins with the word "*for*"

... which means that the last 2 sayings are the critical ones to answer the question of WHY? ... why should I enthusiastically enter into this new aspect of my Father's business that has to do with taking on the adversary? ... why should I now desire (more than anything) to *cast off the works of darkness, and put on the armour of light*?

(no one needs to tell you that 'time is fleeting' and 'you're getting older' and you might run out of time—even though, granted, that is included in that 1st saying—but it is an extremely minor issue—it's not even close to being the primary issue to challenge some old thinking you have and *transform* you by *the renewing of your mind* on this issue).

- A: For one thing, with *the night being far spent, and the day being at hand*—this present world has been brought to a state of such *darkness* and such iniquity that God's wrath would be poured out on it ... if it wasn't for this disp/o/grace! (That changes your thinking about the condition of this world .. or it should!)

- (God was ready to destroy this world over 2,000 years ago ... and it didn't get better so that God changed His mind about it!)

- And when you combine that thinking with the thinking of the 2nd saying—you should be thinking that God is going to destroy that adversary and his Policy and Plan of Evil shortly—and because I'm living as "*that day is at hand*" - I now know what's up, and I'm going to flaunt that in the adversary's FACE right now!!!

- My "*salvation being nearer than when I believed*" means that I'm going to participate, and have a roll to play in the Lord's Day—and I'm going to participate in the Lord's functional life in that Day!

- and the disgusting nature of this world; and the course it follows; and the darkness of Untruth men indulge in ...
I WANT NOTHING TO DO WITH!

- This isn't just: Well, the rapture is about to take place, yeah!, I won't have to put up with this job any more; I won't have to be put in a nursing home; I won't have to pay off my loans ... or whatever!

- This is the thinking that: the reality of *my salvation is nearer than when I believed*, and, *the night is far spent, the day is at hand* — My conscious thinking about time and the Timing of this Disp. of Grace is that, My Father is about to END this ancient contention with His adversary and I want the adversary to know that I'm fully aware of that, and I'm going to live like its that time, right now! (in his FACE)

(and that's going to make me a target—when I put on that *armour of light* in this world of darkness, I'm going to stick out like a 'sore thumb'!)

- The sayings of the godly Thinking aren't primarily meant to create a sense of urgency (although they do on a secondary level) - but primarily they are meant to create a sense of enthusiasm that My Father is about to END all this darkness and DESTROY it all very soon, and I'm going to live like the reality of that is here right now!

... I'm not going to mingle myself with that darkness ...
I don't want anything to do with that stuff!

- And I say all this because—You’ll never *cast off the works of darkness, and put on the armour of light* if all you ever think about Time is: I might run out of it ... the disp. of grace might end ... I might die ...

- Now all of that is latent in this—but notice that God never says any of that one single time!

- That’s NOT what is supposed to be your primary thinking about Time!

- And that won’t be sufficient godly thinking to allow for you to make godly judgments in connection with Time and how you wisely use/spend it!

- The primary issue isn’t ‘urgency to get things done’ ... the primary issue is zeal/enthusiasm to *cast off the works of darkness and put on the armour of light, and walk honestly as in the day!* (to manifest to the adversary whose side you’re on because you know what’s going on!)

- You don’t have to look at this world and say, Well, that’s just the way it is! (**well, it won’t be that way long!**)

- And I don’t want to have a part in anything that the Lord is going to be shortly destroying! (that’s the kind of zeal and excitement you should be having right now as a “son”!)

- This is all about what God’s doing—and what God is going to do to Satan’s Plan of Evil and the course of this world—and your ability to participate in it—and your recognition that your Father is going to deal with this—and He’s going to deal with it soon—and you’re going to have a part in that—you’re going to live with Him & His Son and be ‘saved by his life’ as He does it ...

... and in light of that, you’re going to *cast off the works of darkness, and put on the armour of light!*

- If that’s your thinking then, let’s move on to the Godly Conduct & Behavior:

12 ... let us therefore cast off the works of darkness,

And the primary issue before us now is the issue of what it means to “*cast off*” the works of darkness.

- We now need to understand just what it means to *cast off the works of darkness* (as well as what it means to *put on the armour of light*).

- What do we do? and What kind of an impact are we making upon the adversary? (we've said that we're going to 'provoke' him) ... but how do we do that? (we're actually going to go on the 'offensive' & begin to take the battle to him) ... and we know that it's going to enrage/outrage him and produce a response that some day will end up with us undergoing "*the sufferings of Christ*".

- (all of which is going to have us '*waking honestly, as in the day*' with the knowledge of what is going on around us as far as the condition of this world and the Satanic PoE—and in general, the whole "*course of this world*" that the adversary has charted)

- So what is it that actually accomplishes that?

- Well—first of all, we have some intelligent understanding for just WHAT it is that we're going to be *casting off* = *the works of darkness* (the "*darkness*" of **Untruth!**) ... [which should tell you something about what the *armour of light* is going to be about = the "*light*" of **God's Truth!**]

- *12 The night is far spent, the day is at hand:*

- That's our godly Thinking regarding the Dispensational Timing of this Dispensation of Grace. (and there's a **whole lot** that goes into that godly Thinking!)

- And I think we've 'paused' at that colon long enough to get that godly Thinking—so we move on to the next phrase, which takes us to the 1st issue of the Godly Living (or Conduct & Behavior in view of that Godly Thinking).

- So in view of the godly Thinking (of the Disp. Timing of this Disp. of Grace)

12 ... let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light.

- "*let us therefore*" = the logical/natural/doctrinal/edificational/godly 'next step' and conclusion to the g. Think.

- And rather than giving us a staunch ‘command’ or ‘order’ as a Captain to a Private—we’re actually entreated as adult “sons” to take the godly Thinking and as the ‘natural, godly outlet’ for such godly Thinking—and the only ‘natural, godly conclusion’ to such godly Thinking (hence, the *therefore*—which is the only “*therefore*” in this 2nd Component to our *instruction of judgment*) and DEPLOY it (that godly thinking)

- It’s fascinating—the language here (even in its smallest detail) is of a Father to a son/daughter—and more than that, of a Father to a son/daughter, doing something (or in business) **TOGETHER!!!**

- Notice— “*let US therefore*” — implies on one level, the activity described is going to be done by all the saints in Rome (therefore, **all** of the members of the “*one body in Christ*” are to be engaged in this, individually, and **together** [and at the time in which the book of Romans was written, that included the apostle Paul as well]) ...

... on another level, since this is our Heavenly Father’s curriculum for our godly Sonship Education—we’re going to be doing this WITH our Father and with His Son, the Lord Jesus Christ! (Christ, in fact, was doing this very thing back in His earthly ministry in God’s prog/w/Isr.)

- In other words—our Father doesn’t just come along and tell us what to do—and then says, “Ok, you go and ‘cast off the works of darkness’ ... I’m going to watch TV (or vacation)! NO! He’s going to engage in this WITH **us!**

... one other fascinating thing—this is the very first time you are ever ‘called to arms’ (so to speak) - or ‘called to battle’ - and it’s amazing how God keeps the Father/son relationship in view—because when it comes time to ‘charge’ into battle, you’re not “ordered” to do so, you’re entreated to do so by that “*Let us therefore*” ... (**you don’t have to be ‘ordered’ if the godly Thinking has done its job!**)

- (we’ve encountered some “*let us*” expressions in the curriculum before this, but not when we were on the verge of going into **battle!**)

- So we have: *12 The night is far spent, the day is at hand:* (that's our godly Thinking in connection with the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace, and all that we've covered in connection with it) *let us therefore* (in view of that being true; and in view of the impact of that, and what it all means to us in our thinking) ***cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light.***

- By now we know some things about what *the works of darkness* are — so the things we're going to be *casting off* are things such as:

- Under the 'species' of that Great Prideful Thinking of the POL:

- *presumptuous, self-willed, arrogance, haughtiness, loftiness, being lifted-up*—that characterizes man in the evolutionary state of his ungodliness at this particular point in the progress of this D/o/G in which we live.

- And 'casting off' such things as in our list under the LOE/LOF ... (see list)

- Now—What does it mean to “*cast off*” those thing? What exactly are you doing? — and if you don't have an appreciation for what it means to *cast off the works of darkness*, then you won't understand/appreciate what it means to *put on the armour of light*. (because you're really dealing with things that are complete opposites of one another).

- You can talk about 'casting things off' in a whole bunch of ways—(just as you can think about 'putting things on' in a number of different ways).

- And when you think about both these things—*casting off* and *putting on* is most commonly thought about in the sense of clothing—(especially since we're told to *put on* some *armour*—which is something you put on your body) ...

... but the idea of *casting off* doesn't necessarily have to do with clothing at all.

- In fact, that's important to the context here in Romans 13—because the issue here is NOT that the Roman saints had some *works of darkness* that they had “put on”, and now had to be told to “cast them off” (such as you would do with a garment)!

- (in other words—the Romans didn't have these things “on” in the sense that they were committing these things and needed to ‘cast them off’.)

- Keep in mind that the overall **context** that we're dealing with here is A **POINT OF PROGRESS** IN OUR SONSHIP EDUCATION.

- In other words—(as we noted before) - this isn't just a re-hash or restatement of different terms of the basic issue of our walking consistent with our sanctified position “in Christ” — and therefore we're to “*let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof*” (Rom. 6:12) - which is commonly the way this gets handled most often! (that's NOT what's going on here!)

- Paul is NOT coming along here and treating the Roman saints (or you & me at this point in our Sonship Education) as if we are FULL of these things in our Conduct & Behavior!

- The issue of “*casting off*” therefore isn't the issue of saying STOP BEING _____, _____, _____
(everything in the list)

- So—that's what it's NOT—so now let's get a working definition for the expression “*cast off*” that has this particular context in view.

- In a context like this (where an education is in view—where, in view of something you have just learned) a good **working definition**:

***Cast off* = to repudiate and/or disown to the point of publically expressing ones distaste for, and refusal to be identified with, or associated with that which one casts off.**
(Keith Blades definition)

- Again—this is a context where an education is taking place—and you're now being exhorted to conduct yourself in a way that's consistent with something YOU'VE JUST LEARNED!

- (read definition again).

- And now let's just ‘plug in’ (for the last 5 words ‘*that which one casts off*’) **the works of darkness.**

- In other words—based upon our godly abhorrence/disdain for these *works of darkness*—*casting off the works of darkness* is going to consist of our refusing to be IDENTIFIED with them or ASSOCIATED with them...

... and therefore, whenever we encounter them or they confront us, we're going to make a **manifest repudiation** and **disowning** of those things!

... and not merely in private, but in PUBLIC as well!

- Working Definition of *putting on the armour of light*:

- When it comes to the issue of having *cast something off* and *putting something else on* instead—(that you WANT to be identified with—that you WANT to be associated with) then a working definition of that is ...

To “put on” = To adopt, to embrace, to accept, to own to the point of publically expressing ones love for, or desire to be identified with or associated with whatever one “puts on” in contrast with what one has “cast off” or that others “have on.”

- The issue is—our godly Con/Beh that comes out of, and corresponds with our godly Thinking (based upon our understanding of our Disp. Timing of this D/o/G) - and our thinking, therefore, of this D/o/G being sandwiched between *the night being far spent, and the day being at hand* — is one of making a **manifest repudiation** of the *works of darkness* of the adversary's *night* as we encounter them as we carry out our sonship lives in this world (as we 'walk' in this world).

- And it's by that manifest act on our part that the adversary realizes the effectual working of what our godly Thinking is regarding what his contention with our Father & His Son is all about—the adversary recognizes our 'conformity to the image of God's Son' and our Thinking **with** our Father on this issue.

- And that's what sends the 'signal' to the adversary that he's got the right to now bring his PoE personally to bear against us. (because this new aspect of our Father's business has him personally in view)!

- (by the way—before we get done with this passage, we’re going to look at a parallel-type thing that God did in His program w/Israel—where, by a manifest act on the part of the people of Israel in connection with some “*light*” that they possessed that stood in stark contrast to some “*darkness*” that existed in the world—by that overt act, they sent a signal to the adversary whereby he understood that he had the legal right to respond!)

- “*Casting off the works of darkness, and putting on the armour of light*” is kind of like uttering a BATTLE CRY!

- and we get to put on some *armour of light* so that we get the **protection** out of it—and can therefore continue to **function** with the *light* that we have the privilege of shining in the midst of the *darkness*—and to the exposure of those *works of darkness* for what they really are!

- (This makes a lot more sense out of some things the apostle Paul said to the Corinthians who were having problems in this area ...)

- 1 Corinthians 10:1-21

- 2 Corinthians 6 (:7), (:14-18)

- Run some passages that gives us God’s own definition (what HE means) when He talks about “*casting off*” in this kind of a context—so that we can appreciate what it means to *cast off* something in like manner.

- 2 Kings 23

- **Context:** Josiah is the king of the Northern Kingdom—(a rare exception of a good, honest, godly king—although his reign didn’t stop Israel from going through the courses of punishment) - and previous to this, the 5th CoP has already been announced as coming upon them & nothing was going to stop it)
— and even with Josiah’s good reign, God tells the NK that based upon what had gone on before, the 5th CoP was coming regardless.

- Therefore the 1st Install./5th CoP is what you’re dealing with here that has God sending Israel out of the land—they become the adversary’s ‘lawful captive’.

- God is going to focus upon the kind of judgments that will take place under the 1st Install.

- And He particularly focuses upon that fact that as He sends them out of the land—(just as He talked about previous to this), He tells them about a kind of ‘separation’ that’s going to take place between Him and the nation Israel.

- (back in Isaiah, He talked about giving her a ‘*bill of divorcement*’ and sending her away!)

- You need to be thinking about that kind of separation—because in essence, what’s going to be taking place; and the way in which things are going to look; and the way in which things are going to feel under this 1st Inst/5th CoP is that it’s as if God has **DISOWNED** them!

- God is going to actually make a **repudiation** of Israel! and almost a complete repudiation of His dealings with them! (**almost**, but **not** complete, of course; not total; not permanent) ...

... but it’s going to become so close to that—that’s what it’s going to have the appearance of! (in fact the Nations are going to perceive it to be just that—they’ll think that God has totally abandoned them!)

- So have this concept of DIVORCE and DISOWNING in mind here—and you’ll see that in that kind of a context, God is going to talk about *casting them off*!

(i.e., He expresses publically His distaste, and His disdain for what they have done to the point that He does not want to be identified with them, or associated with them—and He is, in essence, therefore expressing DISOWNERSHIP).

- (read) 2 Kings 23:21-27 (:27)

- (:27) = God does not want His “***name***” associated with Judah any longer! And He’s going to *remove them out of His sight*!

- Hosea 1:6-9 (and if you didn’t have what God said in :10ff, you would think that this is complete & permanent **disownership!**)
[but it’s not] - but that doesn’t mean that it’s not disownership in reality, because it is! (that’s ***casting off***) -
[Ezek. says He **physically** left & distanced Himself from them!]

- And although the expression “*cast off*” isn’t used here—the mechanics of ‘casting something off’ is clearly understood.

... (because the action the LORD takes here with Israel perfectly fits our working definition for ‘casting off’) - [see definition]

... (God doesn’t want His name associated with Israel & Jerusalem any longer!)

- And this is the ‘mechanics’ (if you will) of what you are doing when you *cast off the works of darkness*!

- *Casting off the works of darkness* isn’t merely separating yourself from them or ‘putting them away’ - (granted, that’s something you will do or have done from time to time in connection with sin and other things that are flat-out inconsistent with who you are “in Christ”) - but that can be done without necessarily having an attitude of disdain/disgust/abhorrence for that thing— [you can, for example, separate yourself or cast away something that you just don’t *need* any longer—but you’re not really disgusted with it at all—you don’t find it vile/repugnant] ...

... but when you *cast off* something in a context such as this (especially where *the works of darkness* are the things you are *casting off*) - the big issue is that there is a manifestation of repudiation and disownership! and you don’t want to be identified with it!

- And really, and simply put— the kind of *casting off* we’re dealing with in these passages and in Romans 13:12b, is the issue of: when you are confronted with *the works of darkness*, you are going to make it evident that you don’t want to be **identified** with that in any way, and you don’t want that to be **identified** with you!

- And where a *work of darkness* is concerned—this is not just a mental disapproval! ... rather it’s a mental abhorrence combined with an **overt action**—whether it’s expressed verbally or expressed by physically removing yourself from it (usually both). But the point is, it becomes noticeable, and it’s **designed** to be noticeable!

- And the men/women of this world who are the propagators of *the works of darkness* will notice (as well as the adversary)!

- Romans 13 actually lets you know what kind of overt activity you'll be engaging in—(13 ... **not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying.**) ... is that an OVERT ACT? YES!

- You are doing something (or in this case NOT doing, or **refusing** to do something) in more than just a mental way, but in an overtly physical way—a way that is SEEN by others that you are NOT participating in these things!

- And if it can be SEEN that you are NOT DOING IT—then that makes it OVERT!

- And that's what's going on here—you're making it so that someone who is **watching** you SEES something! and sees that you're NOT doing something that other people are!

- Isn't that what the whole issue is about when it comes to the issue of "*light*" and "*darkness*"?

- Isn't that what God told the Rem/Israel? Notice what the Lord said when they were first told by Him that they were "the light of the world" - and He told them that the Gentiles were going to SEE them and He recalled all those issues back to their mind—and notice what He said to them ...
(see Matthew 5:14!)

- A city on a "hill" is designed to be SEEN! someone is designed to take notice of it!

- In other words—**you're either doing something or NOT doing something for the purpose of someone else taking notice of it!**

- And we're going to identify some PARTICULAR works of darkness—NOT some '*thoughts*' of darkness — (and there's 6 of them we're immediately going to deal with) — and we're going to *cast those things off* (determined disownership) in our Conduct & Behavior. (we'll have NOTHING to do with them—because we know more than it's just sinful—but we **know** what the adversary is up to with these particular *works of darkness*!)

- And we're going to put that on display—NOT because we want the neighbor across the road to see it—but we want the adversary to see it!

- You can't *cast off the works of darkness, and put on the armour of light* without it being NOTICED!

- "light" is a 'manifestor' (so to speak) - it provides for people to "see" - to perceive—to recognize ...

- Let's note some other passages where the *casting off* issue is dealt with—and when it is, there is an overt act or action involved with it—(not merely a mental act).

- **2 Chronicles 10 & 11** - Context: the historical account (in the Chronicles) of the arrival of the 2nd CoP.

- In the previous chapters, you have the end of Solomon's reign as king of Israel—and now you have Jeroboam (1st king of the Northern Kingdom) come on the scene and Rehoboam (Solomon's son) who becomes the 1st king of the Southern Kingdom.

- God now 'breaks the pride of the power' of Israel into 2 pieces—Israel: the Northern Kingdom with Jeroboam as their king—and Judah: the Southern Kingdom with Rehoboam as their king.

- When God brought the 'breaking of the pride' of Israel to pass—and created the 2 kingdoms—you need to realize that this was a **severe issue**—and these 2 kingdoms are going to be at each other's throats—and a mutual repudiation is going to take place between them—and a mutual **disownership**!

- Hostility existed between them—to the point of even being willing to go to war with each other.

- Here we have an issue concerning the Levites that had been in the NK (with a greater number of the tribes & cities as had been set out for them in the law—[they don't have a land, they have cities and places in the tribes]) ...

... but in view of what took place in the NK under Jeroboam and the **idolatry** that was established there—they wanted to 'cast that off'—and Jeroboam & ones in the NK wanted to 'cast them off'!

- (read 10:15-19) = sets the stage for ch. 11

- note (:16) — description of the ‘mechanics’ (verbally + over action) of DETERMINED DISOWNERSHIP! (and determined refusal to be identified/associated with something any longer) - **refusing to have it make an impact upon them any longer.** (which, in this case is with Rehoboam and the 2 SK tribes)

- granted, the expression *cast off* isn’t used here—but it does come up in the next chapter.

- (read 11:13-15)

- (by the way :15—that what Jeroboam and the people of the NK are going to do)

- (:14) - *cast them off*—Jeroboam didn’t just dismiss the Levites ... he didn’t just ‘fire’ them - the made a public repudiation & disownership of them—no harmony, no ‘concord’ between them and what the people of the NK are going to do!

— the NK is going to have a completely distinct religious system (:15) - they’ll worship those calves & devils in the high places!

— and as far as the NK is concerned, there’s **no fellowship** between them and the SK!

- That’s the nature of the ‘overt act’ that *cast off* is dealing with in a context such as in Romans 13:12.

- (other mentions of ‘casting off’):

- Job 15:4; Psa. 43:2; Psa. 44:9; Psa. 60:1, 10; Psa. 74:1; Psa. 77:7-9; Psa. 94:14;

- **Hosea 8**

- Here you are in the 5th CoP—and as we saw in Ch. 1 the mechanics of God ‘casting off’ Jerusalem and the disownership aspect of that ...

- Here you have God talking about apostate Israel and all of the sound doctrine He gave them & taught them (especially at the beginning of the 5th CoP through all those prophets—but they ‘cast off’ all that sound, corrective doctrine—and by their *presumptuousness, self-will, arrogance, haughtiness, loftiness, and being lifted up*, they didn’t want any of it! and therefore, the 5th CoP had to come!)

- (read :1-4) - The issue is— “Israel, you’re the one responsible for this whole thing, yourself! I gave you that *good thing* whereby you could have been reformed—but you ‘*cast it off*’!

(:3) *Israel hath **cast off** the thing that is good: (hence) the enemy shall pursue him.*

- By means of Israel’s PRIDE OF LIFE and that **Great** Prideful Thinking—and all those features in that list) - Israel “would not hear”! ... and by that Great Prideful Thinking, apostate Israel preferred the Darkness of Untruth rather than the Light of God’s Truth...

... they ‘*cast off*’ and repudiated the very methodology God established for the fundamental relationship He was to have with man on this earth. — they DISOWNED God’s word to them!

- And even though this is the opposite of what we’re going to be ‘casting off’ - the concept of what it means to ‘cast something off’ is nevertheless clear.

- And in Romans 13, when we’re going to *cast off the works of darkness*—it’s a *casting off* in the sense of repudiating and disowning in a manifest, overt way—declaring that you want **NO ASSOCIATION** with those *works of darkness*—and you want **NO IDENTIFICATION** with those things whatsoever!

- Now the main reason for you to *cast off the works of darkness* is NOT simply because these things are ‘inconsistent’ with who you are “in Christ” (although that is absolutely true) - but the main purpose for you doing this right at this particular point in your Sonship Education is that you have now gained some information and some skill-sets that makes it so that you can now enter in to this new aspect of your Father’s business—which involves personally dealing with the adversary and his Policy of Evil—which means that for the first time in our lives as members of the new creature of the church, the body of Christ, we are now beginning to do some godly ‘soldiering’!

- In other words—it’s one thing to **not** walk in a manner that is ‘inconsistent’ with who your are “in Christ” - it’s another thing to make a specific & designed **impact** upon the adversary (as the Power of Darkness) and upon his *works of darkness* ... and walking *as in the day* when God will shortly judge & destroy his Policy/Plan of Evil (in his FACE)!

- The issue is to make a **bold, overt stand** against *the works of darkness* in all 3 Categories (LOF/LOE/POL).

- And when the circumstances present themselves in the details of our lives where we perceive/recognize that we are in a position where if we didn't say or do anything, it would mean that those around us would conclude that (if we didn't say/do something), they would conclude that we go along with the *works of darkness*, or we accept them; or tolerate them; or agree with them; or we can cooperate with them; or live in harmony with them; or we can conform to them ...

... in other words, that our **name** would be associated with them—we therefore are going to boldly & overtly **disown** those things and **disassociate** ourselves with them! (we're going to *cast them off*)!

- And then—we're going to *put on the armour of light*—that is, we're going to make it known that there **are** some things (viz., the Light of God's Truth/word) that we DO want to be identified with & associated with, and when our name is thought of, people will recognize that we stand for that 'light' instead of that 'darkness' of untruth!

- And I say that because **the 2 things go together** (you can't *cast off the works of darkness* without at the exact same time *putting on the armour of light*)!

- And this overt act is going to make an **impact**—it's designed to make an **impact**—and it's designed to **influence**!

- (have an influence upon the adversary, primarily—but also upon others—others around us; others in our local assembly; other in other local assemblies; and also upon the unsaved population in general in the locales in which we live).

- (hopefully a positive impact/influence; but most probably a negative one—in fact, we should expect a negative one!) [a negative one that attempts to dim our 'light']

- Any questions/problems/comments about *casting off the works of darkness*?

- Let's move on to *putting on the armour of light*.

- Working Definition:

To **"put on"** = To adopt, to embrace, to accept, to own to the point of publically expressing ones love for, or desire to be identified with or associated with whatever one **"puts on"** in contrast with what one has **"cast off"** or that others **"have on."**

To **"put on"** = To adopt, to embrace, to accept, to own to the point of publically expressing ones love for, or desire to be identified with or associated with **the truth of God's word in contrast to the untruth of the works of darkness.**

- And you really should now know what it means to **put on** in the sense and in the context of *putting on the armour of light*.

- Because of the nature of what it means & what you're doing when you *cast off* something (based upon your godly disdain for it) - the expectation is that because there is something you disdain; it stands to reason that there's something else that you have great respect for; or something else that you HIGHLY ESTEEM; there's something else that you, therefore, LOVE!

- The expectation is that the thing you have regard for; and have great respect for; and are highly impressed with; and have great LOVE for—that just as you overtly make it known that you want nothing to do with the things you disdain; you want it **overtly known** that you WANT to be associated with this other thing; you WANT to be identified with this other thing; you WANT people to think about you in connection with this, and not that!

- The issue is that you are now becoming a godly man/woman of PRINCIPLE (so to speak).

- Truth is—the only way you're going to make it overtly known 'where you stand' is NOT only by what you *'cast off'* but by what you also *'put on'* (or what you're going to be **loyal to**, or **true to**)! (that gives the full picture—no misunderstanding concerning yourself)

- (again, these 2 concepts GO TOGETHER!) they're designed to work together

- When you *cast off*—when you renounce, disown, disdain, disassociate, repudiate the *works of darkness* for what they are—at the exact same time, you ‘fill in the vacuum’ by you pushing those things away from yourself with the *light of God’s truth* (these are the things I want to be identified with!) (these are the things I love & embrace).

- This *light of God’s truth* is the thing I want others to see I’ve **put on** (in the sense of being ‘clothed’ with it)!

- And although I’ve said (and it is true) that this isn’t just a re-hash or a review of our sanctified position “in Christ” - the truth is, it IS related to it! (**but it’s a huge advance of that issue**)

- When you *put something on* in a context like Romans 13:12—you’re making an overt manifestation of your acceptance and adoption of those things that are TRUE to who you are IDENTITY-WISE! (but **not** as just in the beginning stages of knowing who you are identity-wise as back in Romans 6-8:13—but now with a great deal of Level I Sonship Education under your belt!)

- And I bring this up because this whole concept is really something that you are already somewhat familiar with—but this is an **advancement** upon that basic concept—and it’s an advancement because you’re now not just going to recognize sin in general as something ‘inconsistent’ with who you are “in Christ” - but now you’re able to recognize certain sins as the works of darkness that they are—PLUS you now have godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for those things—and that puts you in a position of some more advanced *conformity to the image of God’s Son* whereby you’re more and more ‘Like Father, like son’ having now had your ‘heart enlarged’ to where your Father’s whole ‘heart’ and your ‘heart’ are getting closer and closer! (godly sentiment) [by means of the curriculum/doctrine in Rom. 12:3-13:11 doing its effectual work within you.]

- We started out in the doctrine of our Sanctified Position “in Christ” with a heavy emphasis upon our IDENTITY (baptism) “in Christ” - and what it means to be *dead to sin, and alive unto God*—and we had to *reckon* ourselves to be that—and to *walk* consistent with that in the details of our lives.

- And at this point—some things that are true to our identity in Christ are being spoken about—but NOT being spoken about in a general way—but in a very **particular** way!

- And the issue here is that when we *put on the armour of light*, we are making an overt acknowledgement (and manifestation by our Conduct & Behaviour) that those *works of darkness* have nothing to do with our identity in Christ—and nothing to do with who we are in Christ—(**not just in general**, sanctification-wise), but in particular now at this particular point in our *conformity to the image of God's Son*—especially with our new-found knowledge of the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace!

... i.e., in view of the effectual working of “*the night is far spent, the day is at hand*”!!!!!!!

- Again—this isn't a restatement of our sanctified position in Christ, this is a **HUGE ADVANCEMENT** upon our **identity** in Christ!

- And we're now able to do something with our identity in Christ that we **COULD NOT DO** back in Romans 6-8:13
... where before, we could only look at these *works of darkness* as sins inconsistent with our identity in Christ ...
we are now going to be an **EXPOSER** (*light*) OF THOSE THINGS and an **ENLIGHTENER** for what those things really are to the adversary and his Plan of Evil!

- The issue of *putting on* here is compatible with the general issue of Conduct & Behavior that is consistent with your sanctified identity in Christ—but it's the **PARTICULAR** and **MORE ADVANCED** issue of *putting on the armour of light* in view of the fact that your identity with Christ in this particular *conformity with to His image* is that you are thinking the very same way He is about the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace and about His contention with the adversary as the Power of Darkness utilizing his works of darkness to achieve his goals for his Plan of Evil!

... and you are going to put on display your intelligent understanding of THAT!

... and you're going to walk in the details of your life in line with THAT! (you're going to make THAT evident in your Conduct & Behavior with godly judgment!)

- Let's look at an example of what I'm talking about here —

- Now, even though we don't have the expression "*put on*" utilized in Romans back in chapter 6:1-8:13 (in fact, this is the first time the word "*put*" occurs in the book of Romans) ... however, it **does** come up later on when Paul has reason to look back and encapsulate all the doctrine regarding our general sanctification.

- **Galatians 3** - (context): Here the Galatians have been having problems with their Sonship Education—and Paul has reason to deal with their justification unto eternal life and their sanctification unto functional life, and their exaltation regarding being the "new creature" of the church, the body of Christ—and he puts all that into one big encapsulated package and brings it all together here in Gal. chapter 3.

- And when he does that, he's going to use the expression "*put on*" and remind us that we have *put on* the Lord Jesus Christ.

- (read :26-29)

- (read :27 again), you have that expression "*put on Christ*"

- **Remember**: a ***baptism*** = a Purification unto Sanctification resulting in a NEW IDENTITY.

- (and this *baptism* harkens back to the baptism spoken about back in Romans 6—and we were taught there that God not only justified us unto eternal life by the Redemption that the Lord Jesus Christ provided for us — but when we trusted the Lord Jesus Christ as our only and all-sufficient Savior we also have been sanctified unto functional life).

- And that sanctification was accomplished by the Holy Spirit (the 3rd Member of the Godhead) baptizing us into Christ's death, burial, and resurrection.

- (It has nothing to do with water—and it has nothing to do with being "baptized WITH the Holy Ghost" as per Acts 1:5, or being "filled with the Holy Ghost" as per Acts 2!)

- No believer in Christ today is ever “baptized with the Holy Ghost”! - that is, baptized by the 2nd Member of the Godhead into the 3rd Member of the Godhead! — rather, you are baptized by the 3rd Member of the Godhead into the 2nd Member of the Godhead! ... and it’s NOT done at some time after you get saved (as a “second blessing”), rather it’s accomplished at the exact moment you believed in Christ!

- And so we assumed, therefore, and acquired THE SAME IDENTITY of the Lord Jesus Christ in connection with SIN!

- (just as described in Romans 6:1-10)

- And then Romans 6:11 puts the whole doctrine together when it says, *Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord.* —

— and by that act of *reckoning* the reality of that—we are to recognize that the Identity of the Lord Jesus Christ in connection with sin as described in those previous verses, (having been *baptized* by the Holy Spirit INTO Christ Jesus [not into water]) ... the issue is that our baptism into Christ that God Himself performed [not man] - the issue is that it made it so that in accordance with all ‘baptisms’, it was designed to provide for us to have a cleansing and a purification unto a sanctification that resulted in a brand new IDENTITY! (and that’s exactly what we possess & became possessors of)!

- And with sin’s mastership in our lives now broken—and having acquired (by the cross work of the LJC) functional life unto God in righteousness with the capacity to have our “members” be “members of righteousness” that can bring forth “fruit unto holiness” - the issue is to recognize the reality of that—THAT’S TRUE OF US!

- (That’s our new **Identity!**)

- And the issue is that the “old man” is no longer our identity—we don’t put that guy on—we are to recognize that the “old man” has been crucified with Christ *that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin*—and we are to recognize that the old man is no longer who we are identity-wise “in Christ” ...

... and we are to *put on* (even though the expression isn't used there) but we are to put our new identity "in Christ" on.

- And from that point on, we're supposed to walk consistent with our new Identity in Christ.

- But according to Paul in Galatians 3:27, we **really did** *put on Christ* when we did that—that IS our identity in Christ in TRUTH! (in summary form, what we did back in Romans 6:1ff, is that we really did *put on Christ*!)

- But because we have gone through the whole book of Romans by the time you get here—our Sonship Education also taught us that not only did we *put on Christ* individually, (we have a brand new identity in Christ individually) — but according to Romans 12:3-16 we were taught that we now have a brand new identity COLLECTIVELY (as *one body in Christ, and every one members on of another*)!

- And our identity changed even further—we not only received a personal change of identity, but we received a collective change of identity!

- (read :28) - we have a brand new **collective identity** with every other believer in this dispensation of grace!

- All those former identity type features/characteristics with respect to us as individuals, having now become a brand new collective entity of the new creature, the church, the body of Christ—all those human, individual identity type features MEAN NOTHING! and have nothing to do now with who we are in the new creature of the church, the body of Christ (identity-wise)!

- The point is—all that was a "putting on" issue—although it was more general & fundamental than in Romans 13:12 ... but it IS something you should be familiar with.

- And even in Romans 13:12, you are 'putting on' something that is in connection with your proper and your real IDENTITY!

- And in view of that—you're going to have a Conduct & Behavior that is consistent with that identity!

- So...

- In connection with our personal sanctification of being made *dead to sin, and alive unto God* in righteousness—our Con. & Beh. is one of: *Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body that ye should obey it in the lists thereof.* (Rom. 6:12)

- And when it comes to the issue of our collective new identity in the body of Christ (and there being no *Jew/Greek, bond/free, male/female—by one Spirit we're all baptized into one body*) — our Con. & Beh. one with another ought to be reflective of that one identity—and we are not to deal with one another with ‘high mindedness’ *but condescend to men of low estate, not being wise in your own conceits.* (Rom. 12:16)

[i.e., not with one member being more important than another because of some individual identity type feature]

- And now—as properly educated/edified “sons” of our Heavenly Father—we are now going to ‘put on’ something in our godly Living (Con. & Beh.) **because it is TRUE to our identity** as “sons” who **are intelligently aware of the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace!**

- This ‘*putting on*’ is not the general issue of walking consistent with our sanctified identity in Christ—but here, we’re ‘*putting on*’ something in a very particular (and much more advanced) way!

- Therefore—when it comes to the issue of “*putting on*” Conduct & Behavior-wise — by the time you get to Romans 13:12 when you’re told to ***put on the armour of light***—the issue of “*putting on*” **isn’t a new concept**—because in connection with sanctification in general, you have already been ‘*putting on*’ Christ all along ...

... that is, you’ve already been overtly expressing your desire to be identified with and associated with who God has made you to be “in Christ” - that new IDENTITY you now have, being “*baptized into Christ*” & walking consistent with it.

- BUT—in the context of Romans 13:12—you have now **advanced** in your godly sanctification & sonship edification - and you have been *conformed to the image of God’s Son* (not in general way, but in some real **DETAIL**—in the exacting details of your life)!

- And the more advanced, more detailed way of 'putting on' here is specifically and particularly dealing with the conformity to the image of Christ that has taken place by means of this 2nd Component of Godly Judgment—and even more specifically, the 'putting on' is the natural resulting Conduct & Behavior in direct connection with the Godly Thinking of those sonship sayings of (:11-12a) - and even more specifically, with that last saying of the Godly Thinking of (:12a), *The night is far spent, the day is at hand*: (i.e., the effectual working of the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace!)

- Truth is—as points of attainment are reached in the sonship curriculum, it's not at all surprising to find this issue of 'putting on' come up repeatedly! [and it does]

- **Therefore**: with intelligent understanding and appreciation for the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace—our appropriate godly Conduct & Behavior is to be doing TWO things at the exact same time:

1) *cast off the works of darkness*—by intelligently understanding what those *works of darkness* are—and with the godly hatred/disdain/abhorrence/disgust for them that our Father Himself has effectually operating within us—we are going to overtly manifest our repudiation and disownership of them, and refuse to be identified with or associated with those *works of darkness*. (because we know what the adversary is up to—that is, what he is accomplishing by his use of those things in connection with his Plan/Policy of Evil)

- and at the exact same time we will be ...

2) *putting on the armour of light*—we will openly, boldly, and overtly express & declare the Truth of God's word in order to be an expositor & enlightener of the adversary's *works of darkness*—and make evident our love for; our desire to be identified & associated with the Truth of God's word in contrast to the untruth of *the works of darkness*.

- and that's the appropriate measure of our godly Con. & Beh. in view of our godly Thinking about the Disp. Timing of this Disp. of Grace!

- Basically—our awareness of this battle that the Lord is waging with the adversary has now gripped our heart—and we’re going to boldly declare that we’re on the Lord’s side in it—because His “*day*” is now “*at hand*” - and we want to manifest the fact that we are looking forward to the time in which He will have His day when He will bring judgment to all those *works of darkness* and put an **end** to them!

- That’s the general issue in *casting off the works of darkness and putting on the armour of light*. (we’ll get some more detail later on)

- Now I want to shift gears just a little bit at this point—and the next wisest thing to do here is to focus our attention upon the kind of **IMACT** and the kind of **INFLUENCE** we will make by our godly **Conduct & Behavior**.

- And first & foremost—we need to understand & appreciate that this impact/influence, (while we hope will be a positive one, and in some cases it may be) - but we need to recognize and expect that for the majority of the time, it is going to have a **NEGATIVE** impact & negative influence!

- In other words—it’s **NOT** going to make the people of the world at-large happy ... and more to the point, we’re **NOT** going to make the adversary happy! (rather, we’re going to **provoke** him!)

- And a battle is going to get underway—which is why the *light* is called the **armour** of light! (you don’t need armour unless you are going to enter in to a situation where you are going to expect to be attacked!) [you’re making a declaration of war at this point!]

- And in a sense—your *light* of God’s Truth is the offense in this battle—but the *armour of light* isn’t composed simply of offensive weaponry, but it’s also got some defensive capability as well.

- And before we finish Ch. 13, we’re going to learn about some of the defensive capacity of the *armour of light* so that we can **withstand** the opposition of the adversary!

- So for now—let’s focus a bit on just how it is that the adversary is able to & going to respond and oppose us in this battle (at this point).

(note to self):

At this point we reviewed Romans 8:35-37 from previous notes.

- (Romans 8—pages 1140-1173 [selected issues, not a re-teaching of all information on all pages])
 - Also reviewed Proverbs 2:10-17 & Proverbs 4:10-14.
 - Also reviewed the *evil men* from Romans 8, pg. 1168-1173
-

- Next issue: Performing a particular ‘gesture’ that sends the SIGNAL to the adversary that he has the right to bring his Policy of Evil to bear against us and oppose us.

- And which takes place with us in this disp. of grace at the point in our sonship education/edification at Romans 13:12b-13 — (when you’ve responded Positively & Properly to it).
[and you begin to experience the activities of those *evil men*]

- Let’s look at the **reality** of the fact that when such Conduct & Behavior begins to be performed (as Rom. 13:12b-13 describes) - that just such a SIGNAL really is sent to the adversary—and it was something that existed in Israel’s “Time Past” portion of God’s program with them; it will be performed by the Remnant “sons” in the final installment to their program—and it’s something that occurs with us as “sons” in this disp. of grace.

- First—let’s look at this overt act that God had the members of the nation Israel perform back in their “Time Past” program.

- Deut. 4 (talk about the context)

- There was a point in which God made the nation aware of the fact that Israel was going to be “the light of the world” and “the salt of the earth”.

- And the Gentile Nations were going to get the “light” of the truth of Jehovah as the True & Living God—and also they were going to get the “salt” and develop an appetite for what Israel had (spiritual food).

- And later on, God will have reason to bring this issue up once again, and when He does, He begins to describe the mechanical means by which Israel was going to function as that “light of the world and salt of the earth.”

- And within the context in which He describes that—we will see that as soon as God described to Israel the mechanical means by which they would begin to function as “the light of the world” - that once they began to shine that “light” **they could expect TROUBLE!**

- Because **the shining of the “light” of God’s Truth in the midst of the adversary’s “darkness” of Untruth—when that shining of light is something that is precipitated by an action of God through His people—that shining of light is legally able to be received, and is supposed to be received (it’s purposed & designed to be received) by the adversary as a Signal to him—that gives him the legal right to start to respond!**

- and God explained that, and made that clear to Israel!

- (that’s what I mean when I talk about this “signal” that is given to the adversary by our gesture of *casting off the works of darkness, and putting on the armour of light.*)

- That’s all according to the ‘rules of engagement’ in God’s contention with the adversary—and that’s true in BOTH programs! (when that “light” of God’s truth reproves & exposes Satan’s “works of darkness” by an overt act of God’s people).

- We’re going to look at a passage where God is going to have Israel perform an overt act that “turns on their light” ... and then *trouble* will follow!

- (The “SIGNAL” in Israel’s “Time Past” portion)
- Deut. 4:1-8
- Deut. 11:18-32
- Deut. 27:1-13
 - (fulfilled in Josh. 8:30-35)
- Deut. 13:1-13 (:13)!

- There was some ‘Light’ of God’s Truth that God designed to be “seen” and “heard”! - and that was true with Israel, and it’s true with us today!

- And the truth is—when it comes to Satan and his cohorts—none of them can know/perceive how the effectual working of God’s word (and the sonship education) is going by reading our mind—because they don’t have the capacity to do that—they don’t have the capacity to “search our hearts” !

- The only way they know what’s going on is **by the corresponding godly Conduct & Behavior, and the corresponding participation in Laboring with the Father in His business!**

- That’s how they know how successful the effectual working of our Sonship Education is going with us—and what kind of achievements/attainments and gains are being made and what kind of skills are being acquired.

- They know what the basic capacities are that the Sonship Education has—but as far as knowing what is actually taking place within us to gain/acquire those capacities, they have to depend upon the godly Cond/Beh. and the godly Labor component (that comes from the godly Thinking) in order to determine those things!

- In other words—they depend upon what they can SEE and what they can HEAR!

- (The “SIGNAL” in Israel’s “To Come” portion)

- A particular ‘signal’ designed to be “seen” and “heard” - a signal designed to be SENT and to be RECEIVED!

- The Rem/Isr. will come to a particular point at which they will begin to operate as the “light of the world” - and a signal will be sent to the adversary, and they will have to deal with him & his PoE against them.

- (it won’t take place right away—and just like us, after they have come to a particular point of attainment in their sonship edu., then the adversary earns the right to begin to oppose them).

- Hebrews 5

- Look at what takes place with the Rem/Isr in their Sonship Education that leads up to the ‘signal’ being sent.

- Possibly Hebrews-1Peter = Level I?

- By this time, the Rem. already has their 'basics' - (Son. Orient./ Son. Establ./ and with Wisdom/Justice — their 1st level of 'perfection' is now on the doorstep).

- (:5-10) = their next form of doctrine (or block of instruction) in their godly Sonship Education.

- (:11-14) - A problem exists with the Rem/Isr—one that occurred when the book of Hebrews was written (in the period of time when Israel was “diminishing” in the closing chapters of the book of Acts—**AND a parallel situation** will occur with the Rem in the 'lag' time leading up to Satan having his 'finest hour.')

- And the problem they will be experiencing will be this “dullness of hearing” = a desire to go along with the vain, apostate, religious nation.

- (they've been affected by what's going on around them!)

... and because of that, they need a 'refresher course'!

- (:12)

- (:13) - they're going to need this particular “skill” in the “word of righteousness” - (which includes their instruction of Wisdom & Justice!)

- (:14) - “full age” = **not** their ultimate maturity, but the 'fulfillment' of the age they are at in Level I, Sonship Education.

- “senses exercised” = in that “word of righteousness” (i.e., in the Wisdom, Justice, and the 'discretion' that comes from it PLUS the 1st Part of Judgment)

- “to discern both good and evil” = (point of attainment)

- (Note: Hebrews does not contain the “strong meat”!)

- Heb. 6:1-3 (read)

- For now, just note that issue of “going on unto perfection” - that's what this information/doctrine is going to provide for: for the Rem to “GO ON unto perfection”!

... while we're here ... let's read on

- (:4-6) — a passage that gets mishandled, misapplied, misunderstood, and basically mangled by Bible teachers into some really corrupted doctrine: (that you can lose your salvation/justification)!

- This passage is impossible to properly understand & properly handle IF YOU DO NOT “RIGHTLY DIVIDE THE WORD OF TRUTH”!!!

- By the way—if this teaches that you can lose your salvation, then it also teaches that it is **impossible** to ever be saved again! — (Note: “impossible for those once enlightened”... “If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance”)

- This is NOT talking about anyone who is saved/justified in the first place! ... this is talking about the unsaved, unjustified members of Israel's Vain, Religious System!

- Plus, this is in a particular context that has in view the period of time, called by Peter “repentance to Israel”!

- Which is a period of time that existed just before God suspended His prog. w/Isr and brought in this disp. of Grace and will exist for a short period of time just after this disp. of grace ends!

- So—the things described here CANNOT happen to you unless: 1) You are an unsaved/unjustified member of the vain, religious system of Israel; and 2) You are living in the short period of time just after this disp. of grace ends!

- In other words—it's IMPOSSIBLE for the things described here to happen to anyone today!

- (:4-5 again) - That is exactly what the Nation DID experience—when? when “repentance to Israel” was offered in the opening chapters of the book of Acts!

- And that's what the Nation will experiencing again when “repentance to Israel” is offered during that opening portion of the resuming of their program! (that ‘lag time’)

- (:4 *For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened*)
 ... they were/will be “enlightened” by the gospel of the kingdom!

- (... *and have tasted of the heavenly gift,*)
 ... they will ‘taste of the heavenly gift’ through the knowledge that Jesus of Nazareth is the Christ/Messiah!

- (... *and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost*)
 ... (by the way, it’s “Holy Ghost” not “Holy Spirit” - the PERSON of the 3rd Member of the Godhead is being focused upon here because the whole issue for the nation Israel is that they have rejected God the Father (the 1st Member of the Godhead); they have now rejected the 2nd Member of the Godhead, God the Son—and now, in the time of “repentance to Israel” it’s the 3rd Member of the Godhead making His appeal to them, and when He gets rejected, the next thing to happen to them is to incur the **wrath** of God!

... but, they will be “made partakers of the Holy Ghost” through the convicting ministry that is spoken about by the Lord Jesus Christ that would come upon them as He describes back in John 16 — plus you can add to that, that they were made “partakers of the Holy Ghost” in connection with the power that comes upon them by the Rem being baptized with the Holy Ghost and the ministry of that ...

... in other words, they were made “partakers” of all of the Holy Ghost’s testimony during the time of “Repentance to Israel” concerning the reality of Jesus of Nazareth being the Christ.

- (:5 *And have tasted the good word of God,*)
 ... which is the doctrine that is designed to expose all of the vanity of their apostate religious system (from Peter, James, John, et al)

- (... *and the powers of the world to come,*)
 ... which were the powerful signs of the kingdom to come that provided for the confirming signs of the reality of the kingdom being ‘at hand’. (Peter et al, healing/casting out unclean spirits/speaking in tongues, etc.)

- That entire package of things listed in (:4-5) was given to, and designed to get the people of the nation of Israel to change their mind (repent!) — and those unsaved, unjustified members of the vain, apostate nation partake of that; and they taste of all that; they've experienced the reality of it all.

- And they historically did that as recorded in the opening chapters of the book of Acts—which is the perspective of the epistle of Hebrews at the point in which it was originally (or historically) written.

... and when Israel's program resumes—they'll go through that exact same issue again as Repentance is offered to them just before the Lord's Day of Wrath begins.

- (:6 *If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; ...*)

... and here there issue is that the members of the Rem are going to endeavor to keep 'renewing' the people of Israel 'unto repentance' and to continue to offer repentance to Israel again—and that will be to their own detriment—because in doing so, they will NOT be 'going on unto perfection' — and they're NOT disassociating themselves from that vain, religious system—and they're endangering their ability to be counted worthy to escape all those things that transpire; and they're endangering their ability to be rewarded in that kingdom ...

... and so they're exhorted to NOT lay that foundation again; rather to go on unto perfection and to realize that's exactly what God wants them to do, because He's now declaring that it's IMPOSSIBLE to renew those people again unto repentance!

- (:6 *If they shall fall away, ...*)

... and that's exactly what the unsaved, unjustified, vain, religious, apostate members of the Nation Israel did (and will do) - they fell away from every attempt that the Holy Ghost made (through the remnant & remnant apostles) to change their mind about Jesus of Nazareth being their Christ.

- (*[it is impossible]... to renew them again unto repentance;*)
... WHY?

- (:6 ... seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.)

... the unsaved, unjustified, apostate nation crucified Him when they rejected Him the first time—and now, in their rejection of Him during the extension of forbearance & mercy (or Repentance to Israel), they crucify Him afresh—but notice carefully the wording, “they crucify **TO THEMSELVES** the Son of God afresh” - that is, after the Lord was offered the 1st time, they rejected Him and crucified Him ...

... and now, in the time of Repentance to Israel, based upon the work of the Holy Ghost, they reject the Son of God again, and ‘crucify Him afresh TO THEMSELVES — in other words, if He was physically on this earth again, they would crucify Him all over again—but since He’s not, they can at least crucify Him TO THEMSELVES!

... and that’s exactly how God looks at their rejection of Jesus of Nazareth being their Christ & Savior during the time of Repentance to Israel!

... And so by putting Christ to “an open shame” - God then responds to that issue by cutting off the opportunity for them to change their minds! (hello, Day of Wrath)

- And historically, that all took place in the opening chapters of the book of Acts—and it will historically take place again when God resumes His program w/Isr. (Heb-Rev).

- And that’s what this passage is talking about—it has nothing to do with what is going on in this disp. of grace at all—and it is describing what **was** going on (and what **will** be going on) **ONLY** during the time in which Repentance was given to Israel, and when that repentance **was** SPURNED by the apostate, vain, religious Nation ... and it **will** apply **ONLY** again when Repentance to Israel (following this disp. of grace) is once again offered and been SPURNED once more!

- (back to the ‘Signal’ in Israel’s “To Come” portion of their program)

- Hebrews 12 - (exhortation/motivation to “GO ON” to the level of “perfection” that their Level I Sonship Education calls for—they now have the ability/capacity to “RUN”)

- (:1-2) - (:1) “*cloud of witnesses*” = That’s who those folks in chapter 11 are: ... *witnesses* to them (to the members of the Rem/Isr).
 - The *great cloud of witnesses* to these members of the remnant is the issue concerning the capacity of the doctrine to work within them to produce stability and encouragement and the capacity to ‘go on’ and to endure and to obtain the good report—just as those in ch. 11 did!

- (:1) “*the sin which doth so easily beset us,*” - Who is the “us”?

= *the sin which doth so easily beset* these Rem. members is the issue of being wooed back into that temple situation and not hold fast to their profession concerning Christ’s High Priestly Office — and to go back to offering sacrifices and things like that — and when you understand how strong that temptation is for them, and how easily beset they can be with that — and that it would be a sin for them to do that very thing — then you realize why the things that are set forth back in chapters 5-10 are what they are, in the details that they are, and with the exhortation and encouragement that is given to them with respect to the Melchisedecian priesthood of Christ.

- Simply put—it’s the issue of going back into that vain, religious system!

- (:3-6) - (:5-6 — comes from Proverbs 3—the Exhortation of the Father to the son in connection with *the instruction of Wisdom!*)

- And there will come a point at which the son is likely to BALK in connection with it!

- Hebrews 13

- (:1) - Note: *Let ... continue* = they’ve already GOT it! (and they’re on the verge of getting that “skill” of being *skillful in the word of righteousness!*)

- (:2-7) - (pay attention to the terminology—they've got Wisdom, and Justice is underway and nearly completed)
- (:4) - "God will judge" = the Day of the Lord's Wrath
- (:20-21A) - "perfect" - no more 'dullness of hearing' — they've been given the sound doctrine for them to GO ON!
- (:21B-22) - this is just the BEGINNING! ... now they need James doctrine!

- JAMES

- In James, they will get their *instruction of Judgment* going—and as they do, they are going to get some opposition ... in 3 major areas:

- Chapter 1 = Opposition from their own selves! (as their own worst enemy—their sin nature)
- Chapter 2 & 3 = Opposition from the world at-large (from the world around them)
- Chapter 4 = Opposition from some men in the world at-large who are the agents of the Adversary.
(James brings up the adversary because they are at the point of functioning as *the light of the world*—and the adversary is going to attempt to put that light out!)
- (1:1-3) - They have a 'more than conqueror' concept in their curriculum for Sonship Education, too.
- (:4-8) - corresponds to Proverbs 4:7 (see Pro. 4:1-9, **[:5 and :7]**)
- It makes sense that as the Rem has gotten their instruction of godly Wisdom & Justice—and are now getting their instruction of godly Judgment that (just like with us), that's when their sanctified, functional life as "sons" really begins to SHINE (light of the world)...

... it makes sense that it would be at this point where you would expect to find some doctrine concerning the way in which the Mem/Rem/Isr are going to be perceived by the men of this world—or as they appear in the eyes of men ... and lo, and behold, that's exactly what you do find! (see James 2:14-26)!

- (note to Self: at this point we covered the material in “Kinds of Justification & Salvation in the Bible—pgs. 5-11)

- Again—the Mem/Rem/Isr (in their sonship education) also come to a point of attainment when they have gotten their *instruction of godly Wisdom & Justice*—and then in getting their *instruction of godly Judgment*, they come to a point of ability/capacity/attainment to function as “*the light of the world*” - and as they shine the ‘light’ of God’s Truth in the world of the ‘darkness’ of Untruth—they send a ‘Signal’ to the adversary (something ‘seen’ and ‘heard’ - an overt act/action) - and the adversary knows that he has earned the right to oppose them by means of his PoE (*evil men*).

- And my understanding is that James is where the Mem/Rem get their *instruction of godly Judgment* underway.

- And there’s a bunch of ‘connections’ you can make between the way the book of Hebrews ends; the way in which the book of James opens up—and the quotations that are made from the book of Proverbs—that all added up, indicate just where the Rem/Isr is, edification-wise, as they get the doctrine contained in the book of James.

- (read again James 1:5-8)

- The issue here is that God the Father (through James) is making sure that they’ve GOT THAT WISDOM (because, just as it says back in the Sonship Checkpoint of Prov. 4:7—*Wisdom is the principle thing; therefore get wisdom: and with all thy getting get understanding.*) ...

... that Checkpoint says: the Wisdom is the ‘prince’ (or ruler or governor of all your thinking) - and with that you are to get the *understanding*—which is getting the Wisdom plus the Justice, and the DISCRETION that comes from it—because you’re now going to have to ‘*get your senses exercised (in that word of righteousness) to discern both good and evil!*

- And James is going to give them information and doctrine and exhortations and expectations that make it so that their ‘senses get exercised to discern both good and evil’ in that sonship sense ...
... and that begins a **very critical** process or issue for a “son”!!!

- And that very critical issue for a son at this point in his Son/Edu is that by the effectual working of the godly Wisdom, the godly Justice, and the godly Discretion that comes from the effectual working of the Wisdom & Justice—and then by getting the *instruction of godly Judgment* underway—and beginning to discern between the good, better, & best paths to walk

... as all that doctrine gets DEPLOYED in the godly Living and the godly Labor—(as he begins to “shine” as the “light” of God’s Truth [as “*the light of the world*” for the Mem/Rem/Isr] in the face of the “darkness” of Untruth) ...

... that’s when the son starts having a “**conversation**” (that Hebrews 13:5-6 spoke about ... *Let your conversation be without covetousness; and be content with such things as ye have: for he hath said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee. So that we may boldly say, The Lord is my helper, and I will not fear what man shall do unto me.*)

[*evil men*]

- What I’m after here is that in both programs (ours doesn’t use the word *conversation* just yet, but when it is brought up, it comes as no surprise—and in fact, when it is brought up in a most pointed way in Philippians, the truth is, it’s been brought up before—and you’re supposed to realize that it’s actually been going on ever since you got your *instruction of godly Judgment!*)

- but my point is, that in both programs—as we emulate our Father in how we Think/Live/& Labor—He has designed for us to begin manifesting this thing called your **conversation**. (as a godly “son”!)

- and it doesn't simply happen “out of the blue” in Level II of our Son/Edu ... but it actually gets underway in Level I!

- It get underway especially in the *instruction of godly Judgment*—and (for us in this Disp. of Grace—as the members of the new creature of the church, the body of Christ) - it all starts off right here on this EARTH!

- Your *conversation* begins to be put on display in this world—before the eyes of MEN ... but! it **doesn’t stay** there! (at least, it’s not designed to exist just on this earth, in this world, before the eyes of men!)

- In fact, the truth is, you should already be very familiar with the concept of you having this thing called your *conversation* even before you were ever saved in the first place.

- (see Eph. 2:3)

- In our Sonship Curriculum, the word *conversation* is used 7x in:

- 2 Corinthians 1:12 (first use)

- Galatians 1:13 (talking about Paul's *conversation* among the Jews **before** he was JUEL)

- Ephesians 2:3; and 4:22 (both passages dealing with our *conversation* before we were JUEL)

- Philippians 1:27

- and then the familiar passage: Philippians 3:20

- 1 Timothy 4:12 (final use)

- And the issue of having a *conversation* (in both programs) is the issue of **having/making an impact upon the world around you**—which is why the word *conversation* is used (and NOT 'manner of life' or some other word or phrase [ala modern Trns.]!)

- “*manner of life*” is used 2x — (Acts 26:4; 2 Tim. 3:10)

- “*manner of life*” is used when it needs to be used!

- And as we will see—this issue of our “*conversation*” is not only an issue of the designed impact that our sonship life is to have on those around us—but it will become a kind of “technical term” (or a word that encapsulates our capacity and attainments as “sons”) to likewise be that SIGNAL to those who would OPPOSE us! (to the opposition, to the adversary and his cohorts).

- But you really need to understand and appreciate the meaning of the word *conversation* as it was used in Older English when the English language was in its ‘golden age’ and was ‘in its prime’ (so to speak) to flawlessly translate the word of God into English.

- (see additional notes on “*conversation*”)

- **(once again) James 3:13 (read)**

- It's kind of like James says, "Who 'fits the bill' according to what is sitting back there in Proverbs chapter 4 and those first 9 verses?" (Sonship Checkpoint before going on to getting the *instruction of Judgment*).

- And this is where a son's *conversation* gets going **in earnest** — and the son is to now make a certain IMPACT upon some certain individuals by that *conversation*!

- And one of those individuals is the adversary!

- And if they are *wise men endowed with knowledge*, then they can do what the rest of the verse says—they can 'discern' & perceive & make some discretionary judgments in connection with the kind of 'good conversation' and good works James is talking about here!

- (:14) - this is the balance of this particular Sonship Checkpoint.

- (:15) - "*devilish*" = this kind of competing "wisdom" has to do with the devil himself! — in other words, they're now in a position to deal with this character, and James is now going to talk to them about him!

- And they have to evaluate whether or not they're operating upon the "wisdom from above" or this competing wisdom!

- The Rem is now having to face some opposition from the adversary.

- (:16) - an environment is established by which their 'good conversation' gets shut down and their good works get replaced with "every evil work".

- (:17-18) - that's a summarization of what the effectual working of their Sonship Education ought to have accomplished within them at this point—and they should be able to discern that very thing right now. [whether it has, or has not!]

- **James chapter 4** - James is now going to deal with the kind of 'conversation' the Rem is supposed to have—and now he's going to focus upon the INFLUENCE and IMPACT of that 'conversation' - both in the world at-large, and in particular with some specific EVIL works that are done in the world.

- In other words, James is going to focus upon “the works of darkness” that the Rem is going to now encounter! (with them being “the light of the world”) - [and their “light” is primarily designed to have an impact upon the Gentiles out in the world—see 1 Peter 2:11-12].

- And James deals with the Rem with respect to how the adversary, by those “works of darkness” that they will encounter out in the world, will tend to have a NEGATIVE IMPACT upon them—and will endeavor to put their “light” OUT!

- James 4:1-4 - (on the basis of this information, they need to make that highly discretionary judgment in connection with their ‘good conversation’ and determine that they’re **not** going to conduct themselves like that!)

- (:5) - (they’re not going to be victimized by their worldly, ungodly “spirit” that “lusts to envy” - which is what happens to them as the adversary brings his PoE against them and their ‘conversation’ and the progress of their Sonship Education).

- (:6) - (part B is a quotation from Proverbs 3 as preparation for their instruction in their godly judgment!)

- That “**grace**” is given in the sense of the Father giving them the information they need to be able to deal with the adversary and his tactics against them!

... and then the Rem is told to operate upon that “**grace**” ...

- (:7) - This isn’t dealing with the “devil” in just any old way—but dealing with him as a properly educated son in Level I when the “devil” directly begins to attempt to put out the “light” they have acquired!

- That’s why the terminology here is all **PERSONAL** — “*Resist the devil, and HE will flee from YOU.*” - he’s dealing with them, **personally**, as members of the Rem/Isr.

- Satan is now attempting to put out their “light” - because their “light” **IS** their “good conversation”! (Just as the Lord spelled out: [see Mat. 5:13-16—(:16 “good works”)] — which is why James deals with ‘justification in the sight of men’ back in chapter 2!)

- Point is—when they begin to “shine” as that “light” based upon their instruction of Wisdom, Justice, and the first part of Judgment—they send that SIGNAL to the adversary that he can now bring his PoE directly against their “light”!

- REVIEW:

- Q: What is “*the armour of light*”?
- Q: What does it mean to “*cast off the works of darkness*”?
- Q: What does it mean to “*put on*” *the armour of light*?
- As a reminder of our enthusiasm to be put in “harms way” ...
 - but we are (or should be) ready / equipped!
 - we’re NOT under gunned!
 - we’re NOT under armoured! (under protected)!
- Q: What (exactly) is the “armour” [= defensive covering worn by one who is fighting] - of our “*armour of light*”???

- **Proverbs 2**

- Where does this exhortation come from? (see #36 / #37)
- (:1-9) deal with the son’s commitment levels and round off his Sonship Establishment.
- (read :10-12)
 - ** (:10-11) SHOULD DESCRIBE YOU!!!!** (does it?)
- (read :13-15) = the evil man
- (read :16-22) = the strange woman
- The “armour” is to be understood as the **DISCRETION** and the **UNDERSTANDING!**
 - the opposite of which is described in James 1:8
 “*A double minded man is unstable in all his ways.*”

- “*discretion*” - Psa. 112:5 (first use)
 - Pro. 1:4; 2:11; 3:21; 5:2; 11:22; 19:11
 - What does “discretion” mean? (this is a BIG DEAL!)
- (see #59 / #60)
-

- “*understanding*” - (used more times in Proverbs than in any other book!)

- **Proverbs 54x**

- Job 17x
 - Psalms 13x
 - Dan. 12x
 - Isa. 9x
- What does “understanding” mean?
- (see #61)
-

- notice what the ‘armour’ of *discretion & understanding* will do for you as a “son” ... (***preserve / keep / deliver***)

- “deliver” is pretty easy = to liberate, **rescue**, free from captivity, **save**.

- What’s the difference between “*preserve*” and “*keep*”?

(see Smith’s, pg. 486) & (#62)

THE MECHANICS OF THE SATANIC POLICY OF EVIL

- "mechanics" = the functional and technical aspects of it - or basically, how it works; how it actually works to oppose/resist you as a son; to put out your "light" and to "separate you from the love of Christ". - specifically, how does it do that?

- BLACK BOX = a whimsical term for a device that does something, but whose inner working are mysterious or baffling.

- We know the 'scope' of it = Rom. 8:35 - but at the point in which you're going to go into battle with this adversary and with his PoE that's designed to oppose/resist you and put out your light and separate you from the love of Christ - it's not good enough for a son to only know the 'scope' of it - you have to know the **mechanics** of it (at least to a better degree than merely the general idea of it).

- For example - you know from Rom. 8:35 that the first thing the SPoE is going to employ to oppose/resist you is the issue of "tribulation" - but tribulation is something that you encounter in just about every aspect of your Christian life ...

... so the issue is that this "tribulation" is specifically dealing with trouble you encounter as a "son" when you specifically are at the point where you "cast off the works of darkness and put on the armour of light" - and the issue is that you are supposed to be able to tell the difference / intelligently know the difference.

- Can you tell the difference between "tribulations of the gospel"; tribulations in general; and the specific "tribulations" that come directly from the PoE?

- It's not good enough to talk about the PoE in a vague, nebulous way (with characteristics that are undefinable & indescribable) - to ascribe to it the simple idea of: if something "bad" happens to you, it's Satan - and if something "good" happens to you, it's God.

- It's not good enough to just recognize that there is a Satanic PoE in general that seeks to oppose/resist a saint.

- And it's no longer going to be good enough just to recognize that Satan has a PoE to resist you as a saint and that it will generally resist you by 1) attacking the message, 2) attacking the messenger, and 3) discourage/discredit the messenger.

- Is the PoE just a ‘random’ thing? — if it really is a ‘policy’, then, by definition, it’s organized—it’s an organized and established system that administrates Satan’s Plan of Evil—it has structure to it, much like governmental structure. (it has design to it)

- It’s got to be more than merely the ‘natural’ (if you will) way in which the lost, the unbeliever, the agnostic, the atheist, etc. reacts to those who are believers and who express their love for God and who witness to the lost in this world.

- but what does all that have to do with “separating me from the love of Christ”?

- however, I’m not saying that this ‘natural’ or built-in opposition that is part and parcel of the general course of this world (and those who stand against the God of the Bible) isn’t included in the overall understanding of Satan’s PoE.

- And this is a really important issue—especially for a properly educated “son”/ daughter — because there is a lot at stake here:

- If this is a battle of competing wisdom—and God’s wisdom is the same as His written word—and if God has designed our sonship curriculum to be the powerful means by which we become ‘more than conquerors’ on a grace basis (by grace, through faith) - then that means that we are supposed to have an awareness of exactly what part of the curriculum that the adversary is going after—and an awareness of what part of God’s word we are going to operate upon—and how that works to make us ‘more than conquerors’ ... right?

- And there is a “glory” in our becoming that, that redounds to the glory of God—and without some real intelligent understanding of when and how the excellency of the power of God’s word **in our sonship curriculum** is utilized to overcome the attempts to ‘separate you from the love of Christ’ - then it just won’t be appreciated by you at all ...

... and the glory for God that comes from that won’t be put on display to the degree it would when you intelligently know what it is that you’re doing!

- We've seen (to a degree) that the opposition/resistance of the PoE to begin the attempt to "separate you from the love of Christ" is going to consist of *tribulation* and *distress* ...

... and we've seen that the form or the means by which that 'trouble' is going to occur in your life is by means of MEN (and not by some supernatural demon-creature or 'boogey man').

- *the evil man/men*

- see Rom. 16:17-20 - there are some individuals (people) who "serve their own belly" (their own desires/agenda/satisfaction/objectives) ... but unknown to them, they are serving Satan in the process.

2 Cor. 11:1-5; 12-15 - there are individuals who are out-right "ministers" of Satan and who are transformed as "ministers of righteousness"!

Eph. 2:2 - Satan flat-out works "IN" them!

- So it's by MEN (human beings in this world) that the PoE is going to oppose/resist us) ... but again—that's not good enough to answer the question of "How (mechanically) will they do it?"

- [Are we supposed to be taken by surprise? Shouldn't we know what to look for; and be able to identify an "evil man"; and intelligently know what to expect him/her to do?]

- Shouldn't we be able to detect the difference between an *evil man* and general/natural circumstances of the general course of this world? ... or mere bad luck?

- It's a MUST, in order to have the designed IMPACT!

... how will you ever put the superior power of the living words of the Living God on display (to put the powerful Bible Doctrine of the Sonship Curriculum for us contained in the epistles of the apostle Paul on display in this Disp/Grace) - and do so in the FACE of the adversary ... **if you don't know when God's word/wisdom has been superior???**

... if you don't know what was tried by the adversary, and what tactics of his didn't work, and what portion of God's word provided for you to be "more than conquerors"???

- We're talking about something that is far different from: just that the world is a sinful place; and there's always going to be God haters that we have to deal with.

- (but again—all that does have a place in Satan's PoE, and I don't want to minimize that or the reality of that)

- what's the difference between a saint who experiences the 'jump' to death (martyrdom) — and a saint (son) who experiences the progression of *tribulation sword?*

- What does random hatred by men in this world; or even death (martyrdom) by the hands of men in this world have anything to do with 'separating me from the love of Christ' and keeping me from progressing in my sonship education?

- Point is—the aspect of the Satanic PoE that directly has to do with you/me as "sons" has to have a lot more design to it than random hatred of you as a Christian or Bible believer.

- This goes right to one of the many 'glories' of being a "son" of your Heavenly Father—not merely to think like He does—but we're invited in to having the Father's own intelligent understanding of what's going on! (with Him and with His adversary) ...

... and if you don't have that intelligent understanding, how are you ever going to 'take counsel with Him'?

- Our intelligence of the Satanic PoE has to increase at this point!

- (It's fantastic that we can acknowledge that there IS a Satanic Plan of Evil and Policy of Evil and, in general what it's going after ... most folks don't)

- (this may be repetitive and very basic—but we need to have every one in this assembly moving together [as much as possible] - and we can't afford to have any 'holes' in our understanding—because a 'hole' in your understanding = a hole in your armour!)

... and you'll end up not being "*kept*" from being separated from *the love of Christ*.

- The Evil Man/Men — Pro. 2:10-15

- compare: Pro. 4:14-17

- Note in Pro. 2:12ff it goes from "the evil man" (Singular), to the Plural in (:13-15) - (esp. :15, "*they*").

- The *evil man* and *evil men* (human beings) are the 1st Line of Resistance/Opposition in Israel's program to the sonship edification and sonship life of the members of the Rem/Isr.

- (and that is true in our program/dispensation as well)

- Look at Pro. 4:14-17 —

- Can that be said/is that true of EVERY unjustified person? (NO)

- These *evil men* are human beings that are given over to, and functioning under the Satanic PoE BEYOND being sinners and ungodly—beyond merely ones who are following the general ungodly 'course of this world' that Satan charted.

- These *evil men* have an agenda! (to cause you to "fall")!

- We need to recognize that there is much more going on in the hearts and minds of those around us (and those that you will come into contact with) than just that they are following the course of this world and being ungodly sinners—there are some people who are *evil men* who will be used by the PoE to try to cause you to "fall" and 'separate you from the love of Christ.'

- There are some people in this world who are so *evil* that their agenda is to 'separate you from the love of Christ'!

- And in connection with our passage in Rom. 13 where we are told to intelligently perform this overt act (gesture) of *casting off the works of darkness, and putting on the armour of light*—and to not have anything to do with those 6 specific works of darkness: *not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying*—it stands to reason (and it stands to sound doctrine) that there is a difference between you being tempted to participate in those things BEFORE you got to this doctrine, and AFTER this doctrine is effectually working within you.

- Because now you have some intelligent **understanding** that is shared by you and your Father concerning what is really going on with these works of darkness.

... plus you have some real & powerful **discretion** based upon the Wisdom/Justice/Judgment!

(armour)

- And based upon the effectual working of this doctrine—by that overt act, you are sending a signal to the adversary to oppose/resist you—and you're to expect it will be done by some *evil men* who are going to tempt you in the very 6 areas of the works of darkness mentioned in Romans 13.

- And for the Romans (and for us) - it's going to be in these 6 specific areas that we are going to be confronted with the temptation (by *evil men* in this world) to back our "light" off of these things!

- In connection with this "BEFORE" and "AFTER" issue—look again at 1 Corinthians 10:13 —

- (Context: the Corinthians are being reproved/admonished and corrected in regards to their sanctification "in Christ")

- Notice what it DOESN'T say: [i.e., 'There will never be a temptation taken you but such as is common to man:'] (which is how this is commonly understood)

- Notice the Tenses— it says, "*There hath no temptation*" i.e., thus far; so far; from your past, up to now, the temptations you face are such as is common to man.

- but now that you are a Level I son (which is where the Corinthians ought to be by now) - (and now you have a shift in the tenses [from past & present—to the future] ...
but God is faithful, who WILL not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able ...

- Now you are going to face some temptations that are **not** common to man (common to the general course of this world)
 - but that are part of the determined Satanic PoE that is specifically designed to ruin/put a halt to your continued sanctified functional life in ways that are *not common to man!*

- And the point is—even then, there are ‘ground rules’ (so to speak) in the contention over your sonship life.

- And the ground rules are: Level I sons are going to be tempted from the PoE to ‘separate from the love of Christ’
 - but the temptations are going to be from those things that are ‘common to man’ - that is, to simply go back to the things of this world that you said that you didn’t want any more [in Rom. 12:1-2] - (the things you identified as “darkness” - and the things that you repudiated and “cast off” [Rom. 13:11-14])

- And that forms the basic modus operandi (SOP) for this contention—for your whole sonship growth:
 i.e., **whatever your Father has produced within you; Satan is going to try to dislodge!**

- (Satan is going to attempt to UNDO whatever God’s word in your sonship edification HAS DONE!)

- That’s the whole ‘contention’ — who has the most “power”; either the power of God’s word (wisdom) in your sonship edification, or the power of Satan’s PoE (his competing wisdom) and it’s tools (*evil man/ strange woman*) to dislodge that.

- So in Sonship Level I, you put on *the armour of light*; you *cast off the works of darkness*—and you make it clear that you see those for what they are—you therefore find them as repulsive as your Father does—you want nothing to do with them—and Satan is going to respond by saying, “Oh Yeah? I’m going to present these in such a way that I think you will want something to do with them!” ... and there are human beings that he has access to, and will use who, that IS their agenda!

- But as you get on into Level II Sonship Education—the adversary earns the right to tempt you in ways that are NOT “common to man” ... but even then, *God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it.*

- In other words—the ‘rules of engagement’ are such that Satan cannot tempt you BEYOND what God’s word (the curriculum for your sonship education) has provided you with the ability to deal with (by means of its effectual working within you) ...

... and notice that issue of “*but will WITH the temptation*” - that is, God doesn’t come along and put His hand between you and temptation—rather, WITH it, make a way to *escape and bear it!*
(what a great description of being ‘more than a conqueror’!)

- Illustration: the Thessalonians face some temptations that are NOT ‘common to man’ at all!

- 1 Thess. 3:1-5 (:5, *the tempter (Satan) have tempted you, and our labour be in vain.*)

- Here you have some temptations that are brought on by Satan himself—and they’re NOT ‘common to men’ because they are “*afflictions*” that we are appointed to (:3)

- This goes beyond the more mild *tribulations and distress* — (note in Ch. 2, Paul identifies that they are undergoing severe *persecution*—and are in danger of those seeking to *kill* them [*peril, sword*]).

(the *tempter* himself is tempting them now)
(with both *the evil men* and *the strange woman*)

- there’s far more going on (like in **2 Cor. 11:23-27**) than simply, sinners don’t like to hear the gospel—that men are sinners by nature and they don’t like hearing about their guilt before a Just & Holy God - and they don’t want anything to do with the gospel because it hurts their conscience.

- So one of the things we know—(from the 1 Cor. 10:13 passage) is that the major tactic of *the evil man/men*—and in the 1st ‘go-round’ of our battle/contention with the adversary—is going to be in the area of TEMPTATION.

- specifically, being tempted to be involved in the 6 things listed by Paul in Romans 13:13 (*works of darkness*) and pursue those things.

- But our “armour of light” will be sufficient (as it is made up of “discretion” and “understanding”) to “deliver us from the way of the evil man”.

- Now—again, as to the MECHANICS of the PoE—we need to know **how** that is going to take place by these evil men in this world who are the agents of the adversary to oppose/resist us as sons.

- And the truth is, there are 2 Agents or 2 Agencies that will carry out the Satanic PoE against us as “sons” in our time here on earth ...

... in order to ‘separate us from the love of Christ’, and will do so in the specific order of *tribulation, distress, persecution, famine, nakedness, peril, and sword* ...

... and those 2 Agents are: 1) The Evil Man/Men
2) The Strange Woman

(Excellency of Older English/AV)

- “strange” (why “strange”?) (other vers. ‘adulteress’, ‘loose’, ‘immoral’)

= like the word “stranger” - the radical root meaning is: DOES NOT BELONG.

= does not belong to some place or locality (neighborhood); or does not belong to some body or person—(i.e., not of one’s kin or family).

- (OED) = denoting a class of persons; the strange woman is a harlot because the woman described as “strange” is strange in the sense that she is ‘not one’s own’ (i.e., own wife).

- THE PROFILE OF THE EVIL MAN: (Proverbs 2:12-15)

- (read from :1-11) - Even a cursory reading of these verses (without any deep attention to the details) tells you that the defensive power of your “*armour*” (the *discretion* that’s going to *preserve* you; and the *understanding* that’s going to *keep* you and *deliver* you from the *way of the evil man*) - **is all based upon the wisdom & understanding [the words of the Father; the curriculum for your Sonship Education] having been received by you, the son!**

- Therefore—it that’s NOT taken place—then you’re only kidding yourself about being in any kind of spiritual warfare, of any kind of ‘battle’ with the adversary! (truth is, sanctificationally speaking, you’re just ‘the walking dead’)!)

- (read Pro. 2:12-19 [the evil man/the strange woman])

- (note: (:10-17) is one long sentence—rest of the vss. are 1 sent/ea.)

- 1st time the son is told who his opposition is going to be.

- It will occur in that order. (these 2 Agents)

- Sometimes, they will work together (Acts 17:7 [Paul at Thessalonica] *But the Jews which believed not, moved with envy, too unto them certain lewd fellows of the baser sort ...*)

- Profile of The Evil Man:

(we’re not after the details—because they are given as to Satan’s PoE toward the Rem/Isr in God’s program w/Isr — what we’re after is the general format or pattern that the Evil Man is going to employ to oppose/resist the son)

- (read :12) - BASIC OVERALL ACTIONS (brief/summary of the opposition of the evil man) [BASIC BRIEF:]

- 2 things: *the way / that speaketh forward things*

- 1) You’re going to be tempted/influenced by what the evil man DOES and by what he SAYS.

- (Note:) - *understanding/understand* used 6x in vss. 2-11 (10 verses) -

- *understanding* (4x)

- *understand* (2x)

(that's what you call emphasizing *understanding*!)
[not to minimize *discretion*]

- So in BRIEF: the opposition from the adversary is going to occur by using men (human beings—not some supernatural creature or angelic being) — and those men who are the agents of the adversary are going to employ the 2 most basic means by which a person can be influenced/tempted: 1) **a way** (visual—what they DO) and 2) **speaking** (audio—what they SAY) [audio/visual] - all of which is the basic way that information gets passed on (or transferred) to individuals.

- (which is the most powerful means of all the senses—even more than smell or taste or feel — [which is why food shows can be so popular on TV! {Hell's Kitched & such}] to influence a person).

- Your armour (made up of *discretion & understanding*) is going to *deliver* you from the WAY of the evil man—from the things you see him doing—and that would tempt you to do them, too.

- A good illustration is rioting itself—because there is something that happens to a person's inhibitions when you see someone actually do something that you're restraining yourself from doing—that when one person does it in your presence, your inhibitions lower, and you're more inclined to do it, too. (also Pentecostalism is a good example, too).

- Your armour is also going to deliver from *the man that SPEAKETH forward things*;

- You'll be saved from being tempted/influenced by what the evil man SAYS.

- By the way—notice that in both cases (of the evil man and the strange woman) - both of them employ SPEECH (what they say) - the evil man **speaks** forward thing; the strange woman flattereth with her **words!** (Who you listen to is a critical feature in Sonship Education: your Father, or someone else?)

- (actually—both are also involved in DOING some things, too)
- There are some things that evil men are going to say that are FROWARD = (comes up 3x in :12-15) (another word that gets changed in all the Modern Versions) = ungodly thinking that goes counter to what is godly.
 - But the general, root concept —
 - froward and forward are not related (they just look alike)
 - Think of TO and FRO
 - Think of TOWARD and FROM-WARD
 - You're either going TO something or AWAY from something.
 - Someone who thinks frowardly is disposed to go counter to what is right or reasonable.
 - The idea is that it's perverse.
- But it's not a concept that simply deals with or focuses upon rebellion and defiance and contempt and disobedience — but the real powerful shade of meaning that *froward* has is that it emphasizes the idea of **GOING AWAY FROM WHERE YOU SHOULD GO!**
 - Going froward **doesn't** get you closer to the goal/aim/ or objective—it gets you **further away** from it!
- By the way—notice that the adversary employs the same basic and powerful tactics of influence over individuals that God Himself utilizes: something SEEN and something HEARD!
 - (ala God's light of truth vs. the darkness of untruth;
 - ala Mt. Ebal / Mt. Gerzim; ala the armour of light [the gesture of an overt act both seen and heard!])
- So the Basic Summary Brief of the tactics of the Evil Man: will come in the form of men (people) influencing/tempting you by the things they DO (a “way”) and by the things they SAY (“speaking froward things”) - and the design is, by you viewing them and hearing them is to separate you from the love of Christ (put out your light). (to **MOVE YOU AWAY** from where you **should go!**)

- (Pro. 2:12) - [notice the colon (:) at the end of (:11) - a list of things is now going to be given—here the colon tells you that a long quotation is going to follow—and there is going to be an enumeration of some particulars—some particulars are going to be given enumerating for the son of the mechanics of some evil men who are going to be utilized by the Satanic PoE in order to attempt to oppose/resist/put out the son’s “light” and to prevent his armour from being successful.]

To deliver thee from the way of the evil man, from the man that speaketh froward things;

- Notice that it seems that there is a singular “evil man” at first—but then the terminology shifts to ‘evil men’ Plural ...

- (ex. the “Who” “Who” and “Whose” are 2nd Per. Pl., plus you have the words “they” and “their” in :15)

- But the truth is—and the more accurate way to think about the “evil man” is that it’s going to be the issue of “evil MEN” (Pl.) from the very beginning (get go).

- Actually—(:12) doesn’t have just 1 man in view—but 2 men in view!

- “*To deliver thee from the way of the evil man,*” (that’s 1 man)

- “*from the man that speaketh froward things;*” (that’s a second man)

- i.e., there’s not 1 man in view—rather, there’s 2 separate men in view.

- “*The WAY of the evil man*” (that’s 1 man)
“*the man that speaketh froward things*” (that’s another man)

- So the son is supposed to perceive that there are going to be 2 kinds of men (people/individuals/human beings) that are going to oppose/resist him—and you can think of it this way:

- In confronting the PoE to begin with—I’m going to be dealing with ‘evil men’ (Plural)

... 1 in connection with a WAY (what is SEEN);
and another in connection with SPEAKING (what it heard).

- And the methodology of the evil men (in its basic form) is in connection with those 2 main methods by which they are going to end up producing their enticements/temptations.

- THE WAY = the 'eye-gate'
- SPEAKING = the 'ear-gate'

(the 2 primary ways an individual can be influenced by others!)

- And 1 of those 'evil men' is a 'specialist' in the VISUAL area—and the other is a 'specialist' in the AUDIBLE area!

- And once (:12) describes the general & basic overall Tactics of the evil men—then (:13, :14, and :15) go on to describe in enough detail, the general way in which the evil men are going to operate in the area of Audio/Visual enticements/temptations—to the degree that the son (in whatever plan/program/dispensation—at any time period he lives on this earth—in any culture/society/nation/ — in any situation/ circumstances he lives on this earth) to figure out all on his own, just how he's going to be Visually affected/influenced by these evil men; and/or how he's going to be Audibly affected/influenced by these evil men.

- (which is why, in Ch. 4:14, you have 2 admonitions the Father gives the son—because 1 of them have to do with Audible enticements; and 1 has to do with Visual enticements)

review

- *tribulation* = most basic, fundamental, essential, core issue = TROUBLE—something that troubles you!
- Something that causes you trouble/problems **that can NOT be ignored**—you're going to have to **deal** with it!
- *distress*—from an intense form of *tribulation*, it produces an unsettling/dismaying affect upon your MIND—the mind gets unsettled (it becomes an inner man issue) - *tribulation* is the source of *distress*.

- In Proverbs 2:12-15 the son is given INSIGHT into the METHODOLOGY of the Evil Man/Men.

- (:12-22 [along with Rom. 8:35-39], especially, gives insight into the 1st category of opposition/resistance: *tribulation* ...

... which will be composed of trouble from ones who already walk a path that is contrary to the path your Sonship Education (under the instruction of godly Wisdom, Justice, & Judgment) has enabled you to walk.

- Even just this much *discretion & understanding* is an AMAZINGLY POWERFUL THING!!!

- Proverbs 2:13 - After setting forth the Basic Strategy of the evil men (what they DO and what they SAY), the father now tells his son about the evil men's Basic Visual/Audio TACTICAL Goals.

- (which is done in order to give the son the ability to detect and to distinguish the temptations of the evil men from the rest of the PoE and the general darkness/wickedness of the world — and to give the son insight and ability into what the evil men are going to attempt to do to the son in order to put out his light and separate him from “the love of Christ.”)

- And there are 6 of them.

- (:13) ***Who leave the paths of uprightness, ...***
[First one]

- By what these evil men DO & SAY—they are going to tempt you first and foremost in this area.

- Does this say that the evil men are ON “the paths of uprightness”? (Yes) - Why? — why is it that when you first encounter these evil men, you're going to find them on the same paths you're on?

- Simple—they have to go and get you where you are—(it's not that they are righteous and following the paths of uprightness—they step into your 'arena' and attempt to get you out of it!)

- So, you're on "the path of uprightness" - the goal is to get you to leave it and "walk in the ways of darkness".

- For you, personally, you're going to have to use your *discretion & understanding* in order to figure out all on your own the evil men's methodology—(Personal Tactics).

- But the question is: What would it take for you to leave the path you're on and **choose** to leave it and walk in the ways of darkness? what would have to happen in YOU?

- How are the evil men going to trouble you? to get you to do this? (willingly)

- Remember that they are going to utilize something they DO (a way), and something they SAY (*froward things*) — and son, here's what they're after: *for you to leave the paths of uprightness, to walk in the ways of darkness;*

- (*the way/speaketh froward things* = great & powerful means of INFLUENCE!)

- again, Q: Why would you willingly choose to leave *the paths of uprightness* (the paths you've been walking as a son in your Father's Wisdom/Justice/Judgment)?

A: (Simple) The evil men are going to first of all present you with some things that you're going to SEE & say some things that you're going to HEAR that are "*froward*" ... and the intention of it is for you to choose:
"I'd rather have what's offered there than what I'm currently pursuing!"

- You're going to be presented with some things that you See and Hear—that are specifically designed to make your 'paths of uprightness' to be **less attractive** than the paths offered to you by the evil men!

- And for this to work—you're going to have to say, I'd prefer that to what I've got! (and if you don't think that could ever happen to you—you're kidding yourself—you're not being honest with what God is telling you here!)

- And the really insidious (subtle, stealthy, underhanded, and very dangerous) nature of this is: WE ALL HAVE DONE THIS AND STILL DO THIS ALL THE TIME!

- (let's be honest with ourselves) — all of us have and still often do choose the things of this world over the things of God quite often!

- (we're all 'exercised' in doing this!)

- Don't act like you've never preferred a movie or TV or sports or entertainment or whatever over the study of God's word or fellowship/communion in Sonship Prayer—**or Bible class!**

- The real insidious nature of this first temptation is that the adversary is (by these evil men) striking an almost automatic reflex action that we're all very accustomed to!

- You already have the tendency to rather have a conversation with someone about the whether or sports or baking or whatever—rather than talking to them about the gospel and their salvation—or talking to them about their spiritual life.

- (and that doesn't come from the attacks of the PoE! that 's not a temptation delivered up by Satan or the evil men—that's not meant to dislodge what our Father has produced

... that's just tendencies that are already at work (powerfully) within you!

- That's the way we were even before we began to 'cast off the works of darkness, and put on the armour of light' — so what do you think would be the easiest and most convenient means for the adversary to 'separate you from the love of Christ' once you give him this 'signal'!

- (:13) ... *to walk in the ways of darkness;*
(the darkness of untruth!) - this whole contention/battle at the outset is the issue of Light vs. Darkness!

- So the expectation is that in the first round of opposition & resistance from the Satanic PoE—there is going to be an attempt to tempt you to ‘turn your light down’, to put out your light, to separate you from the love of Christ—by means of some very familiar and already proven/successful tactics: **I’d rather have what I SEE and HEAR in the world of darkness rather than my Father’s education!**

- Now that you’ve come to the point of attainment of this Discretion & Understanding—and have taken the overt action of “casting off the works of darkness, and putting on the armour of light” (repudiating the works of darkness of untruth) ... by giving the adversary that signal, some men/women are going to come along and (by what they SAY and DO), they are going to say, ‘Those very things that you say you don’t want—I’ll bet you DO want’ — and those things are going to be packaged in a more attractive way than they have been in the past.

- The first round of battle with the adversary’s PoE isn’t going to be the clash of swords and abuse that would make you cower in fear—rather, it’s going to be in the area of simply **getting you to make some choices** (choices that you’ve made in the past), but now with this added capacity/ability to qualify for real opposition from the PoE—it’s going to be the simple matter of choosing to leave the ‘paths of uprightness’ and ‘walk in the ways of darkness’ ... because that’s going to be more fun, more enjoyable, more pleasurable, less stressful, etc.

- Whatever it is—it’s going to be the issue of: I want the ways of darkness more than the paths of uprightness.

- (:14) *Who rejoice to do evil,*

- Notice the terminology: “rejoice” and “delight” — do you get some insight into how this first round of temptation is going to work? ... it’s going to make a strong appeal to your EMOTIONS and SENTIMENTS! (which is why sonship edification is so important: more than merely the doctrine,

sonship edification is the issue of a son's desire for his Father's whole HEART! ... the doctrine, for sure, - but also the Father's table of likes/loves and dislikes/hatred!

- "rejoicing" and "delighting" means, Hey, this is where the party is! this is where the fun is! this is where the real enjoyment and real fulfillment in life is!

- "***Who rejoice to do evil,***" — at this point, you've been 'rejoicing' in your sonship life and the HOPE set before you and the opportunities that abound in that HOPE.

- So, what's it going to take for your to "rejoice to do evil"?

- A: You're going to have to see the PLEASURES of this evil world as GREATER than the pleasures of your sonship edification!

- This is a critical issue—because one of the most powerful doctrines that provides salvation from being victimized by the PoE is your HOPE doctrine!

- And it's no surprise that it is the object of great and powerful ATTACKS!

- "***... and delight in the frowardness of the wicked;***" — here, again, is the concept of "frowardness" (or that which would take you AWAY from your sonship Aims, Goals, and Objectives).

- What's it going to take for you to "delight in the frowardness of the wicked"? ... or moving AWAY from the goal & objectives of your sonship life and TOWARD the aims, goals, & objectives of the adversary?

- A: You're going to have to take your **eye** off of the HOPE set before you and look at something TEMPORAL that can produce some joy or delight—and say, 'I'd prefer that, and I'll take delight in that!'

- (:15) ***Whose ways are crooked, ...***

- The idea of "crooked" ways is the concept of ways that are twisted; distorted; perverse; and perverted —

— the issue is that the ways offered to you by the evil men are deviating from what is right (righteousness) and correct (see Pro. 3:13-18 [:17]).

- “... and they froward in their paths:”

- Again, their paths are “froward” = moving you AWAY from where you’re supposed to be going—your decisions to walk certain paths based upon your Father’s judgmental decision-making skill are going to be based upon your own personal judgment and likes and dislikes—what the lusts of your flesh desire, rather than what your Father desires!

- What would it take to get you to walk in “*ways that are crooked, and they froward in their paths*”?

- A: It would mean that your godly ambition, zeal, and enthusiasm is GONE! The godly ambition you had to finish your course and follow your Father’s way and choose the paths He would take is now replaced with the zeal & ambition to follow the course of this world!

- **Summary:** The first round of opposition from the evil men is going to be comprised of tempting you to prefer the very thing that you said you didn’t want anything to do with:

13 Who leave the paths of uprightness, to walk in the ways of darkness;

... and to tempt you to take delight and joy in the hopeful prospects of this world—that it offers more hope for a happy, fulfilled life than your Father offers—it’s pseudo-love based appeal has become more attractive than your Father’s love-based appeal:

14 Who rejoice to do evil, and delight in the frowardness of the wicked;

... and to get you to have NO AMBITION any more for continuing on in your sonship life!

15 Whose ways are crooked, and they froward in their paths:

- And nowhere in that are you told that evil men are going to use pain, deprivation, threats, danger, risk of life or livelihood, scaring you, etc., ...

... rather, they're going to use the things you SEE and the things you HEAR that are already around you...

... and the whole issue is—they're going to package these things in such a way that the effectual working of God's word will be pitted against the effective working of Satan's Policy of Evil—and the bottom line is going to be, which one do you willingly, freely choose? (which one brings you joy, happiness, contentment, meaning, purpose, etc.)

- You may say, "Oh, I would never ..." — but do you see that there really is great power in these things?

COMMENTS ON THE STRANGE WOMAN —

- (read Pro. 2:16-19)

- This is the 2nd Agent of the Satanic Policy of Evil.

- We noted why the word "**strange**" in the AV is the most excellent choice of English words—(other trns. have 'adulteress', 'loose', 'immoral').

= like the word "stranger" - the radical root meaning is: IT DOES NOT BELONG.

- does not belong to some place or locality (neighborhood); or does not belong to somebody or person (i.e., not of one's kin or family).

- OED = as denoting a class, *strange* is used in many passages of the Book of Proverbs. The adj. renders two different Heb. words—both which have the sense 'not one's own (wife)'.

- Even though "strange", when used to describe a person can be used in different ways—but because of how this 'strange woman' gets further described in Pro.—it's clear to me that we can (and should) think of her as a harlot/prostitute/whore.

- And this agent of the PoE is also going to be a PERSON.

- Just like with the word “man” (evil man/men) - since this is being set forth to a son by his father (in the proverbial format) — we should understand that the 1st Agent of the PoE (evil men) can be both men or women — so too, with the proverbial form of “the strange woman” we should understand that this agent can be either a man or a woman.

- But just as the 1st Agent has some further descriptive information about him (he’s EVIL) - this 2nd Agent has some further descriptive information about her (she’s STRANGE).

- And not only is it true that by that descriptive term we know that she DOESN’T BELONG in a son’s life—but by the further description of her we know a lot more about her.

- First of all—(:16) says, *To deliver thee from the strange woman*, — again, whatever/whoever this ‘strange woman’ is—and she is one who will oppose/resist your sonship life) - the truth is, that the DISCRETION and the UNDERSTANDING of your “armour of light” will provide for your deliverance/salvation from being victimized by this aspect of the Satanic PoE!

- And while she also is going to utilize both what is SEEN and what is HEARD—her temptation/seduction at first is going to be on what she SAYS.

- And just to get the context here (and therefore keep everything that’s said within the context and governed by the context) - notice that the strange woman ...

17 ... forsaketh the guide of her youth, and forgetteth the covenant of her God.

- She’s very different from *the evil man*—he’s just downright and upfront dealing in evil/darkness/wickedness/and crookedness—and he makes no pretense about where he is or where he wants you to go with him—(which is “froward” or AWAY from where you’re supposed to be going) ...

... but the strange woman is quite different ...

- She had a “guide of her youth” that she has “forsaken” (abandoned Sonship)
 - She has a “covenant of her God” (the God of the Bible) that she “forgets” about — therefore the strange woman is the “arm” or the ‘agency’ of Satan’s PoE that deals with RELIGION and God—(talking about God, even worshipping God [but very differently from the way God designed and contracted for it to be done {in Israel’s program}]).

- Her most powerful means for success against a son is going to be FLATTERY —

- What is “flattery”?

- **flattery** = thought to be an onomatopoeia used of an animal or bird to show delight or fondness by wagging the tail or making a caressing sound.

= to praise or compliment unduly or insincerely; to win ones favor by fawning speech; to please, soothe, coax, to win over. (to make one feel honored or distinguished—to tickle a person’s vanity.)

- Even with this much understanding, you know that ‘flattery’ is playing upon someone—it’s an attempt to beguile in order to persuade a person ...

I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ (2 Cor. 11:3)

4 And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die:

5 For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.

6 And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat. (Gen. 3:4-6)

- And in order for ‘flattery’ to work, it has to make an appeal to your inner man—so what does ‘flattery’ appeal to?

... (pride / vanity / etc.)

- But when you really deal with “flattery” - you really are dealing with the very first thing you learned about as a “son” in godly Wisdom (in Rom. 12) ... the strange woman goes right after the most powerful and most fundamental thing that characterizes a ‘son’ of the Heavenly Father ... the thing, that if she can corrupt it, it will bring the whole edification structure down! (like demolishing a building)! ...

... it goes right after the issue of SELF-ESTEEM and SELF LOVE!

- (see Rom. 12:3) - she goes right after your godly SELFLESS LOVE!

- and you are **always** vulnerable to this!
(self love is part of the nature of sin that still resides within you!)

- she goes right after BODY THINKING!

- she goes right after a son’s SOBER THINKING!

- Notice how she shows up in a big way in Romans 16:17-20!

- She’s going to lean heavily on what she SAYS—and she’s going to go right after your selfless love—and she’s going to use “flattery” to appeal to your Self Love (which desires to save your own skin) - and she’s going to utilize RELIGION (she’ll talk a lot about God and covenants) ...

... and while she has forsaken the “guide of her youth” the implication is that she’s still going to talk a lot about “divine guidance” going on—and how that God is doing some great things ... but it’s NOT according to SOUND DOCTRINE (that you’ve learned in your Sonship Education!) - [she deals in CORRUPT doctrine!]

- (:18) - She has a “house” that she wants you to come to—(and the “house” concept is a big thing in God’s word—both in Israel’s prog., (2 Sam. 7:11) and in our Disp. of Grace (1 Tim. 3:15) - the “table” is also a big deal in both programs!

- And notice that her *house inclineth unto death, and her paths unto the dead* — that's FUNCTIONAL death!

- notice the Father doesn't describe her "house" and her "paths" as 'froward' or 'dark' — that is, they don't just **move you away** from the path you ought to be on—**they put your functional life to DEATH!**

- (what does that tell you about the kind of doctrine she's going to be involved in? [for us, anyway]?
... THE LAW & legalism! [a primary feature of the strange woman!]

- She's the more insidious (subtle, beguiling, alluring & harmful) of the 2 agents.
[which is why she's presented as a "strange woman" ... because she's **attractive!**]

- and the things she says to you are attractive—and her house is attractive—but when you go in, her "paths" go "unto the functionally DEAD"!

- And there's something far more dangerous about the "strange woman" than there is about "the evil man" - both are dangerous, and both can be successful—but notice ...

- (:19 *None that go unto her return again, neither take they hold of the paths of life.* — your sonship life is OVER!)

- Now—without being able to manipulate your free will—what would the strange woman have to do to make this true? ... what would she have to convince you of so that you willingly never return again to your sonship life and to "the paths of life"?

- Something is going to have to take place in your heart ...
... what would keep you in her house, never to come out of it? ... what would have to happen to **you**?

A: You would have to be convinced & fully persuaded that **YOU'RE RIGHT!** - that the "house" and the "path" of the strange woman is **RIGHT**—you're persuaded that you're on the **RIGHT PATH!**
(if you think you're right, you would **NEVER** leave!)

- The “evil man” comes along and says, ‘Get off that course; you’re missing out; there’s so many better things over here; **JUST LOOK AT IT; ARE YOU HEARING ME?** ... just listen to your heart, you know you like hanging out here, there’s a lot to delight and rejoice in here ... after all, you’ve done it before ... just spend some time on these paths ... who needs the stress you’re under ...

- But “the strange woman” comes along and gets you to think that when you’re in her “house” and when you’re on her “paths” **YOU THINK THAT YOU ARE EXACTLY WERE GOD WANTS YOU!** ... **YOU THINK YOU ARE DOING GOD’S WILL** ... you think that you’re on the right course and the right path! (that’s why you would never leave it!)

- No one ever goes into the “house” of the “strange woman” thinking that *her house inclineth unto death, and her paths unto the dead* ... because she so powerfully “flatters” you!

- (see the power of her flattery—
— **Pro. 4:14-5:3**

- **Pro. 5:4 BUT ...** (son, here’s what you wouldn’t know about the strange woman unless I told you about it!)

- notice that the wording makes it clear that the son would never know the dangers or the outcome,
unless the Father told him before hand!!!

(read **5:4-14 [14]**)

- The issue of “flattery” is a very POWERFUL thing—it is quite possible to be ‘sucked in’ to something by what you HEAR—and it’s so powerful and so insidious because of how it plays & preys upon your own lusts that are already there and already waiting to be called upon.

- And there’s a reason why the Father is always warning the son (even in the latter stages of his education) to not go near her house—and the real subtle, clever, crafty, devious nature of “flattery” is: that if flattery is successful, **you never know you’re being flattered until it’s too late!** (for ex. Eve)

... you think you're doing what God wants you doing—but at the end is *death & hell* (the place of the unbeliever!) - those that are unbelievers in her “house” don't get saved, they go to hell!

- And notice that she has a “house” a “congregation” and an “assembly” (:14)

- You can't get “the path of life” from her—but the issue is, that you think that's where you're going!

- The “strange woman” has great POWER to ruin a son!

- **Proverbs 9**—look at just how insidious and cunning/deceptive and dangerous the “strange woman” is.

- (note: this section of Proverbs are the exhortations a father gives his son for Level **III** of his Sonship Edu.!!! ... which tells you this strange woman is EVER plying her trade; and is an EVER PRESENT DANGER for a son!)

- here, you have described godly Wisdom (also described as a woman), but she is pitted against and contrasted with the “strange woman” (called here “*the foolish woman*”) ...

- (:1-6) = godly Wisdom

now compare that with ...

- (read :13) - (:14-15) w/ (:3)

- (:16-17) w/ (:4-5) [nearly word-for-word!]

- This is the extent that the “strange woman” will go to deceive a “son”!

- She will use the exact same words of the Father's Wisdom (the word of God);

- Wisdom has something for you to eat—the S/W has something for you to eat;

- Wisdom has something for your to drink—the S/W has something for you to drink.

- And again—even at this advanced stage in the son’s education, he can be so deceived that he doesn’t have a clue what the S/W’s agenda is (unless the Father tells him) ...

(notice) - (:18)

- The religious system of “the strange woman” is a very cleverly designed counterfeit to godly Wisdom and godly edification!

- And the truth is—it’s easy to look at other churches around you and see that there is a lot of games, gimmicks, programs, & entertainment going on—but there is no real godly edification taking place ...

... but when Paul tells you about these people—he tells you that they show up right in your assembly (right in your midst) [ex. Rom. 16:17-18—they have “*good words and fair speeches*”] - and it’s easy to get sucked in by that!

- And all this tells you that the S/W is more dangerous in a lot of ways than the E/M is — (because you’re thinking all along that you’re pursuing the right thing) —

— (she’s got ‘understanding’ for the ‘simple’ - she’s got some doctrine that is designed to give you some answers — and she’s got something for you to drink that’s describes as “sweet” [Wisdom isn’t described that way]).

- Notice in the Pastoral Epistles how the apostle Paul warns the Pastor & Deacons how the Satanic PoE is going to attempt to infiltrate the local assembly—and when he does so, he describes 2 PARTICULAR AGENTS OF IT:

- **2 Tim. 3** (describing the state of local assemblies as the Disp/Gr. goes on—these are professing Christians!) (:1-13 [:13—2 Agents! “*evil men*” and “*seducers*” = S/W])

- Make a “Connection” - God uses a word that describes what happens to a person when this kind of seduction takes place:

- Acts 15:1-2; 22-26 [:24 **subverting**]

- 2 Tim. 2:14-18 [:14]

- Titus 1:10-11; 3:9-11

- Q: What does “**subvert**” mean? (not “overthrow”)

- *subvert* = just about every dictionary will define it as an “overthrow” or ruin of a person in mind and soul) — (Webster’s 1828) = L. *sub* and *verto*, to turn.

1. To overthrow from the foundation; to overturn; to ruin utterly. The northern nations of Europe *subverted* the Roman empire. He is the worst enemy of man, who endeavors to *subvert* the Christian religion. The elevation of corrupt men to office will slowly, but surely, *subvert* a republican government.

- But there is a shade of meaning that the word *subvert* has that other similar words don’t have:

— something or someone who is described as being *subverted* is someone who has already been **established!** *Subvert* is reserved to be used when you want to focus special attention upon the fact that this person who has been ‘overturned’ or ‘turned’ or even ‘overthrown’ was done when they had already become E-STABLISHED!

- *subvert* describes a violent overturning of a person who used to STAND FIRM—and is now rendered USELESS!

- So—there are actual human beings on this earth that are so given over to the Satanic PoE that they become (either knowingly or unknowingly; aware or unaware) the agents of the adversary on this earth—doing his bidding, and as either “evil men” or as “the strange woman”, they resist and oppose properly educated “sons” (to put out their light) and attempt to ‘separate them from the love of Christ.’

- and they do so to the tune of *tribulation, distress, persecution, famine, nakedness, peril, and sword*—(those 7 ‘Theatres of Operation’).

- Summing up the MECHANICS of the STANIC POLICY OF EVIL: There’s been enough said to you already (in Rom. 8:1-39) for you to intelligently expect to find that when it comes to the mechanics of how the PoE is going to work, that you would expect that there are at least 3 Major issues/areas that are going to come into play —

[going backwards]

1) Rom. 8:39 “*height, depth*” - the created **firmament** is going to be an issue. (must understand some things about it’s power/capacity in the hands of Satan)

2) Rom. 8:38 “*angels, principalities, powers*” - abilities/capacities of **angelic beings**—the authoritative levels & structure of the angelic realm.

3) Rom. 8:6; 8:14 (implies that you can be ‘led’ by another ‘**spirit**’!) - you’re expected to have some level of Biblical understanding and appreciation for **spiritual** matters, and the realm of the **spiritual**. [as described in God’s word].

- This 3rd Issue deals with how it is that certain human beings can be so influenced by the Satanic PoE to do such things as described in the Profile of the Evil Men (Pro. 2:12-15; 4:14-17) and the Strange Woman (Pro. 2:16-19; 5:3-14; 9:13-18).

- (and do so without some angelic or supernatural creature taking possession of their body & volition) ... Satan can easily accomplish this without doing that ... and note that being possessed by an angelic supernatural creature is NOT the same thing as being possessed by a “SPIRIT”!!!)

- Truth is—most of you have been recently spiritually possessed: (the “spirit of Christmas”) — and it caused you to do a whole bunch of things that required a lot of work on your part:

- It caused you to dress differently;
- It caused you to re-arrange and re-decorate your house differently;
- It caused you to listen to some things and watch some things you would never do in July or August;
- It caused you to visit some people you would never visit any other time of the year! (**some you don’t like**);
- It caused you to spend money on things you would never buy any other time of the year;

(don’t tell me this isn’t a POWERFUL thing—especially in the hands of the adversary who [next to God Himself] is the most skilled in the issue manipulating you on a ‘spiritual’ level!)

- And a lot of people are getting spiritually possessed right now with the ‘spirit of Easter’!

- And the big question as to how it is that human beings are so influenced to do such things as the “evil men” and “strange woman” do—is answered by such things as: ***spirits and devils!***

- There are at least 3 terms that are used for BOTH men AND angels—(but **not ALL men nor ALL angels**) ...

- SAINTS—(angels) Deut. 33:2 cp. Acts 7:53
(men) Rom. 1:7 (and most of Paul’s salutations)

- SONS—(angels) Gen. 6:2; Job 1:6
(men) Rom. 8:14; Gal. 4:5-6

- NOTE: “sons of God” is not a designation of ALL of the angels—only certain of them are called “sons of God” (such as in Gen. 6 or Job 1, 2, & 38).

They are called “sons” because of the particular roles that God gave them in connection with the issue of supervising and administering His business in the heavenly realm of creation. They are called “sons of God” in accordance with the meaning that “son/sons” has when it refers to one(s) who are schooled and trained in a vocation. Certain angels are called “sons of God” that God has particularly created to occupy roles of supervision and administration in the business of the heavenly realm of creation—and whom God endowed with the capacity and ability to do so, and set in those roles. And because of this they attend the regular ‘business meetings’ (if you will) referred to in Job 1 & 2; and they “shouted for joy” as per Job 38; and were thus able to do what they did in Genesis 6. (Again, it is a natural parallel between the heavenly and the earthly realm—which comes as no surprise).

- DEVILS—(angels) Mat. 12:22
(men) John 6:70

- Any Questions? Comments?

- BACK TO ROMANS 13:11-14.

- **REVIEW:** (Godly Conduct & Behavior of *the instruction of Judgment*)
 - (:12—*let us therefore cast off the works of darkness*)

Q: What is the *darkness* being spoken about here?

Q: What are the **works** of *darkness*?

Q: What does it mean to **cast off** the *works of darkness*?
 (i.e., how exactly do you *cast* them off?)

Q: Why would you want to *cast off the works of darkness*?
 (the godly Thinking of :11-12a [:12a])

- (:12—*and let us put on the armour of light.*)

Q: What is the *light* being spoken about here?

Q: What is the *armour of light*?

Q: What does it mean to **put on** the *armour of light*?
 (i.e., how exactly do you *put* in on?)

Q: *Armour* is a defensive covering worn by someone who is fighting—What exactly is the *armour of light*?
 (i.e., what does the *armour* consist of that makes it a means of defense [or a means of preventing harm from the enemy])?
 (the *discretion* and *understanding*)

- **discretion** (in the context of Level I Sonship Education) =
to utilize the godly wisdom of Romans 12:3-16 and the godly justice of Romans 12:17-13:7 in order to make the godly judgments of Romans 13:8-14—and by doing so, make fine, keen, and insightful decisions (not only between what is right or wrong, wise or foolish; but between what is good, better, or best) as a son of my Heavenly Father that would so regulate my conduct and behavior so as to not bring disrepute, disgrace, or discredit upon my godly conversation.

- This particular kind of *discretion* will safely **preserve** the son from the destructive and dangerous **influences** of the Satanic policy of evil.

- **understanding** (in the context of Level I Sonship Education) = **to share the exact same spirit of his Father regarding the curriculum for his godly edification and education.** Because of having his Father's spirit on this matter, the son shares with the Father the same intelligence, comprehension, sentiments (love, likes, dislikes, hatred) and mutually acts upon that spirit regarding the curriculum the exact same way.

- This particular kind of *understanding* will provide for the son to safely hold on to his *love of Christ* and not be separated from it.

- Romans 12:3-13:14 when effectually working within you—that is, when positively & properly responded to by grace through faith, resulting in it being written upon the fleshy tables of your heart—Romans 12:3-13:14 becomes the POWER SUPPLY that makes the *discretion* and the *understanding* the powerful parts of your *armour* that will save & *deliver* you from the attacks of the adversary.

- ROMANS 13:13

13 Let us walk honestly, as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying.

- The godly Thinking of (:11-12a) generates 3 proper features to our godly Living—indicated by the expression, “***Let us***” ...

- 1) ***let us therefore cast off the works of darkness***
- 2) ***let us put on the armour of light***

- Now we get the 3rd proper feature of our godly conduct & behavior in connection with our *instruction of judgment* ...

3) ***Let us walk honestly, as in the day;***

- (this is the 3rd major way in which the doctrine contained in the godly Thinking is designed to be deployed by you as a son)

- In other words, the proper effectual working of the godly Thinking DEMANDS these 3 features of the godly Living as the ‘natural outlet’ for that godly Thinking!

- And just as the 1st & 2nd “*let us*” features of the godly Living came naturally out of the godly Thinking of that saying for the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. Grace (*the night is far spent, the day is at hand*) - so, too, does this 3rd and final feature of our godly Living find its natural outlet coming from that same powerful saying!

- Point is—without the effectual working of that **saying** (the GT), THIS MAKES NO SENSE!!!

(what it is **NOT** talking about)

- **Let us walk honestly, as in the day;** — most commonly handled as: ‘walk as if all your actions were seen and known’; ‘live decently in the open light’; ‘bad people do their wicked deeds at night’; ‘live as though you have nothing to conceal’; etc.

- Most don't have a clue as to what the “**day**” is ...

- don't pay attention: because the “**day**” has already been defined in (:12a)!

- and most make a mess of this because they don't “*rightly divide the word of truth*” - therefore they don't understand anything about **the Disp. Timing of this Disp/Gr.!**

- The “day” here is NOT physical day in contrast with physical night! (**the “day” is “The Day of the Lord”!**)

- In the **context** of the Disp. Timing of this Disp/Gr (*The night is far spent, the day is at hand;*) ... in view of that being true ... and in view of our godly Conduct & Behavior of *casting off the works of darkness, and putting on the armour of light—the next, natural thing for that godly Thinking to affect and make an impact upon is the details of your life! — or your WALK.*

- “**Let us**” (not, ‘You’re ordered to walk ...’ or ‘I command you to ...’)

- “**Let**” = a natural request based upon, and consistent with the CONTEXT and the GODLY THINKING!

- “*Let us*” - again, just as with the previous 2 “*let us*” features—our Father employs ‘sonship language’ — because He’s dealing with us as ADULTS, not children, and not as a Captain to a Private—but rather, we’re **entreated** to take the godly Thinking to its final result in our godly Conduct & Behavior.

- (you don't have to be ‘ordered’ if the godly Thinking has done its job!)

- Notice: “**Let US**” — as in all 3 phrases, it implies on one level, the activity described is going to be done by all the saints in Rome (therefore, **all** of the members of the “*one body in Christ*” are to be engaged in this, both individually, and **together**—[and at the time in which the book of Romans was written, that included the apostle Paul as well]) ...

... on another level—since this is our Heavenly Father’s curriculum for our godly Sonship Education—we’re going to be doing this along WITH our Father and with His Son, the Lord Jesus Christ! ... He’s going to engage in this WITH us!

- “Let us WALK ...”

- “walk” is a word that is often used in God’s word in connection with our putting our sanctified position “in Christ” into practice.

- Most (not all, but most) of the new trns. change the word *walk* to something else—(such as: ‘behave’; ‘conduct’; ‘live’) - and while all those are legitimate similar terms, let’s appreciate why the word **walk** is the most excellent word to use when God wants to describe putting our sanctified, sonship life into practice.

- “walk” (simple as it is), brings to your mind, and has some shades of meaning that ‘behave/conduct/live’ et al, just don’t have! (more than just simple wording, it acts as a t.t.)

- “walk” (or one of its forms) in the book of Romans:

- Occurs 6x

- “walk” - 4:12 (following the pattern of Abraham in the issue of Justification)
 - 6:4 (*walk in newness of life*)
 - 8:1, 4 (*walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit*)
 - 13:13 (*walk honestly, as in the day*)

- “walkest” - 14:15 (*now walkest thou not charitably*)

- “**walk**” - as with other rather simple terms and expressions found in the Bible, the tendency is to make simple terms not so simple when they are expounded on or taught—especially when you make a so-called “correction” to the text—and you end up making something that is supposed to be simple, something that is much more difficult than it needs to be.

- The verbal expression “walk” is used by God because it is the appropriate word to use to describe exactly what the godly Thinking is ‘driving at’ (so to speak) or prompting you to do. (to go into action; to deploy that GT in the details of your life)

- and right now your thinking is: because of the Disp. Timing of this Disp./Grace—to *cast off the works of darkness, and put on the armour of light—and walk honestly as in the day!* (in other words, to **properly** and **successfully** make godly judgments, just like your Father has taught you (and just like He does).

- And by putting your sanctified, sonship life into practice regarding making godly judgments—you're going to **walk—you're going to engage in an activity that is going to have you **successfully** **MAKING PROGRESS and DOING something.**** (That's what *walking* does!)

- And the issue now is: you are going to successfully make progress, and put your godly judgment decision-making skills into practice by **walking honestly, as in the day.**

- Remember that your sanctified, sonship **position** “in Christ” is a STATIC STATUS—(you're **standing** in a position) - but when you begin to **walk**, you actually start taking that static position you're in, and putting it into a progressive practice!

- And this is NOT legalism! Because just as you were taught back in Romans 6:1-8:13, this is the godly methodology in connection with putting the entirety of your sanctified position “in Christ” into practice!!!

- (by grace, through faith—not under the law, but under grace—you're **not** going to merely stand in who you are as God's son—but you're going to **walk** in it—and put it into practice in the details of your life).

- And **WALK** IS the most excellent expression for what you are expected to do with your new-found godly Thinking concerning the Disp. Timing of this Disp/Grace ...

... **and here is the shade of meaning** that the term *walk* carries (that other words don't [or don't do as powerfully]) ... here is why the simple word *walk* was carefully chosen by your Father—because it's designed to indicate and imply something that is going to become the focal point to this 3rd feature of your godly Conduct & Behavior

- When you *walk*, you no longer stand in a position (simple, right?) ... *walking* means that you no longer just have a position and do nothing about it—no—you start taking the position you've got, and you start implementing it and taking it places!

- And the critical issue in *walking* is: YOU START MAKING AN **IMPACT** WITH YOUR POSITION AS A SON WHEREVER YOU GO!

- (you make an IMPACT—[a particular, designed impact] as an intelligent son (as a properly educated, and properly edified son of God with godly wise, just, and judgmental decision-making skills!)

- now—we've got to get a much better understanding & appreciation for this issue we've talked about many times so far: an IMPACT — (we've got to understand that far better than ever before!) [as is; it's much too vague!] (this will greatly make a difference in our participation in the Lord's Table!)

- "*Let us walk **honestly**, ...*"

- *honestly* (or *honest*) - we've encountered this term once before— (back in Romans 12:17 {Justice} *Provide things **honest** in the sight of all men.*)

- While it is true that *honest* or *honestly* (honest-like) means upright; fair in dealing with others; not a sham or a fraud; etc. — *honest* also carries the meaning of suitable or TRUE!

- Hence, **true to who you really are as a son "in Christ"!**

- The basic & general idea of *walk honestly* is the issue of conducting & behaving yourself by what is suitable, consistent, and TRUE to who you are as a son "in Christ" — and especially as a member of the new creature of the church, the body of Christ in this present Disp/Grace in which you live!

- But that's **not** good enough for this passage—because the **context** weighs heavily upon (and provides for) the exactness & fine precision of what it means to *walk honestly* in this particular context.

- You have to be more precise & more accurate than merely saying that this means to walk consistent and true to who you really are as a “son” in Christ ...

... because this is NOT merely a re-hash or restatement of our sanctified position “in Christ” (Rom. 6:1-8:39) ...

... this is an ADVANCE upon what we have learned so far— with some ADVANCED information that we’ve been given.

- This issue of *walking honestly* has in view the **close and immediate context** of the godly Thinking contained in (:11-12a)!

- (you’ve just been given some advanced information by your Father concerning *the instruction of godly judgment* regarding your wise use of Time, and the Dispensational Timing of this Disp/Grace.)

- Therefore the issue of you *walking honestly* or TRUE to who you really are as a son “in Christ” - is specifically driving at the issue of you making an **impact** wherever you go **that is TRUE to the immediate information** you’ve received (and that is effectually working within you) **from Romans 13:11-12a!**

- **That** information now demands that you implement the virtues and principles that are operating within your mind (human spirit) wherever you go in the details of your life!

- By the way—every time you are confronted with the issue of conducting & behaving yourself (or *walking*) *honestly*— it’s set in a context where there is a real danger (and a powerful influence) for you to NOT behave or walk TRUE to who you really are “in Christ”!

- (and that is certainly the case here!) [evil men/SW]

- In the godly Thinking portion—we’ve encountered some very powerful *sayings*—out of which have come some very powerful Operating Principles:

- ***now it is high time to awake out of sleep:***

- Main O.P’s.:**
- 1) Don’t waste time!
 - 2) Find more time!
 - 3) Make the best use of time!

- now is our salvation nearer than when we believed

- Main O.P's.:
- 1) You could die at any moment!
 - 2) The Disp/Grace could end at any moment!
 - 3) Be not highminded, but fear!
 - 4) Prepare to function in "his life"!

- the night is far spent, the day is at hand

- Main O.P's.:
- 1) Intelligent understanding of the Disp. Timing of this d/g.
 - 2) While postponed, Satan's "night" and the "works of darkness" that are its life-blood must be maintained for the duration of this d/g.
 - 3) The Day of the Lord's wrath is ever "at hand."
 - 4) My desire is to express my Father's godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for the "works of darkness".

- Point: the exhortation to *walk honestly* is not a broad/general or poetic expression for you to conduct yourself consistently with who you are "in Christ" in just any old general way (i.e., WWJD) ...

... rather, it is to make a particular IMPACT wherever you go with the *armour of light* you have now *put on* in view of having *cast off the works of darkness*.

- When you're told to *walk honestly, as in the day*—that's NOT telling you to walk in a some way that's **any different** from *casting off the works of darkness, and putting on the armour of light* ...

... rather, it's telling you that there is **something else** that you are going to be doing that's directly connected with that gesture of *casting off the works of darkness, and putting on the armour of light*—there is one other thing that the godly Thinking is going to have us naturally do ...

... and that 'other thing' is wrapped up in that expression, *Let us walk honestly, as in the day*...

... and just by the phrase *Let us walk honestly*—it's supposed to alert you to the fact that whatever it is that you're going to be doing—it's going to have to do with you making an impact in a particular Operation of God!

... and furthermore—that word *honestly* tells you that this impact you're to make in this particular Operation of God is directly related to that godly Thinking of the night is far spent, the day is at hand!

... it's taking that overt act of *casting off the works of darkness, and putting on the armour of light*—and doing so on a consistent, constant basis—you're *walk* (in all the details of your life) is going to consistently be *honest* and **true** to your newly installed godly Thinking about the Disp. Timing of this Disp/Grace.

- Simply put—the issue of *walking honestly* in this context, is the issue of you conducting and behaving yourself in all of the details of your life **TRUE to the Disp. Timing of this Disp/Grace.** (and if you don't know what that means, then you can't *walk honestly* in this context!)

- (And that's **Step 1** of this 3rd feature of our godly Conduct & Behavior) ... *Let us walk honestly,* ...

- **Step 2:** ... *as in the day;*

- We are to *walk honestly* (true to who we are as “sons” with a proper understanding & appreciation for not only the Disp/Grace in which we live; but also for the Disp. Timing of this Disp/Grace) - and we are to do so **as in the day.**

- “*the day*” = The Day of the Lord—(NOT some euphemism or metaphor for Christians to ‘come out of the closet’!)

- Now we need to be very careful here—because if we don't, we can make the mistake of thinking that we're supposed to be living and functioning either as the Mem/Rem/Isr; or utilizing the information contained in Heb-Rev; or operating in some manner in God's “TO COME” portion of his prog./w/Isr.

- But really—that shouldn't be a danger here at all—why? ... because of Rom. 9, 10, & 11!!!!

- So why didn't God say, *Let us walk honestly; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in* — but he said *Let us walk honestly, as in the day* (and the only “day” in this context is in [:12], the Day of the Lord)

... to be honest—if you don't understand the Disp. Timing of this Disp/Grace—while you might not make the mistake of thinking that we're supposed to be operating in God's "TO COME" portion of His prog/w/isr (because of Rom. 9-11) - the truth is, you'll still be at a loss as to what in the world this is talking about (and end up back with the commentators saying this means to live openly as a Christian).

- So—What is *walking honestly, as in the day* talking about?

- (there's a whole bunch of things going on in the Day of the Lord)

... are we supposed to

- walk as Mem/Rem/Isr? (Mt. 6:25)
- get the Temple going?
- as if Jesus was coming today to set up His kingdom?
- as if the Palestinians are really going to get theirs!?
- elect someone who will 'hit the nuclear button'??? [to hasten the Day of the Lord] - no—Rom.12:19! (cp., Isa. 2:4 w/ Joel 3:10)

- *walking honestly* is to conduct & behave yourself TRUE to who you really are "in Christ" as a "son" who is now putting the godly Thinking of Romans 13:11-12a into practice in the details of your life.

- It's NOT walking true to who you really are "in Christ" **in general** ... it's MORE than that!

- It's NOT walking true to who you really are sanctification wise as you learned in Rom. 6:1-11:36 ... it's MORE than that!

- It's walking true to the reality and the effectual working of that sonship saying, *the night is far spent, the day is at hand!* **(the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace!)**

- And *walking honestly, as in the day* (in general) is to **conduct & behave yourself as if The Day of the Lord is here already!**

... but, of course, The Day of the Lord is NOT here ... which is why it says **AS** *in the day* . (not that it really is here)

- Now if that sounds a bit confusing to you—we need to get some further explanation ...

- This is really being very PRECISE—there’s a whole bunch of things that will be going on out in the Day of the Lord that can have a bearing upon a person’s conduct & behavior.

... (most of which are things only a person who is a Mem/ Rem/Isr would be doing, NOT a member of the church, the body of Christ!)

- so what’s the solution? ... simple—rather than hunting and pecking at one thing or another at random that will be going on out in the Day of the Lord—you have to look at the **immediate context** of Romans 13:11-14 to see if this is narrowed down at all ... and you find that it is!

- The context of Romans 13:11-14 tells you that there is **1 particular thing** that God is driving at for you to put into practice as His “son” in the details of your life.

- And when you recognize what that 1 thing is—then it makes perfect sense to say, *walk honestly, as in the day* (as if the Day of the Lord is already here)!

- So what we’re looking at is 1 particular, narrow issue that is identified & defined and brought to our attention by the **immediate context** of Romans 13:11 & 12!

- Based upon the godly Thinking of the Disp. Timing of this D/o/G as expressed in that saying, *The night is far spent, the day* (the Day of the Lord) *is at hand*: ... what has your godly Conduct & Behavior been doing so far?

A: *casting off the works of darkness and putting on the armour of light.*

- So what is the major issue that’s being focused upon in that first section of godly Conduct & Behavior?

A: *the works of darkness*

- And out in The Day of the Lord—what is He going to do to those

works of darkness???

A: He's going to JUDGE those things as the vile, disgusting, appalling, abhorrent, hated things that they are to the Holiness and Righteousness of God—and God is going to execute His **wrath** upon those things—and He's going to **destroy & obliterate** them ... right?

- BUT! does that mean that we're supposed to pour out our wrath upon them? are we supposed to destroy and obliterate them by *walking honestly, as in the day???*

— NO — (again, Rom. 12:17-21!)

- So—what does that leave you with—(to **DO** Conduct & Behavior-wise)???

... well, there's something missing/lacking in our understanding ... (so let's correct that) ...

- There's something we're supposed to have already learned about God as a "Father" (His character & essence) back in God's prog. w/ Israel (in the OT).

- "**living God**" - Gen. 3:8; Deu. 5:22-26 (:26); Jer. 10:10
 [Paul mentions in Rom. 9:26]
 [also **read** 2 Cor. 3:3!]
 [also 2 Cor 6:16; 1 Thes. 1:9;
 1 Tim. 3:15; 1 Tim. 4:10; 1 Tim. 6:17]

- Notice when God speaks about His wrath—pouring out His wrath—judging and destroying wickedness and these *works of darkness* **out in His Day**—pay attention to the terminology surrounding that issue as He describes it to the nation Israel back in God's Prog/w/Isr.

- On the positive side— 2 Kings 19:31 [Hezekiah's Prayer]

ZEAL

- On the judgment side of things— Isa. 9:1-7 (:7)

Isa. 37:31-36

- Isa. 59 ... (:16-20) [:17]

- Ezek. 5:13

- (and we could do the same thing with "*jealousy*") Ezk. 36:6

Zec 1:18; Zec. 8:2

- So, what's the point?

- For one thing—as *the living God*, interacting with His creation—God has never determined to function as a reclusive robot—but rather, as *the LIVING God*, to manifest either His great love, mercy, patience, PLEASURE, etc. — or to manifest His great hatred, abhorrence, disgust, and DISPLEASURE! (His Attitude!)

- For another thing—God is NOT physically here! ... **but we are!** (His “sons” are here!)

- And built within the Sonship Curriculum—and since the whole issue in sonship edification is the issue of “Like Father, like son”, or being a “man after God’s own heart” — built within the Sonship Curriculum are these opportunities for us to function in, and engage in AN OPERATION OF GOD.

- And what you begin to see is—these OPERATIONS of God are actually making is to that, as you participate in them, you begin to manifest and put into effect the very LIFE of God (*the living God*) in His creation—AND (as it were) IN HIS STEAD (while His is physically absent from this earth)!

- And that goes for both physical issues, as well as soul and spirit issues (sentiments, emotions, attitudes, etc.) ... that is, the whole “LIVING” issue!

- In other words—God has determined not only to take the members of the church, the body of Christ and educated them as His “sons” in order to one day put His whole life into effect in the creature ... but He has provided for us to be trained to do that very thing by having us function in His various OPERATIONS here on earth! (We get the high privilege of, [by our sonship vocational training], to make the kind of IMPACT God Himself would be making upon this earth if He were physically here!!!)

- (see the physical aspect: Rom. 12:13 [notes])

- (this is a soul & spirit issue in Rom. 13:13!) - God has made it an Operation of His grace in this Disp/of/Grace to keep His zeal for the hatred/disgust of *the works of darkness* manifest—and to keep the adversary, therefore AWARE of God’s ZEAL in connection with judging those *works of darkness*!

- In view of our understanding & appreciation of the Disp. Timing of this Disp/Grace (as stated in our saying, *The night is far spent, the day is at hand*) - and in view of that, we conduct ourselves accordingly: by *casting off the works of darkness and putting on the armour of light*—as we take the ‘light’ of God’s Truth and expose those *works of darkness* for what they are to the adversary and his Plan of Evil—

— the final aspect of our godly conduct & behavior is to take our Father’s own **Attitude** that He has manifested in His “Time Past” portion of His prog/w/Isr (and will manifest in The Day of the Lord when He judges and destroys those *works of darkness*) and we are to manifest that same Attitude as we *walk* with it wherever we go; and make an IMPACT by it on the world around us wherever we go in this Disp/of Grace.

- That’s what you’re doing when you’re *walking honestly, as in the day!*

- And we have to understand that **that’s what our Father wants done!**

- And he wants that done because it’s part of His contention with the adversary!

- And just to get the proper and effectual working of all this—we need to go back to something we were told about in the portion of God’s word that gave us our initial Dispensational Establishment back in **Romans chapter 9.**

- And what I’m after is to look at some passages that make it clear that this manifestation of God’s Attitude (of outrage, disgust, hatred, disdain, abhorrence, etc.) in its PEAK/ PRIME/ HEIGHT/ ZENITH AND FULL STRENGTH when He was ready (and will be equally as ready) *to make his power known upon those vessels of wrath fitted to destruction*

... that even though the Disp/Grace has temporarily put that judgment ‘on hold’ ... nevertheless, the manifestation of God’s Attitude toward those *works of darkness* really is a real, genuine and true part of His contention with the adversary (it was, and it still is)!

- And when it comes to those *works of darkness* that were brought to their ‘red-hot’ status when *the night became far spent*—and that are kept by the adversary in their ‘red-hot’ status throughout this Disp/Grace (ready for his use when he gets his ‘finest hour’) ...

... the issue is that over the span of 2016 years (and however much longer this Disp/Grace lasts) - God has determined to make the adversary ever aware that He isn’t ignoring those things at all—God’s not forgetting about them—He’s not losing any degree of loathing/disgust/hatred/abhorrence for them ...

... His disdain for them isn’t something that is ‘waning’ - His wrath and judgment for them isn’t diminishing—His anger isn’t ‘cooling off’!

- And going hand-in-hand with God’s disdain/hatred/contempt for the ungodliness of man and the *works of darkness* is that component of His Attitude that we have recognized as HIS ZEAL ...

... and His ZEAL is particularly in connection with His **JUDGMENT** for those things!

- And with the manifestation of God’s ZEAL for judging those *works of darkness*—it makes it so that you realize that there is a purpose for taking vengeance on those things; there’s a purpose for judging those things ...

... and therefore, there is a mind-set of God that is NOT going to weaken; or get fainter; or grow old and tired’
no matter how much time goes by!

- And truth is—God went about making that evident and manifest back in His Prog/w/Isr—(especially from the time of the Prophets; and with Daniel being given a time schedule for the 5th CoP) - all of which was going to take quite a long time [over 500 years] ...

... 400 years of which were ‘silent’

... see the zeal of John the Baptist

... see the zeal of the Lord Jesus Christ (moneychangers in Mat. 21—the “woes” of Mat. 23)

- But then—on top of those 500+ years to the time schedule for the 5th CoP—(when God is in the process of bringing about *the end of the world*) ... He unexpectedly suspended His prog/w/Isr and revealed *the mystery of Christ* by brining in this Disp/ of Gentile grace—and that’s gone on now for over 2000 years!

- And therefore, one of the Operations of God’s Business in this Disp/of Grace is to keep that Zeal for the judgment of *the works of darkness* manifest (clearly understood in the sight of men) - and manifest to the adversary, Satan himself!

- God is NOT going to judge them in this Disp/Grace — (no matter how long it lasts)

- And the adversary could therefore get the idea that as time goes on; the longer the Disp/of Grace remains in effect; the longer God remains “longsuffereing” then God’s zeal for judging *the works of darkness* lessens; wanes; abates ...

... maybe there’s a softening of His attitude—or a weakening of His resolve to have His “Day” — maybe His temper is cooling down ...

- But God has determined to make His Attitude of His zeal for judging *the works of darkness* something that His properly taught & trained “sons” have the privilege of working together with Him to put on display while His physical presence (and the physical presence of His Son) are not on the earth!

- And that’s what you are doing when you *walk honestly, as in the day*—it’s the issue of walking as if the Day of the Lord were already here when it comes to God’s Attitude of zeal for judging those *works of darkness* ...

... and that issue of God’s hatred/abhorrence/disdain for them and His zeal to judge them and destroy them—all that issue is kept FRESH/ vibrant / energetic by the members of the church, the body of Christ throughout this Disp./of/Grace.

- Back in Rom. 9 is a passage that makes it clear that this is exactly what we are to do—that is, in view of the Disp. Timing of this D/G, we are to be *walking honestly, as in the day* (as if the D/L is here!)

- There's a reason for us to be *walking honestly, as in the day*— there's a reason for us to, (by our *honest walk*,) make it evident that we understand and appreciate that the Day of the Lord's judgment/wrath upon those *works of darkness* is coming.

- And we're going to do that in order to make a particular IMPACT upon the adversary and his PoE—and because of that, it's actually part of our *armour of light*! (it's part of the impact and influence we're supposed to have upon the adversary himself)

- Romans 9

- Dispensational Establishment—God's not done with His prog/w/Isr—just because He's being “longsuffering”, that's not a cancellation of His prog/w/Isr—and He's not being unrighteous by what He's done in suspending His prog. with them and turning to us Gentiles. (it's only temporary)
 - He's holding back His wrath now—but that doesn't mean His wrath has been done away with!

- I'm after some verses that follow our initial passage we looked at that gave us the backdrop/background for God bringing in this Disp./Grace.

- (read :22-24) - that's a rhetorical question within a group of questions that go to the issue of a series of objections in connection with God suspending His prog/w/Isr and bringing in a new Disp/Gr.

- and the only way God could be unrighteous is if He never returned to His prog/w/Isr and fulfilled it and poured out His wrath and judged those vessels of wrath fitted to destruction!

- Then in (:25-29), Paul underscores the fact that the very things that God said back in the Prophets concerning His dealings with Israel (and some examples of His dealings with Israel) - He is going to resume dealing with them in the very manner He was dealing with them at the time He suspended His prog. with them. (God's not going to be a liar!)

- And God has the apostle Paul select some specific passages that deal with God having his Day of Wrath—and focusing upon His judging of those *works of darkness* (in apostate Israel & in the world).

- The passage I'm after is (:27-28) - [which is a reference to Isaiah 10]

- and that' passage comes from a context that not only describes the fact that God is going to have His Day of Wrath (and the vessels of wrath that constitute apostate Israel are going to be destroyed) - and the Remnant that has been spoken about is going to be left—and the Rem. is going to get the kingdom

... but this passage also is sitting in a particular context in which the adversary's 'finest hour' is also dealt with!

- And this particular context that deals with the adversary's 'finest hour' is dealt with in view of all that he has done in the past to bring *the world of the ungodly* to its climactic point with *the night being far spent*—and doing so by some particular *works* that sat in the middle of all of that ungodliness that kept on fueling that and making it more and more vile & disgusting to God—and that ensnared Israel in it more and more—and made that apostate system all that much more offensive & disgusting to God ...

... and the issue is—that per Romans 9:27-28, God comes along and teaches us to not get the idea in any way that either the Day of the Lord is **not** coming; or that when the Day of the Lord does come, it's going to come in a weaker form than had been prophesied about, or that there might be some diminishing, some waning, or some abating of His ZEAL to have His Day and to execute His judgments in His full fury!

- But also—in that very same passage that is designed to make US aware of all that—there's also the capacity in those passages for the adversary himself to come along and realize that, because God took the very passage in Isaiah 10 that deals with His Day from the perspective of the adversary's 'finest hour' that immediately precedes it—the adversary himself is not to get the idea that no matter how long God is "longsuffering" in this Disp./Grace, that He's loosing any abhorrence and loathing for those *works of darkness*!

- God is not loosing one ounce of His ZEAL for **judging** and **destroying** those *works of darkness*!

- And based upon God making that an issue with us in this Disp.Gr. — that's an aspect of our Father's business not only with us—but it's an aspect of His business in connection with His contention with the adversary!

- He wants that issue kept FRESH / ALIVE / VIBRANT & VITAL throughout this Disp/Gr. no matter how long His “longsuffering” remains in effect!

- And for us—in Romans 13:13—as we *cast off the works of darkness, and put on the armour of light*—and as we *walk honestly, as in the day* (of the Lord) — we get to participate in an Operation of our Father that allows for us to put on display in this world our Father’s ZEAL for judging those *works of darkness*—and keep that issue fresh/alive/vibrant and vital for the duration of this Disp/Gr.!

- As we *walk honestly as in the day* (the Day of the Lord) - we get to manifest that Attitude of hatred for the *works of darkness* and that Zeal for God judging & destroying them just as if that Day is here right now!

(THE “IMPACT” ISSUE):

- And we’re doing that to make the adversary constantly aware in his thinking that that Day is coming—and it’s like we’re saying to him, ‘Just as your attitude and your zeal is strong to keep those *works of darkness* in their red-hot status so you can have your legal right to your ‘finest hour’ ...

know this: that our Father’s attitude is just as strong, and His Zeal is just as ‘red-hot’ as it always has been to have His Day following your ‘finest hour’!!!!

- And that’s an aspect of our Father’s business in connection with His contention with the adversary that we have the privilege of participating in, in connection with this aspect of our *instruction* of godly *judgment*!

- And as part of your godly *judgment*, you need to have that kind of **discretion/understanding/** and **awareness**—and have insightful, keen ‘figuring out’ that that’s what you’re doing when you *walk honestly, as in the day!* ... with your *armour of light* (of the Truth of God’s word) providing you the **protection** of being **preserved** from the influence of this evil world, and being **kept** from ever being *separated from the love of Christ*—and therefore being **delivered** from the *evil men* and the *strange woman!* ... and you’re going to have to figure out just how you are going to put this into effect in the details of your life BY your godly *judgment*!

- (read :27-28)

- That “*short work*” is what takes place in The Lord’s Day—and sums up the Lord’s **zealous judgment** of and **consuming** of the apostate, rebellious, VRS of Israel (having come under the total influence of Satan’s PoE), and leaving behind a remnant.

- how small will the remnant be? (:29) as small as a *seed!* (that’s how great the destruction of God’s judgment will be! and it will be just as zealous as when He destroyed Sodom & Gomorrah with all 3 categories of the *works of darkness* in operation! [LoF/LoE/PoL])

- And what we’ll see is—that when Isaiah *cries* this *concerning Israel* ... that *short work* that *the Lord makes upon the earth* occurs right at the very END of the time when the adversary has his ‘finest hour’.

- And one of the last things Satan does (that offers him a huge shining light of ‘hope’ for being able to still hold on to this world as “the prince of the world”) is to produce his “Christ” so that **all** of Israel will side with him [just as all the world has done]! (we get to STOMP on his ‘hope’!!!)

- Romans 9:27-28 is taken from Isaiah 10:22-23.

- (see **Isaiah 10**) - and the point here is to show that it’s perfectly right and proper to have the adversary in view—and God’s contention with him in view because back here in Isa. 10 the adversary is in the context!

- And by Romans 9:27-28 taking you back here to Isaiah 10, you’re being taught that when it comes to God’s judgment and destruction of those *vessels of wrath fitted to destruction* along with their *works of darkness* (in both apostate Israel and in the world at-large) when He finally does have His “Day” - you’re taught that God zeal and wrath in judging those things hasn’t diminished one bit! (or lessened/abated)

- And the context here has the great ‘hope’ of the adversary in view just before God has His “Day” [increasing his confidence with his christ; the Assyrian] - and just as he gets to having his ‘finest hour’ and thinking he’s going to succeed in his contention with God ...

... in that very passage God comes along and declares that when He has His “Day” (and when it ends up leaving only a small remnant of Israel) - it likewise ends up destroying the adversary’s “man” and his ‘finest hour’!

- (read :20-23)

- (:21— “*the mighty God*” = refers to the LJC as the Deliverer in fulfillment of the 2nd Mandate of the Davidic Cov.)

VERSES REFERRED TO BY PAUL IN ROMANS 9:27-28 —

- (:22) - “*the consumption decreed*” = is what’s decreed in connection with the Day of the Lord’s Wrath to consume all that the adversary is doing especially in the land of Isr. (apostate Israel) and to leave a remnant.

- “*shall overflow with righteousness*” = because the kingdom get established following the Lord’s Day.

- (:23) - “*shall make a consumption, even determined,*” = indicates that the consuming judgment of God in His Day is going to be exactly as it has been described (even with over 500 yrs of time elapsing in Israel’s prog. — and now with us, adding 2000 + more years [and however long God determines to be “longsuffering” in this Disp./Gr.]) ... the Day of the Lord’s Wrath is going to take place in ALL ITS POWER AND FURY! (nothing waning)

- And a whole bunch of passages could have been cited to state this same thing—but this passage has a particular context of the adversary having his ‘finest hour’ immediately preceding the Day of the Lord! (with the adversary being successful with Israel to such a degree that he gains maximum confidence that he can successfully escape the Lord’s Day of Wrath!)

- (see :5) - this was true at the time (with Sennacherib) - who is a type of the antichrist (the man of sin).
[views the 1st Install. and the 5th Install.]

- (see :24-25) = further describes the Lord’s Day.

- Point is—as we’re taught about our Dispensational Establishment in Romans 9ff—we are taught that not only will God resume and

fulfill His prog/w/Isr just as if this Disp/Gr. hadn't happened—but we're also taught that no matter how long God is “longsuffering” in this Disp/Gr., He's still going to have the same hatred/abhorrence/contempt for those *vessels of wrath fitted to destruction* (and for those *works of darkness*) - and He's still going to have the same level of fury and zeal for judging those *works of darkness* when He has His Day.

- And it also serves notice to the adversary that God is **not** softening one bit concerning judging and destroying his 'man of sin' and that Plan & Policy of Evil!

- And the issue is—God wants that made known in this Disp./Gr. That's an Operation of His Business in connection with His dealings with the adversary throughout this Disp/Gr. (it's not His only Operation, but it's an aspect of His overall Operations w/ adversary)

- And we have the privilege of engaging in this Operation of our Father's business in His contention with the adversary. **How?**

- with the adversary keeping those *works of darkness* in their red-hot status—as we *cast off the works of darkness, and put on the armour of light* and as we *walk honestly as in the day* we get to keep the adversary ever & always aware of the red-hot status of God's attitude and wrath and judgment of his precious 'pets' (those *works of darkness*)!!!

- The influence and the IMPACT of that *light* is like a goading thorn (so to speak) in that adversary's side—which is why he's provoked and why he wants that *light* put out!

- And that's what it means to *walk honestly, as in the day!*

- Along with this: are these Parallel Tracks of Information that are also at work to *conform us to the image of Christ* and to the emulation of our Father: (a further designed purpose and result of our godly edification contained in the curriculum for our sonship education).

- # 59—(see additional notes)
[installments]

- makes it so you would want nothing to do with this world!

... but the impact you're to make now is designed to move from this world into the heavenly places! (where there is also great darkness; great *works of darkness*)!

- We're getting our first taste of participating with our Father in aspects of His business Operations in **His contention with the adversary** ... but this is only the beginning!

- Eph. 3:9-12

- Eph. 6:10-12

- #49 Godly Living

- The remainder of (:13 and :14) deals with the KIND of opposition we can expect to receive from the adversary's Policy of Evil.

- And more often than not (and as is the case here) - when you have an exhortation to live *honestly*, or be *honest*, or "*Let us walk honestly*" - you should perceive that there is a real danger (and a real tendency in our flesh) to NOT do that!

- And what I'm after here is that the nature of our opposition in Rom. 13:13 (and the KIND of opposition we're to expect to receive) is going to have something to do with those next 6 things listed in (:13).

- (see #50)

- And my understanding is that the kind of opposition we're to expect is in the area of TEMPTATION—of being tempted in these 6 areas—to provide opportunity for us to soften our stance toward them.

- And this is going to be the major issue for us in our first round of opposition from the adversary's PoE ...

... temptation is going to be the major feature to what we've come to expect in our first round: TRIBULATION (ro8:35)

- "**Tribulation**" is a context sensitive word—(the LJC uses it in Mat. 24:21 "*great tribulation*")

- (as we've noted) *Tribulation* is the issue of TROUBLE.

- but you need to know what KIND of trouble—(it could be mild all the way to severe/intense)

- What is the difference between “tribulation” and “trouble”?

- Why doesn't God use the word “trouble” instead of “tribulation”?

A: **“tribulation” is trouble with purpose and design to it!**
(i.e., purposed trouble)

- We don't use the word *tribulation* unless we have purpose and design behind it—someone purposely brings the trouble to pass—it doesn't just happen by chance—it's not a matter of 'bad luck'.

- [The Great Tribulation = God designed it and brings it to pass]

- And the adversary now has the right to 'trouble' us in a particular area: in our understanding of the Disp/Timing of this Disp/of/Gr. with *the night being far spent, and the day being at hand* and in our Cond./Behav. as we *cast off the works of darkness and put on the armour of light, and as we walk honestly, as in the day.*

- And the trouble he causes is to get our light to be dimmed or completely put out.

- and the emphasis is going to be on **any degree** of dimming our light (that's as far as he's concerned).

- And the kind of *tribulation* (mild at first) that we're going to receive is really NOT of a physical nature—the *tribulation* is designed to go after our Godly Thinking—the *tribulation* is designed to weaken our resolve in connection with *casting off the works of darkness, putting on the armour of light, walking honestly, as in the day.*

- And that means that we are going to be dealing with some SUBVERSIVE ACTIVITIES!

- subversive activities that are designed to undermine our godly thinking about the Disp/Timing of this Disp/of/Gr—especially our godly disdain/hatred/abhorrence for those *works of darkness*.

- And the reason why I know that that's what we're going to be up against is by making those connections with those passages we've looked at over that last several Bible classes. (Rom. 8:35; Pro. 2; Pro. 4 among others)

- esp. Pro. 2:10ff

- what's described by the profile of 'the evil men' is basically summed up by CLEVER SUBVERSIVENESS! (that's the M.O. of these evil men)

- And one of the reasons I know that for sure is because of that **3x repeated** term "*froward*"! (the common denominator)

- When you're dealing with *frowardness* as a tactic; as a ploy of someone who wants to produce an adverse, contrary effect in another person—(which is what the context is dealing with in Pro. 2:10ff) — ***frowardness is a SUBVERSIVE ACTIVITY!***

- **SUBVERT** = you undermine/corrupt a person's resolve or determination or the stand they have taken in a particular matter—and it's accomplished by subtly suggesting some things to him, and enticing him in connection with the stand he's taken ...

... and what you're endeavoring to do is to get them to re-think what has been going on in their mind that made them take the strong stand they've taken—and you're endeavoring therefore to get their strong thinking weaker — and therefore less enthusiastic and less determined to take that stand.

- **Subversion** is the issue of undermining principles; undermining convictions; undermining a stand for a cause that someone would take. (therefore a weakening of that structure that supports that stand) [viz., our godly thinking concerning those *works of darkness*]

- And the continued weakening of our resolve will begin a process whereby it gets weaker and weaker—our light will get dimmer and dimmer till we lay down our arms and say, “What’s the use?”

- and ultimately, a **separation** will take place and you’ll be driven apart from your Father’s thinking; His Con. & Beh., and you’ll no longer participate in this aspect of His business.

- slowly erode/weaken your resolve

- try to get you to join them (at least to some degree)!

- We need to zero in more on the issue of just what kind of temptations are going to come our way from the PoE, to attempt to subvert us!

- And just from our passage in Romans 13—we know that it’s going to involve our LUSTS — (:14 *But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof.*)

- And most commonly—and very basic/generic—the issue with **lust** is: it’s a powerful longing desire for something that gives you **pleasure!** (happiness/enjoyment)

- and while we’ll deal with this in more detail in (:14) - for now I just want to point out that if *lust* is in view (and the *lusts* (pl.) *of the flesh*) - then what we’re dealing with is something that would ‘provide’ for the flesh to fulfil its lusts ...

... and what you're describing that would ‘provide’ for the flesh to fulfil its lusts would be some kind of enticement or allurement or appeal—which is basically the very definition of TEMPTATION!

- And as we have already seen (and as we’ll see some more) - the basic M.O. of the adversary’s PoE when it comes to temptations (especially in the beginning stage/phase of the manner in which the PoE works to oppose/resist a “son” and begin the ‘separation’ process from his “love of Christ”) is by means of **SUBVERSION!**

- Temptation/Subversion/Frowardness/Lusts **are all linked!**

- So we're concerned right now with the kind of **subversive activity** that will be coming our way as we put our godly thinking of: *the night is far spent, the day is at hand* into effect—as we then conduct ourselves accordingly by: *casting off the works of darkness, and putting on the armour of light, and walking honestly, as in the day.*

- and since we're going to be directly involved in a battle with the subversive activity of the PoE from now on—let's just amplify a little bit on that issue. (of how our godly thinking is going to attempt to be undermined by the satanic PoE)

- (once again Pro. 2:10-15)

- without going back over any of this again—my point here is just to bring to your attention that when it comes to such things as the *froward* issue—(the *froward paths*—and the *frowardness of the wicked*) ... that all starts off with *the evil men* **SPEAKING** *froward things!*

... and all I'm after here is that we've already come to understand & appreciate that the issue of *froward* is to take you AWAY from where you are supposed to be going.

(i.e., away from being *conformed to the image of Christ* and emulating your heavenly Father—separated from the love of Christ)

... but we can actually be more precise than that—we can define and describe the nature of the *froward speaking* that begins the separation process better than just saying that it's going to be something that attempts to take us away from where we're supposed to be going.

- If the *forwardness* starts off with *speaking*—then what is happening?

- are these *evil men* going to say: Hey, come on and join us on our evil paths? or Why don't you come and join us in the ways of darkness? or Why don't you come and join in all this wickedness with us?

- No. the idea here is that: what is going to be said to us is

something that would make you UNAWARE that this is really what is going on—remember that the Father is telling His son what is really going on (but the son would never know this is really going on unless the Father has told him)!

- therefore, the *froward speaking* is NOT going to be that blatant (or that open or obvious)!

- The point is—the *froward speaking* is going to be done in a **SUBVERSIVE** MANNER!

... in a manner that is **designed to undermine some godly thinking**—and to do so in a way that is **unnoticeable by the son!** (undetected / disguised / hidden)

- the son is going to have to be allured & enticed to **begin** to put his light out—so therefore the basic issue for the *evil men* and their *froward speech* is **to describe the works of darkness that they're involved in DIFFERENTLY than the way God the Father describes them!**

- In order to **subvert** you—the *evil men* are going to have to produce some enticements and allurements that are going to go right after (and weaken) your godly attitude/thinking of godly hatred/disdain/abhorrence for those things!

- And the only way we would ever get moved away from our determination and our resolve to stand in opposition to those *works of darkness* (and not participate in those things) **is if we could be caused to look at them differently!**

... (weakening our godly attitude & thinking to the point where it can then be **replaced** with **some other** attitude and **some other** thinking of the PoE)

- The *evil men's froward* subversive *speaking* seeks to make some material CHANGES our godly attitude & godly thinking toward *the works of darkness* (Babylon) — to **challenge** the information we're operating upon in order that we won't look at it like we have been looking at it, but we'll look at it in a **new** way ... a more **tolerant** manner ... we'll be more **open-minded** about it ... and ultimately we'll be willing to lower our convictions and soften our stand!

... and there is a particular way in which that seeks to be done by the PoE and by the *evil men*.

- (it will be done by *evil men's froward* subversive speaking [primarily] - i.e., what they say — and by *evil men's way* - i.e., what they do)

- (but subversion first and foremost goes after your godly thinking! ... to chip away at it over time)

- And basically, that's enough for where we are in Rom. 13—but let's just note some passages where that gets amplified upon out in Level II of our Sonship Education. (to reinforce the reality of it)

- Ephesians 5

- This deals with more details and a further **advanced aspect** of our participation in our Father's business operations as it deals with contending with the adversary and his *works of darkness*.

(and the *works of darkness* are going to be spoken about here)

- As you move on—(provided you continue to positively & properly respond to your Sonship Education and godly edification) — this opportunity to participate in this aspect of our Father's business operations that deals with His contention with the adversary and his PoE — and the kind of IMPACT and INFLUENCE we are supposed to have in connection with it **is all designed to INCREASE!**

- And by now you should know something about how that's going to be done (even though you don't know the details of it [you're **not responsible** to know them at this point]) ...

... but you know that in Level II Sonship Edu., you deal with your *conversation* no longer having its primary influence and impact on this Earth—but its primary sphere of influence and impact shifts to the heavenly places. ... (actually, both realms are in view, but the dominate one becomes the heavenly places) ...

... and because of that, you start dealing with *works of darkness* that affect **BOTH REALMS!**

- Therefore you start dealing with another ‘casting off’ type issue—a repudiation and disownership with those *works of darkness* and the issue of *walking honestly* in connection with who we are “in Christ” in connection with that heavenly realm—and a manifestation of our “light” penetrating and having an effect upon the darkness in the heavenly realm!

- point is—there is a legitimate reason for the issue of *the works of darkness* coming up again in an advanced manner here in Level II of our Sonship Edu. (and having a reproving concept being spoken about in a far greater way than we’ve been familiar with so far)

- And that’s what we encounter here in Eph. 5—but within all that context, is a particular expression that gets used when *the works of darkness* are spoken about.

- (and Paul uses this expression because the same goal & objective that exists in the subversive activity when we first *cast off the works of darkness, and put on the armour of light, and walk honestly, as in the day ...* that same objective is in view here!)

- (read :1-16)

- look at a particular expression that is used when *the works of darkness* are spoken about in (:11) ...

... *And have no **fellowship** with the unfruitful works of darkness, ...*

- “**fellowship**” - this is a big issue in Paul’s epistles! (used 10x)
[used 4x in 1 John ch. 1]

- 1st use by Paul: 1 Corinthians 1:9

- 1st use in Ephesians: 3:9

= shaped as a fellow

“fellow” = to be joined or associated with; One of the same kind; One equal or like another—(*Awake, O sword, against by shepherd, and against the man that is my fellow, saith the LORD of hosts ... Zech. 13:7*)

- here in Eph. 5:11, (again), Paul says, *And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness ...*

- This is still an issue even in this **advanced stage** of our dealing with the adversary and his PoE.

- And really, it's an even bigger issue here because there's more at stake here than where we are in Level I.
(not that it isn't a big/huge issue in Level I! [it is!])

- But it's a bigger issue because in Level II there are **2 realms** of "*conversation*" that are in view!

... therefore, there's a greater IMPACT and INFLUENCE that's being made by us ...

... and therefore, there's more of an impact that's being made by the adversary **if we will have "*fellowship*" with those works of darkness!**

- The point is—that what the PoE is after with its clever subversive activities that work to UNDERMINE our godly thinking and cause us to weaken & lose our resolve—in order to get that done, there has to be a fundamental CHANGE in our godly hatred/disdain/abhorrence for those works of darkness!

- There has to be something, therefore, that would make it so that we would consider *fellowship* with them **a viable option!**

- There has to be something take place that would makes it so that the present status/degree/measure of godly hatred/disdain/loathing for those things would NOT be able to have the same kind of impact it has upon us right at the beginning of Level I Sonship Edu. that makes us desire to *cast those things off, put on the armour of light, and walk honestly, as in the day!*

(something's got to happen to the godly thinking component with respect to the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace to make it so that we would even consider having *fellowship* with these *works of darkness!*) [or being *partakers with them* [:7]) ... and not, rather, *reprove* those *works of darkness* .

- **That's the 'jugular vein' that the PoE goes after!**
 (the 'life-blood' to our full measure of godliness with respect to the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace **IS THE GODLY THINKING!**) [**Romans 13:11-12a!**]

- Therefore the clever subversive activities of the PoE chip away at that—cause us to re-think it—cause **other thoughts** to be generated within us (another "**spirit**") - and therefore cause us to accept and be the possessors of other thoughts with respect to those *works of darkness*.

(and those 'other thoughts' are designed to make it so that the disdain/abhorrence/loathing we have for them is no longer as strong as it used to be! and/or no longer exist at all!)

- This is why **SOBER** thinking is so critical to a "son"!

- This same tactic of opposition of the Satanic PoE is going to be experienced by the Mem/Rem/Isr when they function as "sons" and are going to be operating out in the Day of the Lord's Wrath — out in the final installment of God's prog. w/Isr—when the adversary is having his 'finest hour' and those *works of darkness* have been brought to their 'full-spent' status.

- and the Remnant "sons" are going to expose those *works of darkness* for what they are.

- (the adversary is going to do whatever it takes in order for those Remnant "sons" to not jeopardize his success with his 'finest hour'!)

- And you can get some insight into just how the adversary's clever subversive activities take place to undermine the Remnant "sons".

- And you can see how that *froward speaking* starts to generate within the son, alternative thinking to what his Sonship Education has produced within him.

- **James 4** - The Rem. has gotten their instruction in Wisdom/Justice/Judgment—here James deals with inconsistencies in their Con./Beh., and that they are showing signs of cooperating with the adversary—and James instructs them in how to remedy the situation.

- What I'm after is—that as James begins to rebuke/reprove them for being victimized by the opposition of the *evil men* against them (and they begin to have friendship with the world) - James is going to take them back to some things sitting in Proverbs and in Psalms where they were told about some *evil men* and the influence of their ungodliness upon them.

- and in doing so, James is going to bring up exactly how it is that these enticements (the subversive activities) are working; what they're going after; and what has been generated within their human *spirit* by the effective working of these *evil men*.

- (read :4-5) [:5]

- [:5] is **not** a reference to any particular verse in the Bible!

- this is a reference to the portions of the *scripture* that describe where they are in their Sonship Education (in Prov.; and in Psalms) - and where they are in the progress of the 5th Install —

... and the body of *scripture* that deals with that focuses upon the tactics of the *evil men* as the PoE opposes them (and as :4 says) they begin to compromise their stand; surrender to the opposition; and begin to have *friendship with the world!*

- [:5] acts as a Summary Statement of all of the doctrine that's given to them and tells them what to expect!

- Summed Up: that body of information told them:
The spirit that dwelleth in [them] lusteth to envy!

(and James says, *Do you think that the scripture saith that in vain???*) [as if that was never going to happen with you??]

- Do you think that the PoE would never be able to influence your *spirit*? ... and make it so that you would *lust* for something DIFFERENT than what your Sonship resolve started out with???

- James says—no, the scripture told you in advance what the tactics of those *evil men* and the PoE were going to be! (how the subversion & undermining would take place) in your human spirit!

- They've got godly thinking regarding *the world*—and regarding *the works of darkness* in that world!

- And the PoE has gone after that—and they've begun to be victimized/influenced by it!

- and what that amounts to is: *the spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth ... to envy*

... these Mem/Rem WANTED what *the evil men of the world* had! (they desired that more than anything their Father could give them!)

- (see Psalm 37:1-3) - [near the end of Book I—in preparation for what is coming in Book II (Deliverer Mandate)]

- Why would the Mem/Rem ever be *envious against the workers of iniquity*??? ... (see :7) [he's prospering all over the place!]

- When the adversary finally does have his 'finest hour' the *workers of iniquity* will prosper **wonderfully**! ... so much so that it will make the Mem/Rem '**wonder**'!

... could it be that a little too strong in our "stand"?
 ... a little too 'close-minded'?
 ... wouldn't it be great to have some of what they have?

- The issue is the power that the adversary has at his disposal to influence & affect your human spirit!

- This just illustrates the way in which *The spirit that dwelleth in them* ends up *lusting to envy*!

- (see also Psalm 73 [entire Psalm] — 1st Psalm of Book III—Avenger)

- Point is—this is another body of information that the Mem/Rem/Isr can be directed back to when they are told by James: *Do ye think that the scripture saith in vain, The spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth to envy?*

- And by subversive activity, they begin to question their stand against those *works of darkness*!

- (by the way—the Rem sons **know who these guys are**—in both Ps. 37 & 73, God calls them *workers of iniquity* and *the foolish* and *the wicked!* — so the only reason they ever would be *envious* of them is because of some contrary teaching/doctrine that began to influence their *sober* thinking and chip away at that godly disdain!)

- And this exact same thing can happen **to us** in this Disp. of Grace ... because we, too, have to deal with those exact same *works of darkness* and *workers of iniquity* ... and ...
... because that exact same tactic needs to be employed by the PoE to begin to dim your “light” in connection with the godly thinking of *The night is far spent, the day is at hand ... let us walk honestly, as in the day.*

- And our godly disdain for the *works of darkness*—and our demonstration of godly zeal for God soon judging and destroying those things — that all has to be **assaulted** and **weakened** ... and finally **replaced** with other thinking and some other attitude — because that’s the **only** way we would ever have **fellowship** *with the unfruitful works of darkness!*

- Therefore—we are to expect in the first round of *tribulation* from the adversary’s PoE—that we are going to be on the receiving end of some *froward speaking* that’s going to be designed to work in our human spirit ...

... and it’s going to subvert and undermine our sonship doctrine regarding our *instruction of godly judgment* **pertaining especially to the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace!**

... and it’s going to work to generate within us LUST TO ENVY for that which we start off having only godly hatred/disdain/abhorrence.

- And if you don’t think that can ever happen to you—then you must think that (even in God’s prog. w/ Isr) that the *scriptures* really do *say* what they do *IN VAIN!*

- (see 1 Cor. 5:1; 6:12-18)

- The adversary is **very determined**—and the only way we won't end up being victimized by his PoE is by continuing to operate upon the provision our Father has made in His word — and by its effectual working in our human spirit (inner man).

... that's how we will succeed in this battle!

- And the way in which the subversive, undermining tactics of the adversary's PoE is going to succeed (if it can) is to take those *works of darkness* and have something appealing about them to our thinking — to have something good and pleasing and desirable attached to them!

- It's going to come down to this:

A B C = a particular *work of darkness*
(representing the 3 categ. of the WoD)

- by the *froward speaking of the evil men*—those things are going to end up being “packaged” in a **different** kind of package than we're familiar with.

... and there's going to be something about the “packaging” that's going to like a “present” ...

... the box and the wrapping paper and the bow is designed to be “pretty” ... “attractive” ... and sets the stage for what's inside the box ...

... and it's designed to ‘prime the pump’ of your excitement & enthusiasm & desire for what's inside that box ... (that's what psychologically takes place)

... for good or for bad—you want to **influence** the person who's going to receive the package ...

... the point is to make it so that the one receiving the package will WANT it; desire it; etc.

... and these *works of darkness* are going to be packaged in a way that the end result will be: that you will view them as something GOOD; something PLEASANT; something DESIRABLE! (Gen. 3:6)

- And what's going to happen in your human spirit is—you're going to make some "connections" ... you're going to think:

Well, the way that person got all that 'goodness' was by **A**;

... and the way that person got that 'pleasantness' and enjoyment was because he participated in **B**;

... and the way that person got what is so 'desirable' and would 'fit me right down to the ground' was by participating in **C**!

- And by that means—you start getting **enticed/allured**—and your human spirit begins to have generated within it a DESIRE for those things (especially the packaging) ... [you really want the goodness; the pleasure; and the satisfaction] ...

... and you start to think: How can I get that? I know what's inside is no good—but I really do **identify with** and **desire to have** the good pleasure and satisfaction those thing seem to afford!

... and what will end up happening is—all you've got to do is to make it known that you want the 'packaging' (so to speak) - you want some things that are good and pleasurable and satisfying—and when you do—there are going to be some *evil men* who are going to be right there to HELP you justify getting it in your mind!

... and those *evil men* will come along and describe to you a way in which you **can** participate in those *works of darkness* that's really not harmful at all ...

... and as you utilize **their thoughts**, the undermining begins!

... you start to **look differently** at those *works of darkness* ... and your total godly disdain starts to 'cool off'!!!

... and as you 'cool off' - the goodness/pleasure/satisfaction for those things INCREASES ...

- **and that's the *evil men's* frowardness at work!**

(as they drive you toward those things and away from the godly disdain!)

- And as we will see later on—this subversive activity of the *evil men* and their *froward speaking* lays the ground-work for *the strange woman* to come along (and working together with *the evil men*), and get you to think that **you’re actually receiving BLESSINGS FROM GOD!**

- that the ‘goodness’ and the ‘pleasant joy’ and the ‘satisfaction of your desire’ and all that **prosperity IS REALLY GOD BLESSING YOU!**

**** Don’t ever think that *the works of darkness* and the Satanic PoE can’t produce a measure of joy, goodness, satisfaction, and prosperity in the human heart ... because IT CAN! (but none of it is GODLY!)**

- If the PoE wasn’t successful to produce these things to some measure, people would not be involved in it! (it can counterfeit anything and everything that godly sonship edification can produce!)

- that ‘s why it’s so deceiving !

- Let’s look at that deception—and we’ll get some real insightful perception of the subversive, undermining tactics of the *evil men* and the PoE by looking more closely at **the way the “packaging” works!**

- (we’ll look at some passages we’ve looked at before, but now we’re going to focus upon the way the adversary’s *evil men* go about “packaging” their subversive activities in connection with *the works of darkness*.)

- giving us more insight/perception for the methodology & mechanics of the subversion ...

- **1 Peter 4**—(context: much like James—the Mem/Rem/Isr are in view as they operate out in the 5th/5th & advanced info. is given to them)

- Notice the similar issues for them as it is for us sanctification-wise in general ...

- (**read :1-2**) = Summ. State. of their basic sanctification = the ‘power’ source of their sanctification/sonship life!

- but here—in the context of 1 Pet. 4—the **power** of their godly sanctification is brought up because God is going to have Peter deal with an aspect of their sanctified lives that, (based upon the power of their sanctified lives), they are going to be confronted with some particular *lusts* from some *evil men* through the PoE that are going to assault some advanced godly Thinking in their human spirit ...

... and they are being exhorted to operate upon the power of their sanctification so as to NOT *live in the flesh to the lusts of men, but to the will of God.*

- And what Peter is going to deal with now—in this advanced state of the Rem. sons is the issue of those *works of darkness* that are out there in the world (and now in their FULLY SPENT STATUS!)

- (they're going into battle: ***“arm yourselves with the same mind”***)

- And the Rem. is going to deal with 2 'camps' of the PoE against them: 1) Apostate Isr. 2) the World [Gentiles] - and the PoE could run through both avenues!

- (read :3) - (general categories of the *works of darkness* in their Greatness)

- Note: *For the time past of our life may suffice us to have wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we ...*
This is talking about their life **before** they heard the gospel and got justified unto eternal life.

- (read :4-5 [:4]) - (the focus here is the opposition from the Gentiles)

- Peter says what he does here very carefully so that the Rem recognizes that because of their *past life* when they *wrought the will of the Gentiles*—that forms a 'base of operations' in their inner man whereby a particular attack from the world of the Gentiles **can be made!**

- And that causes the Rem sons to recognize that there are going to be ways in which those *works of darkness* are going to be presented to them (as “presents”) — [A, B, C] — and the attractive 'packaging' can operate to undermine their godly Thinking and subvert them!

- and the idea is to so package these *works of darkness* to the Rem. sons so that they come along and think about how they **USED TO BENEFIT FROM THEM** when they participated in those things!

- (the kind of joy, pleasure, and satisfaction they used to get from them!)

- And the reason why (:4) says, *Wherein they think it strange ...* is because **you used to do it!**

- here—Peter is dealing with some advanced issues from what James set forth—why? — because the way the *tribulation* works **is by ever increasing the power of the subversion!** (if the first subversive tactic didn't work, then the *evil men* move on to the next ... and the next ... and the next ... etc.)

- And (again) the idea is to get the Mem/Rem to re-think their full measure of godly disdain/hatred/abhorrence for the *works of darkness*.

- as (:4) says, *Wherein they think it strange that ye run not with them to the same excess of riot, **speaking evil of you:***

- the reason they 'speak evil of them' isn't just because they don't like the Mem/Rem—but those *evil men* are going to 'ramp up' their subversive tactics and will begin to start working by means of intimidation! (bringing some hurtful PRESSURE to bear against them/you)

- It was their **CULTURE** [a non-biblical word that has great effect upon every one of us!] (it's ingrained in us!)
—(**culture pressure** is an incredibly power thing and has great power to influence your human spirit!)

- "culture" = from the word "cultivate" = to till (to prepare land for the raising of crops) - [condition the land]

- "cultivate" (used in its metaphorical sense) = primarily focused upon a force upon the mind (human spirit) that prepares it to produce a certain environment or civilization. (using such things as literature and the arts!)

[can be GOOD; can be very BAD!]

- **Issue:** Methodology of the Subversion (undermining)

- methodology is the same in both programs —

- because both with us, and with the Mem/Rem/Isr, after receiving the instruction in godly Wisdom/Justice/Judgment, the adversary has earned the right to oppose/resist us—and in both programs, (members of the Church, the body of Christ; and Mem/Rem/Isr) as “sons” we have gained the skill sets; the capacity & ability to enter into the business operations of our Father that has to do with us contending with the adversary and his PoE.

... (with those *evil men* and their *works of darkness*)

- We’ve begun looking at the psychological-type tactics of the *frowardness* and the *froward speaking* of these *evil men* in the form of just how it is that they “**package**” the *works of darkness* in order to deceive and undermine our “light” and our godly attitude of total disdain/hatred/abhorrence for them and our display of the God’s own Zeal in soon judging and destroying those *works of darkness* as we *walk honestly, as in the day*.

- Let’s continue looking at the “**packaging**” issue that leads to the *envying* concept (James 4:5 *Do ye think that the scripture saith in vain, The spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth to envy?*) [& Ps. 37, 73] [i.e., ‘prosperity’, benefits, promotion/success/ease/comfort in the world, etc.]

- The “package” is attractive and desirable—effecting your human spirit (mind) - and is one of the things accomplished by creating a particular CULTURE in which you live! (Culture Pressure; Culture Force)

- **2 Peter 2** -

- Context: *evil men* engaged in the PoE did (during the 4th/5th) and will (in the 5th Install.) go right after the “light” of the Remnant’s godly Thinking of hatred/abhorrence/disdain for those *works of darkness* - and if they don’t respond positively to the corrective doctrine sitting in James and the doctrine of 1 Peter—the impact of their “light” won’t be made upon the adversary or the rest of the nation of Israel—but especially it won’t be made upon the Gentiles ...

... and therefore they would cease providing for the Gentiles to be properly dealt with when “*the day of visitation*” takes place during the Day of the Lord! (see 1 Peter 2:12)

- One of the great sonship opportunities that the Remsons have is to function in an operation of God that is designed to make an impact upon the Gentiles so that when the Day of the Lord occurs, they will disassociate themselves from the adversary’s **MAN!** (and to recognize the truth of what takes place in regards to that issue)

- Point is—the adversary’s PoE (through the activities of the *evil men*) are going to have to attack the Remnant’s ‘jugular vein’ of their Godly Thinking, just like they will with us. (to dim their “light”)

- 2 Peter 2 - although the intensity of the *evil men* and the PoE will be greater (because the time is short)—the methodology will be the same—and we can get some insight into the methodology of the kind of subversion we’re going to receive that causes us some *tribulation*.

- (read :12) - the intensity is described as these *evil men* have now evolved (devolved) into these *natural brute beasts* —

- and as further details begin to be described in (:13ff) concerning the effects of these *evil men* upon the Mem/Rem — notice the kind of terminology that is used ...

... because what is actually being described is a kind of **beguiling** that takes place (a kind of deceiving that takes place) - and the alluring that takes place by the *frowardness* of these *evil men*.

- and what we’ll see is further understanding about that subversion—and the pretty ‘packaging’ that’s designed to get the Mem/Rem’s mind off of what’s in the box!

- and the attempt is to materially affect the Mem/Rem’s mind (human spirit) - and make adjustments to it so that they begin to think differently about the *works of darkness* than how their Father taught them to view them.

- (read again :12 (*speaking evil* = you've got the *evil men speaking froward things*) - the focus is going to first be upon what they are saying)

- (:13) - you have a 'joining together' taking place with the Mem Rem—and a "feasting" together with them = **fellowship/ friendship** - (a mutual admiration society)

- the *evil men* creep into their fellowship and function as **spots and blemishes** (Rem of Isr terminology)

- **sporting themselves** with the Rem = a jovial, friendly, playful type of lighthearted goodwill—building rapport; camaraderie; affinity; like-mindedness; esprit de corps; (**culture?**)

- (which is just a 'smoke-screen' - the *evil men* [as it were] package/wrap themselves up in pretty paper!)

- but the goal is: TO **DECEIVE** the Mem/Rem! in order to produce the weakening of their resolve/attitude/light—making a material affect upon their godly Thinking!

- (:14) - focusing upon the "Lust of the Eyes" concept ...

... there's a lot of things we could look at—but notice particularly: **BEGUILING unstable souls** ...

- **beguile** = **be** (English intensifier) + **guile** = insidious cunning, deceit, treachery, a trick (see Crabb & Smith)

- When you **beguile** someone, it involves some kind of 'trickery' - a trickery that involves a person accepting something else that they had not previously accepted—and to accept it to be the truth, or the reality, or the thing they ought to be operating upon—to accept it as the thing they ought to want/desire — and by means of doing that, **DISPLACE** what previously had been put there and what they previously had been operating upon (which was proper and right) - and to **REPLACE** it now, with this other understanding.

[Which is exactly what the adversary did with Eve in Gen. 3!]

- When *the serpent* **beguiled** *Eve* through his *subtilty*, he produced a different kind of **thinking** that resulted in a different kind of **action that was against the Truth!** (he ‘re-packaged’ the tree of the k/ of g/e differently in her mind/human spirit!)

.. but in order to produce that **action** that was *against* the Truth—(violating the command not to eat of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil) — there had to be an **alteration** in her **thinking!**

... something to cause her to look at that tree **differently** than it was previously looked at! [same methodology to this day]

- Point is—**beguiling** is one of the Major ways in which *evil men* will attempt to *subvert* you in order to oppose/resist your sonship “light” when you have positively & properly responded to *the instruction of godly judgment!* (especially in connection with the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace)! [that’s part of the methodology of *the evil men’s* subversion]

... we can’t afford to be *unstable souls* (which is why the thrust of Romans doctrine is to *stablish* you!)

... we can’t have *eyes full of adultery* (or the *works of darkness*) - rather, we must see with the *eyes of our understanding* (part of the *armour of light*) [Eph. 1:18] *being enlightened* ... (i.e., not get our *eyes* on the ‘packaging’)

- in other words—you can expect *the evil men* to operate in the realm of what magicians often do: **misdirection!** (they don’t operate in the realm of the **obvious!**)

- Your Father taught you that the eyes of your understanding should be on WHAT’S **IN** THE BOX—but they come along and have you looking at the ‘packaging’ (the goodness/pleasure/desire/contentment, etc.)

- and that’s what’s involved in the *beguiling* concept.

- (:15-16) - continuing to describe these false prophets and *evil men* that the Mem/Rem/Isr are going to encounter when Satan has his finest hour.

- There's great insight/perception for the Mem/Rem/Isr in understanding & appreciating what Balaam did back in the Balaam/Balak incident—back in the book of Numbers!

- and it's very germane to the Mem/Rem when the adversary has his 'finest hour' - and they can go back and get that information where God gives them a preview of some of the 'master strokes' of the adversary's own genius when he attempts to deceive & destroy them out in their final install.

- In fact—the Balaam/Balak incident is one of the top issues in God's word that will help you immensely in connection with 'properly handling the word of truth' —

(along with)

- 5 Courses of Punishment

- Rightly dividing the word of truth

- 5 CoP (#59—64)

- Balaam/Balak Incident (#65—69)

- (back to 2 Peter 2) - (the 'packaging' issue)

- (:17) - "*wells without water*" - (that's NOT how they are going to present themselves—but this is the TRUTH of the matter)

- they'll present themselves as 'wells with a great deal of water' - (i.e., refreshment/life-supply, delightfully tasting water that these Mem/Rem should participate in)

- "*clouds*" - (i.e., to give relief & shade & comfort— a nice puffy clouds—clouds that give a gentle rain, i.e., **showers of blessing**—[the wrapping paper])

- but they are really going to be: "*clouds that are carried with a tempest*" — (i.e., there's a STORM behind these clouds!) ... but again, that's not how they will present themselves! [that's part of the **beguiling!**]

- What God is teaching the Mem/Rem here is to open the eyes of their understanding—to see beyond the pretty paper — this is part of their DISCRETION! that will enable them to be '*preserved*' from being influenced by the *evil men* and the PoE!

- this issue gets amplified upon in the next verses ...

- (read :18-19)

- (:18) *For when they speak great swelling words of **vanity**, (devoid of Truth; perverse; depraved; empty [a whole bunch of nothing]!) ...*

... but again, that's NOT what it's going to sound like!

... that's a bunch of *froward speaking* that's designed to **highly impress** these Mem/Rem/Isr ...

... and all of the wisdom of these *great swelling words*, and all the allurement of them; and all the logic of them ... is all designed to go into their **mind** (human spirit), and go right after their godly Thinking about those *works of darkness* ... remove that thinking (*vanity* = empty out their godly Thinking)... and replace it with a whole bunch of 'hot air'!

- and (:18) goes on to describe just what is behind their *great swelling words* ... they are designed to **allure** *through the lusts of the flesh, through much wantonness, those that were clean escaped from them who live in error.*

... their words are designed to focus upon that 'packaging' - and an **alluring** takes place—which reminds you of a L-U-R-E (fishing) - gets the attraction of the fish—and to never see the hook! (the lure looks like something that he wants: FOOD; something he needs for survival; tasty, enjoys having in his mouth; etc.)

- Any time you *allure* someone—you set out **bait** (but not just any old bait) - bait that is designed to make it so that the person you are trying to *allure* sees something that he wants and needs, and realizes that is vital or **indispensable to his survival!**)

- and the idea is to produce such a strong desire in the person that he just 'throws caution to the wind' and goes after it all because he recognizes that it's a valuable commodity to him!

- notice also (:14) said that they had *eyes full of adultery*— and the Lust of the Eyes category of the WoD were brought up — and now in (:18) ... *they allure through the lusts of the flesh, **through much wantonness**, (LoE) those that were clean escaped from them who live in error.* (same methodology used w/Eve in the garden of Eden!)

- (read :19) gives even more description and amplification upon the ‘packaging’ issue ...

- *they promise them **liberty***—(within those *great swelling words of vanity*), the Rem sons are promised a freedom that they’ve never participated in before!

... (albeit it’s all a bunch of lies) ... but it’s a very powerful allurements/enticement! ... freedom, joy, and pleasure like you’ve never had before!

- but then (:19) shows you what’s in the box! ... *they themselves are **the servants of corruption***: (there’s the HOOK in the lure!)

- And all those powerful methods are designed to work on, and to chip away at the godly Thinking of the Rem sons—to get them to start thinking differently about those *works of darkness*—to erode their total godly disdain/hatred/abhorrence for them.

- and the ‘rub’ is that in the final analysis—the Mem/Rem start looking at their godly Thinking as the very thing that is holding them in bondage!!! (to all that goodness/pleasure/and satisfaction: i.e., the ‘packaging’)

- Point is—there is much to gain from understanding and appreciating how the *evil men* and the Satanic PoE opposes/resists the Remnant “sons” who have (like us) received their *instruction of Wisdom, Justice, and judgment* and are now in a position of capacity for the adversary to engage them. [contending w/the adversary]

- (we can gain some insight into the kind of tactics and methodology from the PoE that we’re going to be up against)

- Now—I want to look at one more thing in 2 Peter 2 before we go back to Romans that will give us even more insight into the subversive tactics.

- (2 Peter 2:5-9)

- We looked at this before—when we were dealing with the historical time in which the adversary ‘tested the waters’ to see if he could bring about “*the night*” and re-develop “*the world of the ungodly*” as he did before the Flood.

- But now I want to look at something said about Lot.

- Lot = nephew of Abraham; justified man—parallels the situation that the Mem/Rem/Isr will be in when they are sitting in the world of Sodom & Gomorrha during the time of the adversary’s ‘finest hour.’

- and there’s something God has Peter record that teaches the Mem/Rem a detail concerning the tactics/methodology of the subversion they will encounter at the hands of the adversary’s PoE.

- and just as Lot was affected by the ‘movers & shakers’ of the world of the ungodly of Sodom & Gomorrha—so, too, will the Mem/Rem be affected by the ‘movers & shakers’ of the world of the ungodly during the time of Satan’s ‘finest hour.’

- There is an exact parallel between the issues surrounding Lot and Sodom and Gomorrha; and the issues surrounding the Rem/Isr during the time of Satan’s ‘finest hour’ (5/5)

- what was done in a small-scale, mini-type environment in Gen. 18-19, will be done on a world-wide scale in the final Install.

- What I’m after now are a couple of details that give us further insight into just how the *evil men* under the Satanic PoE will work (that is, the methodology of the subversion) that “sons” are to expect when they provoke the adversary by exposing what those *works of darkness* are all about.

- especially what’s contained in the parenthesis of (:8) ...

- you’ve got the 2 Lines of approach: *seeing and hearing* ...

- you’ve got the ‘bridge’ (so to speak) between the subverting and the beguiling ...

- you've got that word **vexed**—(used 1x in :7 & 1x in :8).

- And this 'Lot Situation' ends up being an exact parallel (on a mini scale) to the situation that the Mem/Rem/Isr are in out when the adversary is having his 'finest hour'.

- You've got justified Lot sitting in the midst of the environment of Sod. & Gom.—with all 3 Categories of *the works of darkness* reaching their Great degree of power and influence—and with *the world of the ungodly* again being developed in a mini-type environment on the southern end of the Dead Sea.

- you've got the population at-large in that mini environment coming to the point of being those *vessels of wrath, fitted to destruction*—and they end up getting destroyed!

- And that will again take place on a world-wide scale (with apostate Isr. cooperating with it) when Satan has his 'finest hour'.

- And so when Peter talks about Lot being *vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked* [back in the day of Sod. & Gom.] (:7) ... so also will the Mem/Rem be *vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked* [when the whole world (Apostate Isr./Gentiles) is in the same position/state of Sod. & Gom. back in Genesis 18]!

- And just as Lot was that *righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with their unlawful deeds*—so also will that be the situation with the Mem/Rem in the time of the adversary's 'finest hour.'

- The key concept that I'm after is that word: **VEXED**.

- What does *vexed* mean? What does it mean to be *vexed*?

- **vex** = to irritate; to make angry by little provocations; to harass; to torment; to disturb; to trouble [Web. 1828] = to afflict or harass a person by aggression, encroachment, or other interference with peace and quiet. [OED]

- of its synonyms, (like *offend & displease*) - *vex* is the most intense of the words—the major difference being that of frequency—in other words, you may be *offended* only once, or only once in a while—but when you are *vexed*, you have been offended, repeatedly until you are in a state of torment!

- (that's why you have in [:8] that phrase: ***from day to day*** = the frequency issue [hence, *vexed* is the most excellent English word to describe that issue!])

- **And *vexed* is actually going to come along and describe how those 2 Lines of Approach (the seeing and hearing) are going to work! (the 2 Lines of Presentation [Presents])!**

- *Vexed* is the verb that is used to take the *subverting* issue—and to describe it in a way that has another concept associated with it—and that leads, therefore, for Peter to be able to deal with the Mem/Rem about the particulars/details of how the subversive activities are going to come about. [the *beguiling*]

- (more about the word *Vexed*) ... [working definition]
vexed is most commonly thought of where evil is concerned—but it can be used when there isn't any evil at all in view ... such as in Math: 'a vexing problem' ... (something that consistently or persistently bothers us) - (it's 'troubling', but there's **no** evil involved)

- But when you **do** have a context where evil IS in view—it carries the idea of being constantly troubled/bothered — and when it is coming from someone who purposely wants to adversely affect you—(i.e., you're being vexed by an enemy; an opposer; an adversary) ... then what you're dealing with is *vexing* with subversion in view!

- you're dealing with a kind of trouble that desires to produce in you some corruption (in your mind/human spirit) so that the person gets annoyed/bothered to the point where some kind of movement/action takes place on his part, that moves him away from the position he's in.

- In other words—(as a more 'working definition') - this kind of *vexing* being spoken about here is something that has *frowardness* involved in it!

- That's why the word *vexed* acts as that 'bridge' between the subversion and the *beguiling* (and all its details) ...

... and that's why *vexed* describes how those 2 Lines of Approach are going to work: the *seeing and hearing*.

- (and again, even though this is information written to, for, and about the Mem/Rem/Isr out in the 5/5—we know that because the adversary has to keep those *works of darkness* in their 'red-hot' status throughout this present Disp/Grace—it comes as no surprise to find the same kind of **tactics** and the same kind of **methodology** being used by the adversary on "sons" today). [*evil men*, the PoE, and the beguiling, the enticements, the allurements, the subtily, the envy, etc.] {those are dealt with by Paul as well}

... to dim our light/weaken our stand—and ultimately abandon our laboring together with our Father in this aspect of His business in His contention with the adversary.

... we, too, experience the *tribulations* of attempting to be *subverted* and *vexed* by *seeing and hearing*, and the *beguiling* in all its details and the evolution of man's ungodliness continues on.

- (**example time**) - let's look at another passage where the word *vexed* is used in a context with evil intent behind it.

- and what we'll see is that when God talks about it—you're going to have all 3 issues brought up:

- 1) the Subverting issue;
- 2) the Vexed issue;
- 3) the Beguiling issue

- Remember there in 2 Peter 2—in the second half of the chapter when we looked at the detailed methodology of the *beguiling*? (:12-19) — we saw something God had the apostle Peter bring to the attention of the Mem/Rem thee in (:15-16) = the Balaam/Balak Incident!

- Let's see what happened (and what is described) immediately **following** that incident ...

- Numbers 25

- Here, you're still dealing with the Balaam/Balak Incident—but now you have described the way in which Balaam went about getting Israel involved in *the works of darkness* (the fornication in connection with Moab and Midian).

- And there's a direct tie between Israel's *subversion* that Balaam was after, and the *vexing* that took place, that led to the *beguilement* that ended up with Israel thinking differently about what God told them—and finally, ended up with Israel MOVING AWAY from where they were supposed to be going!

- They were supposed to be readied as an **army** to go in and conquer the Land—and to kill off the Gentile, Canaanite Nations in it!
(they were to have nothing to do with those nations on BOTH sides of the Jordan river!)

- Instead, they end up committing fornication (having illicit sexual relations) with the daughters of Moab ... (and it didn't stop there)!!!

- again, it's the same methodology that took place with Eve:

- assault the godly thinking;
- get the person to think differently than God taught them;
- replace the godly thinking with the adversary's thinking;
- resulting in an action that is against the Truth of God.

- And what we're going to see in Numbers 25—(in the way in which Balaam advised the Moabites and Midianites to 'friendly-up' to the people of Israel and introduce their daughters into their company—in other words, to ensnare them by cultural changes among other things)

... and what we'll see are these 3 things coming up:

- 1) the **subverting** (undermining the godly thinking of the people of Israel concerning the Moabites/Midianites which God had previously given them) [weakening Isr's influence]

... (and although the word **subvert** isn't used in the chapter, the subversion issue **is** there in the opening verses by default—[committing fornication begins in the mind])

2) the **vexing** (in which a particular kind of Approach was taken in connection with it)

... and that provided for

3) the **beguiling** (that end up being the subversive activity that ends up getting employed)

- (read :1-3)

- This is the historical situation that occurred —

- Note: *1 And Israel abode in Shittim, and **BEGAN** to commit whoredom with the daughters of Moab.*

- up till now, they haven't done that—they've been operating upon some previous information God gave them concerning the Moabites (and a bunch of other 'ites' around the land) -

... but they end up violating the very things God told them NOT to do—(which is why the LORD was so angry with them in :3)

... and the information God gave them didn't simply say, 'Don't do that' ... but God gave them insight and reasons and understanding about what all those nations were involved in—plus the very Balaam/Balak Incident itself He gave them insight into who was behind all that ungodly activity.

- Point is—something made it so that *the people **began** to commit whoredom with the daughters of Moab!*

- something had to take place in a 'subverting' type manner that caused them to take their previous thinking and toss it away, and to BEGIN operating upon some other thinking.

(in their previous movements up to the land, they weren't doing this then ... so what has changed?)

- a **subversion** has occurred—their thinking has been undermined!

- Well, the *whoredom with the daughters of Moab* was just the beginning!

- (read :2) - Now they end up getting involved in the **idolatry** of Moab.

... but it gets even **worse** ...

- (read :3) - Ah, now they've traded God the Father for another father!
... they've exchanged one LORD for another lord!!!

... and lo, and behold, up pops Baal—(back to Babylon!)

- *Baalpeor*—a Baal-compound name!

- *Baalpeor* = Lord of the gap?/opening? - thought to be describing some kind of mouth opening—or some kind of obscene posture and action used in the worshipping of this false god — and it could also be associated with the location where it was worshipped, i.e., Peor.

- In a very short time, it's as if the LORD Jehovah meant nothing! and now they've switched Gods!!! (Jehovah who??)

- (this is an example of a 'worse-case-scenario' for the nation Israel—and the same methodology can cause a 'worse-case-scenario' for you, too—to the delight of the adversary!) [not just a dimming of your light, but putting it completely out!]

- (read :4-9) - what's going on is that this man (an Israelite who was one of them that was "*joined to Baalpeor*") brought this Midianitish woman to Moses at the tabernacle - NOT as an example of the kind of problems the Midianites were to Israel ... but rather, he brought her to Moses and the congregation as a CHALLENGE, and as a hope to SHAME the ones who were carrying out God's judgment!

... as a DARE that they would NEVER harm this woman!

- but Phinehas took his javelin and made a *Baalpeor shish kabob* out of them ... (why waste 2 javelins when 1 will do?)

- (read :10-11) - Phinehas was operating on his **total godly disdain!** - he hadn't lost any degree of it! and he took the proper course of action that was proper at that time.

- (read :12-15) - notice that you've got some **political** factors involved in the man's boldness in bringing this woman out to the congregation.

- This sets the stage for the kind of subversion that we're looking at here where the children of Israel were supposed to be privileged to participate in an Operation of God against the Moabites and the Midianites as they get the conquest of the land underway.

- and in the final verses of the chapter, that subversion is going to be described in a little more detail—

... and we'll get the actual term *vex* used in connection with some evil trouble that has come upon the children of Isr. for the purpose of undermining their godly stand—and it will end up with a *beguiling* taking place.

... so here we have an example of how the word *vex* is used in an evil context—like we have it used over in 2 Peter in connection with Lot.

... and you really get a good sense of how the vexing acts as that 'bridge' between the subverting issue and the more particular beguiling issue.

- (read :16-18) - especially notice (:18), *For they vex you with their **wiles**,*

- and if you go back and get the details from (:1, :2, & :3) —
[i.e., the committing of whoredom with the daughters of Moab—the sacrifices of their gods—the worship of their gods (eating & bowing down)—and the joining unto Baalpeor] —
those details give you the particular **wiles** that God is talking about here.

- And that **wiles** concept is similar to what we looked at over in 2 Peter 2 (in the latter part of the chapter) when we got the more detailed terms of the *beguiling* [enticements/allurements/subtily/envy] - i.e., all the pretty packages.

... interesting—the word **wiles** is used only 2x in the Bible: 1) Num. 25:18; 2) Eph. 6:11!

[*wily* used 1x in Josh. 9:4]

... so, do you think that understanding and appreciating the Balaam/Balak Incident is important?

- (again, :18) *For they vex you with their wiles, **wherewith they have beguiled you in the matter of Peor,** ...*

- The **subversion** takes place by means of the **wiles** that ‘day to day’ **vexes** them ...

... (that produces corruption in their mind/human spirit, so that they get so annoyed, bothered, and troubled to the point that they **move away** from their current position: **frowardness**) ...

... that ends up with them being **beguiled** ...

... (they now operate upon a **different** kind of **thinking** than what God taught them, resulting in an **action** that is **against God’s Truth**)!

[they are now in cooperation with *the works of darkness* (UnTruth)]! (success for the adversary!; to his delight & pleasure; pleased)

- and notice how quickly it took place!

- And the **wiles** actually follow the 2 Lines of Approach: (the **seeing** / the **hearing**)

- and when you're dealing with *vexing* in an evil context that has an opposer in view (an enemy who wants to adversely affect you because you're adversely affecting him—and he wants to stop that) ...

... in order to get the *subversion* accomplished, he's going to employ some *wiles* that follow the 2 Lines of Approach/Presentation: the *seeing* & the *hearing*!

... and the *wiles* that they employ in order to *vex* them allow then for the individual things under the *beguiling* to take place.

- Numbers 33 - here you have a description of Israel's journey to enter into the land under Joshua—and God has Moses go over with them the absolute necessity to drive out the nations that are there—and destroy the particular nations God says had to be destroyed — notice that in view of what had just previously taken place (as described back in Ch.25), God comes along and says, If you're not going to look at these people like I told you to look at them—then the present measure of godly disdain you have for them is going to plummet!!!

... (just like it did previously here in the plains of Moab!)

- In other words—they're going to face ones who want to *subvert* them—they're going to *vex* them with some *wiles* that they will both *see & hear* —and they'll end up being *beguiled* with those subversive activities ... and down goes the godly disdain!

- (read :50-53) - (by the way—notice that you have those 2 Lines of Approach for the *wiles* to be employed mentioned in :52 —

1) ... *and destroy all their pictures, and destroy all their molten images*, — SEEING

2) ... *and quite pluck down all their high places* (their temples, groves, and altars where there false gods and false prophets spoke to the people) — HEARING

- (read :54-55) - [:55—there you have that *vexing* issue]

- (read :56) - describes the 1st Course of Punishment.

- Point is—as they prepare to enter the land—God tells them that they can't repeat that Moabite/Midianite situation that took place back in Ch.25 ...

... they HAVE to keep that godly attitude/thinking of godly disdain in its totality—even though God didn't tell them to destroy the Moabites (or the nations on the E side of Jordan) ... but they were not to have any fraternizing going on with them.

- And when it comes to the nations IN the land—that they are going to go in and drive out and destroy—they need to have that full measure of godly disdain or else they'll end up repeating that Moab situation:

... and the *subverting*, involving the *vexing* (with its *wiles*) will end up with them being *beguiled* ...

... and the pattern will be the same as in Ch.25 ...

... *whoredom* & inter-marrying with *the daughters of Moab*;

- *sacrificing* and worshipping of their *gods*;

- and finally, *joining* together with Baal and a complete abandonment of Jehovah!

... and that will end up with the 1st CoP being brought upon them.

- And in this Numbers 33 passage—of the 3 major issues involved in the methodology—you have the emphasis being placed upon that *vexing* issue (the 'bridge' between the *subversion* and the *beguiling*).

- (because the *vexing* focuses upon the 2 Lines of Approach ... the Lines through which the *wiles* get employed).

- Job 19—(Job's dealings with his 3 so-called 'friends')

1 Then Job answered and said,

2 How long will ye (all 3 of his friends in view, not just Bildad) **vex** my soul, and break me in pieces with words?

3 These ten times have ye reproached me: ye are not ashamed that ye make yourselves strange to me.

- (then in the ff verses—Job makes his case)

- Point is—Job recognizes what is going on!
- From the get-go, when Job's 3 friends begin to deal with him in the predicament Job is in—they don't accept Job's explanation of the predicament!
- They've got their own explanation of the predicament—and their goal is to get Job to change his mind!
- Truth is—Job has a godly understanding of the predicament he's in (though it lacks some things) - but it's still godly!
- Job's 3 friends have an ungodly understanding of it!
- And Job recognizes that from the get-go, his 3 friends are trying to *subvert* him! (especially by what is coming out of their mouths!) [in 10 Rounds so far—*these ten times*]
 - and the goal is to undermine Job's present thinking and persistent thinking [because he's not falling for it!] - and Job is actually exposing the darkness of Untruth of their thinking & their words!
- and if you pay attention to the 3 friends arguments—they have 2 Lines of Attack or Presentation to Job!
- And Job sees right through it all—*How long will ye vex my soul, and **break me in pieces with words?***
 - Job is one big rock of resolve in front of them ...
... and they're working to 'break him in pieces' ...
... (get a 'crack' going, and then put a wedge in it and pound away at it until **a moving away** takes place) ... and the major Line focused upon are their *words* [what they SAY]!
- Now that's the kind of *vexing* that's going on in 2 Peter 2 in the Lot situation—in an evil context where an adversary is wanting to adversely affect someone who is adversely affecting him, and wants to stop it.
 - and the *vexing* acts as that 'bridge' between the general goal of *subversion* and the more detailed issues of how it is all put into practice to get the *beguiling* to take place.

- (back to 2 Peter 2)

- When you have a context in which a *vexing* issue is taking place with someone—(whether the actual word “*vex*” is used, or whether you don’t used the word *vex*) - nevertheless, when a *vexing* issue is taking place, and when it’s described, **the context is going to deal with those 2 Lines of Approach** that the goal of the *subversion* is going to follow.

- And you’ll find that by means of those 2 Lines of Approach (the *seeing & hearing*), you’ll get a description of the whole arsenal of the subversive activities (the details) that get utilized to assault that godly Thinking. [Num./Josh. Job]

- And more times that not—you’ll have something said that matches up with the 2 Lines of Approach.

- (read 2 Peter 2:8) - “***seeing and hearing***”

- and although we’ve noted this before—I want this issue of the *seeing* and the *hearing* brought to the front of your mind.

- Because that *vexing* issue is going to involve things that attempt to enter through the ‘**eye-gate**’ and the ‘**ear-gate**’ to make their approach **into your human spirit** where the effectual working of what God has taught you (to have the full measure of godly disdain for the *works of darkness*) RESIDES!

- **What you see with your eyes; and what you hear with your ears has access to your human spirit!**

- [again] 8 (*For that righteous man dwelling among them, **in seeing and hearing**, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with their unlawful deeds;*)

- Lot **saw** *their unlawful deeds*, and **heard** NOT only about them—but he heard the ones committing these *unlawful deeds* saying things about them—and packaging them up in their nice, attractive packages—and *speaking great swelling words* (2 Pet. 2:18) - or *speaking froward things* (Pro. 2:12) that assaulted the measure of Lot’s godly thinking!

- Now—since this is all sitting in the overall context of Sonship Education—(ours in Rom. 13, and the Mem/Rem here in 2 Pet) - what I want to focus upon now is that our Father doesn't leave us in a 'lurch' (i.e. in the position of having no way out of this *vexing* or this *subversion*—or this *tribulation*) - He doesn't leave us hanging and twisting in the wind to just become a victim of the Satanic PoE and these *evil men* who use it to oppose us!

- rather, (as we've noted before), our Father prepares us in advance for the tactics of the adversary—and He gives us the means to be able to bear it, and to be *more than conquerors* ***IN*** these things! (and now we need to see that)!

- here in 2 Peter 2—after bringing the *ensample* of Sodom and Gomorrha up to the Mem/Rem (that matches up with their godly disdain & zeal) - and then bringing up the Lot situation ...

... after describing Lot and the *subversion* he endured—with the *vexing*; the 2 Lines of Approach; and later on, the details of the *beguiling* ...

... notice (:9) - which matches up with Pro. 2 in connection with Sonship Education and what the son hears from his Father when his Father tells him about another form of opposition he's going to face other than himself and the world-at-large.

... there's this Satanic Policy of Evil with its *evil men* and *strange woman*—and resident within the curriculum for Sonship Education IS the provision that God the Father makes for His sons to face the opposition; endure the opposition (without the Father coming along and using His omnipotent power [hand] to come between them and their circumstances)!

- And that provision is: *When wisdom entereth into thine heart, and knowledge is pleasant unto thy soul;*
Discretion shall preserve thee,
understanding shall keep thee:
To deliver thee from the way of the evil man, from the man that speaketh froward things; (Pro. 2:10-12)

- **Notice:** “praying” is NOT mentioned anywhere in that provision! God doesn’t say, Well, just pray about it. (whatever that means)!

2 Pet. 2:9 — *The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished:*

- basically, the most anyone ever gets out of this passage is: “Lord only knows”! ... i.e., He knows, **but I don’t!** (and that’s NOT what this passage is saying!) ... you’re supposed to know, too!

- When it says, *The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations*—the Mem/Rem are going to match that up with exactly what is sitting back in Proverbs in the ‘format’ for their Sonship Education! ... and they’re going to say, Yes! we do know that!

- and they’ll go back there and get how that *discretion* works and how that *understanding* works—and how they provide for the *preservation* and the *keeping* because they give all that insight and perception concerning the whole way in which the *subverting* through the *vexing* unto the *beguiling* & all the subverting activities takes place—so that they don’t have to be caught off guard/ or in a lurch/ or twisting in the wind ...

... or worse yet, being caught with only some feeble, impotent Christian slogans to try and cope!

- that first statement of (:9) doesn’t mean that “God only knows,” but He hasn’t given you any capacity to get it done with you—NO—

... the issue is: He knows how to do it, **and He’s taught you how to do it!**

- And the Rem is supposed to come along, therefore, and take the information in (:10ff) + (Pro. 2:10ff) + (Pro. 4:14ff) and get a graphic description & graphic details of these *evil men* ..

... and get a **precise, exact** knowledge of the *discretion* & *understanding* that’s going to allow those Mem/Rem to be *preserved & kept & delivered* !

... and without ‘praying’ or passing it off by some meaningless slogan—the Mem/Rem will be able to recognize: That’s *the way of the evil man*: I’m not going to enter into that thing! That’s one of their *paths*: I’m not going to put my foot in that evil!

... and they’ll be able to ‘ponder the path of their feet’ & ‘keep their eyes looking straight on’ - and make some real fine, discretionary judgments!

- And before returning to Romans—we’re going to focus our attention on gathering up all that we’ve studied over this long time — and recognize the position our Father has put us in—that, by giving us some information, and by its effectual working within us, we KNOW (along with the Lord Himself) how He’s provided for the *godly to be delivered out of temptations!*

- and by the time we finish Ch. 13, we’ll know all about our adversary’s tactics in this first-round of our Father’s business Operations in connection with His contention with the adversary—we’ll know what’s coming—we’ll know all about our *armour* (the provision for being ‘more than conquerors’) — and we’ll know about the defense that we’re expected to employ so that we, too, will be *delivered out of temptations!*

- Truth is—when God has the apostle Paul say, in Romans 13:13-14 *Let us walk honestly, as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying. But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof.*

... the expectation is that—in connection with our Sonship Establishment and what we were taught to expect in dealing with the adversary as the one who wants to *separate us from the love of Christ* — and the *tribulation* as the first category of opposition we’re going to receive from him—and the nature of that *tribulation* being the *subversion/vexing/beguiling* (and all that detail) ...

... the expectation is that you’ve GOT ALL THAT!

- And on the basis of that—we know what to look for—we know what’s coming our way—and therefore, Paul can simply identify those first & foremost type of forms of opposition we’ll face ...

... and he can describe and identify them in connection with the SEEING and the HEARING—and can then remind us and exhort us to employ the particular means of *preservation* and *keeping* that we, as members of the new creature of the church, the body of Christ are expected to use in connection with our *instruction of godly Judgment*.

- and that's what (:14) is doing when it says, *But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof.*

- Proverbs 2:10-15

- The issue of SEEING and HEARING is identified in (:12) where 2 men are described: 1) has a *way* = SEEING
2) *speaketh froward things* = HEARING

- and remember that we, too, have an issue of Seeing & Hearing when we perform that overt act of *casting off the works of darkness, and putting on the armour of light!*

- And its through Seeing & Hearing that the adversary becomes aware of what we have done! - and that's how we give him the provoking signal that he has now earned the right to bring his PoE against us.

- So now—the adversary (by means of *the evil men* utilizing the PoE) are going to 'throw it back in our face' (so to speak) - and use the exact same things God Himself utilizes with His "sons" - but they are going to put their own 'spin' on the Seeing/Hearing.

- Why do they employ the exact same means as God does? Because they know how powerful the Seeing/Hearing is to **access your human spirit (where the godly thinking resides)!** [to *subvert*/undermine the full measure of godly disdain for those *works of darkness*]

- and their goal is to fracture that godly thinking, begin driving a wedge in the crack—and ultimately dim our light!

- Basically, you could say: **Seeing and Hearing** is opposed by **Seeing and Hearing!**
(tit for tat)

- and the Seeing and the Hearing form a kind of 2 Flank attack against our godly Thinking (assaulting our human spirit).

- I want to amplify a bit upon the Seeing & the Hearing.

- The **Seeing** is what primarily has the **attractiveness** to it. (that 'Packaging' concept)

- Ex. Lot (see Genesis 13:5-13)
Israel, too (remember Psa. 37 & 73)

- The Mem/Rem SAW the prosperity, the benefits, the fact that those foolish & wicked men profited from those *works of darkness*.

- And the Seeing does occur first and foremost—and it can create a wondering in our mind and a recognition of *the way of the evil man* that is 'packaged' in a way that (even though we recognize them as evil and as *works of darkness*) like the old saying goes, "It's hard to argue with success"!

- And there are things we SEE that begin to **arouse** us (not necessarily in a sexual way) - and that begins to work on some "lust" that's still in our flesh so that we begin to desire the benefits that so many seem to be enjoying.

- And once that Eye-Gate has been successfully accessed—and we do begin to entertain a wondering/admiration/curiosity/awe for the prosperous benefits of *the evil men* ... eventually, the 2nd Line of Approach is going to come in.

- (not that the 1st Line of Approach is abandoned—but the 2nd Line works together along side of the 1st Line)

- And now you have the **HEARING** Line of Approach—the *evil men* will have some words to say to you that are designed to find out whether what we have been **seeing** has begun to make us wonder—or 'strum a few of our heart-strings' — and with that 'sin in our members' might begin to have us to **desire** some of that prosperity (or that attractive packaging) for ourselves ... *viz., the spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth to envy* concept.

- And the *froward speaking* is going to start off in a ‘probing’ or reconnaissance type concept ...

... they’ll ‘bounce some things off us’ to see if we come back with any kind of repudiation (*cast off ... put on*) [do we remain firm in our stand like we started out with] ... or is there a little ‘chink’ in our armour? ... can they ‘*break us to pieces with words*’?

- So the **seeing** occurs first—and is primarily designed to access our human spirit in order to find out if there is any opportunity for an ‘allurement’ or ‘enticement’ to actually take place—(and kind of see if it’s worthwhile to pursue this temptation any further).

- by the way—the **seeing** doesn’t necessarily require any close or personal contact with *the evil men*—the **seeing** can be accomplished by the environment/culture in which you live.

... as we’ve noted before—the adversary and his PoE knows when your *armour of light* is shining in a particular area—(without any close or personal contact with you) [i.e., via that vast Intelligence Gathering System/Agency]

- And again, the goal of the **seeing** is to get you to look at it ... but not simply look at it—look at it **differently** than your Father taught you to look at it! (to look at the *works of darkness*—but to see something about them that the PoE wants us to see) [i.e., the gain/profit/prosperity/benefit that the ones involved in those *works of darkness* are getting]

... fascinating—the adversary doesn’t make any effort to get rid of the *works of darkness* and replace it with something entirely different ... he says, Ok, yeah, it’s a *work of darkness* ... but look at it this way ...

... it’s a major victory (feather in his cap) to get a saint/son to recognize a *work of darkness* ... but still participate in it anyway!!!

- (by the way, that’s the power of **VEXING!**)

- [day after day; wear down your resolve!
wear down your disdain/loathing/abhorrence]

- And one of the reasons why I'm making such a big deal about this is because of the Godly Labor component in Romans 13:14 *But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof.*

- OUR DELIVERANCE / SALVATION FROM BEING BATTLEFIELD CASUALTIES IS GOING TO COME DOWN TO THE ISSUE OF KEEPING OUR GODLY DISDAIN AT 100%!

- Then—once that **seeing** has effectively worked—and we begin to operate with less-than 100% disdain for a particular *work of darkness* that we've been *casting off* (as it gets presented to us in all of the attractive package) ...

... then, eventually, the **hearing** comes along (maybe immediately, maybe some time later) ... and it DOES get more personal.

- And when our human spirit (*that lusteth to envy*) begins to LUST—that “lust” now gets **fertilized** (so to speak).

- And that's what the *evil man who speaketh froward things* does!

- Words are great and powerful motivators!

- Words are actually designed by God Himself (whether used in an evil sense or not) — but especially His words are designed by Him to have **the most powerful impact upon influencing our human spirit and working within it!**

- And the adversary and his PoE knows that as well!

- And it's the job of the 2nd Line of Approach to access our human spirit to actually start producing the *frowardness!* [moving you away; separating you from *the love of Christ*]

... the words of *the evil men* do the job of '*breaking you in pieces*'!

- And it's the **hearing**, especially, that we've got to respond to!

- The **seeing** is going to be a very powerful Line of Approach (or Line of Access) to our human spirit—because it, primarily, has the alluring ‘packaging’ that gets presented to our ‘eye-gate’ ...

... and of the 2 Lines of Access, it will be the easiest to respond to—and to resist ... (not that it will be easy)

... but then you’ll be presented with the **hearing**—which, of the 2 Lines of Access, will be the most difficult to resist—and the one that will require our most steadfast resistance.

- And the thing we need to now make a **strong connection** with is—that both the **seeing** and the **hearing** (together) **form an incredibly powerful appeal to some lust that still resides within us!**

- which is why Romans 13:14 says, *But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the LUSTS thereof.*

... it DOESN’T say: ‘and make not provision for the flesh so you don’t have any lust!’

- No — you learned back in Romans 6 that in connection with your fundamental sanctification—that with sin dwelling in your members, **you’re always going to have the lust**—you can’t do anything about that!!!

- and because sin still dwells in our members— therefore — by what the *evil men* do in presenting the temptation to dim our “*light*” by means of the LOF/LOE/POL with those *works of darkness* presented to us in those enticing/alluring ‘packages’ ...

... by means of the 2 Lines of Access (of **seeing** and **hearing**) **the lusts CAN therefore be generated!**

- And if we don’t stop it at the **seeing**—then we MUST stop it at the **hearing**.

- and that’s why, in the Post-Doctrinal Exhortation in Pro. 4 following the *instruction of godly Judgment*—a whole 2-paragraph/section is dedicated to warning the son in regard to the **hearing!** (the **hearing** is where we ‘draw the line in the sand’ and say, NO MORE!)

- And in Pro. 2—you can see how *the evil men* are skilled at utilizing the **seeing & hearing** in order to access your human spirit—and to get some **lust** that still resides within us going ...

... once they get your attention (**seeing**) ... they then begin to say some *froward things* to you (**hearing**) ... and ...

(read : 13-14) ... and if we begin to think about these *works of darkness* in any degree **less** than that total disdain & godly hatred for them—all it takes is that small, marginalized degree of thinking for that seed of lust to become fertilized—and for it to germinate—and for a ‘plant of lust’ to begin to grow!

- And you can see that same ‘seed/fertilizing/germinating’ concept worked on by the *evil men* of the PoE with the Mem/Rem/Isr ...

(and they can then make some godly **judgments** in connection with these things!)

... in that familiar passage we looked at in **2 Peter 2** ... (and with their *discretion/understanding*, they are supposed to be able to look right through those *seeing/hearing* tactics and by *the eyes of their understanding*, see that those *works of darkness* are **STILL THERE—and they’re no different than they ever were!** ... no matter what they call it; no matter how they describe it; no matter how much fun they have with it or how great/prosperous they become in connection with it)

... **they are still works of darkness—and God’s attitude towards it hasn’t changed one bit!** ... and it’s the same for us in this disp/of Grace!

- (:17-19) - if you pay attention, you can see how the expressions that are used here describe how that seed that’s been planted gets watered; gets fertilized; and the PoE works to get the seed of *lust* germinated ...

- (read :17-19) (:18) - the **seeing** has already taken place (:14)—now the **hearing** comes along and (to make the connection), those *great swelling words of vanity* are designed to *allure through the LUSTS of the flesh*

... and that's what I want you to see/focus upon:
THE CONNECTION OF:

THE SEEING & THE HEARING
WITH THE
LUST STILL RESIDENT IN YOUR
MEMBERS!

- the *lusts of the flesh* have already been appealed to by what's been **seen**—and now the issue is: Are those Mem/Rem going to do what is necessary to deny those *lusts*—or can they be influenced some more by some **hearing** that can present that *allurement* and act like that fertilizer, and get that 'seed of lust' to germinate into a full-blown 'plant of lust'?!

- And the goal of these *evil men* and what they declare with their 'rejoicing' and 'delight' in their *works of darkness* is to assault that godly Thinking of the total godly disdain/loathing ... and get that Mem/Rem to view these *w/o/d* differently than what their Father taught them!

- and the issue isn't to totally 'flip' that Mem/Rem—the issue is to just get that reconsideration going—just get it underway.

- That's what an *allurement* is—it's a process of **increasing attractiveness**; an increasing lowering of the caution & defenses & wariness of the one you're trying to ensnare!

- And that's what takes place with those *great swelling words* and that *froward speaking of the evil men* ...

... and the way those *words* work (the **hearing**, especially) is that, the same kind of 'delight' and 'rejoicing' that the *evil men* are having—is presented to us by some *great swelling words & froward speaking* in order to generate within us that same kind of 'delight' and 'rejoicing'? [fun] for those things ...

... and the **more** that gets produced within us—the **less** the godly disdain/loathing/abhorrence we have for those *works of darkness*.

- Let's look at it in one more place — **Jude**

- (:16) - (a lot more details about the subversive activities and the vexing)

- but notice: they are *murmurers, complainers*—(that’s a further/advanced tactic in connection with what the Mem/Rem **see** them **do**, and, especially, what we **hear** them **say** — that’s designed to wear-down their resolve/stand and their total godly disdain for the *w/o/d*.)

- (and that’s also an issue with us! [1 Cor. 10:10; Phil. 2:14])

- ... *walking* [that’s the **seeing**] *after their own lusts; and their mouth* [that’s the **hearing**] *speaketh great swelling words*, [just like Peter spoke about] ...

... but now, in connection with this further tactic of the *murmuring & complaining*—notice: *having men’s persons in admiration because of advantage*.

- there’s an *admiration* issue that’s brought in here ...
... **but it’s all FAKE!**

- and it’s designed to have a particular impact upon (the Mem/Rem in this context) the “son”!

- It’s the production of a ‘mutual admiration society’ - which is a kind of ‘rejoicing’ and a kind of ‘delight’ - but not in the *work of darkness* itself—but in the ones who are participating in it!

- What I’m after here is that issue of *advantage*—it puts the *evil men* in a position of *advantage* over the son! ... **IF** the son falls for it!!! (and the son gets taken in by that *mouth speaking great swelling words* and operating upon the principle of ADMIRATION!)

- My goal here is simple: In order for you as a ‘son’ to (in view of the Dispensational Timing of this Disp of Grace as stated in that saying, *The night is far spent, the day is at hand*;) and to therefore *cast off the works of darkness, and put on the armour of light, and walk honestly, as in the day*—having generated, by the effectual working of God’s word, a total godly disdain for those *works of darkness* ...

... & because of the ability/capacity that gives you for making godly Judgments—and because that overt act provokes the adversary to have to begin to actively oppose/resist you ...

... and knowing that your first round of opposition from the adversary and his PoE is going to be in the form of some *tribulation*...

... the kind of trouble you're going to receive is going to be in the form of some subversion that seeks to undermine your godly thinking of total godly disdain for those *w/o/d* ...

... you need to understand and appreciate in a very firm and very real way that the methodology of the *evil men* that oppose you will be to *vex* you by means of some things that you **see** and **hear** ...

... and that **seeing & hearing** will be the means to **access** your human spirit (where the godly thinking resides) ...

... and the **seeing** (and especially) the **hearing** will attempt to **connect** with some **lust** that still resides in your members! (attempt to fertilize that **lust** and germinate it into getting YOU to dim your own “*light*” and eventually getting YOU to put your own “*light*” out!)

- (one more time: Prov. 2)

- Let's take what we've covered so far and with all that we've dealt with background-wise in connection with the methodology of the subversion that will make up the *tribulation* that we are going to encounter from the *evil men* and the Satanic PoE as we first encounter contending with the adversary at this point in our Sonship Education (having received the *instruction of wisdom, justice, and judgment*) ...

... and I want to come back to the issue of what our Father has given us by educating us and edifying us as His “sons” - I want to look at what our Father has given us as the **provision** for our successful defense against the ‘*separation*’ tactics of the adversary and his PoE.

- In other words—I want to end all this background work we've done by once again looking at the **elements** that make up our *armour of light*.

- and in view of all that we've gone over—get a ‘working’ sonship definition of the *discretion* and the *understanding*.

Proverbs 2:10

When wisdom entereth into thine heart, and knowledge is pleasant unto thy soul;

- The *wisdom* and the *knowledge* pertains to the instruction you've received as a "son" - *wisdom, justice, and judgment* - and in view of all that, you are now in a position of great ability and great capacity to *cast off the works of darkness, and put on the armour of light—and walk honestly, as in the day—and participate in the gracious business operations of your Father in His contention with the adversary.*

- And in view of all that we've covered from Romans 12:3 through 13:13—**that's the position we are supposed to be in RIGHT NOW!** ... (so, the question is: are you?)

- Well—because that **particular kind** of *wisdom* has entered into your heart, and that **particular kind** of *knowledge* is pleasant unto your soul—that has put you in the position of being *preserved* and *kept* as described in (:11).

- And now I want to once again look at those two words that are the elements that make up your *armour of light*—and are the actual 2 things that are going to produce the '*preservation*' and that are going to produce the '*keeping*'.

Proverbs 2:11

Discretion shall preserve thee, understanding shall keep thee:

NOT: - praying God will intervene
 - a miracle
 - tithing
 - divine providence
 - going to church more than usual
 - giving to the poor and needy
 - God's will
 - predestination
 - getting water baptized
 - joining a church
 - re-dedicating your life
 - joining the choir
 - exorcism
 - prayer circle etc., etc., etc.

- Point is—it's going to be an "inner man" issue that's going to provide for your being '*preserved*' and '*kept*' and '*delivered from the way of the evil men*'!

... it's going to be an issue of GRACE and the POWER OF GRACE that's going to do it! ...

- You don't have any of the kind of godly *discretion* and *understanding* (i.e., the elements of *the armour of light*) **unless** the *wisdom* has entered your heart and *knowledge* is pleasant unto your soul!

- In other words—unless the effectual working of God's word (by grace, through faith) as contained in our curriculum for our sonship education (in Romans 12:3-13:14) has done its job—and that sound doctrine has gotten written upon the *fleshy tables* of your heart ... the truth is, YOU DON'T HAVE ANY ARMOUR to *preserve* and *keep* you! (don't kid yourself!)

- Now—let's consider those 2 words: *discretion* and *understanding* a little closer than we've done already—and recognize why those 2 words are used here.

- DISCRETION

- from all we've gone over in connection with godly *judgment*, you should know why *discretion* comes up here.

- but previous to this, we had a very 'wordy' definition that kind of arched over the whole realm of Sonship Education.

- and now—in view of all that we've gone over so far ... let's narrow this word down to a 'working definition' that is **context sensitive** and **context specific** to a "son" who is going to labor together with his Father in contending with the adversary.

(working definition): *Discretion* is primarily the ability to discern passion-based enticements, and to **not** be taken in by them.

- there are other ways in which the word *discretion* can be used that have other issues to it—and that have to do with other contexts ...

... but the ‘bottom-line’ issue is—when you’ve got *discretion*, you’ve got the capacity & ability (based upon **information** that **gives** you this capacity and that **gives** you this ability) to have insight into, or to discern passion-based [or lust-based] enticements ...

... and to, therefore, recognize them for what they are, and NOT have to be taken in by them; NOT have to be victimized by them.

- And that’s why, in connection with *discretion*, you find the issue coming up of “self-control”, “restraint”, “temperance” being spoken about—(because that’s the ‘fruit’ of *discretion*).

- You’ve got someone else out there who is trying to **control** you; to **condition** you; to have an **influence** upon you—to produce a kind of ‘temper’ of mind—produce an attitude within you—or who is trying to ‘constrain’ you to do something that they want you to do ...

... but when you’ve got *discretion*, you’ve got the ability to discern the passion-based enticements that are designed to incite you to follow a course of action they want you to follow—and instead of you losing control; you’ve got the self-control to determine to go your own way.

- And you’ve got the ‘restraint’, therefore, NOT to have a ‘bit’ put in your mouth and dragged along with them!

- And you’ve got the ‘temperance’ [moderation, self-restraint], therefore, to shape your own ‘temper’- rather than to have it shaped for you!

- that’s what *discretion* is—and *discretion* is a component of ***judgment***.

- And in view of those recent passages that we looked at over in 2 Peter 2 and Jude—(which amplify upon the further details about how the *seeing* and the *hearing* operates) — you know, therefore, that with those *lusts* that are going to be generated within you—and that *spirit* within you, also, that *lusteth to envy* ... the issue is

... that **discretion** will allow you to be able to **detect** that passion-based enticement (or that lust-based enticement) that has come your way—and you’re going to therefore, intelligently know what it’s designed to do—and you can, therefore, **DENY** it having the **control** over you that it seeks to have.

- and that’s how **discretion shall preserve you!**

... but you’ve also got something else ... you’ve got the *understanding that shall keep thee ...*

- **UNDERSTANDING**

- And, again, as a context sensitive word—let’s narrow down our lengthy/wordy previous definition to a ‘working, sonship definition’ that is **context sensitive** and **context specific** to a “son” who is going to labor together with his Father in the business operations of his Father that have to do with His contention with the adversary.

- And it’s the context itself that gives you the information to know what kind of *understanding* you got from that information.

(working definition): *Understanding* in this context means that you know *the way* that *the evil men* operate.

- you know the ‘scope’ of everything they’re going to do:

- from the most general goal in the formulation of what they’re after (**subversion**);

- all the way through their methodology (*vexed*);

- and all the way to the individual subversive activities (*beguiled*).

- Therefore, the issue is: **NOTHING SHOULD TAKE YOU BY SURPRISE!**

- you’re in a position, therefore, that you **understand** what you’re up against—(“Know thy enemy” ... and you do!)

- you know your enemy—as far as the first round of the skirmishes of the PoE that are going to cause you *tribulation*. (... and that's all you need to know right now)

- You *understand* enough about what you're up against so that you can detect when that *tribulation* begins (*subversion*);

- and if it's unsuccessful at the beginning, you know exactly what it's going to do to 'up the ante' (*vexing*);

- and you know exactly what it's going to do when it throws everything it can throw at you (as far as its first go-round is concerned) - (*beguiling*) ...

- and that's why **nothing** should take you by surprise!

- If (IF) you've effectually benefitted from the effectual working of everything you've been given to learn up to this point in your Sonship Education—then you've GOT the *discretion* and you've GOT the *understanding*—and you can be *preserved* and you can be *kept* and in the end, *delivered from the way of the evil man, from the man that speaketh froward things!*

(*preserved and kept* free from being victimized from the *evil man* and the Satanic PoE that is gong to assault your godly Thinking and attempt to *separate you from the love of Christ*)

- And that's the position we should be in, by now!
(AND THAT'S A GREAT POSITION TO BE IN!)

- and just like it said back in 2 Peter 2—in connection with the situation Lot was in, in Sodom and Gomorrah—*The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, ...*

- And now, by the effectual working of all that you've been taught so far in your Sonship Education—you've **got**, operating within you **that provision to deliver you out of the temptations you're going to face from the evil men during this Disp/of/Grace—at this particular stage of the evolution of man's ungodliness—when you, casting off the works of darkness, and putting on the armour of light—walk honestly as in the day, and begin to experience the opposition to 'dim' your light!**

... you're now in possession of the fundamentals regarding the methodology by which God has provided for YOU to be *delivered* from those *temptations* that are going to cause you some *tribulation*!

- Questions? Comments? Observations?

- BACK TO ROMANS 13:11-14

- And with all that background information—let's make sure that it's 'installed' properly (so to speak) - and 'plug it in' to the remaining issues in chapter 13 regarding our 2nd Component of *the instruction of godly judgment*.

... and by all that we've covered—it should be rather easy to deal with the remainder of vs. 13, and the Godly Labor component in vs. 14.

- The remainder of (:13) now focuses upon what is coming our way regarding the subversive tactics of *the evil men* and the Satanic PoE.

- it focuses upon, especially, the **seeing** and the **hearing** we are going to encounter in connection with those *works of darkness* in all 3 of their major categories (LOF/LOE/POL).

- and it puts you in a continual '**On Guard**' Status for these *works of darkness* to assault your godly Thinking, and to get you to 'dim' your *light*—and just put down *the armour of light* and walk away—and desert to the enemies' side!

- review

God loves—John 3:16; Rom. 8:37; Eph. 2:4; 1 Jn. 4:8 *God is love*

God **hates**—Ps. 5:5; Pro. 6:16-19

- well, the Cross made it so that God doesn't hate any more!
(anything goes—and if not, God will just forgive it)
... really? Rev. 2:6, 15

- So why doesn't it seem that God is 'hating' today?
... humm ... maybe the revelation of the 'mystery'???
Rom. 2:4

- ("Compass" Chart #62)

- Let's deal with the details of the remainder of (:13)

- Romans 13:13 *Let us walk honestly, as in the day; **not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying.***

- As we noted before—this is NOT being said because the Roman saints were actually participating in any of these *works of darkness* themselves—

- (just like the issue right now is that **you** are NOT participating in these things at the moment)

- As a “son”, you’re **not** being told this as a reproof and a rebuke — as though you’re doing those things!

- The issue is—as you are *walking honestly, as in the day*—(having the effectual working, and effectual impact that the saying, *The night is far spent, the day is at hand* doing its effectual job within your human spirit—and as you, therefore take the appropriate course of action in your conduct & behavior to *cast off the works of darkness, and put on the armour of light*) —

... and you are therefore manifesting the Truth of God’s word and exposing those *works of darkness* for what they are to the adversary and his PoE ...

... you’re going to be, therefore, on the receiving end of some opposition/resistance to try to get you to compromise your godly thinking—and get you involved in the very things you’re supposed to be repudiating (or ‘casting off’)!

- (and weaken your resolve; your stand—and to begin thinking about participating in them [even silently] and get some of the benefit/prosperity out of them) [‘packaging’]

- And that’s the REASON WHY the apostle Paul says what he does here—that’s why he lists 6 particular sins that are themselves *works of darkness*.

- And the reason why he lists these 6 *w/o/d* are to give us an ALERT or a ‘heads-up’ - an admonition for what we are to expect to come our way—in terms of opposition from adversary (*evil men & PoE*).

- And the reason why we have these particular 6 *w/o/d* listed for us here—is because **those are the ones that we will most commonly encounter in our first round with contending with the adversary**—[it’s our ‘heads-up’ for what’s coming at us]
 — and because of our understanding/appreciation for exactly what the *works of darkness* are in those 3 Major Categories (LOF/LOE/POL) — **those 3 sets of 2** (at this stage in our Sonship Education) **are the most likely to find a corresponding lust residing in our members, and link up with that lust and begin to germinate it into getting US to oppose our Father’s instruction to us!** [the ‘kicker’ will come in :14]

- And now we need to get an appreciation for why there are 2 issues in each of the 3 sets—so that we can get the proper alerts and have the proper watchfulness/vigilance, that we need to have ...

... and therefore be ‘on guard’ - particularly as the members of the new creature of the church, the body of Christ that we are in this Disp of Grace—at the stage of the Disp./of/Grace in which we live—at this point in the evolution of man’s ungodliness—with those *w/o/d* being kept in their ‘red-hot’ status—and with our participation in this aspect of our Father’s business ...

... this information is telling us exactly what we are to expect—and be on the receiving end of when it comes to the PoE’s opposition to us.

Chart #50

- The 3 Categories of the *works of darkness* (LOF/LOE/POL) came out of (:12) when we went over the details of *the works of darkness*.

- And we now have an expectation that, as those *works of darkness* get ‘thrown in our face’ (in order get us to weaken our stand/resolve/*light*—and be enticed to participate in those things—or even begin to think about participating in those things) — since we know what to expect, we should be prepared to deal with the ‘armour-aspect’ of our *light* and how to defensively respond to the subversive temptations to dim our *light*.

- And we would expect, therefore, that some of the Great Debaucheries of the LOF; and some of the Great Wantonness of the LOE; and some of the Great Prideful Thinking of the POL are going to get presented to you ...

... and you're going to be **seeing** it and **hearing** it in a manner that's designed to get you to be influenced by it—and to, therefore, get you to participate in it **in some degree**—even if all it is, is to get you thinking that maybe your stand against those things is a bit too harsh!

- And as we have come to understand—Paul says ...

not in rioting and drunkenness, — which lines up with the category of the LOF;

not in chambering and wantonness, — which lines up with the category of the LOE;

not in strife and envying. — which lines up with the category of the POL.

- And each **“not”** indicates **NOT** getting adversely affected or adversely **influenced** by either the LOF (and its Great Debaucheries); or the LOE (and its Great Wantonness); or the POL (and its Great Proudful Thinking).

- and those 3 **“nots”** make up the kind/nature of what we have called this ‘gesture’ or **overt act** that you are going to perform that gets the attention of the adversary and provokes him to begin to oppose your sonship life!

- it's an overt act of **NOT** participating in these things.

- And when we went over the itemized list of all these things—(in each of the 3 Categories of the *w/o/d*) — in some cases the actual words (our 6 words/sins) were mentioned—but even in the case where they weren't actually used, **the concept was still there!**

... and if we did an even more detailed examination of *the works of darkness* we would encounter the exact words in our list of 6.

- Now—when you think about these 6 sins/*wod*—and you think about each group of 2—it should occur to you that one is more **general** than the other.

(did you see that much?)

- But (again), why does God have the apostle Paul cite 2 things (or 2 *wod*) - and why not just 1 each? [i.e., *rioting/chambering/strife*]

- and while it's true that the 1st one listed in each group is more general than the 2nd one in each group—that, alone really doesn't give us a very satisfactory answer as to Why are there 2 in each group?

- Any ideas???

- When you think about how the 2 issues are 'teamed up' — even though, separately, and on their own, they could be considered an individual item within the listing of the *wod* — (which is actually true in other contexts) ...

... when they're teamed up like this—and you've got the background and frame of reference that you got from all that we've gone over in connection with the subversive activities, and the methodology of the evil men and the aspect of the Satanic PoE that specifically goes after a properly educated "son" at the end of his *instruction of godly judgment* ...

... with that kind of a frame of reference, it is perfectly natural for God to come along and have the apostle Paul talk about 2 particular items in connection with each Category of the *wod*! (just 1 wouldn't be enough)

- Why?

- When it comes to the real **work** of the methodology (or the mechanical means) to *subvert* your godly thinking and cause you the kind of *tribulations* that you, as a "son", would be on the receiving end of—

— (that is of the Subversion/Vexing/Beguiling— where does the 'hard work' [so to speak] get done by the *evil men* and the PoE?)

A: THE **VEXING**

- And what is the primary methodology of the *vexing*?

A: THE **SEEING** AND THE **HEARING!**

- And why **seeing & hearing**—why is that so big of a deal?

A: Those are the 2 Lines of Access into your human spirit.

- And why is it important to access your human spirit?

A: That's where the godly thinking resides.

- And what is the **seeing** and **hearing** attempting to do?

A: Fertilize/Germinate a seed of **LUST!**

- So if you were to think about how the **real work**, or the **real power** of *subverting* (undermining) your godly thinking about the *wod* takes place—**you would have 2 major issues involved!**

1) The issue of **accessing your human spirit**:

SEEING & HEARING

2) The issue of **LUST**—germinating a seed of **LUST!**

- So each one of the 1st issues mentioned deals with the very thing that you are going to **SEE** and **HEAR**—(the very thing that is going to attempt to access your human spirit).

- and under the Category of the LOF (and the Great Debaucheries) - the reason why the order is what it is— [not, 'not in drunkenness and rioting'] is because the 1st one (***rioting***) - in view of the methodology by which the *subversive* activity functions—that's what you're going to see and hear...

... that's going to be *the way of the evil man, the man that **speaketh** froward things.*

(that's what you're going to **see & hear!**)

- And based upon the way in which you're going to **see** and **hear** it—it's going to be 'packaged' in that attractive 'packaging' that has that 'allurement' to it; 'enticement' to it—so you begin to look at it with some **desire** for the 'benefits' or 'prosperity' you **see & hear** men get by participating in that thing.

- And for some time, you're going to be thinking about what you're **seeing & hearing with that full measure of Total Godly Disdain** ...

... and that may go on for a while (as it should) ...

... but the **real work** of the PoE with the *Vexing*—and the constant bombarding you with it, is designed to make it so that your full measure of Godly Disdain begins to be worn down—the determination of your 'stand' begins to be worn down ...

... you become less and less sensitive—(it works to **de-sensitize** you to respond with godly hatred/disdain /abhorrence for it).

- And once that starts to take place—once that 'chink' in your *armour* occurs and the capacity is implemented for a lust to arise from sin in your members, to begin to entertain thoughts about that *wod* differently than what your Father taught you ...

... then the issue is that a particular **LUST** begins to be 'stroked' and 'awakened' & 'aroused' in your inner man ...

... and for the 'pleasure' component of it to begin to arise in your thinking ...

... AND THAT'S WHERE THE 2ND ISSUE COMES INTO PLAY!

- Because the 2nd Issue is the passion-based LUST that is the most common producer of the work of darkness that's listed 1st!

- And it's the same for all 3 groups of 2!

- The 1st word refers to a general *work of darkness* within the Category (of either the LOF, the LOE, or the POL) - and the 2nd word is focusing upon a particular LUST with respect to that *work of darkness*.

- By the way—you should be able to understand and appreciate in an even greater way, why the provision your Father gives you: to *preserve, keep, and deliver* you from the *evil men* is: **DISCRETION AND UNDERSTANDING!**

- and the idea of the kind of sonship *discretion* you're supposed to now have is—*the ability to detect a passion-based enticement, and not be taken in by it ...*

... but that doesn't mean that the LUST won't occur—in fact, **IT WILL OCCUR**—(that's why you've got to be able to “**detect**” it!) ...

... but the issue is that, *When the wisdom has entered into your heart, and knowledge is pleasant unto your soul—by means of **the particular** wisdom & knowledge your Heavenly Father has given you in your instruction of wisdom, justice, and judgment—you're going to be able to **detect** when that LUST arises & gets aroused in your members—and you're **not** going to therefore be taken in by it!*

- (this is the power of the **effectual** working of God's word within your inner man!)

- And in this first 'couplet' — *not in rioting and drunkenness* — the actual VEXING (i.e., the attempt to access your human spirit by what you are going to **see** and **hear**) — it's going to be by the constant SEEING and HEARING of rioting that's going to attempt to arouse in the sin in your members, the LUST of drunkenness.

- **“RIOTING”** = OED: 1) Dissoluteness [lacking moral restraint; indulging in sensual pleasures or vices] of life, debauchery; revelry. (1611 Bible, Rom. 13:13); 2) The action or fact of taking part in or raising a riot, tumult, or disturbance of the peace.

= tumult, uproar

- common to every definition, (whether in large groups or small), is the issue of VIOLENCE!

- And most commonly, we think of *rioting* in terms of a mob—confronting police; overturning cars; windows being smashed; fires being set; looting taking place—(all of which is true) ...

... but that's not the only kind of *rioting* ...

- **Rioting** = (can be a mob of people, or a single individual) = an excess of public behavior of a mob of people, or a single individual, demanding and insisting on their own ‘rights’ that they feel in some way has been constrained or denied them—and they therefore **rebel** against any ordinance or any attempts to **control** them, and stop them from rebelling.

- And that’s why the word *rioting* is most commonly thought of (or used) in connection with a Government!

(because the government contains the ordinances, and has the laws in place that produce the restraints & controls—and has the authority, etc.)

- And in view of that—it’s easy to grasp that the *rioting* is what you’re going to be SEEING & HEARING—it’s the most overt act of the *work of darkness* that’s being focused upon in the Category of the *works of darkness* dealing with the LOF and its Great Debaucheries.

... therefore, **rioting** is a revolt, a violation, and a total disregard against what God has established! (**remember Rom. 13:1-7 [2]**) - the Divine Establishment of Human Government.

- And the Satanic Plan of Evil determines to tear down that godly “pillar” of Divine Establishment, and to replace it with a means of population control (or government—or the way in which men interact and relate to one another en masse — ‘community organizing’) designed by the adversary, to meet his aims, goals, and objectives!

- And then—the passion-based LUST that is the most common producer, and general ‘fueling’ of that overt, public act of *rioting* is the issue of “**drunkenness**”.

- more often than not—*drunkenness* is what’s behind the *rioting*!

- “**DRUNKENNESS**” = a state of being intoxicated on alcohol/liquor (or drugs/narcotics) to an extent which affects a person’s self-control.

- **NOTE:** So powerful is the affects that *drunkenness* has upon the mind—(whether it’s alcohol or drugs) on of the most common Older English expressions for liquors is: **spirit / spirits !** [still in use today!]

... (it’s quite possible to be able to ‘capture’ a spirit in a container! = a bottle of whisky, wine, rum, vodka, etc.)

- Such a great term—because of the direct connection that alcohol/drugs has upon the human spirit/mind!

- (Webster’s 1828) *drunkenness* = intoxication; inebriation; a state in which a person is overwhelmed or overpowered with spirituous liquors, so that his reason is disordered, and he reels or staggers in walking. Drunkenness renders some persons stupid, others gay, others sullen, others furios.
Let us walk honestly, as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness (St. Paul).

Passion is the *drunkenness* of the mind.
(LUST) (human spirit)

- And note: it is possible to be “drunk” on something other than alcohol/drugs—because you can be “drunk” on other “spirits”!

- So we have— *Let us walk honestly, as in the day, not in rioting* (what you **see & hear** that accesses your human spirit and repeatedly vexes you) *and drunkenness* (the passion-based lust that is the most common producer of the *rioting*) ...

- Now for the 2nd couplet that lines up perfectly with the LOE and its Great Wantonness (or Lasciviousness):

... ***not in chambering and wantonness,***

- again, the “**not**” doesn’t mean that you are doing this and should stop it—rather, do NOT become adversely affected/influenced by it! (that’s the ‘overt act’/gesture that signals the adversary)

- “**CHAMBERING**” = (an Older English word that has fallen out of use [very unfortunate!]) - the word often brings to mind the issue of sexual indulgence, sexual promiscuity, unlawful sexual activity, etc. (all of which is true in our passage)

- Simply: just think about a “*chamber*” - and a *chamber* can be used in a whole bunch of ways—but when it’s teamed-up with the word *wantonness* as the particular lust or driving force that produces the *chambering* ...

... the “*chamber*” (in this context) doesn’t have to do with just any old ‘*chamber*’ - rather, it has to do with a **BED CHAMBER**.

- And *chambering* is the issue of going from one bed-chamber to another bed-chamber!

(granted, that *is* sexual promiscuity—but there’s a shade of meaning that’s very important to understand)

- As far as a ‘working’ definition—or God’s definition—*chambering* is actually **MORE THAN THAT**.

- *Chambering* is the issue of the expression of sexual freedom in disregard to the Divine Institution of Marriage!

- And the reason why the word *chamber* is used (and the shade of meaning that makes it the most excellent word choice in our context) — is that in any use of the word, a CHAMBER IS ALWAYS A **PRIVATE** THING!

... even when used in the loosest sense possible:
ex. a **cave** (a “*chamber*” in a cave) - it’s not only a smaller room compared to the others—but it’s a side-room that’s not part of the main, big, public area of the cave ...

... ex.—in a **court room** system—the judge will go and deliberate in his “*chambers*” - which is a private place where he, himself goes—and the rest of the people in the court can’t go in there unless they’re invited in—that’s a private chamber!

- And the reason why the place of the marriage bed is called a “bed chamber” is because that is the **private room** of the husband and the wife, where they would naturally go to engage in **the privacy of their marital relations!**

- And a “bed chamber” was a private area for that.

- And it was, therefore, exclusively in the realm of the married man and woman.

- The *chamber* and the *bed chamber* is **God’s** concept for the **issue of the sanctity of the marriage**—in keeping the sexual relations of the husband and the wife **privately** between just the two of them in their lawful union!

- And the performance of the sexual relations are NOT to be taking place outside of that “bed chamber”!

- So—*chambering* is the word that describes the issue of men and women pursuing **freedom** of their sexuality ... and their sexual relations ... and their sexual performance — FREE FROM THE CHAMBER!

(and therefore, going from one *chamber* to another *chamber* to another—as if there are NO ‘doors’ on those *chambers* [so to speak] - and as if it’s NOT a private thing for the man and the woman within the *chamber*)

- So, *chambering* IS sexual promiscuity—**but the emphasis here is upon the fact that it’s a violation of the privacy and sanctity of the marriage relationship**—it’s a total disregard and **revolt against what God has established!**

- And under the Category of LOE—*chambering* is what’s going to be **seen** and **heard**.

- (just think about what goes on on most television programs—you’re brought right into people’s “bed chamber”! - and you end up **seeing & hearing chambering** going on! [even when you, physically, aren’t in someone’s house or “bed chamber”])

- *Chambering* is the particular *work of darkness* you’re going to **see & hear**.

- And the goal of the Satanic Plan of Evil (in this Category of *the works of darkness*—LOE) is to attack & tear down that ‘pillar’ of the Divine Institution of marriage & family—the personal, individual relationships that men & women are to have with each other) - and replace it with ungodly personal relationships that will teach, train, conform, and condition men and women to accept the unnatural relationship with Satan himself, and ultimately, his “man of sin” — (again, fulfilling Satan and his Plan of Evil’s aims, goals, and objectives)

- (sex that is free from any godly restraint is very important for the kind of substitute religion and worship that the adversary has in mind—remember Babylon? remember the Canaanites? remember Sodom & Gomorrah? remember the ‘golden calf’ incident?)

- And the goal in the *vexation* of the **seeing & hearing** of *chambering* is to begin to produce/generate a wantonness in you!

- **“WANTONNESS”** = generally, [from *want* = a not having enough of something] - *wanton* = apt to run off, to wander astray + *ness* = a state, quality, or characteristic — hence, a person whose character is to wander astray.

= to be undisciplined, ungovernable, unmanageable, uncontrollable, rebellious—commonly used in contexts of persons who are sexually uncontrollable and unrestrained.

- Coupled up with *chambering*, the issue of *wantonness* is constrained to a person’s strong desire [**lust**] for unrestrained, illicit sexual gratification ... [outside of God’s design and parameters for sexual relations between a husband and his wife].

- Through the particular *work of darkness* of *chambering*—the idea is that by the constant **seeing & hearing** of it—is to produce/generate/arouse a **lust** from the sin in your members whereby you begin to lessen your own understanding & appreciation for the chamber ... and begin to think about & desire that kind of sexual freedom/liberty ... tempting

... and maybe you'd like to do it in a 'voyeurism' type way!
(rather than actually participating in it) ...

- Now for the 3rd couplet that lines up perfectly with the POL and its Great Proudful Thinking (and the *works of darkness* that manifest PRIDE in an overt act):

- **“STRIFE”** (used in a bad sense) = contention, opposition, antagonism, discord, disputing, angry undignified quarreling.

- *strife* displays itself in words or acts of violence!

[Pro. 15:18]

- (Charles Smith, “Synonyms Discriminated”)

“*Strife* carries with it the idea of low, noisy contention about things which are not worth the words and temper spent upon them. *Strife* is vulgar contention about trifles, and with the selfish and narrow end of mere personal superiority or mastery in talk. *Contention* involves the idea of something better worth fighting for.”

[describes what goes on in many churches!]

- *Strife* is a very powerful act/manifestation of PRIDE!!!

[Pro. 28:25]

- Why is this presented as being one of the great *works of darkness* that has to do with the most fundamental relationship God has with man? (that is, God's word)?

- Look at it's **1st use** in God's word: (Gen. 13:1-7 [:7])

- here are 2 members of a family who ***could not dwell together!***

- and for us as members of the new creature of the church, the body of Christ—*we as one body in Christ, and every one members one of another* (Rom. 12:5) - STRIFE IS DEVASTATING TO BODY THINKING AND TO THE 'LIVING UNION' OF THE BODY OF CHRIST (especially the local body)!

- Under the Category of the POL—*strife* is the particular *work of darkness* that will **ve**x you—that you're going to **see & hear!**

- And the goal of the Satanic Plan of Evil here is to attack and tear down that ‘pillar’ of the Divine Institution of the local church—and even more to the point: tear down that fundamental relationship that God established for Himself to have with man—which is all based upon His word! and replace it with that same, most fundamental relationship men are to have to God, but to Satan, himself—(and his thoughts, words, opinions, sentiments, etc., etc.)!

- And the Great Proudful Thinking of *Strife* seeks to exult & elevate man’s thinking, and man’s opinion, man’s norms & standards, and man’s words above GOD’S! (at best) — and exult & elevate the adversary’s thinking, opinions, norms & standards, and words above GOD’S (at worst)!

- And it’s going to be packaged by the world in such a way that it looks as though there is great profit, benefit, gain in all that—there’s great ‘getting-your-own-way’ ...

... isn’t the world’s idea of all this kind of thing: ‘Hey, now that we’re so advanced, **don’t you know that WE know better than God does!?!** (isn’t that what’s at the core of all of the attacks upon God’s word???) [doesn’t all that *strife* boil down to that?]

- So by the constant *vexing* of the *strife*—the designed goal of that is to arouse within the sin in your members, a particular *lust* of envying and to produce and germinate that *lust* of *envying* within you!

- “**ENVYING**” = exciting the mind (human spirit) to feel displeasure and ill-will at the superiority, happiness, success, reputation or possessions of another.

- (Webster’s 1828)

“*Envy* springs from **pride**, ambition or love, mortified that another has obtained what one has a strong desire to possess.”

- (Smith’s “Synonyms Discriminated”) - *envious* denotes the feeling of unhappiness or uneasiness produced by the contemplation of any **good** belonging to another.

- (Crabb “Synonymes”) - A man is *envious* when the prospect of another’s happiness gives him pain.

- [see Rom. 12:9-10; 1 Cor. 13:4]

- What is the discriminating difference between *jealousy* and *envy*?

A: We are jealous for what is our own; we are envious of what is another’s. (Crabb)

- (Crabb, cont.) ... The *envious* man sickens at the sight of enjoyment; he is easy only in the misery of others: all endeavours, therefore, to satisfy an *envious* man are fruitless. Individuals are *envious* of the rank, wealth, and honours of another.

- Lest you still think that *envy* isn’t such a big deal (or a very **powerful** thing) ... see Mat. 27:11-18 [:18]

- The powerful, passion-based lust of *envy* is at the ‘epicenter’ of Lucifer’s *strife* with God over who is the “*Most High, possessor of heaven and earth*” - (in those 5 “***I wills***” of Isa. 14). [*strife & envy* are at the very **heart** of Satan and his Plan and Policy of Evil!]

- You have to keep in mind that this isn’t any old *strife & envy*—this is being confined to the particular *works of darkness* that come under the category of the POL and it’s **Great Proudful Thinking**...

... and as defined by God, Himself (what it is to God) is the PRIDE of exalting man’s personal self, as well as his collective self, **AGAINST GOD!**

[... if time permits ...

1 Cor. 3:3; 13:4; 2 Cor. 12:20; Phil. 2:3;
1 Tim. 6:4; Jam. 3:13-16 (:14 & :16)]

- The simple issue is: by *vexing* you (badgering you) with the *rioting*, the *chambering*, and the *strife*—those are the things that you are going to **see** and **hear** (the 2 Lines of Access into your human spirit) ...

... and then the 2nd issue in the 3 Categories is that by the constant *vexing* of the 1st *work of darkness*—is to get one of those **lusts** to begin to get generated within you.

- And the PoE does **not** need all 3 Categories taking place at the same time—(the more, the merrier) - but only 1 will do just fine.

- The dimming of your *light*, is the dimming of your *light*—whether you dim it in just 1 way, or 2 or all 3!

- Now—I want to come back to the issues contained in the 1st Couplet of (:13) ... ***not in rioting and drunkenness*** ... and I want to use it as an example of one other feature to the way in which these *works of darkness* are paired up—and I think it's an issue that is valid, and one that you should be aware of ...

... not only having a better awareness of how the adversary, the *evil men*, and the PoE is going to resist/oppose your sonship *light* — but also give you a better awareness of what is going to go on in **your inner man** as these *vexing*, subverting, temptations are going to cause you some *tribulation*.

- Under the Category of the **Lust of the Flesh** (and its Great Debaucheries) —

- the PoE (through those *evil men*) are going to *vex* you (badger you), and tempt you with the *work of darkness* of:

RIOTING (= an excess of public behavior demanding ones 'rights' that one feels has been denied them, and therefore rebelling against any attempts to control and stop them in their rebellion) — and that's what you're going to **see & hear** (that's what is going to attempt to access your human spirit).

- and the goal of it is to tear down the godly Divine Institution of divinely authorized authority and human government—and replace it with Satan's own institutions of authority, government, and population control.

- And by the constant **seeing & hearing** of the *rioting*—the goal is to access your human spirit—and in the general issue of having to interact with the society and the culture in which you live—to begin caressing, watering, fertilizing, and germinating a particular **lust** that resides in the sin in your members ...

... which is the *lusting* for the **DRUNKENNESS** (which is the general producer or ‘fuel’ for the **RIOTING**)!

- and remember that *drunkenness* isn’t always talking about alcohol or drugs! ... (most often, it is), but the issue is: **being under the influence of a spirit!** ...

... getting caught up in the ‘spirit’ of the rioters is just as good as an alcohol ‘spirit’!

- either way, getting **drunk** (whether on alcohol or on the ‘spirit’ of the rioters) is the way in which you’re going to ultimately get (what you see as) the benefits of the **rioting!** [the packaging]

- Now—the reason why I’m coming back to this one is because of something we most often and commonly think about when the issue of *drunkenness* comes up ...

... and that is—the normal and most common way in which you can tell that someone is *drunk* is that they start getting loud, or mean, or crazy, or whatever

... in other words, when someone comes under the influence of alcohol to the point of being *drunk* ... we commonly say that they “**lose their INHIBITION**”! (which is true, even in the case of coming under the influence of the ‘spirit’ of the rioters [w/ no alcohol involved])

- **Inhibition** = the action of forbidding or prohibiting or preventing or hindering or checking an instinctive impulse or conduct or activity.

- My point is—if you think about it—all 3 of these basic **lusts** that are behind the particular *work of darkness* (the *drunkenness*, the *wantonness*, and the *envying*) are, by nature, and by what it does ...

... when it is effectively working within you is that:

IT OVERCOMES AN INHIBITION!

- Now—you may be able to think of someone you know that isn't at all concerned about their sanctified life “in Christ” - (that has zero effectual working of God's word within them) - or that aren't even a Christian at all ... but who still displays a great deal of **inhibition** to getting involved in *drunkenness* (for example) ... right?

- But this is what you might call “Natural Inhibition” — and there are “natural inhibitions” to all these things ...

... “natural” in the sense that they come out of the society, the community, and the culture in which they live — (what they receive in their upbringing) ...

... but that's NOT what we're talking about here—(we're not talking about “natural” inhibitions) ... rather, we're talking about **GODLY INHIBITIONS** — the godly inhibitions you would have in connection with your fundamental sanctified position “in Christ” ...

... and the godly inhibitions that you have received by means of your Sonship Education, up to this point!

- (and that's another reason why these 3 particular **lusts** are spoken about) ...

... not only because they are the common passion-based **lust** for producing the *rioting*, *chambering*, and *strife*—but also because of their **POWER!**

- They have got a particular power—a particular strength to them ...

... they've got a particular strength to plant the seed of **lust**, and to get that **lust** germinated—and they've got some power to them to begin to quickly overcome the GODLY inhibition that operates within us by the effectual working of God's word!

... and to overcome that godly inhibition in a very deceptive and clever and crafty manner! (Level II—Eph. 4:22) [that's what they've got to do in Level II: “deceive”!]

- And each of the 3 passion-based lusts (the *drunkenness*, *wantonness*, and *envying*) have **great powerful skill**—especially in the area of “**deceit**”!

- And the **deceiving power** that they have is to overcome your godly inhibition:

**** - **They deceive you into allowing YOU to give THEM the right to carry on, in spite of the presence of your godly inhibition!** ****

- **drunkenness** overcomes the godly inhibition you would have to rebel against authority and ordinances, and law and order—the Divine Institution of human government!

- **wantonness** has the capacity to overpower you and overcome the godly inhibition you would have to disregard and violate the Divine Institution regarding marriage and the family!

- **envying** has the capacity to overcome and overpower the godly inhibition that you would have to disregard getting involved in petty, prideful quarreling in order to get what **you’re** after — and to become a possessor of the very things that others possess when they *strive*—(i.e., their wealth, position/rank, material possessions, fame, prestige, etc.) ...

... and for you as a “son/daughter” of your Heavenly Father (in view of your Sonship Education so far) — *envying* has the capacity to overcome & overpower the godly inhibition to disregard the authority of the word of God and “have it your own way” in matters of the Divine Institution of the body of Christ in general, and the local church in particular.

- Point is—*drunkenness*, *wantonness*, and *envying* are mentioned—not only because they are the most common producers of the *rioting*, *chambering*, and *strife*—but those are the **lusts** that are the very POWER (not only to produce those *works of darkness*), but to OVERCOME our GODLY INHIBITION ***if*** we don’t operate upon **the full measure of godly disdain** (which is what produces our godly inhibition in the first place)!

- Any Questions/Comments regarding (:11-13) - [the Godly Thinking, and the Godly Living]???

- (by the way—you can see these 3 Categories of *the works of darkness* [LOF/LOE/POL] come up over in a passage such as **Galatians 5**) ...

... (:19-the first part of :21) - and the *works of darkness* that are cited are not done randomly—and if you pay attention to them—you’ll find that they are actually grouped together in a way that match up to *rioting, chambering, and strife!* ...

... why? because rioting, chambering, and strife are the most common forms for the ‘core’ works of darkness within each of the 3 Categories!

(:19) - *Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness* = CHAMBERING

(:20) - *Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies,* [and an ‘overlap’] (:21) *Envyings,* = STRIFE

(:21) - *Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings,* = RIOTING

[note: these are grouped together like they are because the Galatians had foolishly put themselves back under the Law—and these groupings are indicative of how the Law goes about manifesting the *works of the flesh* in these Galatians.] ... these are the *works of the flesh* that the Law ‘specializes’ in manifesting in a person!

- *rioting, chambering, and strife* is what is going to VEX you (see & hear)—they are ALWAYS going to be around you—in fact, you could say that *rioting, chambering, and strife* is what constitutes society in its contrariness to God; and in its evolution of man’s ungodliness at this particular point in this Disp. of Grace.

- *rioting, chambering, and strife* are the ‘core of the core’ *works of darkness* that the adversary is going to give special attention to, in order to keep them in their ‘red hot’ status!

- **ROMANS 13:14**—**THE GODLY LABOR ASPECT** (of the 2nd Component of our *instruction of judgment*)

- Once the Godly Thinking Aspect of this 2nd Component of our *instruction of judgment* has done its effectual job—once (:11) has challenged our old, ungodly thinking—and exposed it, uprooted it, disposed of it, and replaced it with the Godly Thinking concerning 1) Our Personal Time as “sons” who have gained some ability and capacity from our *instruction of godly wisdom, justice, and the 1st component of godly judgment* — and based upon that demonstrated capacity & ability, we are invited to participate in a totally new aspect of our Father’s business—an aspect of His business operations that have to do with His contention with the adversary

... and once the Godly Thinking Aspect of (:12a) has done its effectual job to challenge, expose, uproot, and dispose of our ungodly thinking concerning 2) The Dispensational Timing of this Dispensation of Grace—and replace it with the Godly Thinking of that ‘saying’, *The night is far spent, the day is at hand:*

... the ‘natural outlet’ for that Godly Thinking is the Godly Living (or the Godly Conduct & Behavior) contained in (:12b-13) - which, naturally enough, has us, for the very first time, getting personally involved in the battle and the contention with the adversary and his Policy of Evil ...

... the ‘natural outlet’ for the Godly Thinking and the Godly Living Aspects of the 2nd Component of our *instruction of judgment* regarding our battle and contention with the adversary and his PoE is the information contained in (:14) — where you are going to **Labor together** with your Heavenly Father in successfully contending with the adversary and his PoE (1st round)—which will result in you being ever more *conformed to the image of his Son*, and being *more than conquerors through him that loved us*.

- It will end up with you being even more vocationally trained, equipped, qualified, and prepared to rule, govern, reign, and administrate in your Father’s business **in the heavenly places** when you are installed as properly educated and edified “sons” when the new creature of the church, the body of Christ *delivers the creature from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God*.

- And (:14) [the Godly Labor] guarantees your success in battle!

... (that is, **IF** you are responding positively and properly to the Godly Thinking and the Godly Conduct & Behavior)

- (again) - the end of (:13) comes along and gives us the ALERT for what we are to be ON GUARD for and WATCHFUL for — it alerts us as to what the Satanic PoE and the *evil men* are going to VEX us with (bombard/badger us) in order to gain access to our human spirit and assault our godly Thinking of Total Disdain/hatred/abhorrence for *the works of darkness* ...

... and those major *works of darkness* we are to be **on alert to** and **on guard for** are: the *rioting*, the *chambering*, and the *strife* —

— and the “alert” is to check ourselves out and see if that corresponding LUST has been generated within us, and we, therefore, begin to operate upon **other** thinking, and **different** thinking than what our Father taught us!

- and if we find ourselves going down a ‘path’ - (making judgments about certain courses of action that we’re going to take) - and that ‘path’ is toward either the *rioting*, the *chambering*, or the *strife* (or a combination of the 3) - then, as a properly educated “son/daughter”, you’re supposed to **‘wake up’** (so to speak) - or better yet, **‘sober up’** (become *sober minded*) - and stop being influenced by the PoE—and ultimately CHECK your ungodly thinking and your ungodly behavior, and operate upon the godly Thinking of sound doctrine that’s supposed to be written on the “fleshy tables of your heart”!

- Now (:14) **14 But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof.**

- This is the Godly **Labor** that you and your Father are going to work together and labor together in, to get the proper vocational training out of this very powerful & mighty form of doctrine that enables you to make **godly judgments**, just like God does, Himself.

... and round out the 3rd Sonship Decision-Making Skill of *judgment*—and better qualify you to occupy and function in one of those positions in the *creature*—and function as a king, ruler, administrator of your Father’s business in the heav. ples.

- And you may be wondering how this works out to be a **Labor** Aspect of your godly edification(?) — because, at the outset, all of the terms, expressions, and phrases of (:14) seem to be all one-sided.

... that is, *putting on the Lord Jesus Christ, making not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof* seems to be an exhortation that is confined to something that **you, alone**, are supposed to now be doing ...

... but this is where that issue of spending more time at work in your Father's business comes into play in earnest—(where that godly thinking of [:11] comes into play, **big time**: *that now it is high time to awake out of sleep!*)

- Godly *judgments* demand **more time** spent in sonship prayer/communion/fellowship with your Father—*pondering* your path—the Father's searching of your heart to see *if there be any wicked way in you* ...

... and ultimately—the entire business operation you and your Father are going to be involved in (and working together in)—in this contending with the adversary and his PoE can be encapsulated in this verse!

- You're going to be **laboring** together with your Father to **DEFEND** your godly **thinking** and godly **conduct & behavior** so that in your first round of contending with the adversary, you WILL, indeed, be **more than a conqueror** in all that particular **tribulation** that is designed to **separate** you from **the love of Christ!**

(and we'll gain even greater clarity on just how it is that [:14] really IS the Godly Labor Aspect of this 2nd Component to our *instruction of judgment* as we go on and get the details of [:14])

- And (:14) is coming along and **identifying the armour capacity** to the *light* we have—and the **armour capacity** to the pieces of information that we've gotten from our *instruction of godly judgment regarding the Dispensational Timing of this Disp/of/Grace*

... and we're supposed to now **put on** that **armour capacity** and then *make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof*.

- **Remember:** the goal of Satan's PoE—as it works in its methodology is to:

- 1) Subvert/undermine your godly Thinking of Total Disdain for *the works of darkness*;
- 2) and to work to Vex you with *rioting, chambering, and strife* (what you **see & hear**) - gaining access into your human spirit;
- 3) and then to end up with you being beguiled and enticed to weaken/lower the full measure of your Total Godly Disdain for *the works of darkness*, and therefore dim your light ...

... the goal is to get it so that those **LUSTS** can be generated within us!

- That's how the temptation is going to work—and that's how our 1st round of opposing tribulation is going to work to *separate us from the love of Christ!*

- And those **lusts** ARE going to be generated within you because sin is still in your members—and the capacity is still there for those **lusts** to be generated ...

... but the issue is—**we don't have to fulfil them**—just as we learned back in basic sanctification in general—our position “in Christ” makes it so that even though the *lusts* are still going to be there because sin is still in our members—but we don't have to *obey sin in the lusts thereof* ...

(Note to self)

- At this point we spent several Bible classes looking back at the **POWER** of our sanctification that (by grace through faith) allows for us to do what (:14) says—without it being one of those ‘yeah, that's easy for you to say, God' passages. Stressing all the while that (:14) is NOT just a restatement of Rom. 6:1-8:13, nor a rehashing of that, nor a repeating of that ... rather, it's an **ADVANCEMENT** upon all that!

- We therefore looked at:

Rom. 5:20-21 (Grace = Power);

Rom. 6:11-13 (the Engine, Power Plant)

Rom. 8:12-13 (the Mechanics)

- Now—in order to get the fullness out of the Godly Labor aspect of (:14) - (and to fully recognize, understand, and appreciate that it IS something that you AND your Father are going to be working together to get accomplished) — you are going to have to be able to ‘put your finger’ (so to speak) right on just what it is - and to precisely know just what it is that you and your Father are going to be doing together!

- In other words, the only way you will properly and successfully Labor together with your Father in this aspect of making godly *judgments* in connection with how you spend your Time and the Dispensational Timing of this Disp. of Grace—is to keep every word of (:14) in the context of (:11-13), and to let every word of (:14) be governed by what is said in (:11-13)!

- In other words—you’re NOT going to *put on the Lord Jesus Christ* just any old way—and you’re NOT going to *make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof* in just any old way!

- no. Those things are all context sensitive! And there has to be PRECISION (exactness, pin-point accuracy) to *putting on the Lord Jesus Christ, and making not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof!*

- And that demands that you have the Godly Thinking of (:11-12a) — because THAT is what tells you that you have now entered a new aspect of your Father’s business—(the business operations of your Father in connection with His contending with the adversary) ...

... and because THAT (the Godly Thinking) is the very thing that the adversary is going to earn the right to ‘go after’ and seek to **subvert!**

- The Godly Thinking (especially concerning the Disp. Timing of this Disp. of Grace: *the night is far spent, the day is at hand*) and your understanding/appreciation for what *the works of darkness* are all about—and the godly Total hatred & Disdain you now have for them THAT IS THE **TARGET** OF THE ADVERSARY!

AND THAT IS WHAT HAS TO NOW BE DEFENDED
IN THIS BATTLE!

- Because from that Godly Thinking, you're going to be *putting on the armour of light* ...

... you're going to be going out to face the first 'skirmishes' of doing battle with the adversary and his PoE ...

... and as you *cast off the works of darkness, put on the armour of light, and walk honestly, as in the day*—you're going to face the issues of the LOF w/its Great Debaucheries and the Rioting that you will be seeing & hearing;

and/or the LOE and its Great Wantonness under the category of the Chambering that you will be seeing & hearing;

and/or the POL and its Great Prideful Thinking that will be wrapped up in the Strife that you're going to be seeing & hearing ...

... and in connection with those 3 categories—with your *armour of light* on (repudiating those things; reproving those things; exposing those things; talking about those things in the environments in which they exist, and in the company of ones who are participating in those things) ...

... and when you begin to do that, certain individuals (*evil men*) who are on the receiving end of your *light* and your walk, are going to be employed by the PoE to begin to work in a VEXATIONOUS way with you—and to package those things in a way to you in order to emphasize the benefits and the gain and the profit, prosperity, and goodness (as far as man is concerned) in participating in those things ...

... and ultimately, get you to voluntarily dim your *light*! (i.e., lower your Total Godly Disdain for them)!

- And the whole methodology of the PoE at this point is designed to be successful with you by what you See & Hear (to gain access into your human spirit) and make it so that a particular **LUST** that fuels & fosters that category of a *work of darkness* (and is the primary & most common producer of that *work of darkness*) gets aroused within your inner man ... and in the end, get you to think differently about it than how your Father taught you to think about it! (again, lessening your Total Godly Disdain)

- And the goal is to get a LUST generated within you in order for you to participate in the very thinking that's going to engender that *work of darkness* in you.

- (i.e., to 'tickle' the *sin in our members* to enliven it, to incite it to produce that **lust** in accordance with what we See & Hear)

- This (:11-14) is your "Know Thy Enemy" manual!

- And it's going to be a LUST that has got the POWER (based upon its nature) to overcome your godly inhibition (if you're foolish enough to entertain it, and to not recognize what's going on)!

- Therefore, that calls upon you (**demands** for you) to be **watchful** / "**on guard**" / **vigilant** / **alert** ...

... and that's where the Godly Labor Aspect of this 2nd Component to our *instruction of judgment* comes into play!

- Basically, (and simply put), YOU are going to take the Godly Thinking of (:11-12a) and then Conduct & Behave yourself according to (:12b-13) ...

... and that's going to take a lot of time, pondering, fellowship & communion in intelligent sonship prayer, along with the understanding and the discretion—to determine what path you are going to take (good, better or best) in a given circumstance or situation ...

... and that's going to entail you beginning to do battle with the adversary (his *evil men* and the PoE) with your *armour of light* ...

... therefore, the Labor Aspect is going to have you and your Heavenly Father working together to keep your *armour of light* the **EFFECTUAL DEFENSE** that God designed it to be ...

... that is, the *discretion* that will *preserve thee*, and the *understanding* that will *keep thee: To deliver thee from the way of the evil man, from the man that speaketh froward things.*

- And to do that, (for your defense from the adversary to be effectual), **you MUST maintain that Godly hatred/disdain for the w/o/d in its fullest degree!**

14 But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof.

- OUR **ONLY DEFENSE**—THE **ONLY** DEFENSE THAT HAS THE **EFFECTUAL POWER** (not just ‘effective’) TO STOP THOSE LUSTS IN THEIR TRACKS—and to stop them and squelch those *lusts* **EVEN** after they have gotten aroused in you and even when you have ‘made provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof’ - and your “*light*” has started to dim down!

- The effectual working of this particular component of our Sonship Education which functions as *armour*—and has the capacity to deal with the tactics and ploys of the PoE—the issue for us is to now ‘put it on’ and to now have it function in a completely **preventive** manner so that the process of the adversary’s subversion doesn’t get beyond the generation of a *lust* ...

... to be so skilled in exercising our godly *discretion* (our ability to discern passion or lust-based enticements and not be taken in by them) — and so skilled in exercising our godly *understanding* (of knowing the *way* that *the evil men* operate) that we immediately recognize that *lust* for what it is—and we therefore never let that full measure of Godly Disdain begin to drop or weaken ...

... and if it does begin to drop—to immediately employ what (:14) says and to restore it (that full measure of Godly Disdain).

- And our DEFENSE is exactly what (:14) says!

- (you’ve got 3 phrases—or 3 ‘steps’ to the Godly Labor)

- (Phrase/Step 1)

But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ,

- “**But**” = one of those English ‘Words of Logic’ = a strong adversative conjunction—indicating an **exact opposite** course of action other than what has just previously been stated.

- i.e., instead of being victimized by the Satanic PoE by being vexed day to day with *rioting*, *chambering*, and *strife*—and by giving in to the lusts of *drunkenness*, *wantonness*, and *envying*—and participating in those *w/o/d*—and dimming your *light*—you’re going to take the exact opposite course!

- You're, instead, going to take the course of action that your Father has taught you to take in making godly judgments ...

... you're NOT going to allow yourself to come under the influence of the adversary's **night** (by the forces and powers of influence contained in the ungodly society and ungodly culture in which you live—i.e., by some other “spirit” - “*the spirit of the world*”) ...

... you're going to put on display the **sober** thinking and the resulting conduct of a “son” who has received, and who has effectually working within him his Father's Wisdom, Justice, Judgment, godly Love & Charity, and godly Hatred, Abhorrence & Disdain for the *works of darkness*!

- And that's the context of this very strong adversative conjunction!

- “*But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ,*”

- “*put ye on*”

- First of all, let's note the Older English pronoun **ye**—(just in case someone hasn't learned about this) ...

- *ye* = (scoffed at as being archaic & out of date—and is updated to make it ‘better’ and ‘easier to understand’) [most newer versions drop the *ye* altogether!]

- # 64—67 (see John 3:7)

- *ye*, here is NOT just talking to every saint who is a member of the church, the body of Christ! ...

... rather, the context governs the word *ye* to be talking specifically to properly educated and properly edified “sons” and “daughters” that have the effectual working of God's word, from Rom. 1:1-13:13 (in general) ...

... and more specifically, “sons/daughters” who now have the effectual working of Rom. 13:11-13 within their ‘inner man’!

- Because the truth is—if you don't have the effectual working of Rom. 13:11-13 operating in your ‘inner man’ ...

... it is **IMPOSSIBLE** for you to ever “*put on the Lord Jesus Christ*” in the way in which (:14) is talking about!!!

- So on the one hand, the 2pp, Nom. Obj of the Personal Pronoun *ye* is inclusive (that is, it includes every saint who, as a “son” has the effectual working of Rom. 13:11-13 doing its job in their ‘inner man’) ...

... on the other hand the Personal Pronoun *ye* is exclusive (that is, it excludes any saint who does NOT have Rom. 13:11-13 doing its effectual job in their ‘inner man.’)

- Now let’s tackle that expression: “***put on***” - we are going to Labor together with our Father to “***put on***” *the Lord Jesus Christ* — that’s the 1st Step of working together with our Father to make sure that our *armour of light* is properly DEFENDED as we *walk honestly, as in the day!*

- There are a whole bunch of ways in which you can *put on* something. (The OED lists 57 different ways!)

- Though we’re getting real technical—and while you’ve probably never thought about what the word “*put*” means (we just naturally know what it means) ... [viz., to place or set something in a specified location—and there are a whole bunch of words we can use to describe what “*put*” means]

- By the way—it’s fascinating that Noah Webster talks about the etymology of the word “*put*” coming from a Latin root, meaning, **to set in the mind!**

... but, think about, and ask yourself, What is the radical root issue/element of the word “*put*”? ...

A: whatever it is, “*put*” is an action word—it is an action in which the application of force is expressed.

- And even that shows you the excellency and the accuracy of your KJ Bible!

- Obviously, we’re not going to ‘put on’ the Lord Jesus Christ in any kind of a physical way (the “Shroud of Turin” or any kind of religious relic or icon ... that would just be believing in magic) ... but you ARE going to **set something in your mind** ...

- (and really, that's what you have been doing as you "*put on the armour of light*") #68

... in fact, that "something" that you are going to "set in your mind" can be called "*the Lord Jesus Christ*"!

- Think about it: "*put*" is an action in which the application of force is expressed:

- Where is the **action** taking place?
(**the mind**—the **human spirit**—the inner man)

- What is the **FORCE**? [your will?, human strength, willpower, energy, flesh??]
(think of Force as POWER: the **force** is **GRACE**!)

- What is the **APPLICATION**?
(**FAITH**—faith in what? God's word! (*wisdom* that has *entered into your heart*, and *knowledge* that is *pleasant unto your soul*... which is also called *the Word made flesh*, the Lord Jesus Christ— especially, that portion of God's word of Rom. 13:11-13!)

- And how does it get **expressed**?
(in **discretion** that shall preserve thee, and **understanding** that shall keep thee: *To deliver thee from the way of the evil man, from the man that speaketh froward things!* ...)

... it get expressed when you discern lust-based enticements and are NOT taken in by them & by knowing the way that the *evil men* operate! ...

... it gets expressed when the actual **words** of: *the night is far spent, the day is at hand* do their effectual job in causing you to *cast off the works of darkness, and put on the armour of light, and walk honestly, as in the day* ...

... it gets expressed with you have the very same loathing, hatred, abhorrence and disdain for the w/o/d that your Father has, and act accordingly!

... and it gets expressed when you spend time in intelligent sonship prayer, communion, and fellowship with your Father to ensure that the level of godly hatred and disdain for the *w/o/d* is ever at its highest level—and to ensure that your *armour of light* is SOUND in all its DEFENSIVE POWER!

... and when a lust does arise within you—if that lust gets entertained by you and therefore you stupidly & foolishly begin to give power over to that lust and end up *yielding your members as instruments of unrighteousness*—it gets expressed by adjusting your ‘intoxicated’ thinking to the ‘sober’ thinking of (:11-12a), and getting that godly hatred and disdain for the *w/o/d* **back** to its total and full strength!

- So you could say that the word *put* in this context means: **God’s word expressed in the details of your life** (at this point in your Sonship Education) **by Grace through Faith!**

- That’s the Godly Labor—and that’s an awful lot of information you can derive from that one little word: *put!*

- In the OED, this phrase (*put on*) is actually identified in a particular place directly with Rom. 13:14, specifically —

#47—Put On. = to place on or upon something; to superimpose.

c. To place (an apparel or an ornament) upon one’s person; to don; to clothe oneself — in scriptural language, of a plant, to ‘clothe itself’ with leaves or blossoms. (Bible: Rom. 13:14)

- And the “plant” issue is very appropriate—because that hearkens back to the power of your sanctification in Romans 6 (*planted together in the likeness of his death, and also in the likeness of his resurrection*) [:5] — and the issue is that now what has been germinated within your inner man by God’s word has grown, and has now come to the point of burgeoning with leaves & blossoms so that the skeletal stem and branches are now clothed with the fruit of the sap (God’s word) that runs as life-blood through the plant!

- So, again, we have: *But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ,*

- When you take the whole phrase together—the issue is Not one of ‘putting on the Lord Jesus Christ’ in some kind of physical way—and it’s not ‘putting Him on’ in some kind of figurative way either—it’s the issue of ‘putting on the Lord Jesus Christ’ in a very **literal** way ...

... that is, it’s the issue of a further conformity to the image of God’s Son by way of some advanced, effectual working of God’s word [sound Bible doctrine] (:11-13) in our inner man!

- ‘Putting on the Lord Jesus Christ’ in Rom. 13:14 is NOT the general issue of us putting our general sanctified position “in Christ” on! [that’s to have already been done at the end of Rom. 8:13—and the expectation is that it has been “on” all this time]!

- This issue of *putting on the Lord Jesus Christ* occurs when you have reached a particular ‘Point of Attainment’ in the course of your Sonship Education/Edification—and when (and ONLY when) that ‘point of attainment’ has been reached, you’re going to be exhorted to MAKE SURE YOU’VE GOT THAT ON!

- And when it says, *But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ*—that is the issue of putting Him on with respect to that FULL MEASURE OF GODLY DISDAIN for the *works of darkness*!

- (because that’s what we have just been taught by the godly Thinking component of [:11-12a]!)

- And (again), even if you get into a position where a **lust** has been roused up within you—and you foolishly have given over to it the power to yield your members as instruments of unrighteousness ... THIS IS STILL TO BE YOUR RESPONSE!

... when you ‘wake up’ to the reality of what you have done, and then you respond positively & properly to the advantage that the PoE has gained over you—you go back and cover once again (:11-12a) and with communion, fellowship, and intelligent sonship prayer with your Father — you do exactly what (:14) says, you *put on the Lord Jesus Christ*—and you get that measure of godly disdain for the *w/o/d* back up to its totality!

- And you can STOP that PoE's advantage over you right in its tracks!

- In other words—this is the provision of godly Labor in which you as a “son” can work together with your Father so that when the full measure of the **defensive power** of your *armour of light slips* and begins to **weaken & dim**—YOU AND YOUR FATHER CAN RESTORE IT! (to its full measure of defensive power against the adversary and his PoE)!

- if it ‘drops’: restore it;

if it ‘drops’ again: restore it again, etc, etc.

- “*putting on the Lord Jesus Christ*” is the issue of the particular aspect of your conformity to the image of God's Son (*the Lord Jesus Christ*) at this particular point in your Sonship Education which you have ‘put on’ [by grace, through faith] and clothed your mind/human spirit with it ...

... and coupled with your understanding/appreciation for how the PoE works with all its subversive activities: (:14) is designed to be YOUR DEFENSE!

... you are equipped, therefore, NOT to be victimized by Satan and his PoE in this battle you are engaged in with your Father as He contends with the adversary!

... you are equipped to be able to WITHSTAND this kind of tribulation!

... you are equipped, therefore, NOT to have to succumb; (to make NOT provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof)!

... you are equipped to NOT have the PoE take advantage of you!

- Any questions concerning what it means to “*put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ*”? [comments?]

- (Phrase/Step 2)

and make not provision for the flesh,

- As a logical outcome of the 1st Step/Phrase whereby you AND your Father are going to be working together to provide for the effectual DEFENSE of your *armour of light* by maintaining the level of godly hatred/disdain for the particular *works of darkness* of the *rioting*, the *chambering*, and the *strife* by *putting on* the full measure of the conformity to the image of *the Lord Jesus Christ* that (:11-13) have effectually produced within you ...

- The 2nd Step in the effectual DEFENSE of your *armour of light* now turns to some godly Labor in which, while your Father's involvement is there as a reality—the special focus of attention is now placed upon you as an adult “son” with the wisdom and the experience to accomplish just what it says.

- This 2nd Step of “*make not provision for the flesh*” - along with the 3rd Step “*to fulfil the lusts thereof*” is where the POWER of your sanctification “in Christ” now comes into play!

- The particular aspect of *the flesh* focused upon here is NOT the same as it was back in Romans 6:1-8:13—but this particular aspect of *the flesh* IS built upon the understanding and appreciation for what we were taught “*the flesh*” is back in that section of the doctrine of our sanctification.

- And I'm saying that because when it comes to the POWER and the mechanical means to *make not provision for the flesh* — the source of that power, and the mechanical means to do this very thing was taught to you and produced within you back in Rom. 6:1-8:13.

- And I say that, just to say that—an intelligent, properly taught “son” will look at this 2nd Step and not be scratching his head thinking: “Well, that's easy for you to say just how in the world am I supposed to do that?”

- no. An intelligent, properly taught “son” will look at that phrase and say, I know exactly how that's done because I've been doing that general issue all along—but now I'm going to take that power & mechanical means to NOT *yield my members as instruments of unrighteousness*—and I'm NOT

... going to *walk after the flesh*—and I'm NOT going to be *carnally minded*—I'm NOT a *debtor to the flesh, to live after the flesh*—and I AM going to, *through the Spirit, mortify the deeds of the body*

... **but NOW I'm going to do all that with special attention and special focus upon something far more advanced than anything I have done in this area before!**

- And I'm going to do it with even greater Power (because Grace has abounded as a power a great deal since Romans 6:1-8:13) — and I'm going to do it with even greater skill (because the mechanical means has been **exercised** mightily in me since I first learned about it in Romans 6:1-8:13)!

- [because I now have the initial, effectual working of Wisdom, Justice, Judgment, godly Love & Charity, and godly hatred & disdain for the *w/o/d* all doing their respective jobs within my inner man!]

- The Point is—just as *putting on the Lord Jesus Christ* is NOT the general issue of us putting on our sanctified position “in Christ” that we learned about back in Rom. 6:1-8:13 — this 2nd Step of *making not provision for the flesh* is NOT the general issue of what we were taught about our flesh, sin in our members, and what to do when we do foolishly sin in our personal lives!

- but again, with that said—the POWER to do even this advanced issue of *making not provision for the flesh* **demands and requires** Rom. 6:1-8:13 to do it!

- And just as *putting on the Lord Jesus Christ* is an issue of further conformity to the image of God's Son by way of some advanced, effectual working of God's word [sound Bible Doctrine] from (:11-13) in our inner man ... so, too, is *making not provision for the flesh* an issue of further and advanced conformity to the image of God's Son by way of some advanced, effectual working of God's word! (:11-13)

- In other words—***make not provision for the flesh*** is **NOT** the same thing as *not walking after the flesh*; or *not being carnally minded*; or *not living after the flesh* — (do you see that?) — why? — because you've already been doing that ... but you have never done this before!

- *make not provision for the flesh* is something you can **only** do with the information contained in Romans 13:11-13—and the truth is, *making not provision for the flesh* can **only** be done when you have *put on the Lord Jesus Christ* as per the 1st phrase of (:14)!

... (it's really important that you see this!)

- In fact—it may be that we should **not** think about (:14) as 3 “steps” - maybe that makes it too compartmentalized ...

... because the truth is, you have 3 commas (not 3 semicolons or 3 colons, or 3 periods) ... plus the word “and” is an “and” of continuation ... that is, it's not really another “step”; but it's a continuation of the action described in the main phrase, “But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ”!

- And if you think about it the way it's actually written—then you should also be able to see how the entire issue really is a laboring together with your Father to ensure you have *put on the Lord Jesus Christ* every day of your life (because every day of your life is now going to be doing battle with the adversary and his PoE)!

- And the construction of the sentence has the 2nd and 3rd phrases presented as **the continued action of the 1st!** [the negative side of the coin]

- And that means, therefore, that just as *putting on the Lord Jesus Christ* is NOT something that every believer can do; **neither is *making not provision for the flesh* something that every believer can do!**

... moving on ...

- *But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, ...*

- “*and make not provision*” ... (by the way, everything about this verse drips of sonship thinking & sonship decision-making—of a Father talking to His adult son ... the softer negative (μή) ... the issue of not commanding “*make not*” - the son's own volition, desire, zeal & enthusiasm is still the issue ... amazing detail ...)

- “and make not provision”
 - “**provision**” - a word that’s NOT old, archaic, out-of-date—we’re all familiar with it, and we use it to this day.
- So let’s look at that word **provision** and see why it is the most excellent expression of the ‘negative side of the coin’ (so to speak) [to *putting on the Lord Jesus Christ*] —

PROVISION

- First Use: Gen. 42:25 *Then Joseph commanded to fill their sacks with corn, and to restore every man’s money into his sack, and to give them **provision for the way**: and thus did he unto them.*

- Gen. 45:21 (same expression: ... *provision for the way*)

- Rom. 13:14 = only time *provision* is used in the NT.

- προνοια = forethought, providential care
(used only 2x in the NT = Acts 24:2 “providence” & Rom. 13:14 “provision”)

- “PRO” = L. “forward”; “before” + “VISION” = “to see” [w/ your mind!]—hence, “to see forward” or “to see before”

OED (noun form) = foresight carefully exercised; looking ahead; seeing to things beforehand; preparing or arranging in advance; measures provided to meet a need — a supply of food, victuals

WEBSTER’S 1828 = the act of making previous preparation—measures taken beforehand, either for security, defense or attack, or **for the supply of wants**.

SMITH = (on *provide*) = to furnish or supply with care or **calculation**, as against the future, or so as to secure sufficiency or proportion in the thing provided.

CRABB = “provision” includes the idea of design—to get in readiness for some future purpose—calculation is necessary in *providing*

= PLANNING! ... planning to feed your flesh (plan out how to give it food, nourishment, water, etc. in order to get a lust to grow up in you!)

planning requires/demands JUDGMENT! and PROVISION requires & demands DISCRETION!!!

(You’re being taught the fundamentals of **prudence** [Pro. 8:12; Eph. 1:8])

- “*provision*” is such an excellent choice of words to use here in this 2nd phrase because *provision* is a word that demands & requires the decision-making skill of JUDGMENT!

- And one of the great benefits of even the word order and the vocabulary control displayed by the KJ Translators is that one of the Stylistic issues of the English Language when it was at it’s ‘golden stage’ is that in this verse—(and without having to outright say it at all) — the way it’s worded tells you that the word *provision* really IS something you **are** supposed to be doing ... but **NOT** *for the flesh!*

- In other words—the way (:14) is worded—it causes you to think (or provokes you to think) that “*provision*” **is** what you are doing when you are *putting on the Lord Jesus Christ*.

- You are now in a position to labor together and work together with your Father in His business operations that have to do with His contention with the adversary and his PoE ...

... and a great deal of godly judgments are going to have to be made by you as a properly educated “son” in how you are going to handle the *tribulation* that is coming your way from Satan’s PoE (as it seeks to dim your *light*) ...

... and those godly judgments are going to require you and your Father working together to be always *making provision* for *putting on the Lord Jesus Christ* ...

... that is, a lot of PLANNING and discretionary decisions are going to have to be made in which preparation-type measures are taken to defend your newly acquired godly Thinking about the *w/o/d*; and Satan’s *night*; and the issue of the Dispensational Timing of this disp. of grace from the attacks of the adversary and his PoE.

- In other words—there is A WAY (a sonship way) that you are going to have to *make provision* for—there is a PATH that you are going to *ponder*—and part of that *pondering* is *making provision* (looking ahead in your mind w/ godly judgment, knowledge, and discretion to keep your feet on that godly PATH!

- But, of course, since this is the ‘other side of the coin’ - or the ‘negative side of the same coin’ — that means that when it comes to you and your Father laboring together in this aspect of His business, AS YOU DO “*put on the Lord Jesus Christ*” (with all its planning and thinking ahead), at the exact same time you should NOT be *making provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof!*

- And in this way—you have, built into the sonship curriculum, a way or a means to **measure** yourself in order to ensure that all this sound doctrinal information contained in your *instruction of judgment* really has gotten written on *the fleshy tables of your heart ... or not!* (no guessing!)

- The **measure** or **check** is: what are you ‘planning’ for? what are you *making provision* for? ... *the flesh?* ... or *putting on the Lord Jesus Christ?*

- The way in which your Father has provided for the full intensity of your *light* (G1) to be DEFENDED, therefore, is to *put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, ...*

- “*the flesh*” - **IN GENERAL**, this is talking about your *flesh* as you previously learned about it back in Romans 6, 7, and 8 ...

... *the flesh* is used in a wide variety of ways, and in a wide variety of contexts in God’s word—but as we saw back in Romans 6-8, *the flesh* is used to refer to your natural, human nature consisting of all the sensual appetites and sensual inclinations that are opposed to and antagonistic to *the things of the Spirit* — the depraved nature of man—the natural, sinful trends a person has by virtue of being born “in Adam” — your natural, depraved human nature.

- HOWEVER! “*the flesh*” (or the **aspect** of *the flesh*) being spoken about here in Romans 13:14 is NOT simply or merely the GENERAL issue of *the flesh*—it’s NOT just talking about your natural, depraved human nature!

- Rather—it’s talking about a specific and particular issue concerning your *flesh* that is confined and constrained to the CONTEXT of Romans 13:14!

- The particular and specific **aspect** of *the flesh* that's being spoken about here is in the **context** of *putting on the Lord Jesus Christ, and not making provision* for it!

- Therefore, you can set aside the GENERAL issue about *the flesh* (being your natural, depraved human nature) and how to deal with it the way your Father intends for you to deal with it ...

... (which is according to the sound doctrine contained in Romans chapters 6, 7, and 8 — which is something you have been doing all along—and is something you should be very familiar with, and very practiced in at this point in your sanctified, functional life) ...

... but this is a specific and particular aspect of *the flesh* that you have NEVER dealt with before now!

- In other words—this isn't merely a re-statement of how to deal with personal sin when it occurs in your life!

- This specifically and particularly has to do with that aspect of your *flesh* that is **targeted** by the adversary and his policy of evil as it opposes and resists your *armour of light* in connection with exposing *the works of darkness* as they pertain to *the night being far spent, the day being at hand; casting off the works of darkness, and putting on the armour of light; and walking honestly, as in the day* !!!!!

- In other words—the aspect of *the flesh* that you are NOT going to *make provision for* is **the newly-found** understanding and appreciation for how some tactics and methodology of the adversary and his PoE are going to gain access into your human spirit and appeal to your *flesh* specifically in regards to your godly thinking and godly attitude toward *the works of darkness* — specifically, and NOT just towards getting you to sin in general!

- we're not talking about sin, in general — we're talking about some specific *works of darkness*— ... we're talking specifically about **rioting, chambering, and strife** !!

- By *putting on the Lord Jesus Christ* (which is Laboring together with your Father to **defend** your *armour of light*—to keep that godly thinking of godly disdain for *the works of darkness* listed in [:13] at its highest degree, and exhibit God’s own zeal for soon judging and destroying those *works of darkness*) ...

... **you are to not make provision for the flesh** ...

... that is, you’re **not** to ‘plan out’ and make discretionary judgments to take a “path” or course of action that would end up with you being “taken in” by the allurements and enticements of your **flesh** by the *evil men* who cooperate with the adversary and his PoE — in order to get you to weaken your stand and dim your *light* regarding the particular *w/o/d* of *rioting, drunkenness, and chambering* ...

... and in the end, **change your thinking** about those things from what your Father taught you about them—so as to participate in them in order to get the benefits you **see and hear** others getting out of them! [the pretty packaging]

(it’s important you see this!)

- Finally, you have: *But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof.*

- The 3rd and final phrase: ***to fulfil the lusts thereof*** — which is also strongly connected to the 1st Phrase—and is a natural continuation & outcome of having *put on the Lord Jesus Christ* in this context.

- And notice that God doesn’t have the apostle Paul stop with, *But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ.* (period) — or *But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh.* (period)

... but you have this added, final phrase: *to fulfil the lusts thereof.*

- Amazing: every word of (:14) is designed to account for every ‘packet’ of information contained in the doctrine of (:11, 12, and 13)!

- And this final phrase (last 5 words) accounts for some very important doctrinal issues you’ve just learned that have produced the G1 and G2—and now account for all of the G3!

- To *fulfil the lusts thereof*—is to fulfil the lusts of the flesh.

- We've already dealt with 'sin in your members' and 'the flesh' and the connection it has with the 'lusts of the flesh' - that is, now that you are justified and sanctified and made to be all that you are "in Christ" - the power of sin in your members; of the 'lusts of the flesh' is broken—and now all it can do is make its appeal (which is the *lusts*) for you to give over to it the power to operate in your flesh.

- But again this is MORE than that!

- (see #59) - this is the awareness now of the methodology of the adversary's tactics to **subvert** your godly thinking! (in connection with *the works of darkness*)

- And the fulfillment of the lusts of the flesh would occur (NOT when a *lust* has been aroused within your flesh), but when you entertain that lust, allow yourself to be 'taken in' by it; water it; feed it; in other words, **MAKE PROVISION** FOR IT!

- And again—this is NOT simply the idea that the *lusts* get *fulfilled* when you **sin!** [and you know you shouldn't sin] NO! (this isn't the exact same thing as that)

- The *lusts* get *fulfilled* when they have accomplished their aim, goal, and objective IN THIS PARTICULAR CONTEXT

... the lusts get fulfilled when they are allowed by YOU to weaken & lower your Total Godly Disdain for the w/o/d (when they dim your light)!!!

- These last 5 words have amazing detail to them!!!

- One additional observation: there is something in the wording of (:14) that is purposefully designed to 'catch our eye' ...

*But put ye on the **Lord** Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the **lusts** thereof.*

- Jesus is given His full title here—and there is something connected with the word **Lord** and the word **lusts** ... something that should 'click' in your mind ...

... and it's something that is designed to 'set the tone' (so to speak) - or set the nature of what is going to comprise the rest of your life on this earth as your Father's "son": which is working together with your Father in the aspect of His business operations that have to do with His contending with the adversary, Satan himself!

- (David Winston Busch, "The Devil's In The Details") made an interesting observation—which is, indeed, true ...

- "The Biblical worldview teaches you to understand that there is a kingdom of darkness.

- All of the ungodly motivations and lusts are attributed to "the devil" ...

... but in a very particular way ...

- (see John 8:33-44 [:44])

- all of the ungodly lusts are attributed to "the devil"
AS THE "**FATHER**" OF UNGODLIENESS!

- "When men give themselves over to certain **lusts**, they are considered to have a **FATHER!**" (DWB)

- Which is why the word *lust* can be used in a godly way (Gal. 5:17)!

- And God the Father and God the Son share a common title: LORD!

- (see # 65 & 66)

- The 'tone' or nature of the rest of your life as God's "son" will be one of working together with God in God's contending with the adversary and his PoE ...

... and the nature of the contention is always going to surround this one thing: WHO IS YOUR LORD?
WHO IS YOUR FATHER? !!!

A: it depends upon which *lusts* are *fulfilled* in YOU!

END ROMANS 13:11-14**END THE INSTRUCTION OF GODLY JUDGMENT (ROM. 13:8-14)****POST-DOCTRINAL EXHORTATION**

- You now have been given—and you should have now received) your initial instruction of godly *judgment*.

- And there is no aspect of your life that is overlooked or not provided for where you can utilize your godly *judgment*.

- With the sound doctrine and *instruction of wisdom and justice*, along with the corresponding development of godly love and charity, and godly hatred/abhorrence/disdain for *the works of darkness* — the doctrinal information contained in Romans 13:8-14 works as that ‘catalyst’ with the *wisdom* and the *justice* (and those “parallel” doctrines) to give you the ability and the capacity (the power) to make *judgments* (as a king, prince, governor, ruler, administrator) ...

... 1st Component—Dealing with all men in general in all our dealings with them.

- (mini review) -

... 2nd Component—Dealing with our Personal Time as “sons” and making godly judgments according to how we wisely spend our time here on this earth;

and—in connection with the Dispensational Timing of this dispensation of grace in which we live.

- With the *instruction of wisdom, justice, and judgment*—(and all of the ‘parallel’ issues they have produced within your inner man) - you can now make godly *judgments* in 360 degs. of your life! (in all the details of your life) ... and do so **exactly** as God your Heavenly Father would do Himself; and as God the Son, the Lord Jesus Christ would do Himself! (led by their Spirit!) [*the spirit which is of God*]

- And even though this is just the beginning of your Sonship Education — **that is some tremendous POWER! — the power of GRACE!**

- This really **is a privilege of God's grace** to participate in this aspect of His business! ... and in view of all of the provision He's made for you to be successful in this aspect of His business—you, therefore, ought to have the appropriate zeal, enthusiasm, and godly ambition for engaging in it!

- And the bottom line is—that armed with the doctrinal information of Romans 13:8-14—and “armoured” with it — you have the capacity and ability to make godly *judgments* and to engage in the battle God is currently engaged in with the adversary—and because of all that God has provided you (by His grace) - when that adversary attempts to *separate you from the love of Christ*—you have the capacity for that NOT to take place—and to be *more than conquerors, through him that loves you!*

- And as one of those ‘parallel’ issues that is built in to the curriculum for your Sonship Education—(while it’s not by any means fully developed at all) — the truth is, you have already begun to lay up some sonship “*merchandise*” [Pro. 3:14] that you can ‘spend’ upon some things: viz., **Angelic Thinking!**

- you now have acquired some information and some skill sets and some perception into **just how it is that the angelic realm operates!**

- especially in how Satan and his Policy of Evil operates in connection with those *works of darkness* and in connection with his *night* !

- and this, too, is one of the benefits of being that “*more than a conqueror*”!

- and along with that—you get to be a participate in some aspects of **the Excellency of the Power of God's word** that could NEVER be participated in by you, if you didn't contend with the adversary and his PoE!

... because the “excellency” is one of excellency against the adversary's power!

... this is how God has determined to fight & contend against the adversary's power in this disp. of grace: Adversary's power vs. God's power **as His living words live in you!**

- And this issue of the Excellency of the Power God's living word living in You vs. the Adversary's Power and his PoE should 'click' in your thinking at this point ... you should be able to make a major "connection" here ...

... because from the very first time you actually do real battle with the adversary & his PoE—that battle is directly tied to, and directly involved with this "Power vs. Power" contention! (even in this first 'skirmish' - or the mildest form of battle you will ever do with the adversary—i.e., those first *tribulations*) ...

- Because what the battle is over; and what the battle is all about is set right before you in (:13)!

- What is actually going on here is:

- In connection with *the works of darkness*—(the *drunkenness*, the *wantonness* and the *envying*) ... in view of the adversary utilizing the lusts that have the very power to overcome godly inhibition—you, by *putting on the Lord Jesus Christ* in connection with His godly disdain & matching it with yours — (you therefore *make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof*) — **you begin right then and there to participate in an Excellency of God's Power!** ...

... and the Excellency of God's word operating within you in connection with opposing and resisting a very tactic of the adversary that is designed (and actually has the power, **IF** we give it to it) to overcome our godly inhibitions!

- And hopefully you can make that connection in order to appreciate this 'grace opportunity' - this privilege of God's grace to participate in this aspect of His business—and more than that, the privilege of God's grace to participate in aspects of the Excellency of the Power of God's word that you would NEVER know if you did not contend with the adversary and his PoE as a properly educated & properly edified "son"!

- (this is the GREATEST display of God's power that He could ever produce! ... far different from the idea of God's power claimed by the Pentecostals/charismatics and most all of current Christianity itself!!!)

PROVERBS 4—(the corresponding Exhortation a father gives his son once the *instruction of judgment* has concluded).

- Exhortations for *the instruction of judgment*:

- 1st Component — Pre - 4:10-13
Post - 4:14-19
(more often than not, the best course of action for you to take is to just get the heck out of there: **FLEE!**
[see 1 Cor. 6:18; 10:14; 1 Tim. 6:11; 2 Tim. 2:22]

- 2nd Component — Pre - 4:20-22
Post - 4:23-27

- **Pro. 4:23**— “*Keep*” tells you 2 major things: 1) you are going to have to do some WORK! 2) there is DANGER! ... some *evil men* are going to attempt to access your *heart*, and you’re supposed to see to it that, (by means of the *armour* your Father has provided), you’re to see to it that those *evil men* by their vexation NEVER gain access to your *heart!* (your *heart* now having become more and more like your Father’s!)

- (this is much like God’s dealings with Adam:
[for us the ‘Garden of Eden’ warning: Rom. 8:13])

- This is a ‘keeping’ in the sense of holding on to it; and preventing it from departing. (it’s now a *heart* that has been conformed to the Father’s *heart*—by the Father Himself!)

- “*diligence*” = (the opposite of *slothful* [Rom. 12:11]) = from F. & L. roots meaning, to choose; to love earnestly = constant effort to accomplish what is undertaken - it implies a powerful attachment to the object and consequent attention to it! ... this is a term of **never ending work!**

- Remember there are 3 Components to *diligence*:
1) **Gravity** (Gen. 2:19-20a) = grave-minded means nothing will distract you!
2) **Ambition** (Gen. 2:20b-22) = you don’t want to be hindered to go on and finish the job you’ve been given!

3) **Pleasure** (Gen. 2:23-25) = happiness & delight to engage in the work—delightful enthusiasm—
pleasure is the fruit of satisfied ambition!

Warning: All these things (all these words and their definitions) can be said to occur in *the course of this world*; in the thinking and the actions of ungodly men of this world—even the phrase, *Keep thy heart with all diligence*, can be used and applied by ungodly men and women of this present evil world ...

... but remember that every word that we're talking about is of a GODLY nature—that is all these words are used by God and so have a GODLY aspect to them:

- godly diligence;
- godly gravity;
- godly ambition;
- godly pleasure!

- (Pro. 4:23) ... *Keep thy heart with all diligence; for out of it are the issues of life* (that is, FUNCTIONAL LIFE!)

- (read :24) - (similar to :14-15) - it's that response that a properly educated son is to have—“You know what those *perverse lips and froward mouth* is up to—so just separate yourself from it!”

- their goal is to drive that ‘wedge’ between you and *the love of Christ* and the best course of action for you is to separate yourself **far** from it!

- And then—to match up with, and to parallel the issue of us *putting on the Lord Jesus Christ* as our DEFENSE—and *making not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof*— in a similar type manner ...

... (:25) *Let thine eyes look right on* (keep the objective of your sonship education ever in view) *let thine eyelids look straight before thee.*

(:26) *Ponder the path of thy feet* (with your *instruction of godly judgment*, you now have got the capacity to make some insightful, perceptive, ‘prudent-type’ judgments whereby you’re able to figure out the *path of your feet* and come to a confident decision of ‘good, better, best’!) *and let all thy ways be established* (which is what Romans doctrine is doing for you edification-wise).

- Again—keep in mind that everything that’s being said to the son here (exhortation-wise), is said in the CONTEXT of the son being engaged in this ‘battle’ - the aspect of the Father’s business that has to do with God’s contending with the adversary and his PoE!

- And I say that, just to say that these exhortations are not simply saying to a son, “Son, just make sure you stay on the right path, you hear?” or “Son, make sure you stay on my path, and not on somebody else’s, ok?”

- No—this is NOT that simple of a matter—this is said in view of the son now being harassed and assaulted and attacked by an adversary with far greater experience in this battle than you—with far more success than you (at this point)

... and your adversary is NOT taking this lightly—and he is determined to shut down your *armour of light*!

- And the ‘tone’ of this final exhortation (that is designed to make the son’s *instruction of judgment* a permanently learned and regularly utilized/deployed skill-set) - the ‘tone’ of this final exhortation is of **an extremely intensified warning of impending danger!!!**

- And the son now having freshly received his *instruction of godly judgment* now needs to hear from his Father about the intense, impending danger ...

... the son (you) knows what the subversive activity and methodology of the adversary and the *evil men* is all about ...

... you know that the *froward mouth, and perverse lips* are going to VEX you—and their success with you can be measured in VERY SMALL AMOUNTS!

- The success of the adversary and his PoE can be measured by simply getting you to even BEGIN to ‘re-think’ those *works of darkness*—and you eventually come to a point when the genuine opportunity exists (if those *evil men* have been successful in their PoE to get you to ‘reconsider’ your stand) the issue is, you eventually reach a point where it’s a viable option in your mind—to enter in to their *paths* (:14), and to actually leave your *path*! (it’s a feasible, possible, workable, legitimate **alternative!**)

- And with that kind of strong, intense, passionate, fervid exhortation (of :23-26) — with all the power and might that the Father can muster and have ringing in His son’s ears ... the Father is ready to say, and the son is ready to hear the Father’s final words of exhortation ...

(read :27)

- Notice you’ve got the issue of “*path*” and “*ways*” brought up here in (:26) ...

(note: *ways* (PL.) is commonly thought of as a road that you travel; but the *ways* (PL.) can also mean ones conduct and behavior; even ones labor—that is ones manner of doing a thing; the *ways* in which you get things done; — and, my understanding is, that’s what *ways* means here).

- And that is said in view of the son understanding and appreciating that there is already in his mind an ‘overall’ type issue that has already been set in his mind by the Father back when the Father set the sons measure of commitment to his sonship learning—and that that level of commitment is what is going to guarantee his success in his Sonship Education & get everything out of it that God has built into it.

- When the son first hears from the Father the exhortations in connection with the first components of the son’s education—which provides for basic decision-making so that fundamental *paths* can be chosen; and a fundamental way can be established—that provides for the son to ‘get off on the right foot’ and to have a path that’s going to guarantee (as long as he stays on it) that he’ll go all the way to the end and get that **ultimate objective** ...

... notice what the Father says to the son ...

- (read Pro. 2:6-9 [**:8**])

- see #65

- For us, the Ultimate Objective is *conformity to the image of God’s Son*—and there is a *WAY* of getting there—and along the way, there are points of attainment.

- And in connection with the ‘details of one’s life’ ...

... **the WAY of every son is the same!**

- in the details of a son's life (depending upon where he lives; under what conditions he lives; when he lives; etc.) **the PATHS of a son's life can be somewhat different ...**

... and there can be multiple *paths* that make up his *way*—but the issue is all those *paths* are working on that one *WAY!*

- That's why Pro. 2:8 says *He keepeth the paths of judgment, and preserveth the way of his saints*—and there's many *paths* on this singular *way* (because there's various Operations of God you participate in & various things you encounter).

- But now, after completing his *instruction of judgment*—the son looks out at that general *WAY*—and he sees that within that *way* are these various *paths* he can choose (paths of uprightness; paths of righteousness; paths of godliness) that he's going to have to be able to "**judge**" to take, that support him in keeping on that *way*—and support him in making the progress to get to that ultimate objective.

- **BUT**—then he's going to **see** (with the eyes of his understanding) that there's going to be some ALTERNATIVE WAYS that are going to be presented to him ... not supplied by God; having nothing to do with his Sonship Education (except his Sonship Edu. is going to warn him about it—not to get off the main *way*) ...

... but he's going to recognize that, in connection with the PoE, there **is an alternative way** (with many *paths*) ... and **another alternative way** (with many *paths*) ...

... or to put it the way God does—there's **an alternative way** on the RIGHT HAND, and **an alternative way** on the LEFT HAND!

- And the issue now—for the son who has received his initial *instruction of judgment* and has engaged in this battle with the Father in His contention with the adversary & his PoE—those 2 alternative ways are going to start tempting him; enticing him; alluring him—and giving him the opportunity to depart from his Father's *way* (and the righteous *paths* that constitute it) ... and to either turn to the *right hand*, or turn to the *left hand*.

- (which means that the design behind the *froward mouth* and the *perverse lips* is to slowly erode your resolve—and to get you to **re-think & reconsider** the stand you've taken—to **dim** your *light*—to be more 'open-minded' and not be so 'closed-minded' by what you were taught in Romans 13!)

- And the goal of the PoE is to get you to decide to TURN—either to the **right hand or the left** ...

... which is why (:25) told you, *Let thine eyes look right on, and let thine eyelids look straight before thee.* 26 *Ponder the path of thy feet* (which is what the instruction of godly judgment provides for)—and a properly educated son at this point can **discern** that very thing [i.e., if he's moving to the *right hand* or the *left*].

- Hence, once again (:27) *Turn not to the right hand nor to the left: remove thy foot from evil.*

- (and there are some real subtle tactics the adversary has at his disposal, to get you to do this—in fact, we haven't even begun to get an awareness of the real cleverness and craftiness of this adversary we're dealing with!) ...

... because there are degrees of cleverness & craftiness that even get you to think that when you are out there on the right hand or the left, that you actually still are on your "way" ... but you're NOT! (you can be so deceived that you won't even know it)

- The bottom line is: you can't even afford to let *evil men* **begin** to 'chip away' at your resolve—because if you even let them begin, in a sense, **they've got you!**

- (not that here is no hope & that you can't recover) ...

... but you need to have it put to you in a way that the **impact** of their cleverness & craftiness and the subtily that there is to their subversive activities makes a deep and permanent impression upon you ...

... and that's the need for this kind of an exhortation!

... and that's why God has to have the apostle Paul come along and say, *not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying. But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof.*

- If there were only a 'remote' chance for you to *filful* those *lusts*, then there wouldn't be any need for this warning-type & admonishing-type exhortation.

- And if you need proof of that, just look at 1 Corinthians—just when the majority of the assemblies in Corinth began to *walk honestly, as in the day*, they got victimized by the PoE and they dimmed their *light*—and some completely put their *light* out ...

... (and they were on the receiving end of better, more thorough, more insightful, more understanding teaching of these things than you are—you're getting it from me—they got victimized after hearing it from Paul and Apollos - **so don't think it can't happen to you!**)

END OF POST-DOCTRINAL EXHORTATION.

- That brings us to another VOLITIONAL TESTING POINT!

- see POSITIVE AND PROPER RESPONSE

END OF THE INSTRUCTION OF GODY JUDGMENT.

END OF ROMANS CHAPTER 13.